

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

FXSLXGGHPXN-NCPL HKXN-NCPXL

قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ (صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَآلِهِ):

إِنِّي تَارِكٌ فِيكُمْ الثَّقَلَيْنِ: كِتَابَ اللَّهِ، وَ  
عِزَّتِي أَهْلَ بَيْتِي، مَا إِنْ تَمَسَّكْتُمْ بِهِمَا لَنْ تَضِلُّوا  
أَبَدًا، وَأَنْتَهُمَا لَنْ يَفْتَرِقَا حَتَّى يَرِدَا عَلَيَّ الْحَوْضَ.

Pcbncj | edycl fcnx C; ncl i  
fwdwnl wavwn... ÅPcrxrcjck l ck sxbxk  
hnhk'bv h x; x hy'n mc vcdcnx cl hkcj rudwf  
'evxncl ... Hgghp`k ;xjhjhf mc Xjncjxl ughk  
Cpgx-fedjxl . Ukghnh shn`gv'y`k'b mhojh  
rcvcn pe] mhoj dugwkwbw hbl hbs'k'b mc  
ukghn â: umscnß pumwbwkwk dhk'kv h l ckc  
'cgyf ]hj`k[hdh rcvcn fxn-fxnkvck  
hcn`gl hbghn.í

(صحيح مسلم، ج ٧، ص ١٢٢، سنن دارمي، ج ٢، ص ٤٣٢، مسند احمد، ج ٣،  
ص ١٤، ١٧، ٢٦، ٥٩، ج ٤، ص ٣٦٦، ٣٧١، ج ٥، ص ١٨٢، مستدرک حاكم،  
ج ٣، ص ١٠٩، ١٤٨، ٥٣٣، و....)

L CHGXL WG-L CVNCSCJEDK

(X: XK{X {XGV)

(3)



L CHGXL WG-L CVNCSCJEDK

(X: XK {X {XGV)

***Əllamə Seyyid Mürtəza Əsgəri***

***Mütərcim: M. Əlizadə***

***“Ümumdünya Əhli-beyt ☪ ” cəmiyyəti***



Kitabın adı: \_\_\_\_ "Məalimul-mədrəsəteyn" (2-ci cild)  
Müəllif: \_\_\_\_ Əllamə Seyyid Mürtəza Əsgəri  
Mütərcim: \_\_\_\_ M. Əlizadə  
Hazırlayan: \_\_\_\_ "Ümumdünya Əhli-beyt ☪ " cəmiyyətinin  
\_\_\_\_ tərcümə idarəsi, mədəni-maarif şöbəsi  
Sair həmkarlar: Redaktor: İftixar Məhəmmədov  
Kompüterə yığan: Rza Şükürbəyli  
Orijinal ilə uyğunlaşdırma və yekun baxış:  
İftixar Məhəmmədov  
Texniki redaktor və səhifələyən: M. Əlizadə  
Cildi hazırlayan: Hüseyn Səmədi  
Nəşr edən: \_\_\_\_ "Ümumdünya Əhli-beyt ☪ " cəmiyyəti  
Çap növbəsi: \_\_\_\_ Birinci  
Çap tarixi: \_\_\_\_ 2005  
Tiraj: \_\_\_\_ 3000  
Çapxana: \_\_\_\_ Leyla  
Elektron poçtu: [www.ahl-ul-bait.org](http://www.ahl-ul-bait.org)  
İSBN: \_\_\_\_ 964-

*Kitabın çap və sair hüquqları "Ümumdünya Əhli-beyt ☪ " cəmiyyətinə məxsusdur.*

Ünvan: İran, Tehran, poçt qutusu 14155-7368  
Telefon: (++9821) 8907289  
Faks: 8893061



## BISMILLAHİR-RƏHMANİR-RƏHİM

### “Ümumdünya Əhli-Beyt ﷺ cəmiyyətindən

Şübhəsiz, Əhli-Beyt ﷺ məktəbinin nəfis inci xəzinələrindən olan və ardıcılarının vasitəsilə qorunub saxlanılan mədəni-maarif mirası islami maarifin müxtəlif yönlərində olan hərtərəfli bir məktəbdir. Bu məktəb qeyd olunan zülal çeşməsindən mümkün qədər su içməyə qabiliyyəti olan istə`dadlı insanları tərbiyə etmiş, İslam ümmətinə bu məktəbin yolunu gedən böyük alimlər və dahi şəxsiyyətlər təqdim etmişdir. Bu böyük alimlər də mütəmadi olaraq əsrlər boyu – həm islam cəmiyyətinin daxilində, həm də xaricində – müxtəlif ideologiyalar və məzhəblər müqabilində düzgün mövqe seçərək, onlara ən dolğun və qənaətbəxş cavablar vermişlər.

“Ümumdünya Əhli-Beyt ﷺ ” cəmiyyəti öhdəsinə aldığı bu məs`uliyətli vəzifəni yerinə yetirmək və İslamla müxalif olan müxtəlif fırqə və məzhəb başçıları tərəfindən risalət hüduqları və onun həqiqətlərinə qarşı yönələn ardıcıl hücumlar qarşısında onu müdafiə etmək üçün Əhli-Beyt (əleyhimus-salam) və bu haqq məktəbin davamçılarının üslubunu davam etdirmək əzmindədir.

Bu xüsusda Əhli-Beyt ﷺ məktəbi alimlərinin dəyərli kitablarında mövcud olan təcrübələr öz növbəsində misilsizdir. Çünki onlar əql və bürhan əsasında olan dərin elmi üsullara arxalanır və boş təəssübkeşlikdən və nəfsani istəklərdən uzaqdır, onun dinləyiciləri mütəxəssis alimlər və mütəfəkkirlərdir ki, onlara sağlam fitrətin qəbul etdiyi və əqlin bəyəndiyi bir tərzdə xitab edir.

“Ümumdünya Əhli-Beyt ﷺ ” cəmiyyəti həqiqət aşıqları üçün bu məktəb alimlərinin, yaxud bu şərəfli məktəbin ardıcılı olmaq və Allahın ne`mət verdiyi şəxslərin yazdığı müasir zəngin elm və mə`rifət xəzinəsini onlara təqdim etmək üçün yeni bir mərhələni qarşıya qoymuşdur. Bundan əlavə, qədim şiə alimlərinin də bu məqsədlə yazdığı nəfis əsərlər onların ixtiyarına verilir ki, haqq axtaranlar üçün bir hədiyyə olmuş, “Ümumdünya Əhli-Beyt ﷺ ” cəmiyyətinin bəşərin əqli səviyyəsinin yüksələrək təkamülə çatdığı, ruhun çox sür`ətlə inkişaf etdiyi bir əsrdə bütün dünyaya təqdim etmək istədiyi həqiqətlərə yol açılmış olsun.

Əziz oxuculardan xahiş edirik ki, özlərinin dəyərli tənqid və təkliflərini yazıb bizə göndərsinlər. Eləcə də, bütün alimləri, müəllif və mütərcimləri, mədəni-maarif mərkəzlərini də`vət edirik ki, əsl İslam mədəniyyətinin yayılmasında öz köməklərini əsirgəməsinlər.



Allah-taaladan aciz surətdə istəyirik ki, bu azacıq işi bizdən qəbul etsin, bizi Özüünün xüsusi nəzərləri sayəsində və yer üzündəki höccətinin – İmam Məhdi ﷺ -in himayəsində qərar versin!

**Bu dəyərli kitabın müəllifi Həzrət Əllamə Seytyid Mürtəza Əskəri və onu Azərbaycan dilinə tərcümə edən M. Əlizadə cənablarına, eləcə də kitabın çapa hazırlanmasında zəhmət çəkən bütün şəxslərə, xüsusilə tərcümə bölməsinin əməkdaşlarına dərin minnətdarlığımızı bildiririk.**

*“Ümumdünya Əhli-Beyt ﷺ ” cəmiyyətinin mədəni-maarif  
şöbəsi*

# I } I K { I TCSXG

CPGX-FEDJ L C: JCFXKXK XL HL CJ FHNC SXKVC: X  
KCBCNXDDCGCNX

- \* |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -xk zbi kvck suknh āwqg-cl nβik jc/dxk evxgl csx fhncvc [xv vx sc/d 'zsjcnl csxæ
- \* |edycl fcnxk mcsxix, ukvkh suknh mcbxix, mcgpcvx mc ocgxtcsxæ
- \* Oi gcth l c; jcfx mc mcsxddcj ofcngcnixkxk ncmhdcjgcnixkxk znj-fhsv'n evxgl csx dugwkvh 'zsjcnxgck sc/dgcxæ
- \* Oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk |edycl fcn si kkcxsx xgc ke[c nctjhn ejl cgcnixkxk fcdhk'æ fegc ;x, ukghn'k kcbcnx |edycl fcn si kkcxsx xgc l iohgxtcj jca; xg evxin.
- \* Sedt xfkx Zl cnxk ofcfnixkxk āJhnxx JcfcnxBvck shxn jhnxo ; xjhfgnh'kh dhd'gl hs' mc fwkwk scfcfxæ
- \* |edycl fcnx-C; ncl vck, zbi kvck suknh;` pz;wl cj fhncsxkvc kcrq ugwkxhk ha; hn pcvxsgcnæ
- \* Fw i l l cjvc mcsixkxk jc/dxk evxgl csx xgc Lwsh \edycl fcnxk zbi kvck suknh mcsx jc/dxk ejl csx hnhs'kvh;` uoahng'rae
- \* Rwn/hkx-: cnxl vc āmxghdcjβ mc āwqg-cl nβæ
- \* Cpgx-fedj xl hl ghn' — Cgx mc ukwk zmghvgghn' ⌘ |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -xk sxnc mc si kkcxsxk jcfgy evckgcx xvix.



# L I RCVVXL C

Dwohn`vh;` fcpsgcnvc oi gcth I c;jcfxkxk xl hl cj fhncsxkvc;x kcbcnxddcgcnxkx hnhav`n`f ukghn`k vcgxggcnxkx redv ejvx;. Cpgx-fedj I c;jcfxkxk hnv`[`gghn` xsc fegc vedxngcn... å|edycl fcnvck suknh i l l cjc xl hl ughk acos pcn kzm 'i khpvhk, I c/kcmx hgwwcgx; vck jcl xb, \h; -\h; xbc ugl hg`, Hgghp jcnctxkvck jc/dxk evxgl cgx, |edycl fcn vc ukw [hl hhjh mc i l l cjc ha; hn ac; xgvc jcrvxl ejl cgxvxn.ß Fegc ; x, I i jchg Hgghp Xfnhpxl <sup>TM</sup> -h fegc fwdwnwn...

﴿...قَالَ إِنِّي جَاعِلُكَ لِلنَّاسِ إِمَامًا قَالَ وَمِنْ ذُرِّيَّتِي قَالَ لَا يَنَالُ عَهْدِي الظَّالِمِينَ﴾

åLck sckx [hl hhj i]ik xl hl jc/dxk evxncl. Xfnhpxl vevx... Lckxl kcsxl vck ke[c?! Fwdwnvw... Lckxl cpvxl bhg`l ghnh ]hjl hb.B<sup>1</sup>

Vel cgx, xl hl cj xghpx cpv-\edl hkv`n ; x, Hgghp Zb |edycl fcnxkx, Zbi ki k vx`cn cl n mc pz; I gcnxkvck h'hp ejvxdx ; xl x, ukvhk vh h'hp evxn. Fwkvhk cghmc, Hgghp`k xl hl cj cpv-\edl hk` bhg`l ghnh ]hjl hb. Kc zbi kc, kc vc fharhghn`kh bi gl ejl cdck acos I c/swl shd`g`n.

Fwkh cshsck, xl hl cj Hgghp jcnctxkvck menxgc mc Ukwk mhsxjcsxgc jc/dxk ugwkxk fxn cpvvn ; x, dhgk`b |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j ukw jcfgy evxn. Fw vh xsl cjh `cnc; gx evxn. Fw x; x acnj Cpgx-fedj xl hl ghn`kvh si fwjh dejl xavxn mc fw fhncvc `cg[c; vc xbhphj menc[cdx; .

CPGX-FEDJ ☼ --K XSL CJX (" I KHPS-BG-Y~)

Li jchg Hgghp Rwn/hkx-: cnxl vc i l l cjc ocfcn mencnc; fwdwnl wavwn ; x, Cpgx-fedj – dc/kx pcbncj Li pcl I cv, Cgx, Thjxl c, Pcsck mc Pi sedk ☼ pcn kzm 'i khpghnvkh, nwpk mc I c/kcmx hgwwcgx; gcnvck wbhrv`ngghn...

﴿إِنَّمَا يُرِيدُ اللَّهُ لِيُذْهِبَ عَنْكُمُ الرِّجْسَ أَهْلَ الْبَيْتِ وَيُطَهِّرَكُمْ تَطْهِيرًا﴾

<sup>1</sup> åFcrncß swncsx, hdc.124

âPcrrcjck Hgghp`k xnhvcsx dhgk`b fw ugl wavwn ;x, sxb Cpgh-fedjvck pcn kzm hgwwcgdx mc ]xn; xkgcdx wbhrgnav`n`f sxbx \h; -\h; xbc rcnhn mensik.B<sup>1</sup>

FW HDCKXK KHBXG UGL H SCFCFX (AC/KX-KI BWGW) MC  
|EDYCL FCNX-C: NCL i -XK CL CGX SWNCJVC UGHK  
JCVFXNGCNX

Cfvi ggghp xfkx {c/tn xfkx Cfx Jhgxf fegc ncmhdcj evxn.<sup>2</sup>  
â|edycl fcnc-C; ncl i xghpx ncpl cj l cgcdxkxk khbxg  
ugvwykw 'znvi ; vc, fwdwnvw... âL ckl dhk`l h ]hy`n`k,  
l ckl dhk`l h ]hy`n`k!ß Sctxddc vevx.<sup>3</sup> âDh Ncswgcgghp! : xl x  
]hy`nhr?ß Fwdwnvw... âCpgh-fedjxl x, Cgx, Thjxl c,<sup>4</sup> Pcscck mc

<sup>1</sup> âCpbhfß swncsx, hdc.33

<sup>2</sup> âL i sjcvnc; x Scpxpedkß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.147. Cfvi ggghp – {c/tn Bi g-  
[ckhpdkxk ({c/tnx Jcddhn`k) uygw mc Cfw Jhgxfk kmcsvxvn, hkhs` vh  
Csl h fxxjx l l eds Ocs/cl vxvn. Cfvi ggghp Pcfcaxjhkvh vi kdhdh 'cgl xa mc  
|edycl fcnc 'zn l avi. U ]uo egl gx mc scohmcjgx fxn xkshk vxv. Ukw  
âFcpnwg-[wvß (;cncl mc epshk vcndhs`) hvghkv`n`nv`ghn. 80-[` px[nx xgxkvc  
L cvxkvc mcthj ejl xavxn. Jcn[i l edx-phg` âWsvwg-yhfcß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.33 mc  
â{cmhl xws-sxncß, scp.288-vc redv ugwk l wavwn.

<sup>3</sup> Pddd xfkx Cojcfkx r`b` Sctxddc pcbncj Lwshk`k rhnvha` Phnwkwk  
kcsgxkvck mc Fckx-Kcbxn dcpwvxgcnkvck ughk mc Oedfc n l i phnxfcsxkvc  
rcjgc dejxngck : ckhk xfkx Ncfkxk bzm[csx vxv. |edycl fcnc i ukw  
csxngcnxk hnhs`kvk se]xf fwdwnvw... âC`cn Xsgl vxkxk rcfwg ejscck, scck  
zbi l i ]i k se]cncl . C`cn dcpwvxgdx se]scck, ukvh scck fcg; c hbhv evcl  
mc rupwl ghn`kh rumwahshk.ß U vevx... âDh Ncswgcgghp! Scck l cck vc/mcj  
ejl cbvck rhfhr Xsgl` rcfwg ejvxl , scck jcsvxrgcvxl mc dcpwvxddcjc vc  
pe] fxn epjxdh[ 'zn l ncl .ß |edycl fcnc fwdwnvw... âUkvh hjhk mc rhnvha`k  
ugl hdh[hr.ß U vevx... âSxb l cck Xsgl gh ; i tn hnhs`kvh xojxdhn shpxfx  
ejvxkxb. Phgfw; x, l ckl kcbcnxl vc Hgghp mc Ukwk Ncswgw xgc fxn ugl hr  
hbhv ugwkfw rupwl -crncfhl h ruawgl hrvhk vph dhov`n.ß Xvvcx  
rwnjhvn`rvhk sukn |edycl fcnc-C; ncl ukwkgh emgckvx. Sctxddc 52-[x px[nx  
xgxkvc mcthj ejvx. âSxphß l i cgxtgcnc ukvhk 10 ncmhdcj kcrgejl xagcn.  
Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` Xfkx Sc/vxk âJcfcrhjß ; xjh`kvh, 8-[x [xgv, scp.120-129æ  
â{cmhl xws-sxncß, scp.285-vc redv ugwk l wavwn.

<sup>4</sup> Thjxl edx-Bcpnh <sup>(alqah)</sup> |edycl fcnc C; ncl i -xk r`b`v`n, ukwk  
hkhs` l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Ocvx[edx-: wfnh <sup>(alqah)</sup>-v`n. U pcbncjxk (Thjxl ckxk)  
jcn[i l edx-phg` âWsvwg-yhfcß mc âCg-xshfcß ; xjhfgn`kvh fegc redv ugwkwn...  
Ukwk ; i kdcx âl l l i Cfpxhßv`n (hjhs`k`k hkhs`), |edycl fcnc-C; ncl xk  
kcsgx dhgk`b ukvhk vmhl ejl xavxn. |edycl fcnc Thjxl cdc fwdwnvw...  
âPcrrcjck Hgghp scck rcbcfkjc rcbcfckn, scck nhb`g`y`kgh nhb` ugn.ß Fw ncmhdcjxk  
l ckfcgcnx... âL i sjcvnc; x Ph; xl ß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.153æ âL xbhkwg-e/jxvhgß, 2-[x  
[xgv, scp.77æ âJcrnxfwj-jcbpxfß, 12-[x [xgv, scp.441æ âScpxp Fwohnxß, l ckhrxfx  
Thjxl c fhf, 4-[i [xgv, scp.200-201 mc 205. Unhvh vedxgn... |edycl fcnc-C; ncl

fwdwnvw... āThjxl c l ckl [hk'l'k fɪn \hn]hs'v'n. Pcn ;cs ukw rcbfɟckvɪnsc, l ckl rcbfɟckvɪnl xavɪn.β Vx'cn fɪn ncmhdɟ vc pcl xk ;xjh'f'k kx;hp fh'f'kvh, 3-[i [xgv, scp.177æ pcl ]xkxk, āScpxpx L i sgi l β, Thjxl ckxk tcbxgcjx fh'f'æ āSi kckx Jxnl xbxβæ āL i skcvx Cpl cvβ, 4-[i [xgv, scp.41 mc 328æ āL i sjcvnc; x Scpxpedkβ, 3-[i [xgv, scp.153-vc redv ugwkwn ;x, āPcn ;cs ukw xk[xjsc, l ckl xk[xj l xavɪn.β |edycl fcnx-C; ncl pcl xac sctcnc ]'ohkvh sctcnxk cmmcgxkvc mxvhghav'y' ho'n'k[ mc sctcnxk sukwkvh 'zni avi di xg; acos Thjxl c ugwnvw. āL i sjcvnc; x Scpxpedkβ, 3-[i [xgv, scp.155-156, 1-[x [xgv, scp.489æ āL i skcvx Cpl cvβ, 5-[x [xgv, scp.275æ āSi kckx Fedpcrxβ, 1-[x [xgv, scp.26æ āScpxpx Fwohnxβ, owl swk mh[xfgxdx fh'f', 2-[x [xgv, scp.124. Unhvh Hdxacvck fegc kerg ugwkwn... āThjxl c |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk mcthj'kvhk suknh Cfw Fc; nvck xsjcvx ;x, |edycl fcnxk ukwk i ]i k rudwf 'ejvxdx l xhns'k' – Hgghp'k |edycl fcnc rhdjhnv'y' aedgcx ukh rhdjhns'k. Cfw Fc; n vevx ;x, |edycl fcn fwdwnl wavwn... āFxb \edycl fcngcn xns rudl wnw. Fxbvck rhghk aedgcx scvrcvxn.β |edycl fcnxk r'b' Thjxl c ukh rcbfɟckvx, Cfw Fc; nvck i b vzkvcnvc mc mcthj' evckc rcvcn ukvhk i b vzkvcnck phgvh rhgv'β U, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl vck suknh hgj' hd dhav'.

āScpxpx Fwohnxβkxk Oedfcx rcbmcx fh'f'kvh (3-[i [xgv, scp.38) vedxgx... āThjxl c mcthj' ejvxdx bhl hk cnx ukw 'e[c x; ck vctk ejvx mc Cfw Fc; nx fw xavck h'hp ejl cvx, zbi jc; gx; vc ukh khl hb r'gv'. Thjxl c pcdhjvh ugvyw mhojh rcvcn Cgxkxk 'zn; cl gx l crhl ' mhn xv. U mcthj' ejvx; vc, [hl hhjgh 'zni al c; xsjcl cvx mc Cfw Fc; ngc nhb'ghal hr l c[fwnxddcxkvc rhgv'β Fw ncmhdɟx L i sgi l ā[xphvβ ;xjh'f'kvh, 5-[x [xgv, scp.145æ Cpl cv āL i skcvβ-vc, 1-[x [xgv, scp.9æ Fedpcrx āSi kckβvc, 6-[x [xgv, scp.300-vc vc redv ejl xagcn. U Pcbncjxk jcn[i l edx-phg' āWsvwg-yhfcbvc fegc redv ugwkwn... āU, Csl hdx mcsxddɟ ejl xavx ;x, ukh rwsɟ mensxk mc fɪn ;csxk unhdh 'cgl csxkc x[hbc menl csxk. U mcthj' evcn; ck Hdxac 'cgvx mc Csl h ukh vhoxg ugl hr x[hbcx menl cvx.β

L i cggxt vedɪn... Thjxl edx-Bcpnhk'k vctk ugwkvwvyw den xkvxdc rcvcn khl c/gwl vwn!

āScpxpβ l i cggxtgcx u pcbncjvck ā{cmhl xws-sxncβvck kergck, 18 ncmhdɟ kerg ejl xagcn.

<sup>1</sup> XI hl Pcsck mc XI hl Pi sedk E |edycl fcnx C; ncl i -xk kcmcsx mc Cgx xgc Thjxl ckxk zmghvghn'v'n. XI hl Pcsck <sup>TM</sup> 3-[i px[nx xgx-kxk Nhl hbk hd'k'k 15-vc, XI hl Pi sedk xsc 4-[i px[nx xgxkxk Ac/fhk hd'k'k 3-vc vuywgl wavwn. |edycl fcnx-C; ncl ukghn'k fhncsxkvc fwdwnl wavwn... āPcsck mc Pisedk fepxaj [hmhkgghn'k'k x; x hyhs'v'n, hjhghn' ukghnvkh vh dhov'n.β Fw pcvxs āSi kckx xfkx L h[cβvc |edycl fcn scphfcgcnxkxk tcbxgcjgcx fzgl csxk-vcæ āL i sjcvnc; x-scpxpdkβ, 3-[i [xgv, scp.167 mc fharh l ckfcgcnvc redv ugwk l wavwn.

40-[x px[nx xgxkvc XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> acpxv ugvrvhk suknh l i scgl hkghn XI hl Pcsckgc fed/cj ejvxgc. U Pcbncj hgj' hd oxghtcvc ugvw, fwkvkh suknh Xsgl 'k l csgcpcjxkc nxhɟɟ ejl c; i ]i k L i hmxdc xgc nhb'ghav' mc

Ukghn` ]hy`n`f |edycl fcnxk dhk`kh 'cjxnvxgc n mc pcbncj cfhs`k` ukghn`k i sji kc ]c; vx, suknh cggcnxkx hsl hkh rhgv`n`f fegc vwh ejvx... â|cnmcnvx`hnh! Fwkghn l ckxl Cpgx-fedjxl vxn, fegc xsc L i pcl l cv mc Hgx-L i pcl l cvc shghmhj 'zkvcn!ß Fw bhl hk Hggghp-jhhgh âxkkcl h dwnxvwggghpß hdxsxxk khbxg ejvx.ß

l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxackxk ncmhdcjxkvc vedxgx... âU cfh rhnh dwkvhk juowkl wavw mc kho`aghn` vh mhn vxv.ß<sup>1</sup>

Scphfcgcnvck ughk Mhsxgcj xfkx Csxc/kxk ncmhdcjxkvc vedxgx... â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i Cgx mc Thjxl ckx zb dhk`kh ]hy`n`f ukghn` zb dhk`kvh, Pcsckgc Pi sedkx xsc vxbgcnx i sji kvc ujwnjvw.ß<sup>2</sup>

---

si gp ejvx. L i hmxdc 50-[x px[nx xgxkvc uygw Debxx i ]i k fed/cj hgl hr rcnhi`kh 'cgckvc u Pcbncjx l cotx ac; xgvc bcpcngckvxnx f acpxv ejvx. Fho... âHdxackxk nugwß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.178.

Xl hl Pi sedk <sup>TM</sup> vh 60-[` px[nx xgxkvc Debxx ; xl x l cg/wkh fed/cjvck xl jxkh evnc; fwdwnvw... âC`cn Xsghl i l l cja Debxx ; xl xgcnx ncpfcngcdkic l i fjcgh ugsh, ukvh Xsghl`k thjxpcsxkx uowl hr ghb`l v`n!ß Debxxvk unvsw u Pcbncjx 61-[x xgxk l cpcncl hd`k`k ukwk[w `i ki kvc – Hawnh `i ki kvc : cnfcghvh acphvcjc ]hjv`nv`. âScpxpß l i cggxtgcnx Xl hl Pcsck <sup>TM</sup> -vhk 13 pcvxs mc Xl hl Pi sedk <sup>TM</sup> -vhk 8 pcvxs ncmhdcj ejl xagcn. â{cmhl xws-sxncß, scp.284 mc 286æ âJcrnxfwj-jcpbxfß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.168.

<sup>1</sup> Hdxac Cfw Fc; nxk r`b`v`n, ukwk hkhsk`k hv` l l l i Nwl l hkv`n. Fe/scjxk 4-[i xgxkvc vi kdhdh 'cgl xavx mc |edycl fcn L cvxkcdc px[ncjvck fxn xg rhfhr ukw zb emxkc h`hnl `av`. 57, dhowv, 58, dhowv 59-[w xgvc mcthj ejl xavx. Cfw Pi nednc ukh [ckhbc khl hb` r`gl `av`n. âScpxpß l i cggxtgcnx ukvhk 2210 pcvxs ncmhdcj ejl xagcn. âHdxackxk Xsghl ncmhdcjgcnxkvc; x nugwß ; xjh`f`kh l i nh[xcj evc fxgcnxkxb. Hdxackxk âJcjpñß hdxsxxk ac/kx-ki bwgw (khhxg ugl h scfcfx) fhncsxkvc; x ncmhdcjx âScpxpß L i sgi l ß, 7-[x [xgv, scp.130, tcbhxgw Cpgx-fedjxk-Kcfx fhf`æ âL i sjcvnc; x Scpxpedkß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.147æ âJcxsx xfkx {cnxñß mc âJcxsx Si dwjxß, pcl xk hckxk jcxsxkvcæ âJcxsx Bcl coacnxß, âJcxsx Tconx Nhbxß, âL i fhpxgcß hdxsxxk jcxsxkvcæ âSi kckx Fedpcrxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.149-vh vh redv ugwk l wavwn.

<sup>2</sup> Mhsxgcj xfkx Csxc/ Gedsx, |edycl fcn Jcfw; h pcnc; cj ejvxdx bhl hk Xsghl` rcfwg ejl xavx. Vedxgl xavx ; x, u, i ] xg |edycl fcnx oxvl cj]xsx ugl wa, 83, dhowv 85-[x xgvc Vcl carvc, dhowv Fedji g-l i rcvvcsvc mcthj ejl xavx. âSxphpß l i cggxtgcnx ukvhk 56 pcvxs ncmhdcj ejl xagcn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âWsvwg-yhfcb, â{cmhl xws-sxncß, scp.279-vh redv ugwk l wavwn. Ukwk âJcjpñß hdxsxxk khbxg ugl h scfcfx fhncsxkvc ejvxdx fw ncmhdcj âSi kckx Fedpcrxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.152æ ukwk fharh fxn ncmhdcjx xsc âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.107-vc, âL i sjcvnc; x Scpxpedkß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.416, 3-[i [xgv, scp.147, âL c[l ci b-bcmhxxvß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.167, âJcxsx Xfkx {cnxñßvc, Si dwjx zb jcxsxkvc, âWsvwg-yhfcb, scp.20-vc redv ugwk l wavwn.

l l l i g-l z/l xkxk l l l i Scgcl ckxk ncmhdcjxkvc fegc  
vedxgx...âXkkcl h dwnxvwgghpß hdsx l ckxl emxl vc khbxg ugvw.  
U emvc devvx kctcn mhn vxv... { cfnhxg, L x; hxg, Cgx, Thjxl c, Pc-  
sck, Pi sedk. Lck vc rhfhrvh vxvl , sunwavwl ... âDh Ncswgcg-  
ghp! Lck vc sckxk Cpgx-fedjxkvckcl l x?ß Fwdwnvw...âSck dhwa`  
dugvhshkæ sck |edycl fcnxk rhv`kghn`kvhkshk.ß¹

âJcjpxnß hdsxkxk ac/kx-ki bwgkw redv ugwkhhkghnvhk fharh  
hahy`vh;` acosgc n vc ncmhdcj ejl xagcn...

1-Cfvi gghp Xfkx Hffhsæ

2-Zl cn xfkx Cfx Scgl c (|edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk uywggwyw)æ

3-Cfw Scxv Oxvnxæ¹

4-Sc/v xfkx Cfx Mcrrhsæ

¹ l l l i Scgcl ckxk fw ncmhdcjx âJctsnx Si dwjxß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.198-199-vh  
redv ugwkl wavwn. Ukvhk kcrq ugwkhhk fharh fxn ncmhdcj âSi kckx  
Jxnl xbxß, 13-[i [xgv, scp.248, âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 6-[` [xgv, scp.306, âWsvwg-  
yhfcb, 4-[i [xgv, scp.29, 2-[x [xgv, scp.297, âJcpbxfwj-jcpbxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.297-  
vc redv ugwkl wavwn. Vx'cn fxn ncmhdcj vc âL i sjcvnc; x Scpxpedkß, 2-[x  
[xgv, scp.416, 3-[i [xgv, scp.147, âSi kckx Fedpcrxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.150, âWsvwg-  
yhfcb, 5-[x [xgv, scp.521 mc 598æ âJhnxox Fhyvhvß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.126-vh l zm-  
[wvwn. Fharh fxn ncmhdcj vc âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 6-[` [xgv, scp.692-vc mhn.

² Xfkx Hffhs`k ncmhdcjx âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.330æ âOcshxsw  
Kcshxß, scp.11æ âNxdhbwk-ki bncjß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.269æ âL c[l ci b-bcmhxvß, 9-[w  
[xgv, scp.119 mc 207æ âVwnwg-l ckswnß, pcl xk hdckxk jctsnxkvc l zm[wvwn.

³ Zl cn xfkx Cfx Scgl c Cfvi g-Cscv – |edycl fcnxk uywggwywvwn, hkhs`  
vh l l l i Scgcl cvxn. Zbi vc Pcfcaxsjhkvh vi kdhdh `cgl xavxn. U, {cl cg  
l i phnxfcsxkvc xl hl Cgx™ -gh fxng; vc xajxnh; ejl xavx. Pcbncj ukw  
Fcpnedkc mc Thns cdhgcjxkc scn; cnvc jc/dxk ejl xavx. 83-[i xgv mc mthj  
ejl xavxn. âSxphß l i cggxtgcx ukvhk 12 ncmhdcj kcrq ejl xagcn. Ukwk jcn[i -  
l edx-phg` âWsvwg-yhfcb, â{cmhl xws-sxncß (scp.284) ; xjhfgnh`kvh l zm[wvwn.  
Ukwk âJcjpxnß hdsxkxk khbxg ugl h scfcfx fhncsxkvc; x pcvxsx âTcbhxgwg-  
ocl scß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.214-vc (âScpxpx Jxnl xbxßxk 2-[x [xgvxkxk 209-[w scpx-  
tcsxkvck kcrqck) l zm[wvwn.

⁴ Cfw Scxv Oxvnxkxk ncmhdcjx Xfkx {cnxnk mc Si dwjxkxk jctsnxkvc  
(fw hdckxk jctsnxkvc)æ âJhnxox Fhyvhvß, 10-[w [xgv, scp.278æ âL c[l ci b-  
bcmhxvß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.168-169-vh l zm[wvwn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` `cgc[c;  
phaxdcgcncv redv evxgc[c; vxn.

⁵ Sc/v xfkx Cfx Mcrrhs`k jcn[i l edx-phg` cmmcgvc mcncrhgj` phaxdcgcncv  
redv ugwkvw. U pcl Cgx™ -h fed/cjvck xl jxkh ejvx, pcl vc L i h-  
mxdcxk Cgx™ -h dhnhl hb szbgcn vel csxk rcfwg ejl cvx. L i hmxdc uygw  
Debxv i jk [hl hhjvhk fed/cj hghkvh ukw bcpcngcdf zgvi nvi. âScpxpß  
l i cggxtgcx ukvhk 271 ncmhdcj kcrq ejl xagcn. Ukwk âJcjpxnß hdsxkxk khbxg



5-Ckcs xfkx L hgx; <sup>1</sup> mc fharhghn<sup>2</sup>.

Pcl jxkxk XI hl Pcsck <sup>TM</sup> I xkfcncv;<sup>3</sup> XI hl Cgxddxfkx  
Pi sedk <sup>TM</sup> vh Ahl vh<sup>4</sup> ukh xsjxkhv evxf vcgxg 'cjxnl xagcn. Fw  
hdc khbxg ugvrwvhk suknh |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i fxn  
ke]c hd l i vvcjxkvc Cgx mc Thjxl ckxk rh\`s`kh 'cgxn, ukghnh  
shghl menxn mc fw hdckx jxghmcj evxnvx. Xfkx Hffhs vedxn...  
âL ck zbi l ahpxv xvxl ; x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i vur-  
rwb hd l i vvcjxkvc pcn 'i k si fp khl hb` jhy` Cgxddxfkx Cfx  
Jhgx ffxk rh\`s`kh 'cgcn; vedxnvx... âHghp`k shghl , ncpl cj mc fcnc; cjx  
sxbc ugswk, ed Cpg-fedj! (Suknh âxkkcl h dwnxvwgghp... hdcxkx  
jxghmcj evxn mc fwdwnwnvw.) Khl hb mhoj`vn! Hghp sxbc ncpl cj ejxk!ß  
Fwkx pcn 'i kvc fea vctc jc; nhn evxnvx.<sup>5</sup>

Cfxg-Pcl nhk`k fegc vevxdx ncmhdcj ugwkwn... âDhv`l vhw`n ; x,  
|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i L cvxkvc sc; ; xb hd pcn 'i k  
si fp khl hb` i]i k j`ohkvh, Cgxkxk emxkxk rh\`s`kh 'cgxn,  
cggcnxkx rh\`k`k x; x jcnctxkc rudwf fwdwnwnvw... âKhl hbh!ß

---

ugl h scfcfx fhncsxkvc; x ncmhdcjx âOcsxsw Kcsxß, scp.4-5â âSi ckcx  
Jxnl xbxß, 2-[i [xgv, scp.171-172-vc redv ugwk l wavwn.

<sup>1</sup> Ckcs xfkx L hgx; xk ncmhdcjx âSi ckcx Jxnl xbxß, 13-[i [xgv, scp.248â  
âL c]l ci b-bcmhxvß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.206-vh redv ugwk l wavwn.

<sup>2</sup> L xshg i]i k...1-Ri jhvc (xfkx {cnxkx mc Si dwjxkxk jctsn ; xjhfgnh`kvh  
redv ugwkxk hdckxk jctsnx xgc cghrcvhn)â 2-Cjxddc (ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg`  
âWsvwg-yhfcß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.413-vcvxn)â 3-L c/rcg xfkx Dcshn (âSi ckcx  
Jxnl xbxß, 13-[i [xgv, scp.248).

<sup>3</sup> XI hl Pcsck <sup>TM</sup> -`k fw hddc xsjxkhvck vcgxg 'cjxnl csx âL i sjcnc; x  
Scpxpedkß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.172â âL c]l ci b-bcmhxvß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.146 mc 172-vc  
l zm[wvvwn.

<sup>4</sup> Bcl coacnxkxk âNcfxi g-cfnhnß ; xjhfk`k 10-[w fhfkvh vedxgvxdx ; xl x,  
XI hl Cgxddxfkx Pi sedk <sup>TM</sup> -`k hkhs` Debvc'xnvxk r`b` vxv mc u, XI hl  
Bedki g-hfxvxk <sup>TM</sup> -` vi kdhdh 'cjxnvx; vck suknh mcthj ejl xa mc hjhs`k`k  
l l l i -mcgcv ; ckxbgcnxkvck ffx ukw vhdcgxdc 'zji nl i avi . XI hl Bedki g-  
hfxvxk <sup>TM</sup> hjhs`k`k mcthj`kvhk suknh ukw cnc menvx, bhpxnvc ukwk hv`  
Rcbhg x l xa. (âl dwkx Cofhnxn-Nxbhß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.128) Cgxddxfkx Pi sedk <sup>TM</sup>  
px[ncjxk 95-[x xgxkvc L cvxkvc mcthj ejl xavxn. âSxphpß l i cggxtgcnx ukvhk  
fc/bx ncmhdcjgcnc kcrj ejl xagcn. U pcbncjxk âJcjpñß hdcxkxkc xsjxkhv evxf  
ukw vcgxg 'cjxnl csx hdckxk jctsnxkvc l zm[wvvwn. U pcbncjxk jcn[i l edx-  
phg` âMctcdhjwg-c/dhkß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.429â âJhnox Dc/rwfxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.303-  
vc l zm[wvvwn.

<sup>5</sup> Xfkx Hffhs`k ncmhdcjx âVwnwg-l ckswñß jctsnxkvc âmc/l wn cpq;c fis-  
scghjß hdcxkxk jctsnxkvc redv ugwk l wavwn.

Suknh Xkkcl h dwnxvwgghp... hdxskx jxghmcj evxnvx.<sup>1</sup>

Cfw Fcnbc vedxn... â|edycl fcnx 'znvi l ;x, devvx hd l i vvcjxkvc pcn mhoj emvck khl hbh j'o'nv'sh, Thjxl ckxk rh's`kh 'cgxn mc...<sup>2</sup>

Ckcs xfkx L hgx; xk vevxdxkc 'znc, u pcbncjxk fw cl cgx hgj` hd l i vvcjxkvc jc; nhn ugwkl wavwn.<sup>3</sup> Fharhghn`kvhk vh fw l cbl wkvh Juogw ncmhdcjgc kcrge vxgl xavxn.

L i jchg Hgghp fw hdcvc dhgk`b |edycl fcnxk csnxkvc ughk l c/swl ghnvhk ofcn menl xavxn. Pcbncj ukghn`zbi ki k cl cgx xgc jc/dxk ejl xa, cfhs`k` i sjgcnxkc hjl hrgh, egc[c vc fxn ke]c hd l i vvcjxkvc scphfcgcnvck fxn rnw\wkwk pi bwnwkvh ukghn`k rh's`kvh vhdhkhnh fw hdxk jxghmcj ejl c; gc ukghn`dhoa` ac; xgvc jcrvxl ejl xavxn.

Fw hdx, egc[c vc |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk szbgcnx mc cl cggcnxk-vck kcrge ugwkhhghn Cpgx-fedj <sup>TM</sup> -`k xsl cjxkxk xsfhj` i ]i k ; xthdcj rcvcl 'i [gi vcgxvxn.

Fw l i vvch egl x [cpcjvck vc jhl hl xgc vuynwvwn... ]i k; x xl hl ghn`k xsl cjx mc 'i khps`bg'y` xgc bxvvxddcj jca; xg evck fxn aed jhnxovc redvc hg`kl hl `av`n. Phgfw; x Xsghl jhnxo oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk hgxl gcnx jcnctxkvck dhh`gl `a, ukghn`k jhnxo dhbl hrvh ughk cshs l crscvgnx vc Juo phgghnvh ocgxtckxk nhb`g'y`k` [cgf ejl c; vx. Ocgtcgc csngcn fudw Cpgx-fedj xl hl ghn`k`k kwnwkw szkvi nl c; i ]i k [xvvx-[cpvgc ]hg`a`n-v`ghn ; x, l i scgl hkghn ukghnh jhfe ugl hs`k mc ukghn`oxghtcjc se]l csxkgcn. Lcpb fwkh 'znc vc ukghn`k fxn Juowkw rcjgc

<sup>1</sup> Cfwg-Pcl nh |edycl fcnxk hbhv ejvxdx rwgghnvkh fxn vx. Ukwk hv`Pxghg xfkx Phnx, dhowv Xfkx Bctn ugl wavwn. Ukwk kcrge ejvxdx pcvxs zbi ki k jcn[i l edx-phg`kvh, âXsjxd/hfß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.598â Wsvwg-yhfcb, 5-[x [xgv, scp.174â âL c[l ci b-bcmhxvß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.178-vc redv ugwkl wavwn.

<sup>2</sup> Cfw Fcnbc Csgcl x. Ukwk hv`fhncsxkvc xojxght l zm[wvwn. 60, dhowv 64-[i xgvc Fcsncvc mcthj ejl xavxn. âSxphpß l i cggxtgcnx ukvhk 20, dhowv 46 ncmhdcj kcrge ejl xagcn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg`âWsvwg-yhfcb, â{cmhl xws-sxncß, scp.280 mc 283-vc redv ugwkl wavwn. Ukwk pcvxsx âL c[l ci b-bcmhxvß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.169-vh l zm[wvwn. Ukwk ncmhdcjxkvc âscf/cjc cacnc acpnckß (uk devvx hd l i vvcjxkvc) redv ugwkwn ; x, fxbxl kcbcnxl xbc 'znc fw, ki sockx dhbhkghnvkh fha menck scpmvxn.

<sup>3</sup> Ckcsxk ncmhdcjx âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.152â âL i skcvx Jcdhgxß, 7-[x [xgv, scp.274, 2509-[w pcvxsâ âWsvwg-yhfcb, 5-[x [xgv, scp.521â âJctsnx Xfkx {cnxnß mc âJctsnx Si dwjß, pcl xk hdxk jctsnxkvc.

dejxnl xa, fc/bxgcnxkx bxkvhkh shgl `a, fc/bxgcnxkx si n'i k evcnc;  
 [xv vx kcbhncj hgj`kvh shoghl `aghn. Oi swsxc, Fckx-l l cddc  
 jhdths` [i l c khl hbghn`kvh mc l xkfcngcnvc xl hl Cgx™ -h  
 gc/kcj 'zkvcnl cdx hvcj phg`kh shgl `a mc fw fhncvc pz;l ]`-  
 ohnj l `av`ghn. Xa u denc ]hjl `av` ;x, Cpgx-fedj xl hl ghn`k`  
 semckgcnx, axcgcnx mc ukghn`k xl hl cjxkc xkhkhkghn` vh cbhf-  
 cbxddcjc, xa;ck[cdc l c/nwb rudwf [cl xddcjvck wbhrga-  
 v`n`nv`ghn. Fi ji k fwkghngh fegc, phb`nvh l zm[wv ughk  
 jhnxogcnvc Cpgx-fedj xl hl ghn`kvhck ck ;x]x; fegc sh`l h 'zbc  
 vcdl xn. Fw vh 'zsjcnxn ;x, Hgghp-jhhgh ukghn` vuynvvhk vh pcn  
 kzm bhpnnx mc fhjxkx ]xn; xkgx; gcnvck jcl xbgcl xa, ukghnh xsl cj  
 l crhl ` - 'i khps`bg`r fhy`aghl `av`n.

Fw vh Cpgx-fedj l c;jcfx hnv`[`ghn`k`k |edycl fcnxk Cpgx-  
 fedjxkvck ughk xl hl ghn`k xsl cj mc 'i khps`bg`y`kh vhxk ck  
 l i pi l vcgxcgcnxkvck xfhncjvxn. Suknh;` fzgl cvc ukghn`k  
 xl hl cjx fhncsxkvc |edycl fcnx-C;ncl vck kcrq ugwkxhk fc/bx  
 ncmhdcjgcx redv evc[cdx;. Phgfw;x Hgghp-jhhgh |edycl fcnxk  
 fhncsxkvc fegc fwdwnwn...

﴿وَمَا يَنطِقُ عَنِ الْهَوَىٰ ۖ إِنْ هُوَ إِلَّا وَحْيٌ يُوحَىٰ﴾

âU (|edycl fcn), pe] mhoj pcmh-pcmcs i bi kvck vkh'al`n. Vevx;gcnxkx  
 phl`s` ukh khbxg ughk mcpdvck fharh fxn aed vedxvxn.B<sup>1</sup>

|EDYCLFCNX-C: NCL i -XK ZBI KVCK SUKNH WGXG-  
 CLNXX JC/DXK UGWKLHS- LCSCGCSXKC {XVVXDDCJ  
 "ZSJCNLCSX

|edycl fcnx-C;ncl xk zbi kvck suknh âwgxc-cl nßxk jc/dxk  
 ugwk l hs` xgc cghrcvhn ughk ncmhdcjgcx redv evxf hnhav`nl hb-  
 vkh cmmcg, u pcbncjxk fw l zmbwdh [xv vx vxrrcj dejxnl csxkx  
 redv evxnx; ...

|edycl fcnvck suknh xl hl cj l cscgcsx Xsghl i l l cjx i ]i k  
 ck l i pi l xagcnvck fxnx vx ;x, Ncswgx-C;ncl mc u pcbncjxk  
 cjhnt`kvh ughkghnvkh pe] mhoj 'xbgx rhgl hl `a, wkwvwwgl h-  
 l `av`n. |edycl fcn pcjjh nxshgcjxk xg; vzmngcnxkvck fegc, fw  
 tx;xnvc ugl wavwn. Fegc ;x, cmmcgvc vc redv ugwkvwyyw ;xl x,  
 Fcdpcnc Hl xnx zbi ki k mc rcfxgcsxkxk Xsghl ` rcfwg ejl csxkx  
 fwkwkgh acnjgckvxnxvx ;x, |edycl fcnvck suknh pz;wl cj mc

<sup>1</sup> âKc[ l ß swncsx, hdc.3-4

âcl nßxk fñ psscsx ukghnh l cosws ugswk. Pumbc Pckctx vc  
|edycl fcnvck xsjcdxvx ; x, pz; wl cj mc oxghtcjxk fñ psscsxkx  
ukh mensxk.

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk zbi vc Xsghl h vc/mcjxkxk xg; vzm-  
gnxkvck, egc[c vc Xsghl [cl xddcjx jca; xg ejl c; fhncvc hg`khk  
fed/cjxk xg; 'i kgcxkvck fegc, zbi kvck suknh ncpfcngx;  
l cscgcsxkc [xv vx cpcl xddcj menl xavxn. U pcbncjxk Xsghl  
[cl xddcjx jca; xg ejl c; fhncvc hg`y` fed/cjxk xg; 'i kgcxkvck  
fw tx; xnv ugl hs`k` Fwohnx mc L i sgi l zb âScpxpßgcxkvck, Kx-  
shx, L h[c zb âSi kckß ; xjhfgnh`kvh, L hgx; âL i mcjjccß ; xjh`k-  
vh, Cpl cv âL i skcvßxkvck, fharhghn` vh vx`cn ; xjhfgnhv l fh-  
vc xfkx Shl xjvck fegc ncmhdcj evxngcn... â|edycl fcngc fw cshs-  
vh fed/cj ejvx; ; x, ukwk szbgcnxkx eavvxf xjhcj evc; ...]cjxkgx; vc  
mc hshkg`rvh, nhb` ugvwyw mc nhb` ugl hv`y` phgvhæ egc[c vc fw  
âcl nßvc ukwk Cpgx-fedjx xgc l i khrxac h`hnl hdhr.B<sup>1</sup>

l fhvc xfkx Shl xj ckshn`k âCrcfedx-; wfnhßvh fed/cj ejvxdx  
bhl hk uk x; x kctcnvck fñx vx.<sup>2</sup> Dejl xa kctcnvck hnj`r ughk  
ckshng` fñx rnw\ |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j -gc fed/cj evcn; ck  
fwdwnl wavw... âZb rzml mc rcfxgckxbxk fzdi ; gcnxkvck ughk  
uk x; x kctcn jcrvxl evxk.B Ukghn uk x; x kctcn se]xf jcrvxl  
ejvx; gcnx bhl hk |edycl fcn ukghnh fwdwnvw... âPcmhngcn Xsh ved-  
ycl fcnc bhl xk ugvwyw ; xl x, sxb vc zb rzml iki bik mc ukghn`k dho`k  
hvhl ghn`k`k bhl xkxsxkxb.B<sup>3</sup>

Fcgx, uk x; x kctcngx; ki rcfvhvk fñx ughk l fhvc xfkx Shl xj  
fed/cjxk acnjgcxkvck fñxkx fegc jcrvxl evxn... âFw âcl nßvc  
ukwk Cpgx-fedjx xgc l i khrxac ejl cdc; ...ß

Dejl xa x; x kctcn ; xaxkxk mc x; x rhv`k`k fed/cj ejl csxkx  
'zsjcnck fw scpxp pcvsvc |edycl fcnxk âfw cl nß vevx; vc

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, cp; hl ; xjh`, 4-[i [xgv, scp.163æ âCg-wsnw mcg-dwsnß  
(]cjxkgx; vc mc hshkg`rvh) xfhncsx âScpxpx L i sgi l Bi k Xl hnc ; xjh`kvh, 41-  
42-[x pcvsvcvxn. âSi kckx Kcshxß, fed/cj ; xjh`, fed/cj fhfæ âSi kckx xfkx  
L h[cß, [xphv ; xjh`, 2866-[` pcvxsæ L hgx; xk âL i mcjjccß ; xjh`, [xphv  
fzgl csx, cjjcnyxfw txg-[xphv fhf, 5-[x pcvxsæ âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 5-[x [xgv,  
scp.315, 316, 319, 321, 4-[i [xgv, scp.411æ âSxdni c/ghl xk-ki fcghß, l fhvckxk  
jcn[i l edx-phg, 2-[x [xgv, scp.3æ âJcpbxfß (Xfkx Csh; xn), 7-[x [xgv, scp.207, 219.

<sup>2</sup> Fho... l fhvckxk jcn[i l edx-phg, âXsjxd/hfß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.412æ âWsvwg-  
yhfcß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.106-107.

<sup>3</sup> âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.1221.

I crscvx pcl xk âcl nß I cscgcxvxn ; x, âFckx Shxvcß scrxtcsxkvc ukwk i sji kvc I i khrxac evxnvxgc.¹ Fw âcl nßxk cpgx vc u ; csgcnvxn ; x, I i jchg Hgghp ukghn` fw hdcvc fcdhk evxn...

﴿يَا أَيُّهَا الَّذِينَ آمَنُوا أَطِيعُوا اللَّهَ وَأَطِيعُوا الرَّسُولَ وَأُولِي الْأَمْرِ مِنْكُمْ فَإِنْ﴾

âHgghp mc Ukwk Ncswgwkx xjhcj evxk mc pcl Jxkxk zbgcnxkxbvck ughk âwgxg-cl ncß (vc xjhcj evxk).²

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i unhvh (dc/kx âCrcfcß fed/cjxk-vc) zbi kvck suknh;` âwgxg-cl nßxk ; xl ugl hs`k` – I i cddck px; I cj mc I csgcpcjgcnc 'znc – jc/dxk ejl cl csxkc fhoh hdh-nhr, ukghnvhk fegc fed/cj hgv` ; x, jc/dxk evcn; ck, ukwkgh I i khrxac mc I i fhnxbcde rhgol hs`kghn. } i k; x âmcgxddx cl nß, dc/kx zbi kvck suknh i l l cjc ncpfcngx; ckshn rcfxgcxkvc vedxgvx, fcg; c vc u 'i kvc fed/cj evckgcxk fc/bxgcx ukwk jc/dxk ugwk l hskh vzbc fxgl cbvxgc.

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i âCrcfcß fed/cjxkvck cmmcg, egc[c vc ukvhk kxsfcjck ; x]x; ughk fxn rnw\vh zbi kvck suknh;` âmcgxddx cl nß I i cddck ejl xavx. Fxnk[x vctc zb dho`k hvhl ghn`k` mc rupwl -crncfhs`k` Xsgl h vc/mcj ejvxdx bhl hk ugl wavwn. Fegc ; x, Juogw I i pcvvsxgc mc sxnc dhhkhghn, u [i l gcvc Jcfcnx, Xfkx Csh; xn, Xfkx Csx, Xfkx : csxn, L i jjcrx Pxxvx mc fharhghn³ Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfxk fegc fwdwnvwykw ncmhdcj evxngcn... âMc ckbxn camcjc; cg-crncfxkß hdcx (âAi cnhß swncsxkxk 214-[i hdcx) khbxg ughkvh |edycl fcn l ckx ]hy`n`f fwdwnv... âDh Cgx! Hgghp l ckc tcnl hk menl xavxn ; x, zb dho`k hvhl ghn`l` mc rupwl -crncfhl` (xghpx cbhfvhk) runowvhl . L ck vc fwkvhk ]cjxkgxdc vi avi l mc fxgvxl ; x, ukw denxkc dejxnscl , ouah`cgl cb xagcnxk shpxfx ugh[hyhl . Fwkh 'znc vc

¹ Fw ; xjhfk cmmcgcnxkvc âScrxtcß, Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj, ckshn mc I i ph[xnxk rcfxgc ]hn`al hghn` fzgl csxkc fhoh fxgcnsxkxb.

² âKxshß swncsx, hdc.59. Fw hdckxk jctsxnx mc ukwkgh cghrcvhn |edycl fcnvck kcrj ugwkxk pcvvsxgc suknvhk redv evc[cdx; .

³ âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, Hmnu`h ]h`, 3-[i [xgv, scp.1771-1772â âJhnnox xfkx Csh; xnß, L cpl wvxkxk jcprrx, 1-[x [xgv, xl hl Cgx ™ -`k jcn[i l edx-phg`â âJhnnox xfkx Csxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.222â âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnp (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 3-[i [xgv, scp.263â Xfkx : csxnk jhnnox, 3-[i [xgv, scp.39. U, fc/bx pcvvsxgcxk I i cddck dengcnxkx xojxshnh shghnhr â; cbh-; cbhß (dc/kx txghk-txghk szbgcn) vel xavxnâ â: ckbi g-i l l hgß (L i jjcrx Pxxvx), 15-[x [xgv, scp.100, 115, 116â âSxnedx Pcgcfxddcß, Xsgl xddc ; xjhfohks`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.285.

fw xax jc/oxnc shgv`l , kcpdhcj { cfnhxg dekvck 'cgxf vevx...âDh  
 Lipcl l cv! C'cn sckc cl n ugwkhh aedx denxkc dejxnl csck,  
 |cnmcnvx'hn sckc cbhf menc[c; vxñ.ß Xkvx fxn rudwk fwwv xgc  
 fxn rhf oznc; fxaxn mc fxn rhf hdnhk vh phb`ngh. Suknh Cfvi g-  
 l ijjcgxf zmghvghn`k` l ckxl dhk`l h ]hy`n ;x, ukghngh  
 vkh`a`l , l ckc hkv ugwkhh aedgcx ukghnh ]hjv`n`l .ß

U pcbncjxk 'zsjcnxagcnxkx denxkc dejxnvxl mc suknh  
 (jcrnxfck) r`no kctcn ughk rupwl ghn`l ` u pcbncjxk dhk`kh  
 ]hy`nv`l . Ukwk cl xgcxkvck Cfw Jhgxf, Pcl bc, Hffhs, Cfw  
 Gpcpf vc ukghn`k hnhs`kvh vxv. Rupwl -crncfh d`y`av`rvhk  
 suknh l ckc fwdwnvw ;x, jchl ` h`hn`l desxkgcn. Lck ukw  
 h`hnv`l , denc rudvwywl bhl hk |edycl fcn ozncdxk cjxkvck  
 fxn jx; c 'zji nvi , hyb`kvh ]edkcvx mc ;hshk`k r`nhy`kh rudwf  
 suknh fwdwnvw...âHgghp`k hv` xgc fhaghd`k!ß Ukghn`k phl`s`  
 dedxf vudvwghn, l ck ukghn`k cgxkxk denxkvck fharh fxn den  
 'znl invil . Cgxkxk [hk` ri vncj cgcnxkvc ughk Hgghph hkv  
 ugswk ;x, u ;xagcnvck pcn fxnx ukghn`k phl`s` i]i k  
 phb`nghv`y`l rcvcn del c; dedxnvxl Suknh fwdwnvw...âUkghnh  
 hdnhk men, x]sxkgcn.ß Hdnhk rhf`k` 'cjxnvxl , vudwk[h x]vxgc.  
 Hgghph hkv ugswk ;x, ukghnvkh pcn fxnx ughn`k phl`s` i]i k  
 phb`nghv`y`l rcvcn jc; gx; vc x]xnvxl

|edycl fcx-C;ncl i ukghngh vkh`al hr xsjcdckvc  
 Cfw Gpcpf ukw rhfhrghdnhr vevx...âVusjwkwb sxbx kc jeb sepn  
 ejvxlß Phl`s` vhy`g`av`. |edycl fcx-C;ncl i fxn szb  
 vel cvx, ukwk shfhp` 'i k dekc fwdwnvw...âDh Cgx! Eaxjvxdxk  
 ;xl x, fw ;xax vkh`al hrvh l ckx rhfhrghv, ukghngh szpfcj  
 ejl cbvck rhfhr phl`s`k` vhy`jv. Xkvx vi kck;x ;xl x del c;  
 phb`ngh mc ukghn` l ckxl dhk`l h ]hy`n.ß Lck |edycl fcxk  
 tcnl hk`kh cl cg ejvxl mc ukghn` ]hy`nv`l , suknh fwdwnvw...  
 âDel cdx 'cjxn.ß Del cdx ukghn`k dhk`kh h`hnv`l . Vi kck fha  
 menckgcxk phl`s` fw 'i kvc edkxgc jc;nhn ugwkvw. Phl`s`  
 dedxf vudvwghn. Suknh l ckc fwdwnvw ;x, hdnhk` 'cjxnxl . Lck  
 hdnhk` 'cjxnvxl , phl`g`rgh x]xf vudvwghn. |edycl fcn ukghngh  
 szpfcjc fhaghd`f vevx...

يَا بَنِي عَبْدِ الْمُطَّلِبِ إِنِّي وَاللَّهِ مَا أَعْلَمُ شَأْبًا فِي الْعَرَبِ جَاءَ قَوْمَهُ بِأَفْضَلِ مِمَّا قَدْ جِئْتُكُمْ بِهِ  
 إِنِّي قَدْ جِئْتُكُمْ بِخَيْرِ الدُّنْيَا وَالْآخِرَةِ وَقَدْ أَمَرَنِي اللَّهُ تَعَالَى أَنْ أَدْعُوَكُمْ إِلَيْهِ فَأَيُّكُمْ يُؤَاوِرُنِي عَلَى  
 هَذَا الْأَمْرِ عَلَى أَنْ يَكُونَ أَخِي وَوَصِيِّي وَخَلِيفَتِي فِيكُمْ ؟

åEd Cfvi-g-Lijcgxf zmghvghn! Hgghph hkv ugswk ;x, cncfgcn hnhs`kvh egc fñ  
 [hmhk` jhk`l`nhl ;x, zb rzml i i]ik lckxl sxb 'cjinvxdl vck vc dhoad`s`k`  
 'cjinl xa ugswk. Lck sxbk i]ik vikdh mc hoñcj oednìkx 'cjinl xacl. Lijchg  
 Hgghp lck tcnl hk menl xavñ ;x, fxb sxb ukh jcnct ]hy`nhr. Sxbgcnvck phks`  
 fñx fw åcl nßvc lck ;zl c; evcn ;x, lckxl rhnvha`l, mcsxl mc lckvck  
 suknh sxbk hnhk`bvñ ocgxtcl ugswk?ß

Pcbncj Cgx <sup>TM</sup> vedxn...Ukghn`k pe] fñx [hmhf menl cvx. Uk-  
 ghñ`k hnhs`kvh dhavh phl`vhk ;x]x; ugvwywl phgvh, lck  
 vevxl ...åLck evcncl, dh Kcfxddcgghp! Lck sckxk mcbxnk mc  
 ;zl c;]xk ugh[hyhl .ß U pcbncj fudkw l w rw[hrghd`f vevx...  
 Pcrxrcjck, fw lckxl rhnvha`l, mcsxl mc lckvck suknh  
 sxbk hnhk`bvñ ocgxtcl vxñ. Ukwk szbgcnkx eavxf xjhcj evxk.ß  
 Pcbncj Cgx <sup>TM</sup> vedxn...Ukghn`k phl`s`hdhyh rhgo`f`i gc-`i gc  
 Cfw Jhgxfc vevxgcñ...åFw ;xax sck tcnl hk menñ ;x, ugwkwk  
 szbi kc rwghr hs`f xjhcj evcsck!ß

Fe/scjxk 3-[i xgxkvc fha menck fw phvxsc, |edycl fcñx-  
 C;ñcl i ukghn`ha;hn ac;xgvc Xsghl h vc/mcj ejvxdx xg;  
 d`y`k[hr vxv. Pcbncj egc fw d`y`k[hrvh zbi kvck suknh;`  
 xl hl` fcdhk mc zb dho`k rupwl ghn`kh jcrvxl ejl xavñ,  
 hl l h uk xgvck suknh, ckshnvhk Xsghl [cl xddcjx jca;xg ejl c;  
 phrr`kvh cpv-`edl hk hgvy` bhl hk ukw ha;hn ac;xgvc jc/dxk  
 ejl c;vck ]c;xkvx. }i k;x xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> ckshñ rcfxgcgcñxkvck  
 vedxgvx. Ukghn`k hnhs`kvh rcfxgc i swg-xvhncsx ph;xl ugvwywkñ  
 `znc |edycl fcñxk pcl xk rcfxgcvc ugl hdhk fñ acosk zb  
 mcthj`kvñ suknh ukghn`k ncpfcñ mc mcgxdd-cl nx ugh[hy`kh  
 vxñ fed/cj hgl hs`px;l cj mc l csgcpcjc wdywk vedxgvx. Fwkh  
 `znc vc fw l crhl vh pcl xk l xrvhñgh ;xthdcjgckvx mc  
 ukghnvñk fed/cj hghñhr fwdwnvñ ;x, fw åcl nß fhncsxkvc  
 ukwkgñ l i fhñbcd mc l i khrxacdc rhgol hs`kghñ. Gh;xk  
 fwnvh ukw zb dho`k rupwl -crncfhs`kh – Fcvñ rcbmcsxkvc zb  
 scphfcgcñx xgc h`hñv`y` l i ahmxncdc uoahn fñ szpfcjvc –  
 hdv`kghav`nv`. }i k;x u pcbncj Fcvñ l i phñxfcsxkvc vc xaxk  
 ho`n`k`k kc xgc kcjx[cgckc[cdxkx fxgvxdx phgvh, xaxk cmmcgxkvc  
 ke[c jcvfñ `zni gl csx fhncvc ukghñgh l camncj ejvx. (Fegc ;x,  
 l i ahmxnc rwnjhñv`rvñk suknh scphfcgcñx fw xaxk ho`n`kvñk  
 h`hp ejl xa mc l i anx;gcñk rcjgc dejñxgc[c;gcñ denx ukghñh  
 `zsjcnl xavñ). Fwnvh vh egc pcl xk [i n cl cg ejvxæ ]i k;x xaxk  
 ho`n` ukw i ]i k jhl l c/kvh ha;hn vxv mc ;zl c; ejl cdx

jc; [c Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k rcfwg evc[cdxkx fxgxnvx, hl l h fwkh fhol h-  
dhnh r zbi kvck suknh mcbxn, mcsx mc ocgxtckxk jc/dxk evxg-  
l csxkx ukwk xsghl x jcfgyhj dugwkvh ;zl c; vc/mcjxkx rcfwg  
ejl c;gc acnjgckvxnvx ;x, fw dugvh xsjcdck pcn ;cs rhfhyh  
vi asi k. Hl l h ukghn`k phl `s` fw xavck xl jxkh ejvx;gcnxkc  
mc dhgk`b Cgx <sup>TM</sup> fw xavc rhfhyh vi avi di kc 'znc |edycl fcn  
ukwk fudkwkw rw[hrghd`f dwohn`vh redv ugwkhhkghn` vevx mc  
rupwl ghn`kh fwdwnvw ;x, ukwk tcnl hkghn`kh xjhcy ejxkxgc.

Fwnh rcvcn |edycl fcnx-C;ncl i -xk zbi kvck suknh  
xl hl cj l cscgcsxkc ke[c [xvvxddcj 'zsjcnvxdx hdv`k ugvw... fegc  
;x, fxn denvc zbi kvck suknh;` xl hl ` ha;hn ac; xgvc jc/dxk  
evxn, fharh fxn denvc vc fed/cj hg`n ;x, ukwkgh fw acl nß  
fhncsxkvc l i khrxacdc rhgol hs`kghn. Fw x;x phgvhk fharh  
acnhxjgcncv vc xl hl cj l crhl `kh 'zb vx;ckgcnxk rhna`s`kvh  
[xvvx l zmre jwjwf ukghn`k jc; gxtgcnxkx ncvv evxnvx.

|edycl fcnx-C;ncl i -xk zbi kvck suknh [hxxaxkgx; mc  
i l l cjc ncpfcngx; l cscgcsxkc kc rcvcn [xvvx cpcl xddcj  
menvxdxkx fxgl c; i ]i k u pcbncjxk l i phnxfcdc 'ejvxdx mc  
L cvxkcvc ugl hv`y` vzmncv, zb denxkc fxn kctcnx [hxxaxk  
jc/dxk ejl csx xgc cghrcvhn 'znvi di jcvfxnx hnhav`n`n`r.



L I PHNXFC ACNHXJXKVC | EDYCL FCN ; -XK  
 L CVXKVC: X { HKXAXKGCNX

*PX{NCJXK X: XK{X XGKVC*

Px[ncjxk x; xk[x xgxkxk sctcn hd`kvh Hgghp jcnctxkvck  
 |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -c [xphv h\hnl hyh vxhn x[hbc  
 menxgvx. U pcbncj l i ph[xngcngc fxngx; vc pcnc; cj evxf Ri neda  
 ; hnmhk`k`k dugwkw ; csvx mc Mcvvhk mc Cfmhdh rcvcn  
 xncgxgcvx.<sup>1</sup> U pcbncj fw xgvc fha menck l i phnxfcgnc 'evcn; ck  
 hahy`vh; `acosgcnx L cvxkvc zbi kc [hxxaxk jc/dxk ejl xavx...

1-L cvxkvcck ; ckhnvh ugvwyw uk fea 'i k cnbxkvc Sc/v xfkx  
 l fhvc Ocbnc[xkx zb [hxxaxk jc/dxk ejl xavx.

2-Ncfxi g-cmmcg hd`kvh fha menck Fcmhj rcbmcsxkvc Sc/v  
 xfkx L chb Umsxkx zbi kc [hxxaxk jc/dxk ejl xavx.<sup>2</sup>

3-: i nb xfkx { hfxn Tepnxkx (u, L cvxkc cphgxskxk l hg-  
 pedmhkgghn`k` rhncj evxf h\hnl `av`) jh\l hr i ]i k h\hny`y`  
 rcbmcsxkvc bhv ejvxdx rwghl ` – Bedv xfkx Phnxsckx zb [hxxaxk  
 rcnln menvx mc Sctmhkh rcvcn xncgxgcvx.<sup>3</sup> Gh; xk ukw jh\l hv`.

4-|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i Ri neda ; hnmhkghn`k`k  
 dugwkw fhyghl hr i ]i k Bwg-caxnc rcbmcsxkvc 'ejvxdx bhl hk  
 L cvxkvcck ohnx[ ughkvh Cfw Scgl c L cobwl xkx zb [hxxaxk  
 jc/dxk ejl xavx. Fcvn vzdia i vc fw ; hnmhk`k Ahl vkh  
 rhd`jv`y` bhl hk fha menl xavx.<sup>4</sup>

5-|edycl fcnxk L cvxkvc ugl hv`y` uk vurrwb 'i kgi ;  
 Fcvnx-; i fnh rcbmcsxkvc Xfkx l l l i L c; jwl w (ukwk 'zbgcnx

<sup>1</sup> Cfmh – L cvxkvcck 23 l xg l cshtcvc dengcaxn, Pcbncj |edycl fcnxk  
 hkhs` Hl ckckxk vc rcfnx unhvhv`n. Mcvvhk vh vx`cn fxn rcsfcckxk hv`v`n  
 ; x, {zptc xgc fxn 'i kgi ; dugw mhn, Cfmhvhk unhdh rcvcn l cshtc hgj`  
 l xgvxn. (âL z/[cl i g-fi gvkhß).

<sup>2</sup> Fcmhj Ahl dugw i bcxkvc dengcack {i pedkc vhyghn`kvhv`n. Ukwk  
 L cvxkc xgc thsgcsx vurrwb l xgvxn (fxn l xg vznv l xk bxnhv`n, jcrnxfck x; x  
 l xk l ejn).

<sup>3</sup> Sctmhk Fcvn rwdwghn` dho`kg`y`kvh dengcack fxn scpnhv`n.

<sup>4</sup> Bwg-caxnc, Dckfw/kwk dho`kg`y`kvh mc L cvxkckxk di b l xggdxkvc  
 dengcaxn. Cfw Scgl c Cfvi ggghp xfkx Cfvi g-cscv Ncswgx-C; ncl xk fxfxsx uygv  
 vx. U, cmmcg[c Pcfcaxsjhkh, suknh xsc L cvxkcdc px[ncj ejl xavx. Fcvn mc  
 l pi v vzdia agcnxkvc xajxnh; ejl xa mc ukvhk hgv`y` dhnghn scfcfxgc mcthj  
 ejl xavx. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âWsvwg-yhfcb ; xjh`kvh redv ugwkl wavwn.

; un xv) zb [hxxaxkx rcnhn menl xavx.<sup>1</sup>

6-Fckx Rcdki rh rcbmcsxkvc Cfx Gi fhfc Ckshnxkx zb [hxxaxkx jc/dxk ejl xavx.<sup>2</sup>

7-Scmxr rcbmcsxkvc vc Cfw Gi fhfckx zb [hxxaxkx se]l xavx. Fw rcbmcvc x; x di b hjg` xgc Cfw Si tdhkgh (u, L cvxkcdc 'cgxnvx) rhna`ghal hr i ]i k acpcnvck ]`ol `av`. Cfw Si tdhk hkv x]l xavx ; x, Fcvnvc zgvi ni gckgcxk xkxrh] `k` hgl hdhkh rcvcn cjxn mwnl hdh[hr, rhv`kghn` xgc dho`kg`r ejl cdc[c; . Gh; xk Cnxbc<sup>3</sup> ]hjv`rghn` bhl hk |edycl fcnxk pcnc; cj ocfcnxkx eaxjvxgc mc di k'i ggcal c; i ]i k wk ; xscgcxkx fuahgv`f rh]v`ghn. Fwkh 'znc vc pcl xk rcbmc Rcbmcjws-scmxr hvghkv`n`gv`.

#### PX{NCJXK I }I K{I XGKVC

8-Rxnrxcjwg-; wvn rcbmcsxkvc Xfkx l l l x L c; jwl w zbi kc [hxxaxk se]cnc; Lcpcncl hd`k`k unjhk[`g 'i ki Scgxl mc Rcjthk rcfxgcgcxkc vuynw pcnc; cj ejvx. Fw rcfxgcgcx rh]v`ghn mc pcbncj ukghn`k l hg-vzmgcjxkx rckxl cj hg`f shy-shghl hj 'enx rhd`jv`.<sup>4</sup>

9-Tcnhk rcbmcsxkvc vc Xfkx l l l i L c; jwl w zb denxkvc rudvw mc uk 'i k l i vvcjxkvc L cvxkcvck wbhrglav`. Vi a- l ckgen rh]`f vhy`g`av`y` bhl hk u pcbncj shy-shghl hj rhd`v`f 'cgvx.<sup>5</sup>

10-|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i Kc[v cdhgcjxkvc h`hnv`y` Bx-cl n rcbmcsxkvc Usl hk xfkx Ctmhk` L cvxkcvck zb denxk

<sup>1</sup> |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i Nhl hbhk hd`k`k i ]i kvc L cvxkcvck ]`ov`, l i phnxfc vc pcl xk hd`k uk devvxskvc fha menvx.

<sup>2</sup> Sxnc dhhkghn vel xagcn ; x, dcpwvxgcx L cvxkcdc 'cgvx; gcx bhl hk ukwk xsfccjck hg]hr dengcnxkvc l cs; wkghal `av`ghn, suknvhk ukwk phmhs`k` ouaghl hv`rghn`kh 'znc w[h dengcnc – Fckx-Kcbxn Jcphkh, Fckx-Ri nedbc xsc L cpnwbh ; z]vi gcx. |edycl fcnx-C; ncl [xphv evxf ukghn` unvhk ]`ohnvhk rcvcn pcl xk denvc vxvgcn. (âL z/[cl i g-fi gvkhß, âfcj-phkß mc âl cp-nwbß l hvvcx). Cfw Gi fhfc Fcaxn, dhowv Ncthcj xfkx Cfvi g- l i kbcn Crcfc fed/cjxkvc; x kcrxfgcxvck fxnx xv. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âWsvwg-yhfcßvc redv ugwkl wavwn.

<sup>3</sup> Cnxb – L cvxkcvck; x ]zggcnxk hv`v`n. (âL z/[cl i g-fi gvkhß).

<sup>4</sup> Rxnrxcjwg-; wvn – Xnhr`k Phnnc l ckjcrsxxk dho`kg`y`kvh dengcack Fckx-Scgxl xk l cn; cbx khpxdcxvxn. L cvxkcvck unhdh sc; ; xb 'i kgi ; dugvwn. (âL z/[cl i g-fi gvkhß.)

<sup>5</sup> Tcnhk – Px[hb dugw i sji kvc dengcaxn mc Fckx-Scgxl xk l cn; cbxvxn (âL z/[cl i g-fi gvkhß mc âGxshkwg-cncfß).

rudvw mc Rcjthk rcfxgcsxkc vuynw pcnc; cj ejvx. Ukghn runowf rh]v'ghn mc |edycl fcn shy-shghl hj rhd'jv'. Fw rcbmcvc Lcvxkcvc uk 'i k l i vvcjxkvc hdn'gl `av`.

11-I pi v rcbmcxkvc Xfkx l l l i L c;jwl w fxn 'i k l i vvcjxkvc zb [hxxaxk jc/dxk ejl xa mc l pi v vhy'k'k cjc dxkvc l i anx; gngc l i phnxfc h\hnl `av`.

12-Pcl nhwg-cscv rcbmcxkvc vc Xfkx l l l i L c;jwl w zb denxkc rudl wa mc Cfw Si tdhkh l i phnxfcdc 'ejl xavx. } i k; x fegc ofcn ]hjl `av` ; x, u, Lcvxkcdc di ni a ejl c; tx; nxkvcvx. Gh; xk |edycl fcnc-C; ncl fw rcbmcvc Cfw Si tdhk` mc ukwk ; zl c; ]xgcnxkx jh\l hv`. l ] 'i k unhvh vdhkv`rvhk suknh Lcvxkcdc rhd'jv'ghn.

#### *PX{NCJXK VZNVl K{I XGXKVC*

13-Fckx-Kcbxn rcbmcxkvc vc Xfkx l l l x L c;jwl w zb denxkc [hxxaxk rudvw mc Fckx-Kcbxn rcfxgcsxkx uk fea 'i k l i vvcjxkvc l i phsxcvc shoghd`f suknh ukghn` pcl xk denvck ]`ohnj-v`.<sup>1</sup>

14-|edycl fcnc-C; ncl i i ] i k [ i Fcvn rcbmcxkvc Cfvi gghp xfkx Ncmhpc Ckshnxkx uk hgj` 'i k l i vvcjxkvc zb denxkc [hxxaxk jc/dxk evnc; Fcvnvc sc; ; xb 'i k Cfw Si tdhk` 'zbgcvx. U, 'cgck xg Fcvnvc 'zni ac[c; gcnxkc mc/vc menl xavx. Cfw Si tdhk vh L c; ; cvck Ycsthkh 'cgvx, suknh L c; ; cdc rhjd'jv'.<sup>2</sup>

#### *PX{NCJXK FEAXK{X XGXKVC*

15-Bhjwn-nxrh/ rcbmcxkvc Usl hk xfkx Ctmhk` uk 'i kgi ; zb denxkc [hxxaxk jc/dxk ejvx mc Lcpcncl hd`k`k ukwkvh Lcvxkcvc ]`ov`. Cncfgcn ukwk rhfhy`kvkh rh]v'ghn, vhy`k fha`kvh mc vncgcncvc zbgcnxkc s`y`kh[hr se]vxgc.

16-Vuml cji g-[ckvcg rcbmcxkvc Xfkx l l l i L c;jwl w

<sup>1</sup> Fckx-Kcbxn dcpwvxgcnxkx emgcnx Rwfkh`k cjhnt`kvh;` Ycns l ckjrc-sxkvc mc ukvhk dwohn'ghnv dengcaxnvx. Rwfh ; ckvx xgc Lcvxckxk hnh-s`kvh x; x l xg l cshtc mhn vxv. (Lz/[cl i g-fi gvkh, âyc-nc-scß mc ârw-fhß l hvvcx).

<sup>2</sup> Cfvi gghp xfkx Ncmhpc Ckshnx Ocbnc[x – Crcfc fed/cjxkvc Fckx-Phnxs jhdths`k`k kcrxfx vxv. U, |edycl fcnc fi ji k vzdi agcnxkvc xajxnh; ejl xavx. Lwjc l i phnxfcsxkx i ] acpxv scn; cnvcgcnxkvc fxnx vxv. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âxsjxd/hfß mc âWsvwg-yhfcßvc redv ugwkl wavwn.

zbi kc [hxxaxk jc/dxk evcnc; l csxpx fxx acos ughk l ;edvcn  
xfkx Cfvi g-Lcgx; c jcnct dugh vi avi . (U, Lcvxkckxk jx[hncj  
;hnmhkgghn`kh pi [wl mc sctcnvc ughkgghn`k l hg-vzmgcjxkx rhncj  
evxnvx.) l ;edvcn fw ocfcnx eavck ;xl x rh]v`, ukwk rupwl -  
crncfhghn` vh \cnck-\cnckc vi avi gn. Pcbncj fw sctcnvc  
ukghnvhk fxx ;csx jh\l hv` mc fxx ke]c 'i k rhgv`rvhk suknh  
Lcvxkcdc rhd`jv`. Fw, |edycl fcxx-C; ncl j -xk Nul h  
scl jxkvc h\hmv`y` xg; rcbmc xvz.<sup>1</sup>

17-Fckx L i sjcgr rcbmcxkvc (fw rcbmc Lcnxx swghn`k`k  
cjhnt`kvh fha menl xavx) zb hbhv ejvxdx rwgw – Bedv xfkx  
Phnxsckx uk sc;;xb 'i k l i vvcjxkvc zbi kc [hxxaxk jc/dxk  
ejl xavx.<sup>2</sup>

18-Ockvc; l i phnxfcsxkvc Xfkx l l l i Lc;jwl w zb  
[hxxaxk se]vx mc Acmmhg (dhowv Bxg-rc/vc) hd`kvh Ockvcdxk  
x]cnx jcnctxkvc Cpbhf xgc l i phnxfcdc fhaghv`.

19-Fckx Ri nedbc rcbmcxkvc Cfw Ncpcl Rxthnxkx zb denxk  
rudvw mc uk fea 'i k l i vvcjxkvc unhk` l i phsxncdc hgv`.<sup>3</sup>

#### *PX{NCJXK HGJ-K{-XGXKVC*

20-Csthk`k dho`kg`y`kvh fha menck Fckx-Gcpdhk rcbmcxkvc  
Xfkx l l l i Lc;jwl w uk vzvz 'i k l i vvcjxkvc zb [hxxaxk  
jc/dxk ejl xa mc fw l i phnxfcvck shy-shghl hj rhd`jl `av`.<sup>4</sup>

21-Bx-rcvcn rcbmcxkvc fea 'i k l i vvcjxkvc Xfkx l l l i  
Lc;jwl w zbi kc [hxxaxk jc/dxk ejl xavx.<sup>5</sup>

22-Pi vedfxddc rcbmcxkvc vc Xfkx l l l i Lc;jwl w zb

<sup>1</sup> Vuml cjwg-[ckvcg – {ckvcg l ckjrcsxkvc jx;xgck mc cnhbxx fea  
tcnscoc ]hjhk fxx rhghk`k hv` xvz. Unhvhk Vcl carc rcvcn devvx, Lcvxkcdc  
rcvcn xsc uk fea 'i kgi ; dug xvz. Fho... âLz/[cl i g-fi gvkhß, âvum-l cjß  
l hvvcxæâJckfxpwg-canhtß, fw rcbmckxk acnpxkvc.

<sup>2</sup> Fw sw xgc Lcvxkc hnhs`kvh jcrnxfck vurrwb l xg l cshtc mhnv`n.

<sup>3</sup> Cfw Ncpcl "i gsil xfkx Pcsxk. U, |edycl fcxx Lcvxkcdc  
'cgxaxkvc suknh Xsghl` rcfwg ejl xavx. l pi v l i phnxfcsxkvc vzdi ack  
bhl hk fuyhb`kh fxx uo vcdl xa, |edycl fcx zb hy`b swdwkw ukh  
si njvi ;vck suknh acth jh\l `av`. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âWsvwg-yhfcß  
;xjhf`kvh redv ugwl wavwn.

<sup>4</sup> Fho...â{cl pcncjwg-ckshfß (Xfkx Pcbi ), Lxxsn ]h\`, 1382, scp.196-197.

<sup>5</sup> âBx-rcvcnß Lcvxkc-Oedfcx dugw i bcxkvc dengcaxn.

denxkc rudl wavw.<sup>1</sup>

*PX{NCJXK DEVVXK{X XGXKVC*

23-|edycl fcnx-C;ncl i L cvxkcvck jcrnxfck vurrwb  
l xg l cshtcvc dengcack Oedfcn rcbmcsxkvc Sxfh xfkx l nti jckx  
zb denxkc rudvw. Oedfcn rhghghn`k` tcjp ejvx;vck suknh  
Mhvxg-rwnhdh vuynw xncgxgcvx. Unhk` vh fxn ke]c 'i k  
l i phsxcvc shoghv`rvhk suknh tcjp ejvx, suknh Jcdl h  
cphgxskc jcnct pcnc; cj evxf ukghngh si gp fhyghv`. Jcdl hvhk  
Ahl h rcvcn sc; ;xb 'i kgi ; dug xv, Mhvxg-rwnh vh Jcdl h-  
L cvxkc dugw i sji kvc dengcaxnvx.<sup>2</sup>

24-l l ncji g-rcbhvh Sxfh xfkx l nti jckx zb denxkc  
rudl wavw.<sup>3</sup>

*PX{NCJXK SC: : XBXK{X XGXKVC*

25-|edycl fcnx-C;ncl i L c; ;ckx tcjp evck bhl hk  
Cfw Ncpcl Ckshnxkx zb [hxxaxkx jc/dxk ejl xavx.

26-L c; ;ckx tcjpxkvc suknh vh Pikedk rcbmcx i ]i k  
Pumbkh 'ejvxdx bhl hk dekc vc Cfw Ncpcl x zb denxkc  
[hxxaxk jc/dxk ejl xavx.

27-Jcfw; l i phnxfcsxkvc – L cvxkckxk vuoshk tcnscogdxkvc  
dengcaxn – Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgx<sup>TM</sup> -` zb [hxxaxkx jc/dxk  
ejl xavx. Fw vh u pcbncjxk h\hmv`y` ho`n`k[` rcbmc xv. C'cn  
Oedfcn mc Mhvxg-rwnh rcbmcgcnxkx hdn`g`rvh peshf ejsc; , u  
pcbncjxk h\hmv`y` rcbmcgcn xdxnl x sc; ;xb, c; s phgvh xsc xdxnl x  
devvx ugwn.

\*\*\*

Fxb |edycl fcnx-C;ncl i -xk L cvxkcvck ugl hv`y`  
bhl hk zb denxkc jc/dxk ejvxdx [hxxaxkgnx L cs/wvxxkxk dhbv`y`  
âCjjckfxpw mcg-xanhtß ;xjh`kvk redv ejvx; . Ukwk ;xjh`kvk  
redv evxgck [hxxaxkgnxk hvghn` fc/bck shxn jhnxo]xgcnxk redv

<sup>1</sup> |edycl fcnx-C;ncl i i l nc cl cggcnxkx denxkc dejxnl c; i ]i k  
Bxg-rc/vckxk fxxkvc, fhbhn enjcsx 'i ki pcnc; cj ejvx. L i anx; gcn ukwk  
L c; ;cdc vxog ugl hs`kh l hke ugvwghn mc u pcbncj L c; ;cvck vurrwb l xg  
l cshtcvc dengcack Pi vedfxddc hvg` fxn denvc viacn`c shgv`. Suknh  
Pi vedfxddc si gpi fcnrcnln evxgvx mc rcnlnh hg`kv` ;x, 'cgck xg i l nc  
cl cgxx denxkc dejxnsxkgn.

<sup>2</sup> Fho...âWsvwg-yhfcb, Sxfh xfkx l nti jckxk jcn[i l edx-phg`.

<sup>3</sup> |edycl fcn Bxg-rc/vckxk hgj`s`kvh pcnc; cj ejl xavx.

ejvx; gcnx xgc tcnrgckxn. Gh; xk XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -k Jcfw; rcb-  
mcsxkvc; x [hkxaxgx; I cscgcsxkx pckfcgxgcnxk ncxsx Cpl cv xfkx  
Pckfcg vc redv ejl xavxn. U, zb āL i skcvβxkvc Sc/v xfkx Cfx  
Mcrrhsvhk ncmhdcj evcnc; vedxn... |edycl fcnx-C; ncl Jcfw;  
rcbmcsxkc 'evckvc Cgxkx L cvxkvc zb [hkxaxkx jc/dxk ejvx. Cgx  
vevx... āDh Ncswgcgghp! Xsjcl xncI ; x, I cksxb pcn phks` fxn denc  
'evcsxkxb.β |edycl fcn fwdwnvw...

أَوَمَا تَرْضَى أَنْ تَكُونَ مِنِّي بِمَنْزِلَةِ هَارُونَ مِنْ مُوسَى إِلَّا أَنَّهُ لَا نَبِيَّ بَعْدِي

āXsjcl cbsckl x ; x, sckxkgc I ckxl I ikhsxfcjxl Phnwkgħ L wshk`k I ikhsxfcjx  
; xl x ugswkæ fw tcnrgc ; x, I ckvck suknh pe] fxn \edycl fcn ugl hdh[hrv`n?!B<sup>1</sup>

Fw I cbl wkw Fwohnx vc zbi ki k āScpxpβ ; xjhF`kvħ Sc/v  
xfkx Cfx Mcrrhsvhk ncmhdcj evcnc; vedxn... ā|edycl fcnx-C; ncl  
Jcfw; h 'evckvc Cgxkx zbi ki k [hkxaxkx jc/dxk ejvx. Cgx vevx...  
āL ckx wahrghn`k mc rhv`kghn`k hnhs`kvħ rudwf 'evxnsck?!B  
|edycl fcn fwdwnvw...

أَوَمَا تَرْضَى أَنْ تَكُونَ مِنِّي بِمَنْزِلَةِ هَارُونَ مِنْ مُوسَى إِلَّا أَنَّهُ لَا نَبِيَّ بَعْدِي

āLc'cn xsjcl cbvxkl x ; x, sckxkgc I ckxl I ikhsxfcjxl Phnwkwk L wshdh  
I ikhsxfcjx ; xl x ugswkæ fw tcnrgc ; x, I ckvck suknh pe] fxn \edycl fcn  
ugl hdh[hrv`n?!B<sup>2</sup>

Pcl ]xkxk L i sgi I vc zb āScpxpβ ; xjhF`kvħ Sc/v xfkx Cfx  
Mcrrhsvhk fegc ncmhdcj evxn... |edycl fcnx-C; ncl rcbmcgcnxk  
fxnxkvc Cgxkx zb [hkxaxkx se]vx. U vevx... āDh Ncswgcgghp! L ckx  
rhv`kghngh mc wahrghngh rudwf 'evxnsck?!B |edycl fcn ukh  
vevx...

أَوَمَا تَرْضَى أَنْ تَكُونَ مِنِّي بِمَنْزِلَةِ هَارُونَ مِنْ مُوسَى إِلَّا أَنَّهُ لَا نَبِيَّ بَعْدِي

āLc'cn xsjcl cbvxkl x ; x, sckxkgc I ckxl I ikhsxfcjxl Phnwkgħ L wshk`k  
I ikhsxfcjx ; xl x ugswkæ fw tcnrgc ; x, I ckvck suknh pe] fxn \edycl fcn  
duovwn?!B<sup>3</sup>

Fegcgx; gc, hdv`k ugwn ; x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j

<sup>1</sup> āL i skcvx Cpl cvβ, 1-[x [xgv, scp.177.

<sup>2</sup> āScpxpx Fwohnxβ, fcv/wg-ocgr ; xjhF`, Jcfw; rcbmcsx fhF`, 3-[i [xgv, scp.58.

<sup>3</sup> āScpxpx L i sgi I β, tcbhxgws-scphfc ; xjhF`, tcbgw Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf  
fhF`, 32-[x pcvxsa āL i skcvx Cfx Vhmwvβ, 1-[x [xgv, scp.29ā āPxgdcji g-zmgxdhβ,  
7-[x [xgv, scp.195-196ā āL i skcvx Cpl cvβ, 1-[x [xgv, scp.172, 182, 330, 4-[i [xgv,  
scp.153ā āJhnox Fhyvhvβ, 11-[x [xgv, scp.432ā āOcshxsw Kcshxβ, scp.8 mc 16ā  
āJcfcrhjβ (xfkx Sc/v), 3-[i [xgv, 1-[x pxssc, scp.15.

rcbmcgcnxk pcn fmxkvc, pcjjh Lcvxkcvck fxn ke]c 'i kgi dc  
 hdn`gshdv` fegc, pz; l ck zbi kc fxn kctcnx [hxxaxk jc/dxk evxnvx  
 ;x, u pcbncjxk Lcvxkcvck ugl hv`y` mhojghnvx u acosc l i nh[xcj  
 ejxkxgc. U pcbncj pcjjh fxn 'i k, dhowv 'i ki k fxn pxsscsxkx  
 [hxxaxk jc/dxk ejl cvck Lcvxkcvck ;ckhnh ]`ol `nv`. Fegc ;x,  
 l pi v l i phnxfcsxkvc fegc ugl wavw, phgfw;x l pi v vhy`  
 Lcvxkckxk x;x ;xgul ejngxdxkvc dengcaxn. U pcbncj pcl xk  
 dugwk dho`k mc hdn`gl h l i vvcjxkxk r`sh ugl hs`kh  
 fhol hdnhr, dekc vc zbi kc [hxxaxk jc/dxk ejl xavx. Pcjjh  
 Lcvxkckxk zbi kvc fha menck mc ukwk cjhnt`kvx ockvc;  
 rhb`gl hs` xgc sukh ]hjkh Ockvc; l i phnxfcsxkvc vc zb denxkc  
 fxn kctcnx jc/dxk ejl xavx ;x, [hl hhj ukh l i nh[xcj ejxkxgc.

Vel cgx, c'cn |edycl fcxk pcl xacgx; hvcjx fegcvxnc mc  
 zbi ki k pcjjh dhn`l 'i kgi ; sctcnxkvc, dhowv Lcvxkckxk  
 vhoxxkvc ugvyw phgvh fegc, l i phnxfc xagcnxkc fha` rhn`av`y`  
 i ]i k Xsghl i l l cjxkx zb phg`kh fuaghl `nsh, ukvh vi kdhvhk  
 'ejvx; vck sukh cfcvddcjc rcvxn ukghn` zbgcnxkc pcmhgc  
 ejl csx mc zbi kvck sukh ukghn i ]i k fxn ncpfcn jc/dxk  
 ejl cl csx hyghs`ykh fxn xavxnl x?! Fw l zmbw sukh;` fzgl cvc  
 hnhav`n`gh[hrv`n.

|EDYCLFCNX-C: NCL ; -XK ZBI KVCK SUKNH MCGXDDX-  
CLNX JC/DXK EJLCSX XGC CGHRCVHN KCRG UGWKHK  
NCMHDCJGCN

Fw fzgl cvc ; e]l xa \edycl fcngcnxk zbgcnxkvck suknh mcsx  
mc mcgxddx-cl n jc/dxk ejl cgcnx fhncvc 'znvi di jcvfxngcnx  
redv evxnx; ...

*CMMCG: X I L L C J G C N V C M C S X D D C J*

Lcs/wvx Hvcl <sup>TM</sup> -vhk pcbncj Ohjcl ; -c rcvcn  
\edycl fcngcnxk [hkxaxk mc mcsxgcnxkx hnv`[g ac; xgvc fcdhk  
ejl xavxn. Ukghnvhk fc/bxgcnxkx fwnhvh redv evxnx; ...

Pcbncj Hvcl <sup>TM</sup> -`k mcsxsx Pxfcjwggghp xv x ; x, xfnhkx  
vxgxkvc Aeds hvghk`n.

Pcbncj Xfnhpxl <sup>TM</sup> -`k mcsxsx Xsl hxg, Dc/rwf <sup>TM</sup> -`k mcsxsx  
Dwsxt, Lwsh <sup>TM</sup> -`k mcsxsx Dwac xfkx Kwk xfkx Ctnhxl xfkx  
Dwsxtvx ; x, Lwsh \edycl fcnxk hnmhv` ukwk cgedpxkc rxdhl  
ejl xavx. Xsh <sup>TM</sup> -`k mcsxsx Acl /wk, Ohjcl wg-Ckfxdh pcbncj  
L i pcl l cv L i sjct h ; -xk mcsxsx Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgx f  
<sup>TM</sup> mc ukwk kcsgxkvck ughk uk fxn zmghv`v`n.<sup>1</sup>

Fxb fwnhvh \edycl fcngcnxk mcsxgcnxkvck i ]i ki k phvxsc-  
sxkx redv ejl c; gc ; xthdcjgckxnx; ...

1-Hvcl <sup>TM</sup> -`k mcsxsx Aedsik phvxscx

Dc/rwfx Hvcl \edycl fcnxk Aedsc mcsxddcjx fhncsxkvck fegc  
dxb`n... âHvcl xk c[cgx ]hjhk bhl hk... Aedsx zbi kc mcsx jc/dxk  
ejvx.ß

Jcfcnx dxb`n... âPxfcjwggghp, dhowv Aeds Xfnhkx Hvcl <sup>TM</sup> -`k  
mcsxsx xv x. U, mcsxddcjx dxbv` mc dxb`ghk aedgcncv hjhs`  
Hvcl xk mcsxsx xv x.ß

---

<sup>1</sup> âXsfhjwg-mcsxddcjß (Lcs/wvx), Kc[ct ]h\`, scp.5-70. U, Cfviggghp xfkx  
Lcs/wvwx kcmcgcnxkvck ughk Cgx xfkx Pisedkvxn mc 346-[` xgvc mcthj  
ejl xavxn. âJcfcrhjx Ahtexddcßvc (2-[x [xgv, scp.307) ukwk l z/jcbxgc  
txnrscxkvck ugvyw redv ugwkwn. : cjfx âTcmhjwg-mctcdhjß ; xjhfkvh (2-[x  
[xgv, scp.45), Dhrwj Pcl cmx vc âLz/[cl i g-fi gvhkß ; xjhfkvh fw ; xjhfh  
xahnc evcnc; vel xagcn... âXl hl ghn`k hv`k` fcdhk evck âCg-fcdhkß ; xjhfk`k  
l i cggtx uvwn.ß Xfkx Pc[cnxk âCg-l xbhk ; xjhfkvh (4-[i [xgv, scp.224)  
vedxgn... âJc/dxkwg-ocgxtcß ; xjhfk`k l i cggtx uvwn. Fw ; xjh f` âCb-bcnxcß mc s.  
; xl x l ckfcgcncv âXsfhjwg-mcsxddcjß hvghkv`n`nghn.



L cs/wvx Hvcl xk Aedsc mcsxddcjxkx mc ukwk mcthj`k` fegc dnb`n... âHvcl mcsxddcjx Aedsc ]hjv`nhk bhl hk (Aeds) ukw 'xbgcjvx, runwdwf shoghv` mc Hvcl xk mcthj` 'cgxf ]hjv`...ß

Xfkx Csx n dnb`n... âAedsxk I c/khs` Pxfcjwgghpv`n ; x, u, Hvcl xk mcsxsx ugl wavwn. Hvcl xk c[cgx ]hjkh bhl hk Aedsx zb mcsxsx jc/dxk ejvx.ß

Xfkx : csxn dnb`n... âAedsxk I c/khs` Pxfcjwgghpv`n... Hvcl xk mcthj` 'cgxf ]hjkhv uhgw Aedsx zbi kc [hxxak jc/dxk ejvx.ß

2-L WSH <sup>TM</sup> --K MCSXSX DWAC XFKX KWKWK PHVXSCSX

1-Jzmnjhvh Dwac xfkx Kwk

â: xjhfx-I i rcvcsßxk âDwacß I hvvcsxkvc Jzmnjhvh kcrgek vedxgn...âDwac xfkx Kwk L wsh xgc fxngx; vc Sxkh vhy`kv xv mc u, Phnwkxk vzmni kvc fwbumh sxjhdxc hgwvc ugl hl `av`.ß

L wshk`k mhsxjcsxgc [hxxak jc/dxk evxgl csx phvxscsx âE/vhv Sxtxßkxk 27-[x fhf`kv fegc redv evxgn... L wsh Hgghp cnb evcnc; vevx... âXgxl hs evxncI ; x, fi ji k fcacn nwpghn`k`k Hgghp` – Dcpwmc fw [hl hhj` fxn ; csx jc/dxk ejsxk ; x, ukghn`k rhfhy`kv 'ejsxk, ukghn`k rhfhy`kv vhoxg ugswk mc ukghn` ]zgc ]`ohnjs`k, ukghn` vhoxg ejsxk ; x, Hgghp`k [hl hhj` ]ufhks`b rudwkghn ; xl x ugl hs`kghn.ß Hgghp L wshdh vevx... âNwp shpxfx ughk Dwac xfkx Kwkw jwj, cgxkx ukwk i sji kc rud, ukw ; hpxk Cg-Hbhn`k mc fi ji k [hl hhj`k pi bwnwkv shogh, 'zbgcnxkxk zki kvc ukh mcsxddcj ej. Zb xbcjxkvck ukh men ; x, fi ji k Fckx-Xsnhxg [hl hhj` ukh xjhj ejsxkgn. Ukw ; hpxk Cg-Hbhn`k pi bwnwkv shogh ; x, ukwk i ]i k WnxdcI xk pz; I i xgc Hgghp`k pi bwnwkv shwg ejsxk mc Hgghp`k tcnl hk` xgc u mc fi ji k Fckx-Xsnhxg ukwkgh ]zgc ]`os`k, ukwk tcnl hk` xgc vc vhoxg ugswkghn.ß L wsh Hgghp-jhhghk`k ukh cl n ejvxdx cshsvh cl cg ejvx... Dwackxk cgxkvck dh`av` mc ukw ; hpxk Cg-Hbhn`k mc fi ji k [hl hhj`k pi bwnwkv shoghv`, zb cgcnxkx ukwk i sji kc rudvw, Hgghp`k cl n ejvxdx cshsvh ukh mcsxddcj ejvx.ß<sup>1</sup>

Ukwk Fckx-Xsnhxgk xagcnxkx shpl hkh shgl hs`, 'znvi di jcvfxngcn, h`hnv`y` I i phnxfcgcn âSxtx Dwac xfkx Kwkwßwk 22-[x

<sup>1</sup> â: xjhfx L i rcvcsß, âCpvx-Cjxrß (Jzmnjh), Xfnhxx, : xgvhxx mc Dwkhk[hvkh thns[hdh jcn[i I c, Gukvuk, âVhnws-scjckcß ]h`, 1932-[x I xghvx xgx, scp.254.

fhf`kvh redv ugwkl wavwn.

2-Rwn/hkx-: cnxl vc Dwac xfkx Kwkw

(Xfnhkx ;cgl csx ughk) Dwac ;cgl csx Rwn/hkx-: cnxl vc cncf[c  
âCg-Dcsc/B ac;gxkvc (âCk/hl ß swncsx, hdc.86, âShvß swncsx, hdc.48)  
'cgl xavxn.

3-Xsghl x l ckfcgcnvc Dwac xfkx Kwkw

Dc/rwfx dhb`n...Hgghp-jhhgh L wshk`k mcthj ejvxdx bhl hk ukh  
tcnl hk menvx ;x, Dwac xfkx Kwkw Ri ffcji n-ni l l hkh vhoxx  
ejsxk, ukh shghl 'zkcnsxk, oedxn-fcnc;cx ukh kcrq ugwkswk  
vedc, cggcnxkx ukwk fcvckxkc rudswk mc mcsxddcj ejsxkæ ]i k;x,  
ukvhk suknh Fckx-Xsnhxgxk xagcnxkx shpl hkh shgh[hr.ß

3-|EDYCLFCNX-C: NCL ; -GC PCBN CJ LWSH™ --K  
MCSXGCNX HNHS-KVH UOAHNG-R

Dwac xfkx Kwkw L wsh xgc fxngx;vc Sxkh vhy`kvh xv x mc  
fwbumh \cncsjxa ejl cdc hgwwc ugl hl `av`. Hgghp-jhhgh L wshdh  
tcnl hk menvx ;x, ukw zbi kvck suknh mcsx jc/dxk ejsxk mc  
Hgghp`k fckvcgcnxkx ]ufhks`b rudwkghn ;xl x rudl hs`k.

Xl hl Cgx™ vh |edycl fcnc-C;ncl ; -gc âPcnhß  
l hyhnhs`kvh fxn denvc ugl wa mc pe] mhoj fij\cncsjgxdc  
hgwwc ugl hl `av`. Hgghp |edycl fcnc tcnl hk menvx ;x,  
âpc[[c]i g-mxvhßvhk rhd`vhk bhl hk ukw ph[`ghn`k 'zbi  
zki kvc i l l cxk zbi kvck suknh;` xl hl ` mc ncpfcnc jc/dxk  
ejsxk, i l l cxk shpxfsxb mc ncpfcncxb rudl hs`k. |edycl fcnc-  
C;ncl ; fw tcnl hk` Rcvxn-Owl vh w[h scsgc e/ghk ejvx  
mc ukw, 'cgc[c;vc redv ugwkx[hy` ;xl x, zbi kvck suknh  
mcgxcpv rcnln menvx. Fw i l l cxk Fckx-Xsnhxg xgc uoahng`y`  
fhncsxkvc vedxgck âFckx-Xsnhxgvc fha menck pcn fxn aed l ckl i l l cxl c  
vc fha menc[c;vxß - ;cghl ` vuynwvhk vh vi b'i kvi n!

4-PCBN CJ XSH™ --K MCSXSL ACL/WKWK PHVXSCSX

1-Xk[xgvc Acl /wk

âRhl wsx ;xjhfx l i rcvvcßvc uk kctn fw hvgh bx;n  
ugwkl wavwn ;x, ukghnvkh fxnx vc Acl /wk |ejnusvwn. Acl /wk  
;cgl csx Jzmnjhvh Scl /wk ;xl x redv ugwkwn. âL cjjhß  
xk[xgxkxk 10-[w fhf`kvh ukwk fhncsxkvc vedxgx...

âSuknh zbi ki k uk x;x ah'xnvxkx ]hy`nv` mc ukghn` ]xn;xk

nwph rhna` ri vncjgx ejvx ; x, ukghn` (Jxn; xk nwpghn`) J`ohnjs`kghn,  
pcn fxn ocsjcgxdc mc cbhf-cbxddcj c acth mensxkgcn. Uk x; x  
ncswgwkw hvghn` fegcvxn...â|ejnus hv` xgc l capwn ughk Acl /wk...ß

âDwpckkhß xk[xgxkvc, 21-[x fhf`k 15-18-[x kzl ncgcnxkvc redv  
ugwkwn ; x, Xsh <sup>TM</sup> ukw zbi ki k mcsxsx jc/dxk evcnc; vevx...  
âRudwkghn`l h Jufhkg`r ejlß L crscvx fw vxv ; x, l ckc xl hk  
'cJxnckgcnc ncpfcngx; ej.

âRhl wsx ; xjhfx l i rcvcsßvc fw vh redv ugwkwn ; x, pcbncj  
L csxp ukw ; xgsckx pxvhdcj ejl c; i J i k jc/dxk ejvx.

2-Xsghl x l ckfcgcncv Acl /wk

Dc/rwfx ukwk phvxscsxkx redv ejl xa mc ukw Scl /hkws-scth  
hvghkv`nl `av`n. L cs/vvx zb ; xjhf`k`k 1-[x [xgvxkxk 343-[i scpx-  
tcsxkvc fegc vedxn...âNwl xdcvc fxn |ejnus rcjgc dejxnvgvx ; x,  
ukwk dwkhk[h hv` Acl /wk, xfnhkx vxgxkvc; x hv` xsc Scl /hk  
xvx.ß

âLz/[cl i g-fi gvkhß ; xjhf`k`k l i cggtx Vednx-Scl /hk  
fhncsxkvc dhb`n...âVednx-Scl /hk Vcl carxk cjhnt khpxdcgcnxkvc  
dengcaxn mc Sck/hk (fw âVednß ukwk hv`khv`n) l csxpxgcnxk  
fzdi ; acosxddcjgcnxkvck fxnxvx ; x, ukwk Acl /wkws-scth  
ugvwywkw vel xagcn.ß

Fw i J mcsxkxk cpmhghj`k`k fxn pxsscsxkx fcdhk ejvx; ; x,  
; ejl xa \edycl fcngcnxk mcsx jc/dxk ejl csxkc vhn fxn ki l wkc  
ugswk. Ohjcl wg-Ckfxdh pcbncj L i pcl l cv j vc dekh  
bi pwn ejl xa fxn \edycl fcn ugh-ugh cmmcg; x \edycl fcngcnvck  
hdn` vedxgvx<sup>1</sup> ; x, zb i l l cjxkc âmcgxddx-cl nß jc/dxk ejl cvck  
mcthj ejl xa ugswk. U, pcl xk ; csvxn ; x, L cvxkcvc jca; xg ejvxdx  
; x)x; xsghl x [cl xddcjvc fegc, fc/bx phgghnv acpcncv ugl hv`y`  
bhl hk ukw ncpfcnsxb rudl wnvwl Fcgx, Ohjcl wg-Ckfxdhk`k mc  
Hgghp`k vx`cn \edycl fcngcnxkxk xsghl x [cl xddcjx pcl xacgx;  
ughnhr fuaghl hs` mc i l l cj i J i k zbi kvck suknh âmcgxddx-  
cl nß jc/dxk ejl cl csx vuynwvhk vh rednx-l i l ; i k fxn xavxn.  
C; sxkc, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j ukghn` l i ojcgxt xfhncgcngc  
mc l i ojcgxt dengcnvc jcrvxl evcnc; fwdwnl wavw. Fegc ; x, u,

<sup>1</sup> L i jchg Hgghp âCprhtß swncsxkxk 9-[w hdcxkvc fwdwnwn...

﴿قُلْ مَا كُنْتُ بِدْعًا مِّنَ الرُّسُلِ وَمَا أَدْرِي مَا يُفْعَلُ بِي وَلَا بِكُمْ إِنِ اتَّبِعُوا إِلَّا مَا يُوْحَىٰ إِلَيَّ وَمَا أَنَا إِلَّا نَذِيرٌ مُّبِينٌ﴾

âVe...Lck dekh bi pwn evck, shn \edycl fcngcnvck hdn` ughk fxn \edycl fcn vedxgc l .ß

pcvxsgcnxk fc/bxgcnxkvc zbi kvck suknh;` xl hl `k hv`k`, fc/bx  
pcvxsgcnvc xsc fi ji k xl hl ghn`k hv`k` vcrxr ac; xgvc redv  
ejl xavxn. Xl hl Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf<sup>TM</sup> -`k hv` ]c; xgck  
pcvxsgcn `cgc[c; tcsxggcnvc redv ugwk[hrv`n.

|EDYCLFCNX C: NCL i -XK MCSXSX, MCBXNX MC UKWK  
MCTHJ-KVHK SUKNH UKWK OCGXTCSX MC MCGX-CPVX

|EDYCLFCN i -XK PCVXSGCNXKVC MCSX

Fxnk[x fhfvh Fckx-Phaxl xk xghpx cbhfvhk runowvwgl hs` –  
xkbhn phvxscsxkx kcrj ejvx; . Unhvh redv ugwkvw ; x, |edycl -  
fcnx-C; ncl i ukghn`k pi bwnwkvh Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfx  
jcrvxl evcnc; fegc fwdwnvw... âPcrxrcjck fw l ckxl rhnvha`l , mcsxl  
mc l ckvck suknh sxbk hnhk`bvh ocgxtcl vxn. Fegc xsc, ukwk szbgcnkx earvxf xjhcj  
evrk.B

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i fw fcdhkgk zbi ki k ukghn`k  
hnhs`kvh;` mcsx mc ocgxtcsxkx jc/dxk ejvx, suknh ukghnh `zsjcnxa  
menvx ; x, (mcsxdc) xjhcj ejsxkgcn. L i jchg Hgghp vh fwdwnwn...

﴿مَا آتَاكُمُ الرَّسُولُ فَخُذُوهُ وَمَا نَهَاكُمْ عَنْهُ فَانْتَهُوا﴾

â|edycl fcnxk sxbk `c jxnvdxc pcn fxn aedx cob evrk.B<sup>1</sup>

Jcfcnhkx Shgl hk Thnsxkxk fegc vevxdxkx kcrj evxn...  
|edycl fcnx-C; ncl c vevxl ... âPcn fxn `edycl fcnxk mcsxsx  
ugl wavwn, fcs sxbk mcsxkxb ; xl vxn?B {hmf`l ` pcl xk mhoj  
menl cvx, fxn ke]c `i kvck suknh l ckx `znvi ; vc fwdwnvw...  
âShgl hklß Ukh jcnct rh]`f vevxl ... âFcgxlß Fwdwnvw... âFgxnsckl x  
; x, L wshk`k mcsxsx ; xl xv?B Vevxl ... âFcgx, Dwac xfkx Kwk xvß.  
Fwdwnvw... âKc i ]i k?B Vevxl ... âFwkh `znc ; x, u `i kvc ukghn`k  
hnhs`kvh ck fxgx; gxsx xvß.B |edycl fcn fwdwnvw...

فَإِنْ وَصِيَّ وَمَوْضِعُ سِرِّي وَخَيْرَ مَنْ أَثَرُكَ بَعْدِي وَيَنْجِزُ عِدَّتِي وَيَقْضِي دَيْنِي عَلَيَّ بِنُ أَبِي طَالِبٍ

âPcrxrcjck l ckxl mcsxl , sxngcnxl xk runwdhk, szb mc rcnhnghn`l h cl cg evrf  
fun[ghn`l `rhdjnhk ck dhoe` ; cs Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfvx.B<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âPcanß swncsx, hdc.7

<sup>2</sup> âCg-l z/[cl i g-; cfxnß, 6-]` [xgv, scp.221â âL c[l ci b-bcmhxvß, 9-[w [xgv,  
scp.113â âJcb; xncjw ocmhssxg-i l l cjß, scp.43, pcvxswk-kc[mh fhf`, Cpl cv  
xfkx Pckfcgxk ; xjhfwg-tcbhxgkvck kcrjck. Unhvh fegc vedxgx... âShgl hkh  
vevxl ; x, |edycl fcncvck sunwa `zn ukwk mcsxsx ; xl vxn?B Shgl hk  
|edycl fcncvck sunwavw mc u pcbncj fegc fwdwnvw... âL wsh xfkx Xl nhk`k  
mcsxsx ; xl xv?B Vevx; ... âDwae xfkx Kwk.B Pcbncj fwdwnvw... âPcrxrcjck l ckxl

Cfw Cddwf Ckshnxvck kerg ugwkwn ;x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl  
 i zb r`b` Thjxl cdc fwdwnvw...  
 أَمَا عَلِمْتَ أَنَّ اللَّهَ عَزَّ وَجَلَّ أَطَّلَعَ عَلَى أَهْلِ الْأَرْضِ فَاخْتَارَ مِنْهُمْ أَبَاكَ فَبِعَثَّهُ نَبِيًّا ثُمَّ أَطَّلَعَ الثَّانِيَةَ  
 فَاخْتَارَ بَعْلَكَ فَأَوْحَى إِلَيَّ فَأَنكَحْتُهُ وَاتَّخَذْتُهُ وَصِيًّا

âLc'cn fngl xnsckl x ;x, Hgghp-jhhgh den cpqkc kcbcn shgv` mc ukghn`k  
 hnhs'kvhk sckxk hjhk` se]xf \edycl fcnqdc l cf/ws ejvx?! X;xk[x vctc ukghnh  
 kcbcn evxf sckxk cnxkx se]vx mc mcpdgc l ckc fwdwnvw ;x, sckx ukh cnc mencl  
 mc ukw zbil c mcsx jwjhl ?!B¹

Cfw Scxv Oxvnx fegc vedxn... |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i fw-  
 dwnvw...

إِنَّ وَصِيَّيَّ وَمَوْضِعُ سِرِّي وَخَيْرَ مَنْ أَتَرَكْتُ بَعْدِي وَيُنْجِزُ عِدَّتِي وَيَقْضِي دَيْنِي عَلَيَّ بَنُ أَبِي طَالِبٍ  
 âPcrxrcjck l ckl mcsxl , sngcnxl x shoghdk, zbil vck suknh szbil c mc  
 rcnhnghn`l h mcth evxf fun[ghn`l` rhdjnhk ck dhoe` acos Cgddxfkx Cfx  
 Jhgxfvn.B²

Ckcs xfkx L hgx; vedxn... |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i fxn 'i k  
 vcsjcl hb hg`f x; x nc; cj khl hb r`gv` mc suknh fwdwnvw...

âFw rh`vhk vhoxg ughk xg; acos l ijcrxgcxk xl hl` , l iscg l hkghn`k seddxv  
 (hyhs`), vxkx ncpfcx mc mcsxgcxk sukwk[wswwvn.B Cgx 'cgvx mc pcbncj  
 |edycl fcn fwdwnvw... âCkcs! : xl 'cgvx?B Vevxl ... âCgx.B

---

mcsxl , mhnixl , szbgcnl x mc rcnhnghn`l` denxkc dejnck Cgddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfvn.B Pcl ]xkxk  
 fho...âCnxdhbwk-ki bncjB (L wpxff Jcfcnx), 2-[x [xgv, scp.234.

¹ âLc[I ci b-bcmhxvB (Pedscl x), 8-[x [xgv, scp.253, 9-[w [xgv, scp.165æ  
 âL i kjcocfx : ckbi g-i l l hgB (âL i skcvx Cpl cvBxk phaxdcsxkvc), 5-[x [xgv,  
 scp.31æ â: ckbi g-i l l hgB, tcbhxg ;xjh`f, 12-[x [xgv, scp.204, 1163-[i pcvxsæ  
 âL umswcjw cjnhtxg-pcvxsB ;xjh`f kvh Jcfcnhkxkxk âL z/[cl wg-; cfxnBxkvck  
 kcrgek (4-[i [xgv, scp.205)æ â{ cl /wg-[cmhl eB (Si dwjx), 4261-[x pcvxs.

Cfw Cddwf Ohgxv xfkx Bedv Ocbnc[x Crcfc fed/cjxkvc ugl wa mc  
 |edycl fcnxk fi ji k l i phnxfcgcnxkvc xajxnh; ejl xavx. U, â{ cl cgB, âSxttedkB  
 mc âKcpncmhkB l i phnxfcgcnxkvc Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k jcnctxkvc vx. 50-[x, dhowv 51-[x  
 xggcnvc âRusjkjckxddckxkB dho`kg`y`kvh mcthj ejl xavx. (âWsvwg-yhfcb, 5-[x  
 [xgv, scp.143

² â: ckbi g-i l l hgB, tcbhxg fh`f, 12-[x [xgv, scp.209, 1192-[x pcvxsæ  
 âL umswcjw cjnhtxg-pcvxsB (â: ckbi g-i l l hgBvhk kcrgek), 32952-[x pcvxsæ  
 âL z/[cl wg-; cfxnB (Jcfcnhkx), 6-[` [xgv, scp.271. Cfw Scxv Oxvnx Sc/v xfkx  
 L hgx; Ocbnc[x, |edycl fcnxk pcvxsxkx cbfcngcdckgcnvck fxnx vx ;x, 54-[i  
 xgv c mcthj ejl xavx. (âWsvwg-yhfcb, 5-[x [xgv, scp.211)

| edycl fcn semxk[gc hdhyh rhgo`f ukw rw[hrghv`...B<sup>1</sup>  
 Fi nedvc vedxn... | edycl fcnx-C; ncl i fegc fwdwnvw...  
 لِكُلِّ نَبِيٍّ وَصِيٍّ وَوَارِثٍ وَإِنَّ عَلِيًّا وَصِيٌّ وَوَارِثِي

âPcn fñ \edycl fcnxk mhnxsx mc mcsxsx ugl wavwn. Cgx vc l cklx mcsxl mc mhnxsxl vxñ.B<sup>2</sup>

Fedpcrxkxk âCg-l cphsxxw mcg-l cshmxß ; xjh`kvh fñ ncmhdcj redv ugwk l wavwn ; x, ukwk oi ghscsx fegcvxn... â{cfnhxg Hgghp jcnctxkvck fñ pcvddc xgc khbxg ugvw, | edycl fcn ukw zb cl x uyqsw mc mcsxsx Cgddxfkx Cfx Jhxf pcvddc ejvx.B<sup>3</sup>

CMMCG: X I L L C J G C N X K S C L H M X : X J H F G H N - K V H M C S X

Kcsn xfkx L i bhpñl âMcr/cjw Sxttedkß ; xjh`kvh mc Ocjxf Fhyvhvx âJhnxox Fhyvhvß ; xjh`kvh fegc ncmhdcj evxngcn... XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k unvsw Sxttedk dugwkvh swswbgwyh vi ]hn ugvw. XI hl ukghn` pcnc; cj ejvxvx, fzdi ; fñ vha`k dhk`kh ]hjv`ghn. Vha` u pcncjxk ; zl cdx xgc rhgv`nv`ghn mc ukwk hgj`kvhk ]`ohk swvhk vudwk[h x]vxgcñ. Ukghn`k dhk`kvh fñ vedn vc (hfxv l hyhns`) mhn vxñ. Vednxk shpxfx fw l cscgcvcck h'hp ugvwrvh vevx... âFw vedn fw swvhk fharh fñ aedgc jx; xg-l cdxfvxn. Fw swdw vh \edycl fcn, dhowv ukwk mcsxsxkvck

<sup>1</sup> âPxgdcj i g-zmgxdhß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.63â âJhnxox xfkx Csh; xnß, 2-[x [xgv, 484â âAcnpñ Kcp[i g-fcghycß, 1-[x ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.450â âL umswcjw cjhntxg-pcvxsß, 7-[x [xgv, scp.461.

Ckcs xfkx L hgx; Cfw Sc l hl c Ocnc[x. Fwohñ mc L i sgi l ukvhk 2286 pcvxs ncmhdcj ejl xagcn. Ukwk dha` mc mthj jhnxox fhncsxkv (90-93-[i px[nx] xoxgth mhnv`n. Ukwk jcn[l edx-phg` âXsxd/hfß, âWsvwg-yhfcb mc âCg-xshfcb ; xjhfgñ`kvh redv ugwk l wavwn.

<sup>2</sup> âJhnxox Vcl carß (Xfkx Csh; xn), cgdhbl h, 12-[x [xgv, 1-[x pxssc, scp.163. âXI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k jcn[i l edx-phg`ß, vcn[ ugwkxk`k 3-[i [xgvx, scp.5, Fednwj ]h`, 1395-[x xgâ âNxdhbwk-ki bncjß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.224.

Fi nedvcj xfkx Pcsxf scphfcgcnvck fñxvxñ. U, l pi v l i phnxfcsxkvck suknh L cvxkdc 'cgl xa mc | edycl fcnxk fi j i k l i phnxfcgcnxkv xajxñh; ejl xavñ. Suknh Fcsncdc 'evxf unhvh l cs; wkghal `av`. Vhph suknh l i phnxfc i ] i k Ounhshkh 'ejl xa, L cnmvc l cs; wkghal `av`. 63-[i px[nx] xgxkv mthj ejl xavñ. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg`, âWsvwg-yhfcb, 1-[x [xgv, scp.175â âJcpbxfwj-jcpbxfß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.432-433-vc redv ugwk l wavwn.

<sup>3</sup> âCg-l cphsxxw mcg-l cshmxß (L cpcl l cv xfkx Xfnhpxl Fedpcrx, 320-[x xgvck rhfhyy rcvñ phgx-pcdhjvh ugl wavwn)â L cpcl l cv Cfwgtcbg Xfnhpxl xk jcprrx, Rhpñc ]h`, 1380, 1-[x [xgv, scp.64-65.

fharh fxn ; cs ]`ohnj l hd`fv`n.<sup>1</sup>

Cmmcg; x ncmhdcjx jcsvxrgcdck vx'cn fxn ncmhdcj...

Kcsn xfkx L i bhp xl āSxttedkβ ; xjh`kvh fegc ncmhdcj evxn..  
āCgx <sup>TM</sup> Ni rrcvc Fcgx[<sup>2</sup> hv` fxn denvc (Tcnhj`k ; ckhn`kvh  
dengcaxn) ughk bhl hk vi acn`c shgv`. Fxn nhpxf zb szml xcsxkvck  
(l ukhsj`n`kvhk) ]`o`f Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h vevx... āFxbxl dhk`l `bv h fxn  
; xjh`f mhnv`n, hjh-fhfghn`l `b ukw fxbc xns rudl wa, Xsh xfkx  
L cndcl xk scphfcgcnx vc uowl wagh n. Ukw sxbc 'zsjcnxl l x?B  
Cgx <sup>TM</sup> vevx... āFcgx, x]xkvck kc mhn?B Nhp x fegc vevx...

āFxs l xgghpxn-ncpl hkxn-ncpxl . Xnhvcsx [hnx, d h b` s` ki twbgw  
ughk Hgghp, i l l xgcnxk hnhs`kvh ukghn`k zbi kvck fxn  
`edycl fcn l cf/ws evc[c; ; x, Ukwk : xjh`f`k` mc px; l cjxkx  
ukghnh zdncjsxk, ukghn` Hgghp dugwkh pxvhdcj ej sxk. U, kc  
; ufww ohsxddcjgxvx n, kc vha i nc; gxvx n, kc vc ; i ]c-fhbhnvh  
medxggckckæ \xsgdxk cmcbxkx \xsgx; gc menl xn, c; sxkc fhy`aghd`n,  
'i bcajc 'evxn. Ukwk i l l cjx pcl v-sckh vedckgcnvxn, pcn fxn  
phvxscvc Hgghp pcl v-sckh evcngcn, pcn fxn ekxagx-duowagw  
dugghnv h jcmhbz; hng`rgh jcpgxg (gh xghpc xggcgghp), jc; fxn (Hgghpw  
c; fcn) mc jcsfxpc (si fphkcgghp) l caywgvwng h n. Hgghp ukw  
fi ji k vi al ckgcnxkc rhgxf evc[c; vx n. Ukw rcfbx-nwp ejvxdx  
bhl hk, i l l cjx xojxght evc[c; , suknvhk x[l h evc[c; , kcp hdcj  
Hgghp`k xsjcvxdx mhojh rcvcn vdhk`f dekvck xojxghth vi ]hn  
ugh[hrgh n. Ukwk i l l cjxkvck ughk fxn ; xax fw Tcnhj`k  
; ckhn`kvhk ; e]c[c; æ u, dh oa` xagcnc cl n evcn, \xsgx; gcnvck  
]c; xkvxcn, phrr cshs`kvh l i ph; xl c di ni vcn, rcbhmcjvc  
ni amcj rcfwg ej l cb. Vi kd h ukwk kcbcnxkvck ; i gcdxk h`h n v`y`  
; i gvck vc vcdcnxb, zgi l ukwk kcbcnxkvck swswb hvhl `k sw  
x]l csxkvck vc gcbbcjgx mc hshkv`n. "xbgxkvck Hgghpv h k runoh n,  
cdhkv h oedxnohpg`r evcn mc Hgghp dugwkv h l cbcl l cj  
evckgcnxk l cbcl l cjxkvck pe] mhoj runol hb. Fw zg; ckxk  
xkshkghn`kv h k pcn ; cs u ]edycl fcnx 'zni f xl hk 'cjxnsc, ukwk

<sup>1</sup> āMcr/cjw Sxttedkβ, L xsxn ]h`, scp.145æ āJhn xox Fhyvhvβ, 12-[x [xgv,  
scp.305. Fxb fwkwk oi ghscsxkx āMcr/cjw Sxttedkβ-vck kcr g ejvx; . Fw Vednxk  
dengcavxdx denvc csngcn zk[c āFcnhshβ l cs[xvx jx; xgl xavx. U, Xnhrvh ughk  
Vc[gc mc Tcnhj ]hdghn`k`k dugwkw vcdxal xavxn. Vc[gc ]hd`k`k swdw phg-  
phb`nv h fw l cs[xvxk dhk`kv h k ho`n.

<sup>2</sup> Fcgx[, Ni rrcxkx dh o`kg`y`kv h dengcack fxn ]hd`k hv`v`n ; x, ukwk swdw  
]eal cgcnvck cl cgc 'cgxn. (āL z/[cl i g-fi gv h kβ.)

*I i ; hthj` fepxaj mc Lckxl nxbmhk`l v`n. Pcn ; cs u shgep fckvckx `znsc, `cnc; ukh ; zl c; ejsxk. Ukwkgh fxngx; vc zgl c; acphvcjvxn.B*

Suknh Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h vevx... âLck sckxkge fxn'cdcl , pe] mhoj sckvck hdn`gl hnhl ; x, sckc ]hjhkghn l ckc vc ]hjs`k.B Nhmx vedxn... Cgx <sup>TM</sup> hyghd`f vevx... âPcl v ugswk u Hgghph ; x, l ckx wkwl hl `av`n! Pcl v ugswk u Hgghph ; x, l ckx dhoad`ghn`k ; xjh`f kvh dhv ejl xavxn.B U nhpxf Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -gh fxn'c dugh vi avi mc âSxttedkB l i phnxfcsxkvc acpxv evxgvdx mhojh rcvcn ukvhk hdn`gl hv`. {hl hhj zb zgi gcnxkx vctk ejl cdc fhaghdhkvh, Cgx <sup>TM</sup> vevx... âUkwk [ckhbcsxkx jh`f `c]jnxk.B {ckhbckx jh`v`ghn, pcbncj zbi ukh khl hb r`g`f vctk ejvx, suknh fwdwnvw... âFw acos fxb Cpgx-fedjvckvxn.B Suknh ukwk i ]i k fhy`aghkl hr xsjcvx.<sup>1</sup>

#### SCPHFC MC JHFEXKXK PCVXSGCNXKVC MCSXDDCJ

##### 1-Cfwbcnxk oijfcsxkvc mcsxddcj

Usl hk`k oxghtcjx vzmni kvc fxn `i k Cfwbcn |edycl fcn l cs[xvxkxk rh`s`kvh vdhkv`, fxn oijfc uowdnhnr vevx... âPcbncj Li pcl l cv, Hvc l xk egl xkx mc fi j i k \edycl fcngcnxk tcbxgcjxkx xns h`hnl `av`, Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgx`f vc Li pcl l cvxk mcsxsx, ukwk egl xkxk mhnxsxvxn...B Fw oijfckx, xkahgghp, âoi gcth l c; jcfxkvc phrr`k l i ojcgxt duggnhgh `xbgcvxgl csxß fcpsxkvc redv evc[cdx; .

##### 2-L hgx; Cajcnxk szbgcnxkvc mcsxddcj

L hgx; Cajcn Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h fed/cj evck bhl hk vevx... âEd xkshkghn! Fw, mcsxgcnxk mcsxsx, \edycl fcngcnxk egl xkxk mhnxsxvxn, xl jhphk mc fcgh bhl hk` l zp; cl , ]cjxkgx; vc ouanctjhvn`n. Pcl xk acosvxn ; x, Hgghp`k : xjh`f ukwk xl hk`kh acphvcj, Hgghp`k Ncswgw ukwk nxbmhk`kh l i qvc (menl xavxn), `zbcg sc[xddcgc n ukvh jhl hl ghkl `av`n, egl x, tcbxgcjx mc Xsgl ` phl `vhk rhfhr rcfwg ejl csx ; e]l xavc mc phg-phb`nvh ai fpcsxk fxn l cscgcjvxn.B<sup>2</sup>

##### 3-Cl n xfkx Pcl cr Oibhixk szbgcnxkvc mcsxddcj

Cgx <sup>TM</sup> : wtc [hl hhj`k` ]hy`n`f ukghngh Li hmxdc xgc [xphv

<sup>1</sup> âMcr/cjw SxttedkB, scp.147-148â âJhnxox xfkx : csxnß, 7-[x [xgv, scp.254.

<sup>2</sup> âJhnxox Dc/rwfxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.178.



ejl c; fhncsxkvc szpfcj ejvxdx bhl hk Cl n xfkx Pcl cr hdhyh  
 rhgo`f Xl hl h oi jfck vevx... *âDh Cl xncg-l z/l xkxk! L ck kc  
 rupwl gwyh, kc l hg-vzmgjc jhl hp 'zbi vx; vxdxl c, kc vc  
 l crhl mc l ckscf jcl ckkhs`kvh ugvwywl h 'znc sckx semxf  
 fed/cj ejl xacl ! C; sxkc, l ck sckx, l hgx; ugvwywk fea tcbxgcjc  
 'znc semxncl ... Sck |edycl fcnxk cl x ugwswshk, ukwk mcsxisck,  
 u pcbncjxk fxbxl hnhl `bv h rhghk bi nxxddcsxkxk hjhs`shk,  
 Xsghl ` phl `vhk cmmcg rcfwg ejl xsck, l i ph[xngcn x]cnxsxkvc  
 [xphv fho`l `kvhk ck ]uo kcsxfx ughkshk.ß*

4-Lcpcl l cv xfkx Cfw Fc;nxk zb l c;jwfwkvh mcsxddcjx

Lcpcl l cv xfkx Cfw Fc;n Li hmxddc fegc fxn mcsxddcj  
 dhbv`...

*Fxsl xgghpxn-ncpl hkxn-ncpxl .*

*Cfw Fc;nxk ugw Lcpcl l cvvck hby`k Sconxk ugwkh.  
 Hgghph xjhcj evckgcnc, mxghdcj cpgx ughk l i scgl hkghnh shghl  
 ugswk. Hl l h fc/v (suknh)! Hgghp-jhhgh L i pcl l cvx se]xf ukw  
 Zb nxshgcjxkc l cosws ejvx, ukh mcpd ejvx, Zb xaxkc cl hkcjvhn  
 se]vx. Ukw ;e]l xa scl hmx ;xjhfggh` jcsvxr evck mc acnxcjgcnxk  
 dug'zsjcnckx ughk fxn \edycl fcn ;xl x 'zkvcnvx. U, xkshkghn`  
 |cnmcnvx`hn`k dugwkh px;l cj mc 'zbcg l uxbc xgc ]hy`nv`. Ukh  
 l i sfcj [hmhf menck, ukh i b 'cjxnck mc jcsvxrgcdck, Xsghl `  
 rcfwg evxf cl ngcnxkc jcsgrl ughk xg; acos ukwk rhnvha` mc*

<sup>1</sup> âKcp[i g-fcgghycßkxk acnpx (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvvv), 1-[x [xgv, scp.281, vx'cn fxn  
 ]h\vh... Lcpcl l cv Cfwgtcbg Xfnhpxl xk jcprrx, 3-[i [xgv, scp.181. Cl n xfkx  
 Pcl cr Oi bñx Pi vedfxddc si gpi kvck suknh Xsghl ` rcfwg evcnc;  
 |edycl fcnc jcnct 'cgl xavxn. Fxn vctc u pcbncjc sw mencn;ck |edycl fcn  
 vvh evcnc; fwdwnl wavv...â|cnmcnvx`hnh! Ukw [hmhkgj`kvhk fcpncgckvñ!ß Fwkh 'znc  
 vc sc; sck dha`kvh x;ck fha`kvh fxn vckc ugswk fegc, hy ji ;i duo vxv. Cgx  
 ™ -`k h`hñv`y` fi ji k l i phnxfcgcnvc xajxnh; ejl xa mc Pi [n xfkx Cvxkxk  
 ;zl c;]xgcnxkvck ugl wavwn. Bxdhv xfkx Cfxpxk cgxkvck rh]hñhr Lwsxgc  
 'ejl xa mc fxn l hyhnhvh 'xbgckl xavx. Li hmxdc zb fh['s` ugw Cl n xfkx  
 Pc;cl c (unhk`k mhgxsv vx) 'zsjcnxa menvx ;x, ukw jwjwf 'zkvcnsxk. Ukwk  
 [ckhbcxkx jh\`v`ghn mc 'znvi gcn ;x, xghk mwnl h kcjx[csxkvc zgi f. Suknh  
 ukwk fha`k` ;csxf Li hmxddc 'zkvcnvxgc. Cl nxk pcdhj dugvha`k` pcfs  
 evck Li hmxdc ;csx; fha` ukh 'zkvcnvx. Fha` ukwk cjcdxkc jwgghv`rvh,  
 fcvckx csl cdc fhaghv`, suknh fha` 'zji ni f zb cggcnxkx ukwk i bi kc ]c; vx,  
 vuvhrghn`kvhk z\i f vevx... *âWbwk l i vvcj ukw l ckvck 'xbgx shoghv`k`b,  
 xkvx xsc [ckhbcxkx l ckx pcvxdcc evxnsxkx! Fw rxdl cjgx pcvxdccdc shghl  
 ugswk!ß* (U, px[ncjxk 50-[x xgxkvc acpxv evxgl xavx.) Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg`  
 âWsvwg-yhfcß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.100-101-vc redv ugwkl wavwn.

cl x uygwsu Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfvxn. U, Hgghp`k 'xbgx redfgcnxkx jcsvxr egcvx, ukw pcn fxn semxl gx aedvck i sji k jwjvw, pcn fxn runowvhk hl hkvh shoghv`, zb [hk`k` |edycl fcnc sx\cn ejvx, ukwk vi al ckgnx xgc vi al ck, vusjghn` xgc vusj ugvw, xaxk cmmcgxkvck ho`n`kh rcvcl pcl xac mc ck ]cjxk acnhxjgcnvc [hktcahkg`r ejvx, [xphv mc acphvcj l edvhk`kvh phl `vhk zkvu ugvw, kcphtcj ukwk i ]i k pe] fxn ; zl c; ]x rhgl hv`. Xkvx 'zni ncl ; x, sck zbi ki ukwgh edkx scmddcvc 'zni nsck, phgfw; x sck sckscck, u vh uvwn! U pcn fxn (oedxn) xavc zkvu 'evckvxn, Xsghl `rcfwg evck xg; acosvxn, kxddcjx ck dhua` kxddcjvxn, bi nxxddcsx \h; -\h; xbcvxn, pcdhj dugvha` ck di ; sc; l crhl h l hg; vxn, cl x uygwsu den i bcnxkvu ughkghn`k ck dhua`s`v`n... Phgfw; x, sck mc hjhk pcl xac Hgghp`k vxkx i ]i k txjkc-tcshv jzncjl xsxkb, Hgghp`k kwnwkw szkvi nl cdc ]hg`al `s`k`b mc fw l crscvgc rcfxgcgcnvck cpv-\edl hk fhyghd`f l hg-vzmgcj ju\ghl `s`k`b. Hjhk pcl xk phgvh zgvi, sck vc ukwk denxkc ; e]vxk! (Mc xkvx vc) fw xagcnxkc sckxk jcnctxkc 'cgxf dhk`kvh s`y`kh[hr denx jh\hkghn ahpxvvxnngcn... sck åCpbhfß`k jzn-jz; i kji si, kxthr fha]`s`, |edycl fcnxk vi al ckxsck. Cgxkxk ahpxvgcnx xsc, ukwk zbi ki k ha; hn tcbxgcjc mc vxkvu 'zbcg ; e]l xac l hg; ugl hs`kvhk cghmc, ukwk ; zl c; ]xgcnxvxn ; x, ukghn Rwn/hkvh tcbxgcj mc i sji kgi ; gc mcst evxgl xa, Hgghp-jhhgh ukghn`jc/nxtgcl xavxn... Ukghn l i ph[xngcn mc |edycl fcnxk ckshn`v`n (; zl c; ]xgcnxvxn) ; x, ukghn ri vncjgx xvhncevxx[xgcn mc u pcbncjxk cjhnt`kvh ughk l zp; cl mc hg`kl hb si jwkghnv`næ ukghn sxdnxgl xa r`g`k[ghn`k` vi al ckxk fha`kh ekvxnngcn, zb r`b`g rhkghn`k` ukwk rcvcl gcnxkc pcvddc evxnngcn, acnhtcjx ukh hnv`[g ugl hrvh, fcvfcojgdx xsc ukwkg h i ohgxtcjvc fxgngcn. Mhd ugswk sckcl Zbi ki Cgx xgc ke[c fcnhfc n fxgxnsck?! Phgfw; x, Cgx |edycl fcnxk mhnxsx, ukwk mcsxsvxn, u pcbncjxk zmghvghn`k`k hjhs`, ukh jhfe ughk xg; acos, ukwkg h dugvha ughk ho`n`k[` acosvxn ; x, |edycl fc n zb sxngcnxkx ukh jh\`a`nl `a, ukw zb xagcnkvu acnx; ejl xavxn!ß

L i hmxdc fw l c; jwfwk [hmhf`kvh fegc dhbv`...

åFxls xgghpxn-ncpl hkn-ncpxl . L i hmxdc xfkx Cfx Si tdhkvhk, hjhs`k` jckrxv evxf ukwk edfxkx hojhnhk L cpcl l cv xfkx Cfx Fc; nc. Hgghph xjhcj evckgcnc shgl ugswk! Hl l h fc/v. Sckxk l c; jwfwk l ck c ]hjv`. Sck ukv h Hgghp`k ri vncj mc azm; cjxkx,

|edycl fcnxkx se]xf phl `vhk i sji k ejl csxkx ohj`nghjl `shk,  
zbi kvck rwnhav`nv`y`k fc/bx szbgcngc hjhk` ohn mc ni smhd,  
zbi ki vc vcdcnxb ejl xsck... Cfw Jhgfxk uygwkw phrr`k`,  
ukwk vxkvc;x ;e]l xa oxvl cjgcnxkx, |edycl fcnx-C;ncl gc  
rupwl gwykw, hy`n mc runowgw `i kgcnc |edycl fcnc ;zl c;  
mc ukwk dugwkvh [hktcahkg`r ejl csxkx redv ejl xsck,  
fharhs`k`k tcbxgcj mc i sji kgi di xgc l ckc vcgxc `cjxnxnsck.  
Fegc xsc, pcl v ugsww u Hgghph ;x, i sji kgi ; mc tcbxgcj sckvck  
vzvkncl xa, fharhs`kh ]hjv`nl `av`n. Fxbxl zbi l i b  
|edycl fcnxk shyg`y`kvh mhn vxv;, hjhk vh fxbxl gc vxv. Cfw  
Jhgfxk uygwkw phrr`k` zbi l i bc mh[xf fxgxnvx;, ukwk  
fxbvck i sji kgi di ha;hn vxv. Hgghp |edycl fcnx Zb dhk`kh  
]hy`nv`rvh, mc/vcsxkx jhl hl ejvx;vc, vc/mcjxkx sukh  
]hjv`nv`rvh, Zb fi nphk`k` rhgxf ejvx;vc mc ukw Zb vcn`hp`kh  
h`hnv`rvh sckxk hjhk mc ukwk Thnwr dugvha` (dc/kx Zl cn)  
ukwk phrr`k` uywngdh`f ukwkgh l i ohgxtcjc rhgohk mc fw xavc  
fxn-fxnx xgc cgfxn ughk xg; acosgc xvxcn. Suknh vh ukw zbgcnxkc  
jhfe ugl hyh ]hy`nv`ghn, u xsc fw xax jc/oxnc shgv`, fxn rcvcn  
dwfhkv`. U x;xsx (Cfw Fc;ngc Zl cn) ukw rcl -ri ssc xgc ]c;xf  
`cjxnvxcn, fed/cj ejl cdc[cdx swncjvc [hk`k` jcpvxv ejvxgcn,  
ukw zb xagcnxkvc acnx; ejl cvxgcn, zb sxngcnxkc h`hp ejl cvxgcn,  
khphdcj ukghn [hk menvx, xagcnx sukh ]hjv` mc ukghnvhk suknh  
Usl hk oxghtcjc ]hj`f ukghn`k dugwkw vhmhl ejvxnvx...ß

L i hmxdcxkx menvxdx [hmfvh, L cpcl l cv xfkx Cfx Fc;nkx  
szbgcnxkx vi b`i kgi di kc e]xnht ugvwywkh `znc, ukw fwnhvh  
redv ejvx;. Fw x;x l c;jwfwk phl `s`k` Kcsn xfkx L i bhpvl  
zbi ki k âMcr/cjws-sxttedkß mc L cs/wvx âLwnw[wb-bcpcfß  
;xjh`kvh redv ejl xavxn. Jcfcnx mc Xfkx Csxv vc 36-[` px[nx  
xgxkxk phvxscgcxkvc ukh xahnc ejl xagcn.

Jcfcnx zb sckcvx xgc ncmhdcj evxn ;x, Dcbxv xfkx Bcfdhk  
fegc vel xavxn...âL cpcl l cv xfkx Cfx Fc;n L xsnc mhgx ugvwyw  
bhl hk L i hmxdcxkx fxn l c;jwf dhbv`.ß Suknh ukghn`k  
hnhs`kvh;` l c;jwfgah hghn` redv evxn ;x, l ck (Jcfcnx) ukghn`  
fcdhk ejl cdx (zb jhnxo ;xjh`l vh) ouaghl hv`l . } i k;x fw  
l c;jwfgahnvh egc l cjgfcgc mhn ;x, hl l ckxk (oi gcth  
l c;jcfxkxk hnv`[`gghn`k`k) rwghrgghn` ukw eajl cdc jhf `cjxnc  
fxgl cbgcn...ß

Fwkh cshsck, Jcfcnx L cpcl l cv xfkx Cfx Fc;ngc L i hmx-

dckxk hnhs`kvh fha menck l c;jwfgahal hk` zb jhnxo ;xjhfkvh  
l cpb fwkh 'znc redv ejl cl xavxn ;x, u, shvc[c ughnhr si kki  
l cbpcfxfkvc ughk hmhl ohgr ;i jgcgcxkxk ukwk  
l zpjcmhs`kvhk h'hp ugl hs`k` l csgcpcj fxgl xnvx, kcxk;x u  
ocfcxk vi b'i kgi di kc e/jxl hv ejl xnvx. Fegc ;x, Xfkx Csxnc vc  
ukh jhfe ughnhr fw l c;jwfgahn` zbi ki k âCg-; hl xgß ;xjhfkvh  
l cpb pcl xk vcgxgc 'znc redv ejl cl xa mc vel xavxn...âUkghn`k  
fcdhk evxgl csxkx ouaghl hv`l , ]i k;x fwnhvh egc l cjgcfgc  
mhnv`n ;x, i l wl ohgr [hl hhj`k rwgghy` ukw eaxjl cdc jhf  
'cjxnc fxgl cb.ß¹

5-Cl n Hs`k dhhb`s`kvh mcsxddcj

Ohncbl x Cl n xfkx Hs`k L i hmxdcdc dhhbv`y` l c;jwfw fegc  
redv evxn... âLckx vc/mcj ejvxdxk xac 'cgvx;vc xsc... Sck fwkw  
xsjcdxnsck ;x, fhjxg xavc sckc ;zl c; evcnc; |edycl fcnxk  
rhnvha`, mcsxsk, mhnxsx, fun[ghn`k` rhdjhnhk, cpvxkc mcth evck mc  
r`b`k`k cnx ughk Cgxdc rhna` r`g`k[ ]c; cl !...ß²

6-Xl hl Cgx™ -`k ;cghl`kvh mcsxddcj

Ohncbl xkxk kcrj ejvxdxkc 'znc Xl hl Cgx™ zb szbgcnxkxk  
fxn pxsscsxkvc fwdwnwn... âLck Ncswgwgghp`k rhnvha`, mcsxsk-  
dcl ...ß³

Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv Xl hl Cgx™ -`k l xsxngxcnc dhhbv`y`  
l c;jwfw fegc ncmhdcj evxn...âFgxk ;x, pxvhdcj xl hl`xgc bcghgcj ncpfcnxæ  
|edycl fcnxk mcsxsk xgc ukwk vial cks pe] mhoj fcnhfcu ugl hb.ß⁴

Dc/rwfx ocmhn[xk Xl hl Cgx™ -`k cgedpxkc 'cjxnvxdx vc-  
gxgcnx fcdhk evcnc; redv evxn...âU (Xl hl ) mcsxddcj \w]h ]`ohn-  
l `av`n.ß Xl hl xsc ukghn`k [hmhf`kvh fegc dhhbv`...âSxbrk l ckl  
fhnci vc vevxdxkb âsck mcsx xvxk, gh;xk mcsxddcj ;unghv`kß – szbi kc 'cgvx;vc  
xsc, Hgghp-jhgh fwdwnwn...

¹ âMcr/cjw Sxttedkß, Rhpnc ]h`, scp.182, 118-119æ âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, Hmnu`h  
]h`, 1-[x [xgv, 3248æ âJhnnox xfkx Csxnc, Hmnu`h ]h`, 3-[i [xgv, scp.108æ  
âLwnw[wb-bcpcfß (Lcs/wvx), Fednwj ]h`, 3-[i [xgv, scp.11. Unhvh vedxgn...  
Lcpcl l cv xfkx Cfx Fc;n fw l c;jwfw Cgx™ jcnctxkvck Lxsnc mhgx  
jc/dxk evxgvdx bhl hk L i hmxdcdc dhbl `av`. âKcp[i g-fcgghyckxk acnp (Xfkx  
Cfxg-Pcvxv), 1-[x [xgv, scp.284.

² âLckhrxfß (Ohncbl x), scp.125.

³ Dekc unhvh. scp.143.

⁴ âKcp[i g-fcgghyckxk acnp (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 2-[x [xgv, scp.28.

﴿وَلِلّٰهِ عَلَى النَّاسِ حِجُّ الْبَيْتِ مَنِ اسْتَطَاعَ اِلَيْهِ سَبِيْلًا﴾

âXkshkghnh Hgghp emxkx bxdhncj ejl c; mh[xf ugvwæ u ;csgcnc ;x, unhdh  
'ejl cdc rhvxn ugswkghn. Pcn ;cs ;itn ejsc, (fxgsk ;x,) Hgghp fijik hgcl gcnvck  
epjxdh[s'bv'n.ß¹ Sxbk kcbcnkxb[c, c'cn fxn ;cs Hgghp'k emxkc 'ejl csc, Hgghp'k  
emx ;htxn ugvnl w? Hdv'kv'n ;x, fxn ;cs Hgghp'k emxkx bxdhncjkc 'ejl cdc rhvxn  
ugvwyw phgvh, fw xax jcn; ejsc zbi ;htxn ugvn. Vel cgx, l ckx jcn; ejl c;gc sxb  
;htxn ugl wswkwb, kck;x sxb jcn; ejvxdxl phgvh, l ck ;htxn ugl wahl !ß²

7-Xl hl Cgx™ -'k oijfcgcnkvc mcsxddcj

Xl hl Cgx™ âKcp[i g-fcgchycßkxk 182-[x oijfcsxkvc  
fwdwnwn...

اَيُّهَا النَّاسُ اِنِّي قَدْ بَنَيْتُ لَكُمْ الْمَوَاعِظَ الَّتِي وَعَظَ الْأَنْبِيَاءُ بِهَا أُمَّهُمْ وَأَدَيْتُ اِلَيْكُمْ مَا اَدَّتِ  
الْأَوْصِيَاءُ اِلَى مَنْ بَعْدَهُمْ

âEd xkshkghn! Lck \edycl fcngcnk zb il l cjgcnkzcdi v-kcsxpcj menvxdx  
l uxbcgcnkx sxbk i]ik acnp ejvxl. Zmsxdhghn'k (mcsxgcnk) zbgcnkvck sukh;ghnh  
]hvj'nv'rgnh'k sxb ]hvj'nv'l.ß

88-[x oijfcvc fwdwnwn...

وَمَا لِيَ لَا اَعْجَبُ مِنْ خَطَا هَذِهِ الْفِرْقَةِ عَلَى اخْتِلَافِ حُجْمِهَا فِي دِينِهَا لَا يَقْتَصُونَ اَثَرَ نَبِيٍّ وَلَا  
يَقْتَدُونَ بِعَمَلِ وَصِيٍّ

âFw tnrckxk ocjhghn'kvk ke[c jcc[[if ejl cdxl, phgfw;x zb vxkgcnkvc;x  
finphkghn'kvh xoxghghn' ugh-ugh, kc |edycl fcnx cscnxkx hojhnhghn, kc vc  
mcsxkxk cl cgxkc jhfe ugvnghn.ß

X; xk[x oijfcvc xsc fegc fwdwnwn...

لَا يُقَاسُ بِالِ مُحَمَّدٍ (ص) مِنْ هَذِهِ الْأُمَّةِ أَحَدٌ وَلَا يُسَوَّى بِهِمْ مَنْ جَرَتْ نِعْمَتُهُمْ عَلَيْهِ اَبَدًا هُمْ  
اَسَاسُ الدِّينِ وَلَهُمْ خَصَائِصُ حَقِّ الْوَلَايَةِ وَفِيهِمُ الْوَصِيَّةُ وَالْوَرَاثَةُ

âFw il l cjvck pe] fxn ;cs Hgx-Lipcl l cvgc l irhdxc ugvkh fixl cb. U  
;csgcn ;x, cfcvx ke/l cjgcnx fw il l cjc [hnvxn, fharhghn' xgc fcnhfcv vedxgvxngcn.  
Ukghn vxkxk cshsghn'v'n... Ukghn'k mxghdcj phrr' ;xl x (ohs fxn) oiswsxddcjgcnx  
mhnv'n mc mcsxddcj, egc[c vc mcnhscj ukghn'k si ghgcsxkvcvxn...ß

Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv dhb'n... Cgx™ fxn oijfc uowvw mc oijfc  
cskhs'kvh fwdwnvw...

¹ âHgx-Xl nhkß swncsx, hdc.97

² âJhnnox Dc/rwfxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.192-193.

أَنَا عَبْدُ اللَّهِ وَأَخُو رَسُولِهِ لَا يَقُولُهَا أَحَدٌ قَبْلِي وَلَا بَعْدِي إِلَّا كَذِبٌ وَرِثْتُ نَبِيَّ الرَّحْمَةِ  
وَنَكَحْتُ سَيِّدَةَ نِسَاءِ هَذِهِ الْأُمَّةِ وَأَنَا خَاتَمُ الْوَصِيِّينَ

âLck Hgghp'k fckvcsx, |edycl fcnxk rhnvha'dhl . Fw szbi l ckvck cmmcg mc  
suknh dhghk]ghnvhk fharh pe] fxn ;cs vel cl xavxn. Lck ncpl cj  
|edycl fcnxkvck xns h\hmv l , fw i l l cjxk rhv'kghn'k'k seddxvcsxkx zbil c  
pcdhj dugvha` se]vxl , mcsxgcnxk vc sukwk[wswdhl .B<sup>1</sup>

8-Xl hl Pcsck <sup>TM</sup> -k oijfcsxkvc mcsxddcj

Xl hl Pcsck <sup>TM</sup> hjhs`k`k acpxv ugl hs`kvhk suknh fxn  
oi jfc uowdhnhf fwdwnvw... âLck Pcsck, Cgxkxk uygw dhl . Lck  
|edycl fcn zmghv`dhl , l ck mcsx zmghv`dhl .B<sup>2</sup>

9-Axcgcnxk Xl hl Pisedk <sup>TM</sup> -h fhashyg'y` menvxdx bhl hk dhbv`rghn`  
l c; jwfvh;` mcsxddcj

Xl hl Pcsck <sup>TM</sup> -k acphvcj ocfcnx : wtc axcgcnxkc ]hjv`rvh,  
ukghn Si gedl hk xfkx Si ncvxk emxkvc fxn denc d'y`a`f Xl hl  
Pi sedk <sup>TM</sup> -h fhashyg'y` menl c; l crscvxgc fegc fxn l c; jwfv  
dhbv`ghn...

Fxsl xgghpxn-ncpl hkxn-ncpxl .

Pi sedk xfkx Cgxdc – ukwk zbi ki k mc hjhs` Cl xncg-  
l z/l xkxk Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -k axcgcnx jcncxkvck. Shghl ugswk sckc!  
Pcrxrcjck, Fxb sckxk mhng'y`kh 'znc Hgghph sukswb pcl v-sckh  
evxn; . Hl l h fc/v. Pcsck xfkx Cgxkxk mthj ocfcnxkx eajvx;  
(ukh shghl ugswk).<sup>3</sup> Shghl ugswk ukh, vuywgvwyw 'i kvc, mthj  
ejvxdx 'i kvc mc rxdhl cjvc vxnxgvxgc[cdx 'i kvc... Fw i l l cjxk  
phl `s`kh khbxg ughk fw l i sxfcj oi swsxcg sxbc mc fxb axcgcnc  
ke[c vc fzdi ; xv ; x, Mcsxkxk zmghv`k`, Kcfxkxk fhghs`k`  
hnhl `bvkh h\hmv`...B<sup>4</sup>

âLwnw[wb-bcpcfß ; xjh`kvh vedxgx... Xfkx Hffhs Ahl vh  
Xl hl Pcsckxk mthj ocfcnxkx eavck bhl hk L i hmxdcdc vevx...  
âC'cn fw 'i k fegc fxn l i sxfcj vi ]hn ugl wawrsh, (scfxn  
evc[cdx; , ]i k; x) fxb fwkvkh rhfhr vh \edycl fcncnxk hyhs` ,

<sup>1</sup> âKcp[i g-fcgghycßkxk acnp, 1-[x ]h\, L xsxn, 1-[x [xgv, scp.208.

<sup>2</sup> âL i sjcvnc; x Ph; xl ß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.172; âBcohxnwq-wr`fhß, scp.138; âL c[l ci b-bcmhxvß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.146.

<sup>3</sup> Fw [i l gc l cjkv duovwn, gh; xk [i l gcgcnxk vi bi l i fwkw jcgcf evxn.

<sup>4</sup> âJhnxox Dc/rwfxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.228.

I i j j c r x g c n x k x l h l ` , h g c l g c n x k N c f f x k x k N c s w g w k w  
x j x n v x d x l x b c ' z n c l i s x f c j c v i ] h n u g l w a v w r , u k v h k s u k n h v h  
m c s x g c n x k h y h s ` k ` k m i [ w v w k w x j x n v x ; . H g g h p f w l i s x f c j x k  
c m c b x k x m e n c n ... B<sup>1</sup>

10-XI h l P i s e d k <sup>TM</sup> - ` k o i j f c s i k v c m c s i d d c j

X l h l P i s e d k <sup>TM</sup> H a w n h ' i k i D e b x v x k u n v w s w i ] i k f x n  
o i j f c u o w v w , u k g h n h v c g x g ' c j x n l c ; l c r h l ` k v h f w d w n v w ...  
â H l l h f c / v . L c k x l k c s c f x l x h n h a v ` n ` k , ' z n i k l c k ; x l c l !  
S u k n h z b m x [ v h k ` k ` b h r h d ` v ` k m c k c t s g c n x k x b x l c b c l l c j e v x k  
; x , ' z n i k l c k x z g v i n l c ; , p z n l c j x l x ` u b l h r s x b x k i ] i k  
[ h x b v x n l x ? ! L c k s x b x k | e d y c l f c n x k x b x k r ` b ` k ` k u y g w , u k w k  
m c s x s x m c c l x u y g w s w k w k z m g h v ` v e d x g c l l x ? P c l x k a c o s ; x ,  
r z m l g c n x x ] c n x s x k v c X s g h l ` r c f w g e v c k , H g g h p h x l h k ' c j x n c k  
f x n x k [ x a c o s u g l w a , | e d y c l f c n x j c s v x r e j l c ; v c p h l ` v h k  
r h f h y h v i a l i a v i n . L c ' c n P c l b c S e d d x v i a - a i p c v h l c k x l  
h j h l ` k c l x s x v e d x g v x n l x ? ! { c / t c n J c d d h n - a c p x v B i g -  
[ c k h p e d k l c k x l c l x l v e d x g v x l x ? B<sup>2</sup>

X l h l P i s e d k <sup>TM</sup> - ` k z b h j h s ` C g x k x â | e d y c l f c n x k m c s x s x B  
; x l x m c s t e j l c s x k x k s c f c f x f w x v x ; x , z b [ c v v x | e d y c l f c n x k  
k i f i m m c j x l c a p w n m c x k ; h n e v x g l c b f x n l c s c g c u g v w y w r c v c n ,  
h j h s ` k ` k m c s x g x ; s x t c j x v c u k g h n ` k h n h s ` k v h l c a p w n f x n l c s c g c  
x v x , P c l b c S e d d x v i a - a i p c v h h j h s ` k ` k c l x s x , { c / t c n J c d d h n ` k  
x s c z b c l x s x u g l h s ` k ` f w k h ' z n c r e d v e v x n ; x , f x n ; c s u k w  
x k ; h n e j l c s x k .

11-H f f h s x o c g t c s x S c t t h p ` k c l x s x C f v i g g h p x f k x C g x k x m c s i d d c j c v c g g  
' c j x n l c s x

H f f h s x g c n z b o x g h t c j g c n x k x k c m m c g g c n x k v c [ h l h h j ` H g x - L i -  
p c l l c v x k h v ` x g c c l c m x g c n x k c g e d p x k c r x d h l h s c s g c d x n v x g c n .  
X a u d e n c ] h j l ` a v ` ; x , C f w L i s g i l â H g x - L i p c l l c v x k c l x n x B

<sup>1</sup> â L w n w [ w b - b c p c f B ( L c s / w v x ) , 2 - [ x [ x g v , s c p . 4 3 0 .

<sup>2</sup> â J h n x o x J c f c n x B , H m n u ` h ] h ` , 2 - [ x [ x g v , s c p . 3 2 9 â J h n x o x x f k x C s x n B ,  
H m n u ` h ] h ` , 4 - [ i [ x g v , s c p . 5 2 . X f k x : c s x n v c f w o i j f c k x ; x j h f ` k ` k 8 - [ x  
[ x g v x k x k 1 7 9 - [ w s c p x t c s x k v c r e d v e j l x a v x n . X l h l P i s e d k <sup>TM</sup> - ` k z b  
h j h s ` k ` k m c s t x k v c r e d v e j v x ; g c n x k x x o j x s h n h s h g l ` a , u k w k d e n x k c â C g x  
l c k x l h j h l v ` n B - v e d c n c ; r h g h k g h n ` k ` ' c j x n l c l x a v x n .

hvghkv`n`g`nv`.<sup>1</sup> Ukghn |edycl fcnx-C; ncl vck Cpgx-fedjxk  
ph;xl xddcj phrr`kh vhn ]hjhk ncmhdcjgcx zbgnxkc hvx  
evcnc; vi al ck rhna`s`kvh ukvhk xsjxthvc evxnvxgc. Hl l h  
ph;xl xddcj ]hjv`rvhk suknh Hgx-L i pcl l cvx hnohv  
rudvwghn!

Mcsxddcj xsjxkhv evck acosgcncvck fxx vc fxxk[x Hffhsx  
ocgxtcsx – Sctthp`k cl xsxvn. Bcpcfx, Cl n Umbhxxk fegc  
vevxdxk kcrj evx.<sup>2</sup> āSctthp`k cl xsx Cfvi gghp xfkx Cgx Ahl h  
vhoxg ugwf Fckx-l l cddckx rcjgc dejxnvx; vck suknh l ckxl  
hnv`l [h hvhl `zkcncv, l ck `cgvx; vck suknh vevx... āMhd  
ugswk sck! Fw ācl nß fxbxl acn/x phrr`l `b vedxgvxn x?ß  
Vevxl ... āKe[c fcdcl ?ß Vevx... āL c`cn Ncswgwgghp Cgxkx mcsx  
rcnhn menl cl xavxl x?ß Vevxl ... āC`cn ukw mcsx rcnhn menl xa  
ugshdv`, x; x pc; cl (ukwk cgedpxkc) pz; l ejl cbvxgc.ß Suknh  
fxn szb vel cdx f rcbcfqckvx, l ck vc fha`l `fcvckxl vck  
hd`nh[hy`k` `zbgcdxvxl ; x, cgx xgc xahnc ejvx... āUkw ]zgc  
]`ohn`klß L ck vc ]zgc ]`ov`l ...ß

Umbhx mcsxddcj xk; hn ejl c; vc ohnx[xgcxk Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h  
`cjxnvdx vcgxggcnc xsjxkhv ejl xavx. Ukwk [hmhf`vh Xl hl Cgx  
<sup>TM</sup> -`k ocmhnx[c menvdx [hmhfv`n ; x, fxb ukw āXl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -  
`k ; cghl `kvh mcsxddcjß fzgl csxkvc redv ejvx; .

12-L cpcl l cv xfkx Cfvi gghp xfkx Pcscxk Hffhsx ocgxtcsx Lckswnw  
cgedpxkc vcgg-si fwj `cjxl csxkvc mcsxddcj

Jcfcnx mc Xfkx Csx 145-[x xgxk phvxscgcxkx redv evcn; ck  
fegc ncmhdcj ejl xagcn... L cpcl l cv xfkx Cfvi gghp xfkx Pcscx  
xfkx Cgx, Hffhsx ocgxtcsx Cfw {c/tcn Lckswnw cgedpxkc  
rxdl mc Lcvxkc cphgxss ukwgh fed/cj ejvx; vck suknh,  
Lckswnw [hmhf`kvh `ekxa fxn l c; jwf dnbv` mc zb vcgxggcncxk  
fcdhk ejvx. Fwnhv vh oxghtcj zbi ki k Lckswnvkh vph  
ghdxrgx ugvywkw xsfhj ejvx. U l c; jwfvh fegc redv  
ugwkl wavw... āPcrxrcjck fxbxl hjhl `b Cgx mcsx mc xl hl xv, x,  
ukwk zmghvghn` vxnx ugvyw phgvh sxb ukwk mcsxddcjxkx ke[c

<sup>1</sup> āJhnxx Dc/rwfxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.352ā āCjckfxpw mcg-xanhtß (L cs/wvx), 293ā  
āJhnxx xfkx Csxß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.139-142, 194. 129 mc 130-[w xggcnxk phvxscgcxkx  
redv evcn; ck. Fxb ukwk oi ghscsxkx fwnhv redv ejvx; .

<sup>2</sup> Ukwk jcn[l edx-phg`k` āJcb; xncjwg-pwtthbß ; xjh`kvh l i ghpxbc evc  
fxgcnsxkb.



xns h\hmv`k`b?!...ß

L ckswn [hmhf ughnhr fxn l c;jwf dhbv` mc ukwk vcgvggcnxkx ncvv ejl cdc fhaghv`, hl l h dwohn`vh redv evxgck fw vcgvgxk [hmhf`k` menc fxgl cvx. L ckswnwk si ;wj ejl csx vc Fckx-Hffhs ph; xl gcnxkxk kcbcnxkvc fw szbi k vi bgi di kc vcghgcj evxnvx.<sup>1</sup>

13-Hffhsx ocggtcsx Lepvx mcsxddcjx, âmcsxß szbi k i k bx;n ugwkvwyywkh 'znc ncvv evxn.

âJhnxox Jcfcnxßvc Cfwg-Ocjjhfk fegc vevxdx kcrq ugwkwn.. âL cnm cphgxskvck ughk Rhsxl xfkx L c[hax Jcl xl xkxk fha` i sji kc ]hjv`l . U, Fhnhkwg-mcthj hvg` fxn ;ckvvc dhahd`nv`, Lepvx Hffhsx i ]i k mcsxddcj evcnc; dhbl `av`...

﴿شَهِدَ اللَّهُ أَنَّهُ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا هُوَ وَالْمَلَائِكَةُ وَأُولُو الْعِلْمِ قَائِمًا بِالْقِسْطِ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا هُوَ الْعَزِيزُ الْحَكِيمُ إِنَّ الدِّينَ عِنْدَ اللَّهِ الْإِسْلَامُ﴾

âHggp acphvcj menxn ;x, Ukvhk fharh pe] fxn l c/fwv duovwn, l cgc;gcn vc, egl shpxfgcnx vc ukh acphvcj menxngcn. Phgfw;x U, cvhgjx fcncnfn evckvxn. Cbxb mc px;l c]x Hggpvhk fharh pe] fxn l c/fwv duovwn. Hggp dhk`kvh vxk dhgk`b Xsgl vxkxvn.<sup>2</sup> Suknh fegc vhmhl ejvx... Rhsxl xfkx L c[hax acphvcj menxn ;x, L i pcl l cv Hggp`k fckvcsx mc Ukwk Ncswgw-vwn, Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf Ncswgwgghp`k mcsxsi, mhnxsx mc ukvhk suknh xl hl v`n. (U vedxn.) Fw mcsxddcjx Lepvx Hffhsxdc men-vxgc. Fw xfhncgcnc ]hjhkvh ukw ;cknh jwggdh`f, i l wl xddcjgc kcbcn shgl hv`.<sup>3</sup>

14-Hffhsx ocggtcsx Phnwk cn-Ncaxv âmcsxßgcni k fhncsxkvc ocfc n menxn

âCofhnwj-Jxmhgß ;xjhfkvh Csl cxvck fxn ncmhdcj kcrq ugwkwn ;x, fxb ukwk oi ghscsxkx kcrq evxnx;<sup>4</sup> U vedxn... Ncaxvxk dhk`kh 'cgvxl , u, x; x uygw L cpcl l cvgc Cfvi ggph` ]hy`nv`. Ukghn 'cgvxgc, fxnxkx shy jcnctxkvc, vx'cnxkx xsc sug jcnctxkvc

<sup>1</sup> âJhnxox Jcfcnxß, Hmnu`h ]h`, 3-[i [xgv, scp.209â âJhnxox xfkx Csxnb, L xsxn ]h`, 1-[x ]h`, 5-[x [xgv, scp.199â âJhnxox xfkx Csxnb, 10-[w [xgv, scp.85.

<sup>2</sup> âHgx-Xl nhkß swncsx, hdc.17-18

<sup>3</sup> âJhnxox Jcfcnxß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.532.

<sup>4</sup> Csl cx Cfvi g-L cgx; xfkx Rcnxf Fcsnx, gi ycj mc kcpm hgxl xvxn (216-[` xgvc mcthj evxf). U, uk x; x l xk i n[wbcx (fedj) cbfcngcl xavx. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` l cnpwl Rwl l xkxk âCg-; wkh mcg-cgrhfß ;xjhfkvh redv evxgl xavxn.

ujwnjvw, suknh l ckc 'zsjcnxa menvx ;x, ukghngh l i fhpaxc  
evxl . Lck cvcfxddhj fhncsxkvc kc fxgxnvxl sc, sunwavwl ,  
phl `s`kh vi b'i k [hmhf menvxgcn. U vevx...âUkghn`k cvcfxddhj  
egl xkvc fxgx;gcnxkx ke[c rxdl cjpgckvxnxsck?ß Vevxl ... âEd  
l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx! Bc;h, hd`rg`r mc pwavh ukghn ;xl xsxkx  
'znl cl xacl ...ß U vedxn... Phnwk uyghkghn`k`k pcn x;xsxkx  
rw[hy`kh hgv`, 'zbgcnx dhagh vugvw mc hyghl hyh fhaghv`. Suknh  
ukghnh x[hbc menvx ;x, hdhyh rhgo`f ]zgc 'ejsxkgcn. Suknh l ckc  
vevx...âU bhl hk`dhv`l h shg`nhl ;x, fw x;x kctcnxk hnhs`kvh  
ha;hn vi al ck]xgx; , ;xk-;i vwncj dhnkhk[hr, l i phnxfc evc[c;  
mc fxn-fxnaxkx rhk`k` ho`vh[hrghn, fw bhl hk vxnxgcnvck ]uow  
â;ha zgl i a ughdv`r!ß vedc hnbw evc[c;gcn. Sxb kc vedxnsxkxb?ß  
Vevxl ... âEd l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx! L i kc[ [xl gcn ukghn`k  
vi kdhdh 'cgvxdx mhojvhk fwkw pz;l ejl xagcn, duosh hgxl gcn  
ukghn`k fhncsxkvc fxn szb vel xagcn?ß Vevx...âOedn, fw egc fxn  
ocfcnvxn ;x, hgxl gcn âmcxßgcnvck, ukghn vh \edycl fcngcnvck fw  
x;x wahy`k jhgedx fhncsxkvc ocfcn menl xagcn.ß

Vel xagcn ;x, Lc/l wk zb oxghtcjx vzmni kvc fegc vedxnvx...  
âHjhl `b Ncaxv fxb x;x kctcnxk (x;x rhnvha`k) hnhs`kvh fha  
menckgcnx Lwsh xfkx {c/tcn xfkx Lcpcl l cvvck eajl xavx.  
Fwkh 'znc vc pcl xk szbgcnx vedxnvx.ß<sup>1</sup>

Licgxt vedxn... Phnwk cn-Ncaxvxk âmcxgcnß vel c;vc l crscvx  
Cpgx-fedj xl hl ghn`v`n, dc/kx xl hl Lwsh : hbxl , ukwk hjhs`  
xl hl {c/tcn Shvxr, fhfh`s xl hl Fhrxn, [cvvc fhfh`s  
Cgxddxfkx Pi sedk, xl hl Pcsck, xl hl Pi sedk mc ukwk hjhs`  
Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgfx™ vxv. |edycl fcngcn vevx;vc xsc  
l crscvx \edycl fcngcnxk sukwk[wsw pcbncj L i pcl l cv  
Lwsjhth ; vxv.

Lcpb fwkh 'znc vc fw ocgxtc egc fxn xa 'znvi ;x, ukvhk  
suknh;` mc cmmcg;x ocgxtcgcnxk pe] fxnx 'znl cl xavx. U,  
Lc;;cdc vhoxg ugvywv bhl hk l xkfcnc ]`ov` mc fxn oijfc  
uowdwf hahy`ekvx, suknh emxkc vhoxg ugwf Lcpcl l cvgc  
Cl xkx ]hy`nv`. Lcpcl l cvx mhvhn ejvx ;x, ukh xl gh ejvxdx  
cpvkhk ckx dhbs`k mc ukwk x]xkvc ughkghnh cl cg evc[cdxkc  
vhxn hkx x]sxk, fw fhncvc cpv-\edl hk vh fhyghs`k. Suknh

<sup>1</sup> âCofhnwj-j i mhgß (Cfw Pckxtc Vxkcmcnx, 282-[x xgv c mcthj evxf), 1-[x ]h\,  
Rhpnc, 1960-[` l xghvx xgx, scp.389æ âLwnw[wb-bcpcfß (Lcs/wvx), 3-[i ]xgv,  
scp.351.

L c/l wkw vh pcl xk xac mhvhn ejvx, pcl xk cpv-\edl hk`  
ukwkggh vh fhyghv`. L cpcl l cvxk zb cgdhbl hs` xgc dhhv`rghn`  
fegc vxv...

Fxsl xgghpxn-ncpl hkxn-ncpxl .

Fw fxn cpvkh cvxn ;x, Hgghp`k fckvcsx mc l z/l xkgcnxk  
cl xnx Phnwkjh\`a`n`g`n mc L cpcl l cv xfkx Phnwk hyg`k`k mc  
scppcjxkxk shyghl ugvwyw fxn phgvh, zb xojxdhn` xgc ukw dhh`n..  
Pcrxrcjck, l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx Phnwk zbi kvck suknh mcgxcpv  
rcnhn menvx, l ckxl i]i k f i j i k l i scgl hkghnvhk fed/cj hgv`.  
Rhnvha`l Cfvi gghp` – l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnxkxk uygkw l ckxl  
l c[fwnxddcjxl ugl hvhk, zb nhb`g`y` mc rcfwg ejl csx cshs`kvh  
l ckvck suknh f i j i k l i scgl hkghn`k xagcnxkxk ncpfcnx,  
ocgxtcsx mc mcgxcpvx jc/dxk evxn. Ukw zbi kvck suknh  
Ounhshk`k ph;xl xddcjxkc jc/dxk evxn, scnpcvcgn, hfhvgrghn,  
unvwghn, ocnh[ghn, dugghn, rhsxvcgn, fedji g-l hg, scvcrvcgn,  
ai anbgcn mc ai awnbgghn<sup>1</sup> mc unhk`k f i j i k xojxdhngghn`k` –  
pcdhj`kvh mc zgi l i kvck suknh ukh jh\`a`n`n. L ck zbi l gc  
acnj evxf rcjx rcnhnh 'cgvxl ;x, l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx Phnwkxk  
rhnvha`l Cfvi gghp i]i k rcnhn menvdx aedgcxk phl `s`kh  
mcth evcl , zbi l vck suknh l i scgl hkghn`k xaxkxk oxghtcjxkx,  
mxghdcjxkx, cpvxkx mc fed/cjxkx ukwk i]i k ncsl xddcj  
jhk`dhl ...ß

Jcfcnxkxk ncmhdcj ejvxdx ;xl x, l c;jwfwk ho`n pxsscsx  
fegcvxn... âFxb fw x;x l c;jwfw Fedji gghpxg-pcnhl `k x]cnxsxkvc  
mc fw l cnhsxl vc xajxnh; evckgcxk pi bwnwkvh zb cggcnxl xbgc  
dhhv`r... l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx, ukwk hxgc i bmgcnx, unvw  
scn; cnvcgcxk, ukwkggh 'cgckgcgn, rhbxgcgn, : c/fckxk \cnvc xagcnxkc  
fhohkgghn, phl `s`k`k fw l c;jwfw ahpvxgxdx unhvh redv ugwkwn.  
Fw x;x l c;jwfw l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx : c/fckxk \cnvc  
shoghdhkghn`kh jh\`a`n`l `a mc fwdwnl wavwn ;x, ukw : c/fckxk  
vhoxgxkvck hss`kghn. L z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx Fedji gghp`k x]xkvc mc  
: c/fckxk vhoxgxkvc fw xa rwnjhv`rvhk suknh tcnl hk menvx ;x,  
fw x;x acosc ahpvx ughk rhbxgcgn, l c;jwfwk dhh`gl hs`kvh  
xajxnh; evckgcgn, zbgcnxkxk vc ahpvx ugvwrghn` acnj mc dhh`ghn`  
l cnhsxl vc phb`n ughkgghn – ph[`ghnh mc i l nc]xgcnc,  
zg; gcgnvck 'cgck ; hnmhkghnh e/ghk ejsxkgcn, l c;jwfw ukghn

---

<sup>1</sup> L hgxddcjxk x;x kzmi ughk aukvh fxnß mc aukghnvh fxngcnß.

i ]i k uowswkghn ;x, fhah vi ai f hkghs`kghn mc dhvghn`kvh shoghs`kghn, rhd`jv`rvhk suknh ukw zb pcl mcjckgcnxkc ]hjv`ns`kghn. Ukghn fegc ejvxgcn mc pcn x; x \edl hk L cs[xvi g-pcnhl vh ukghnh uowkvw, suknh L c; ;cvck ]`ov`ghn. Fw xa ukghn`k dhk`kvh l capwnghav` mc fwkh acphvcj menvxgcn.<sup>1</sup>

|EDYCLFCN ; -XK MCSXSX I KMHK- GI YCJ  
: XJHFGHN-KVH, SCPHFCGCNXK MC JHFEXKGCNXK AE/NGCNXKVC

#### 1-XSGHL -K CMMCGGCNXKVC

âMcsxß gcrcfx Xsghl `k cmmcggcnxkvck e/jxfhnck xl hl Cgx<sup>TM</sup> i ]i k l capwn fxn gcrcfc ]emnxgl xa, fw gcrcf gi ycj ;xjhfgghn`kvh vh [cncdhk ejl xavxn. Fegc ;x, âGxshkwg-cncfß ;xjh`f`k`k l i cggxtx âmcsxß ;cgl csxkx fegc xbhp evxn... âCgx mcsx hvghkv`n`gv`.ß âJh[wg-cnwsß ;xjh`f`kvh vedxgn... âMcsx ;cgl csx âyckxß mcbkxkvc ugwf Cgxkxk (ncbxdcgghpw ckp) gcrcfxvxn.ß

L i fcnnvcxk âCg-; hl xgw txg-gi ycjß ;xjh`f`kvh redv ejvxdxkx vc jebgx; gc 'cjxnc[cdx; . Fw gcrcf Xsghl `k cmmcggcnxkvck dhahl `a ahxngcnxk ae/ngcnxkvck vc redv ugwkl wavwn. |edycl fcncx ahxnx Pcsshk xfkx Shfxj u pcbncjxk mthj`kvhk suknh ruavwyw fxn ae/nvc fegc vedxn...

جَزَى اللَّهُ عَنَّا وَالْجَزَاءُ بِكَفِّهِ  
حَفِظْتَ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ فِينَا وَعَهْدَهُ  
الَّتِيكَ وَمَنْ أَوْلَى بِهِ مِنْكَ مِنْ وَمَنْ  
الَّتِيكَ أَخَاهُ فِي الْهُدَى وَوَصِيَّهُ  
وَأَعْلَمُ مِنْهُمْ بِالْكِتَابِ وَالسُّنَنِ

âHgghp Cfcg-Pcsckc fxbxl jcnctxl xbvck l i ;hthj mensxk

L i ;hthj Ukwk cgxkvcvxn, ;xl Cfwg-Pcsck ;xl x ughn?

Ncswgwggghp`k l crhl `k` fxbxl hnhl `bvh runwdwf shoghv`kæ  
cpv mc mcsyddcj vc,

Sckc l cosws xv, sckvck fharh ;xl ukh vhph dho`k ugh  
fxgn? : xl , phks` ;cs?

L c'cn sck ukwk rhnvha`, pxvhdcj evck mcsxsx

Ukghn`k hnhs`kvhk ;xjh`f mc si kkcdc ck juo fxgx; gx acos

<sup>1</sup> âJhnxox Dc/rwfxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.416, 421æ âJhnxox Jcfcnxß, Hmnu`h ]h`, 3-[i [xgv, scp.654-665. Fwnhvh pcl xk l c:jwf jctsxghj` xgc redv ugwkl wavwn. L cs/wvx âL i nw[wb-bcpcfßvc (3-[i [xgv, scp.353), Xfkx Csxn âCg-; hl xgßvc (Hmnu`h ]h`, 6-[` [xgv, scp.117-118), xfkx : csxn âCg-fxvhdcjw mck-kxphdcßvc (10-[w [xgv, scp.78) ukh xahnc ejl xavxn.

vedxgvxkl x?B<sup>1</sup>

Bi fedn xfkx Fc; ;hn ncmhdcj evxn ;x, Ri neda ahxngcnxkvck  
fc/bxgcnx Cfvi gghp Xfkx Hffhs` fegc mcst evxf jc/nxtgcl xavxn...

وَاللّٰهُ مَا كَلَّمَ الْاَقْوَامَ مِنْ بَشَرٍ بَعْدَ الْوَصِيِّ عَلِيِّ كَابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ

âHghghph hkx ugswk ;x, mcsx Cgxvck suknh pe] fxn fcacn

Xkshk rzml gcnx xgc Xfkx Hffhs ;xl x vkh`al hl `av`n.B<sup>2</sup>

Mcgxv xfkx Crcfc Usl hk`k rcjgc dejxnxgl csx fhncsxkvck

اَلَا اِنَّ خَيْرَ النَّاسِ بَعْدَ ثَلَاثَةٍ قَتِيلُ التَّجِيْبِيِّ الَّذِي جَاءَ مِنْ مِصْرَ

âH'hp ugwk ;x, u i ] kctcnvck (/edycl fcn, Cfw Fc; n mc

Zl cn), suknh xkshkghn`k ck dhoad`s` rcjgc dejxnxgvx,

U vh L xsxnvck 'cgck Jc[xfxkxk<sup>3</sup> cgx xgc rcjgc dejxnxgvx.B

ae/ngcnxkx vedckvc, Tcbg Xfkx Hffhs ukwk [hmhf`kvh vevx...

اَلَا اِنَّ خَيْرَ النَّاسِ بَعْدَ مُحَمَّدٍ وَصِيَّ النَّبِيِّ الْمُصْطَفَى عِنْدَ ذِي الذِّكْرِ

وَاَوَّلُ مَنْ صَلَّى وَصِنُوْ نَبِيِّهٖ وَاَوَّلُ مَنْ اَرْدَى الْغَوَاةَ لَدَى بَدْرٍ

âH'hp ugwk! /edycl fcnvck suknh ck dhoad` hvhl ,

Rwn/hk shpxfx kcbcnxkvck /edycl fcnxk se]vxdx mcsxvxn,

Khl hb r`ghk xg; acos, pcl vc /edycl fcnxk ; i nc; ckx,

Fcvnvck hby`kghn` pcgh; cj rwdswkh shghk xg; acos uvwn!B<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âCg-I i mcttcrxddhjß (Bi fedn xfkx Fc; ;hn), Fhyvhv ]h`, 1972, scp.574-575æ  
âJhnnox Dc/rwfxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.28, hbh[`r xojxghtghæ âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpx  
(Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 1-[x ]h`, 2-[x [xgv, scp.15.

<sup>2</sup> âCg-I i mcttcrxddhjß, scp.575æ âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpx (Xfkx Cfxg-  
Pcvxv), 1-[x ]h`, L xsxn, 1-[x [xgv, scp.201, L cpcl l cv Cfwgtcbg Xfnhpxl xk  
jcprxrx, 2-[x [xgv, scp.262.

<sup>3</sup> Jc[xfx vevx; vc l crscv Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Cvxsxvn.

<sup>4</sup> âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.3046-3065æ âXfkx Csxnxk  
jhnxoxß, Hmnu`h ]h`, 3-[i [xgv, scp.152.

Mcgxv xfkx Crcfc xfkx Cfx L wedj, ocgxtc Usl hk`k hkh jcnctvck rhnvha`  
xvx. |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i ukw scvrcgcgnx, mh[xf bc; hj` ju`ghl hr  
i ]i k Fckx-L i sjcgr rzml i kc jcnct 'zkvcnl xavx. Ukghn Mcgxvx  
rhna`ghl hyh ]`ohkvh Mcgxv ukghnvkh runowf |edycl fcnxk dhk`kh rhd`jv`  
mc ocfcn menvx ;x, ukghn l i njcv ugl wa mc scvrcckx menl c; vck xl jxkh  
ejl xagcn. Fw bhl hk âPi [wnhjß swncsxkxk 6-[` hdcx æc`cn fxn thsæ sabc fxn ocfc  
'cjnsc, fw fhncvc jcprxrhj h`hn`kß - hdcx khbxg ugvw mc |edycl fcnx-C; ncl  
i fharh fxn hvhl` ukghnh jcnct 'zkvcnvx. Pcl xk jhdth zbgcnxkxk  
Xsghl vh rhgl hghn`k` u acosc fxgvxnvx. Ocgxtc Usl hk zb oxghtcjx vzmn i kv  
Mcgxvx : wtckxk mcgxsx jc/dxk ejvx, u, acnhf x]xf si fp khl hb`k` l csj phgvh  
vznv nc; /cj r`gv`. Fwkvhk suknh Usl hk cgedpxkc evxgck ax; hdcjgc

Ckshn ahxnx Kz/I hk xfkx C[ghk |edycl fcnxk mcthj`kvhk  
suknh fxn ae/n uowdhnhr vedxn...

وَكَانَ هَوَانًا فِي عَلِيٍّ وَأَنَّهُ  
لَأَهْلٌ لَهَا يَاعْمُرُ وَمِنْ حَيْثُ لَا تُدْرِي  
وَصِيَّ النَّبِيِّ الْمُصْطَفَى وَابْنُ عَمِّهِ وَقَاتِلُ فُرْسَانَ الضَّلَالَةِ وَالْكَفْرِ

åFcgx, fxbxl rcgfxl xb Cgx xgcvxnx mc u, phrr i bncvxnx,  
Ed Cl n, fw xa ukh ghdxrvnx, scksc fwkw fxgl xnsck!  
U, se]xgl xa |edycl fcnxk mcsxsx mc ukwk cl x uygwswvwn,  
: i tn mc bcghgcj mhvxsxkxk de'hkc \cpgcmhk`v`n!ß

Kz/I hk fw ae/nx u bhl hk rual wavw ; x, Cl n xfkx Hs ckshn`  
åScrxtcß phvxscgcnxkc mc egc[c vc XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -k Ri neda  
I i ph[xngcnx I i rhfxgxkvc ukghnvhk ; zI c; xsjcl cgcnxkc 'znc  
rcbcfgckvxnl xavx.<sup>1</sup>

Xfxk Cfxg-Pcvvx dhb`n... Xsghl `k cmmcgcnxkvc u pcbncjxk  
å|edycl fcnxk mcsxsxß i kmhk`k` epjxmh evck ae/ngcnvck fxnx vc  
Cfvi gghp xfkx Cfx Si tdhk xfkx Pcncs xfkx Cfvi g-L i jjcgxfvxnx.  
U, fegc vedxn...

وَمِنَّا عَلِيٌّ ذَاكَ صَاحِبُ خَيْرٍ وَصَاحِبُ بَذْرِ يَوْمَ سَأَلَتْ كَتَائِبُهُ  
وَصِيَّ النَّبِيِّ الْمُصْطَفَى وَابْنُ عَمِّهِ فَمَنْ ذَا يُدَانِيهِ وَمَنْ ذَا يُقَارِبُهُ ؟

åMc Cgx – Oedfcnx tcjp evck pcl xk \cpgcmhk fxbvckvxnx,

kcjx[csxkvc ukw xavck 'zji nvi . Usl hkvhk suknh Ni rrcvc rhgv` mc unhv  
zgvi . Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` åWsvwg-yhfcßvc mc åCg-xshfcßvc redv  
ugwkl wavwn.

Tcbg xfkx Hffhs xfkx Cfvi g-L i jjcgxf vc Hffhs`k ck fzdi ; uygw vxv,  
L c; ; ckxk tcjpxkvc mc Pikedk I i phnxfcsxkvc |edycl fcngc fxngx; vc  
ugl wa, [hl hhj`k c; scnxddcjxkxk rh]v`y` bhl hk |edycl fcnxk dhk`kvh  
vhdhkhnh ukw I i vhtxc ejl xavx. U, |edycl fcnxk rwsq ; ctkc mc vctk  
xagcnxkvc xajxnh; ejl xa, Lcnc[ws-sctnh I i phnxfcsxkvc, dhowv Ahl`k  
C[khvxc I ckjcrscxkvc; x I i phnxfcvc (pcn x; xsx 18-[x px[nx xgxkvc fha  
menl xavx) acpxv ugl wavw. Vel xagcn ; x, u, Dcnl w; I i phnxfcsxkvc acpxv  
ugl wavwn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg`, åXsjxd/hfß, åWsvwg-yhfcß, åCg-xshfcß  
; xjhfgnh`kvh redv ugwkl wavwn.

<sup>1</sup> Kz/I hk xfkx C[ghk Ckshnx ckshn jhdths`k`k vkh`ahk vxgx mc ahxnx vxv.  
XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> ukw Fcpnedkxk mhgxsc jc/dxk ejl xavx. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg`  
åXsjxd/hfß, åWsvwg-yhfcß mc åCg-xshfcßvc redv ugwkl wavwn. Ukwk kcscfx  
å{cl pcncß ; xjhfk`k`k 327-328-[x mc åCg-xajxrhrß ; xjhfk`k`k 461-[x scpxtcxkvc  
I zm[wvwn. Ukwk uowvwyw fedjgcñ åCg-I i mcttcxdddjhß ; xjhfk`k`k 592-594-  
[i scpxtcgcxkvc, åKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpx, Lcpcl I cv Cfwgtcbg  
Xfnhpxl xk jcprxrx xgc (6-[` [xgv, scp.31) I zm[wvwn.

Fcvn 'i ki ki k thjepx [wah 'cgck unvw si jwkghn` xgc  
 Se]xgl xa |edycl fcnxk mcsxsx, pcl ukwk cl x uygwsw  
 Ukwk di ; sc; l crhl `k` ; xl vcn; evcn; ; xl ukh dho`kgh-  
 ahn?ß

Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx { cxg vedxn...

لَعَمْرِي لَقَدْ بَايَعْتُمْ ذَا حَفِظَةٍ عَلَى الدِّينِ مَعْرُوفَ الْإِغْفَافِ مَوْفِقًا  
 عَلِيًّا وَصِيَّ الْمُصْطَفَى وَابْنَ عَمِّهِ وَأَوَّلَ مَنْ صَلَّى أَخَا الدِّينِ وَالثَّقَفَى

â{hk`l h hkv ugsww, u ; csgc fed/cj ejvxkxb ; x, u, vxkxk  
 ; eax; ]xsxvxn,

Xttcjgx mc \h; -\h; xbcvxn, pcl vc Juo rhgxfvxn,

Cgxkx vedxncl æ L wsjthk`k mcsxsx, ukwk cl x uygwsw,

Khl hb r`ghk xg; acosvxn, vxk mc jcrmh xgc dhkha`.ß

2-{cl cg l i phnxfcsxkvc<sup>2</sup>

Xfkx Cfvg-Pcvv dhh`n... Fcvn vzdi ai kvc xajxnh; evck Cfwg-  
 Pedsc l xfkx Jcddcphk vedxn...

قُلْ لِلزُّبَيْرِ وَقُلْ لَطَلْحَةَ إِنَّا نَحْنُ الَّذِينَ شَعَرْنَا الْأَنْصَارُ  
 نَحْنُ الَّذِينَ رَأَتْ قُرَيْشُ فِعْلَنَا يَوْمَ الْقَلْبِ أُولَئِكَ الْكُفَّارُ  
 كُنَّا شَعَارَ نَبِينَا وَدَنَارُهُ يُفْدِيهِ مِّنَ الرُّوحِ وَالْأَبْصَارُ  
 إِنَّ الْوَصِيَّ إِمَامُنَا وَوَلِيُّنَا بَرَحَ الْخِفَاءِ وَبَاحَتِ الْأَسْرَارُ

Bi fednc ve, Jcgpdc ve... fxb u ru]hr ; csgcnx;

: x pcl xac ckshn ai hn`k` menxnx; ,

Ri neda fxbx duoghd`f pcl vc 'zni f ; x,

Fcvn l i phnxfcsxkvc u ; htxngcnc kc ejvx; .

Fxb |edycl fcnxl xbx pcn jcnctvck pxl hdc evxnvx; .

{xsl xl xb, [hk`l `b, 'zbgcnxl xb ukh tcvh ugsww.

Fxbxl xl hl `l `b mc mcgxl xb |edycl fcnxk mcsxsxvxn.

Xkvx \cnvcgcn ; khnh `evcn, sxngcn ha; hn ughn.ß

Zl cn xfkx Phnxsc Ckshnx, L cpcl l cv xfkx Pckxtckxk  
 fhncsxkvc fegc vedxn...

سَيِّئُ النَّبِيِّ وَشِبْهُ الْوَصِيِّ وَرَأَيْتُهُ لَوْثَهَا الْعُنْدَمُ

<sup>1</sup> âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpx, 1-[x [xgv, scp.47æ âTi jwpß (Xfkx C/scl ),  
 Pedvcnhfhv ]h\, 1288-[x xg, 2-[x [xgv, scp.277.

<sup>2</sup> Dekc unhvh, 1-[x [xgv, scp.47, 49æ âTi jwpß (Xfkx C/scl ), scp.307.

åU, |edycl fcnge edkx hvvhv`n, ukwk mcsksx ; xl xvxn,  
 Ukwk fhdnhv`kvh pcl xac rhk nck`x mhnv`n.B  
 Cbwv rcfxgcsxkvck fxn ; xax vedxn...

هَذَا عَلَيَّ وَهُوَ الْوَصِيُّ  
 أَخَاهُ يَوْمَ التَّجْوَةِ النَّبِيُّ  
 وَقَالَ هَذَا بَعْدِي الْوَلِيُّ  
 وَعَاهُ وَاعٍ وَنَسِيَ الشَّقِيَّ

åFw Cgxvxn, dhowv pcl xk mcsxvxn,  
 |edycl fcn Rcvxn-Owl vh ukw rhnvha hvghkv`nl `a.  
 Fwdwnl wavw ; x, fw l ckvck suknh sxbxk mcgxkxbvxn.  
 Quafoj mc hd`r acos fwkw hgv, fcvfcoj mc rhnhfcojgx  
 wkwjvw.B

Pcl ]xkxk Bcffc rcfxgcsxkvck fxn dekdexl c Hdxackxk  
 ruawkwkvhk ]`ohnhr vevx...

نَحْنُ بَنُو صَبَّةَ أَعْدَاءُ عَلِيٍّ  
 ذَاكَ الَّذِي يُعْرِفُ قَدَمًا بِالْوَصِيِّ  
 وَفَارِسِ الْخَيْلِ عَلَى عَهْدِ النَّبِيِّ  
 مَا أَنَا عَنْ فَضْلِ عَلِيٍّ بِالْعَمَى  
 لِكِنِّي أُنْعَى ابْنَ عَفَانَ التَّقِيِّ  
 إِنَّ الْوَلِيَّ طَالِبَ ثَارِ الْوَلِيِّ

åFxb Bcffc zmghvghn, Cgxkxk vi al ckxdx ; .  
 Pcl xk ; cs ; x, rcvxl vck mcsx ; xl x jhk`k`n.  
 |edycl fcnxk vzmni ki k de`hkc \cpgcmhk`  
 L ck Cgxkxk tcbgxkvc csgn ; un vedxgcl .  
 Gh ; xk xkvx Usl hk`k l hjcl xkvc rcl gxdcl .  
 Csgxkvc fw mcgx u mcgxkxk xkxrhl `k` xsjcdxn.B  
 Pi [n xfkx Cvx pcl xk 'i kvc fegc vel xavxn...

يَا رَبَّنَا سَلِّمْ لَنَا عَلِيًّا  
 سَلِّمْ لَنَا الْمُبَارَكَ الْمَرْضِيًّا  
 الْمُؤْمِنُ الْمُوَحِّدُ التَّقِيَّ  
 لَا خَطْلُ الرَّأْيِ وَلَا غَوِيًّا  
 بَلْ هَادِيًّا مَوْفَقًا مَهْدِيًّا  
 وَاحْفَظْهُ رَبِّي وَاحْفَظْ النَّبِيَّا  
 فِيهِ فَقَدْ كَانَ لَهُ وَلِيًّا  
 ثُمَّ ارْتَضَاهُ بَعْدَهُ وَصِيًّا

åXghpx, Sck Cgxkx fxbxl i ]i k shogh!  
 U l i fhnc ; ; xaxkx, fcdckxgl xa, nhb` ugvwyykw,  
 Pcl xk l z/l xk, jzmpxv]x, \cnpxb ; hn`  
 : x, nc/dx kc si sjvi n, kc vc ; x, hby`k,  
 U dugkwk jh\l `a, l i mttcr mc pxvhdcj ugwkl wavwn.  
 |cnmcnvx`hn`l ! Ukw shogh, |edycl fcnx vc,  
 Ukwk mi [vwkwk vh shogh ; x, pcrxrcjck u, |edycl fcnxk



mcgxsxvxn.

Ukvhk suknh fcdckxgl xa mcsxvxn.B

Oi bedl cj xfkx Shfxj Bwa-acphvcjedk fegc vel xavxn...

يَا وَصِيَّ النَّبِيِّ قَدْ اجْلَلْتَ الْحَرْ  
بِ الْأَعَادِي وَسَارَتْ الْأَطْعَانُ  
وَأَسْتَقَامَتْ لَكَ الْأُمُورُ سِوَى الشَّامِ  
وَفِي الشَّامِ يَظْهَرُ الْأَذْعَانُ  
حَسِبَهُمْ مَا رَأَوْا وَحَسِبَكَ مِنَّا  
هَكَذَا نَحْنُ حَيْثُ كُنَّا وَكَأَنَّا

åEd |edycl fcnxk mcsxsx! Rum fw l i phnxfvcvc Xsghl  
vi al ckgcnxkx.

Pumvc[vc ujwnhkgghn` jeb Fcvnvck wbhrghj.

Pcn aed sxbxk i ]i k vi bcgvx, dhgk`b fw Ahl vkh fharh,

: x, Ahl vh vh jcsxgl mc xjhcx xbgcnx ha; hn ugh[hr.

Ukghnh vh fw fcsvxn ; x, 'znvi gcn mc sxbc vc fw fcsvxn ; x,  
fxb

Ke[c mhn xv; sc mc ke[c mhnv`ghnsh, l zp; cl vhdhkl `a`r.B

Pcl ]xkxk {cl cg l i phnxfcsxkvc l l l i g-l z/l xkxk

Hdxacdc oxjhfv evnc; vedxn...

وَصِيَّ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ مَنْ دُونَ أَهْلِهِ وَأَنْتَ عَلَى مَا كَانَ مِنْ ذَلِكَ شَاهِدٌ

åU, |edycl fcnxk hxgcsxkvc ukwk de`hkc mcsxvxn.

Sckxk zbi k vc fwkh cmmcgvcck ahpxv xv; k.B

Cl n xfkx l pedpc vc {cl cg l i phnxfcsxkvc Xfkx Bi fednxk  
mc Xl hl Pcsckxk oi jfcsxkvc suknh fegc vevx...

حَسَنُ الْخَيْرِ يَا شَبِيهَ أَبِيهِ  
فُئِمْتُ فِينَا مَقَامَ خَيْرِ خَطِيبٍ  
فُئِمْتُ بِالْخُطْبَةِ الَّتِي صَدَعَ اللَّهُ  
بِهَا عَنْ أَبِيكَ أَهْلَ الْعُيُوبِ  
وَكَشَفْتُ الْقِنَاعَ فَاتَّضَحَ الْأَمْرُ  
وَأَصْلَحَتْ فَاسَدَاتِ الْقُلُوبِ  
لَسْتُ كَابِنَ الزُّبَيْرِ لَجُلُجٍ فِي الْقَوِ  
لِ وَطَاطَا عَنَّا فَسَلِ مَرِيبٍ  
وَأَبَى اللَّهُ أَنْ يَقُومَ بِمَا قَا  
مَ بِهِ ابْنُ الْوَصِيِّ وَابْنُ النَّجِيبِ  
إِنَّ شَخْصًا بَيْنَ النَّبِيِّ لَكَ الْخَيْرُ  
وَبَيْنَ الْوَصِيِّ غَيْرُ مَشُوبٍ

åEd Pcsck, ed fhjxkx \h; ! Ed hjhs`kh uoahn!

Fxbxl hnhl `bv h ck dhoe oi jfcdc ghdxr 'zni gvi k.

Uowvwywk oi jfckxk mhsxjcsxgc Hgghp

Dhnh vkh`ahkgghn`k vxgxkx hjhkvkh shoghv`,

|cnvcgcnx rhgv`nv`k, pcrxrcj ha; hn ugvw.

Fhjxkvc; x \xs tx; xngcn, jebgx; gc xsghp ugvw.

Sck Xfkx Bi fedn ; xl x vedxgsck ; x, ac ; ; xgc szb vedcsck.  
(Ed Xfkx Bi fedn!) Deg fedxkgxdx, di k'i ggi di , xkhvg'y` rud  
;ckhnh.

Hgghp egcl csxk ; x, u, egc fxn denvc ugswk

: x, mcsikxk mc kc[xfxk zmghv` rcnhn jwjwf.

(Ed Pcsck!) Sckxk ; xl x fxn acosddcj, ed jhl hl -oedxn ; x, u,  
/edycl fcnxk i shncsx (oi ghscsx) mc mcsixsvxn.

Ohgxs, jcl xb fxn aedxk rhj`gl hv`y` ugh[hr.ß

Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv dwohn`vh;` fedjgcnx redv ejvx; vck suknh  
vedxn... Fw ae/ngcn mc wn[wbcgcnxk (fedjgcnxk) phl `s`k` Cfw  
L wokct Gwj xfkx Dcpdh âMcr/cjw [cl cgß ; xjhfkvh redv  
ejl xavxn. Cfw L wokct l i pcvvsvxn mc u ; csgcnvckvxn ; x,  
se]; x dugw xgc ughk xl hl cjx scpxp fxxnæ u, kc axcvxn, kc vc  
axckxk fzdi ; acosddcjgcnxkvck shd`g`n.ß

Sxttedk l i phnxfcsxkvc redv ejvxdxl xb mc Cgx <sup>TM</sup> i ]i k  
mcsx ; cgl csxkx 'zsjcnck ae/ngcnx Kcsn xfkx L i bhpvl zbi ki k  
âSxttedkß ; xjhfkvh redv ejl xavxn. U vh pcvxs hgxl gcnxk-  
vckvxn.

3-Sxttedk l i phnxfcsxkvc uowkhk ae/ngcnvc mcsxddcj

Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k l c; jwfw {cnxn xfkx Cfv i ggghp Fc[gxdc mc Ca/cs  
xfkx Reds : xkvxdc (ukghn Usl hk`k Xnhkvh;` mhgxcgnx xv) ]  
hjv`rvh, {cnxn xl hl `k [hmhf`k` hahy`vh;` ae/ngc menvx...

أَتَانَا كِتَابٌ عَلَيَّ فَلَمْ	تُرَدُّ الْكِتَابَ بِأَرْضِ الْعَجَمِ
وَلَمْ نَعْصِ مَا فِيهِ لَمَّا أَتَى	وَلَمَّا نَدِمَ وَلَمَّا نَلِمَ
وَنَحْنُ وَلَاةٌ عَلَيَّ ثَغْرَهَا	نَضِيمُ الْعَزِيزِ وَنَحْمِي الدِّمَمَ
نُسَاقِيهِمُ الْمَوْتَ عِنْدَ اللَّقَاءِ	بِكَاسِ الْمُنَايَا وَنَشْفِي الْقَرَمَ
طَحَنَاهُمْ طَحْنَةً بِالْقَنَا	وَضَرَبَ سُيُوفَ تَطِيرُ اللَّمَمَ
مَضِينَا يَقِينًا عَلَيَّ دِينَنَا	وَدِينُ النَّبِيِّ مُجَلِّي الظُّلَمِ
أَمِينُ الْإِلَهِ وَبُرْهَانُهُ	وَعَدْلُ الْبَرِيَّةِ وَالْمُعْتَصِمِ
رَسُولُ الْمَلِكِ وَمَنْ بَعْدَهُ	خَلِيفَتُنَا الْقَائِمُ الْمُدْعَمُ
عَلِيًّا عَنِيْتُ وَصِيَّ النَّبِيِّ	نُجَالِدُ عَنْهُ غَوَاةَ الْأُمَمِ

âCgxvck fxn l c; jwf fxbc jcnc 'cgxfvxn.

Fw I c; jwfw Xnhkvh [hmhfs`b rudl hnhl I ck,  
 Xkvx fxbc ]hjkhvh kc ukvhk fudwk rh]`n`n,  
 Kc I cbcl I cj evxncl , kc I cghl cj evxncl ,  
 Fxb ukwk zg; csxkvc scnpvcgnc mhgx dx; ,  
 Cbxb xkhv; hngnh` bxggcjc shg`f \ckhp`I `bvshoghn`r,  
 Vi al ckgc fxb rhna`gha`f vdhkhkhvh,  
 Zgi I rcvcpgcnxkx fuyhbghn`kh jz; cnx; , vcdck vhyghnh acth  
 mencnx; ,  
 Ukghn` zb r`g`k mc kxbcl xbgc egc mwnhn`r  
 : x, [cscvpcnxkxk bcnnvcgnc phmhvh \cnmhb evcn,  
 Fxb dcrxkgc, xl hkgh vxkxk dugw xgc `evxn; ,  
 Fxbxl vxkxl xb bi gl cjcncx dhnhk |edycl fcnxk vxkxvxn,  
 Pcl xk acos ; x, Hgghp`k cl xkx mc vcgxgxvxn,  
 Den i bi kvc cvhgjcjgx, xkshkghn`k \ckhp`v`n,  
 L cgx; Hgghp`k Ncswgvvwn, ukvhk suknh xsc,  
 Ukwk [hkxaxkx, ocgxtcsxvxn ; x, fxbxl de`hkc hnohghkh[hy`-  
 I `bv`n,  
 Cgxkx vedxncl , |edycl fcnxk mcsxsxk,  
 Fxb ukwk ohjxnkc i l l cjkx hby`kghn` xgc I i phnxfc  
 h\hn`n`r.<sup>1</sup>  
 Ca/cs xfkx Reds vc XI hl Cgx™ -`k I c; jwfwkh fegc [hmhf  
 menl xavx.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> āMcr/cjw Sxttedkß, scp.15, 18ā āKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnp, 1-[x [xgv, scp.247ā  
 āTi jwpß (Xfkx C/scl ), 2-[x [xgv, scp.305.

<sup>2</sup> Mhgxgc c; scn phgghnvh ae/n vel xnvxgcne ukghn`k dhk`kvh pcl xac fxn  
 ahxn ugwnvw mc ukghn`k vxgxkvck ae/n uowdwnvwghn. Ca/cs vc ukghnvkh  
 fxnxvxn. Ca/cs xfkx Reds : xkvx px[ncjxk 10-[w xgxkvc zb rzml i kvck jca; xg  
 ugwkhh ki l hdckvc ped/cjx xgc |edycl fcnxk dhk`kh `cgcnc; Xsghl `rcfwg  
 ejl xavx. Cfw Fc; nxk oxghtcjx vzmni kvc mh[xf scvcrckx menl c; vck xl jxkh  
 ejvxdxkc `znc ocgxtc ukwkgh mwnwal wa, csxn hgl `a, suknh vh ukw hbhv  
 ejl xavx. Ca/cs Cfw Fc; nxk fh[`s` I l l i Tcnmc xgc emgckl xavx. U, Ahl mc  
 Xnhr`k fc/bx tcjpcgcnxkvx xajxnh; ejl xavx. Usl hk vh ukw Hbcnfhd[hk`k  
 mhgxsc jc/dxk ejl xavx. āSxttedkß I i phnxfcsxkvx XI hl Cgx™ -`k jcnctxkvx  
 vx. XI hl `pc; cl xddcjx rcfwg ejl cdc mhvhn evckgcncvck mc pc; cl edkxk  
 (Cl n Hs`k mc Cfw L wsh Ca/cnxkxk) āVuml cjwg-[ckvcgßvc; x ahpxvgcnxkvck  
 vx. XI hl `k acphvcjxkvck r`no `i k suknh mthj ejl xavx. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-  
 phg` āXsjxd/hfß, āWsvwg-yhfcb mc āCg-xshfcbv redv ugwkwn.

{cnxn xfkx Cfvi ggghp Fc[gx |edycl fcnxk mthj`kvkh r`no `i k cmmcg  
 Xsghl `rcfwg ejl xa mc Rhvxsddc I i phnxfcsxkvx vzdi al i avi. |edycl fcn  
 ukw `zkvcnl xavx ; x, Bxg-ocsgcjvc Ocs/cl rcfxgcxkx I cpm ejsxk. U vh

أَتَانَا الرَّسُولُ رَسُولُ عَلِيٍّ	فسر بِمَقْدَمِهِ الْمُسْلِمُونَ
رَسُولُ الْوَصِيِّ وَصِيِّ النَّبِيِّ	لَهُ الْفَضْلُ وَالسَّبْقُ فِي الْمُؤْمِنِينَ
بِمَا نَصَحَ اللَّهُ وَالْمُصْطَفَى	رَسُولُ إِلَهِ النَّبِيِّ الْأَمِينَا
يُجَاهِدُ فِي اللَّهِ لَا يَنْشِي	جَمِيعَ الطَّغَاةِ مَعَ الْجَاهِدِينَا
وَزِيرُ النَّبِيِّ وَذُو صَهْرِهِ	وَسَيْفُ الْمُؤْنَةِ فِي الظَّالِمِينَا

âCgkxk r h s x v x f x b c j c n c t ' c g x f v x ,  
 " c g x a x d g c f x b g c n x s e m x k [ c r c n r e v x f v x .  
 M c s i k i k r h s x v x , d c / k x m c s x d d x - | e d y c l f c n x k  
 : x , l z / l x k g c n x ] x k v c p c n f x n t c b x g c j u k w k v w n ,  
 H g g h p d u g w k v h m c L w s j h t h i ] i k , d c / k x  
 N c s w g w g g g h p x - c l x k K c f x i ] i k ] h g ` a v ` m c x o g h s ' z s j c n v x ,  
 H g g h p d u g w k v h ] h g ` a ` f , p e ] m h o j v h w s h k l h v ` ,  
 F i j i k x k h v ; h n g h n g h , x k ; h n ] ` g h n g h [ x p h v e j v x ,  
 | e d y c l f c n x k m c b x n x , p c l v c ; i n c ; c k x d v x ,  
 B h g ` l , b i g l ; h n i ] i k z g i l r ` g ` k [ ` x v x . ß  
 U k w k v x g x k v c k p c l v c f e g c v e l x a g c n ...

أَتَانَا الرَّسُولُ رَسُولُ الْوَصِيِّ	عَلِيٍّ الْمُهْدَبِ مِنْ هَاشِمٍ
رَسُولُ الْوَصِيِّ وَصِيِّ النَّبِيِّ	وَحَيْرِ الْبَرِيَّةِ مِنْ قَائِمٍ
وَزِيرُ النَّبِيِّ وَذُو صَهْرِهِ	وَحَيْرِ الْبَرِيَّةِ فِي الْعَالَمِ
لَهُ الْفَضْلُ وَالسَّبْقُ بِالصَّالِحَاتِ	لِهُدْيِ النَّبِيِّ بِهِ يَأْتِمِي
مُحَمَّدًا أَعْنِي رَسُولُ إِلَهِ	وَعَيْثُ الْبَرِيَّةِ وَالْخَاتَمِ
أَجَبْنَا عَلَيَّا بِفَضْلٍ لَهُ	وَطَاعَةٍ نَصَحَ لَهُ دَائِمٌ
فَقِيَّةٌ حَلِيمٌ لَهُ صَوْلَةٌ	كَلَيْثُ عَرِينٍ بِهَا سَائِمٌ

âM c s i k i k f x n r h s x v x f x b c j c n c t ' c g x f v x ,  
 P h a x l v c k u g h k \ h ; C g x k x k r h s x v x æ  
 M c s i k i k ' z k v c n v x d x , d c / k x K c f x k x k m c s i s i k i k ,  
 D e n i b i k v c ' c b c k c k d h o a ` f x n m h n g ` y ` k ,  
 | e d y c l f c n x k m c b x n x , u k w k ; i n c ; c k x k x k ,

' e v x f p c l x k f i j i d h k v ` n l ` a v ` . 51 , d h o w v 54 - [ i p x [ n x x g x k v c m c t h j e j l x a v x n .  
 U k w k j c n [ i l e d x - p h g ` â X s j x d / h f ß , â W s v w g - y h f c ß â C g - x s h f c ß ; x j h f g h n ` k v h  
 l z m [ w v v w n .

Fw hgcl vc dhahdhkghn`k ck acnhtcjgxsxkxk,  
 Tcbxgcj shpxfxvxn, shgep cl cggcnvc zkvc,  
 Pxxvhdcl jh\l hr i ]i k |edycl fcnc xrxjxvh ejvx,  
 L i pcl l cvx vedxncl , Hgghp`k |edycl fcnc,  
 Hgghp`k ncpl cj dhy`a, kcfxgcxk ohjcl x,  
 Cgxdc [hmhf menvx; , ]i k; x phl `vhk i sji kvi n,  
 Ukwk xfhvcjx ohgxs, pcl xacgx; , vhx l vxn,  
 Tcrxpvxn, scfxngxvxn, pcl vc ; x, pedfcjgxxvxn  
 Leackxk axngcnx jc; , xsjcvxdx mhvxdc dug h]hn.<sup>1</sup>  
 L i hmxdc L xsnx Cl n Hsh fhy`aghl `av` ; x, Xl hl Cgx™ -gh  
 l i phnxfc h\hns`k. Xl hl vh ukwk fhncsxkvc fxn ae/n  
 rual wavw ; x, fc/bx pxsscgnx fegcvxn...

يَا عَجَبًا لَقَدْ سَمِعْتُ مُنْكَرًا      كَذِبًا عَلَى اللَّهِ يَشِيبُ الشُّعْرًا  
 يَسْتَرْقُ السَّمْعُ وَيَغْشَى الْبَصَرُ      أَمَا كَانَ يُرْضَى أَحْمَدًا لَوْ خَبِرَا  
 أَنْ يَقْرَأُوا وَصِيَّةَ وَالْبَتَرَا      شَأْنِي الرَّسُولُ وَاللَّعِينُ الْآخِرَا

âC[cfh! Eaxjvxl ; x, fxn kctcn xk; hn]`  
 Shrrhg` hyhnhkvh Hgghph dhghk vedxn.  
 Rwgghrghn` ; hn, 'zbgcnx ; un evckvxn.  
 Ukwk ocfcnx pe] mhoj Cpl cvx nhb` ejl cb..  
 : x, ukwk mcsxskx cfjcngc dhkha` fxgcn,  
 Ncswgwk vi al ckx cfjcn, l cg/wk, 'zbi vhnv`n.<sup>2</sup>  
 Xl hl Cgx™ -k unvswkvxh Ca/csxk xavck 'zji ni gvi di kc  
 mc rcfxgcsxkxk xojxghth vi ]hn ugvywvkh 'znc Kc[hax ukwk  
 fhncsxkvc vevx...

رَضِينَا بِمَا يَرْضَى عَلَيْنَا بِهِ      وَإِنْ كَانَ فِي مَا يَأْتِ جَدُّغُ الْمُنَاحِرِ  
 وَصِيَّ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ مِنْ دُونِ أَهْلِهِ      وَوَارِثُهُ بَعْدَ الْعُمُومِ الْكَابِرِ

âCgxkxk fcdckvxdxkx fix vc xkvx fcdckvx; .  
 Fwnwkgghn` ; csl cdc pz; l mensc vc dekc!  
 U, Cpgx-fedj x]xkvc |edycl fcnc jc; mcsxvxn.  
 Mc ukwk jckph mhnxsxæcbxb cl xgcxkxk mhng`y` xgc.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âMcr/cjw Sxttedkß, scp.20-24.

<sup>2</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.43.

<sup>3</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.137. Kc[hax Reds xfkx Cl n l i ocbncl ([hpxgxddcj mc Xsghl vzmni kvc ae/n dhhbk) ahxnvxn. Ukwk csgx Dcl ckxk Kc[nhk cdhgj]xk-

âSxttedkß I i phnxfcsxkvc redv ugwkhhk, Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k mcsxgxdx  
(fwkh mcshtcj vc vedxgn) epjxmh evck aedgcnvck fxx vc Kcsn  
xfkx C[ghk Ckshnxkxk redv ejvxdxl xb hahy`vh;` ae/nxvxn...

وَجُنُودٌ صِفِّينَ لَعْمَرِي غَافِلًا	فَدُ كُنْتُ عَنْ صِفِّينَ فِي مَا قَدْ خَلَا
وَلَقَدْ أَكُونُ بِذَاكَ حَقًّا جَاهِلًا	فَدُ كُنْتُ حَقًّا لَا أَحَازِرُ فِتْنَةً
وَلَقِيتُ مِنْ لَهَوَاتِ ذَاكَ عَيَاطِلًا	فَرَأَيْتُ فِي جُمُهورِ ذَلِكَ مَعْظَمًا
لَا كَيْفَ الْآحِيرَةَ وَتَخَاذُلًا	كَيْفَ التَّفَرُّقِ وَالْوَصِيِّ أَمَامَنَا
مَنْ لَمْ يَكُنْ عِنْدَ الْبَلَابِلِ عَاقِلًا	لَا تَعْنِينِ عُقُولَكُمْ لَا خَيْرَ فِي
دِينِ الْوَصِيِّ تُصَادِفُوهُ عَاجِلًا	وَذَرُوا مُعَاوِيَةَ الْعَوِيَّ وَتَابِعُوا

â{hk`I h hkv x]xncl ; x, Sxttedkvck,  
Sxttedk unvwsw mc ukwk ; e]l xaxkvck rhtxgcl ,  
L ck pcrrcl , pe] fxx txjkcvc ]c; xkl xncl ,  
Gh; xk vuynwsw, fw txjkc fhncvc fxocfcnccl ,  
Ukgghn`k [cn'cgcnxkvc s`o fxx pcl nc/dgx; ,  
Fwkghn`k udwkfhbg`rghn`kvh xsc x; xjxncgx; ,  
Mcsx fxbxl ncpfcnccl xbvxn, fcs jctnxrc kxdc?!  
Pe] mhoj! Fw dhgk`b xjhcsxbgx; mc ; zl c; ejl cl c;  
w[fhj`kvhk ughn!  
Zb crggcnxkxbx cfcs denc vkhghl hd`k, ]i k; x  
Pcn ; cs txjkcgcncvc hy`gg` ugl hsh, ukvh oedxn ugl hb!  
Dugkw hbl `a L i hmxdcckx fuaghd`f vcnphg,  
Mcsxkxk vxkxkc jhfe ugwk ; x, jebgx; gc ukwkgh i bfci b ughns`-  
k`b.ß<sup>1</sup>

Pi [n xfkx Cvx vedxn...

سَلِّمْ لَنَا الْمُهَذَّبَ النَّقِيًّا	يَا رَبَّنَا سَلِّمْ لَنَا عَلِيًّا
وَاجْعَلْهُ هَادِي أُمَّةٍ مَهْدِيًّا	الْمُؤْمِنَ الْمُسْتَرَشِدَ الْمَرْضِيًّا
وَاحْفَظْهُ رَبِّي حِفْظَكَ النَّبِيَّا	لَا خَطَلَ الرَّأْيِ وَلَا غَبِيًّا
ثُمَّ ارْتَضَاهُ بَعْدَهُ وَصِيًّا	فَإِنَّهُ كَانَ لَهُ وَلِيًّا

âEd Ncfffxl xb! Cgxkx fxbxl i ]i k pxtb egcl

vckvxn. Suknhvhk : wtcvc I cs; wkghal `a mc 40-[` px[nx xgxkvc mcthj ejl xa-  
vxn (Bcn; cgxkxk âC/ghl ß ; xjh`f).

<sup>1</sup> âMcr/cjw Sxttedkß, scp.365.

*U \h; -\h; xbc kctsx, ghdxrgx fñ xkshk`.*  
*U l z/l xk ; x, pxvhdcj ugwf, fcdckxgxfvxn,*  
*Ukw i l l cjc pxvhdcj]x, dug 'zsjcnck rcnhn men.*  
*U ; cs ; x, kc nc/dx si sjvi n, kc vc [hpxgvxn.*  
*Ncfff! Ukw |edycl fcnxk ; xl x pxtb egc.*  
*Pcrxrcjck u, |edycl fcnxk mcgxsxvxn*  
*|edycl fcn ukw zbi kvck suknh mcsx se]xfvxn.ß*  
*Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Bi edf Csgcl x vedxn...*

أَمَّا لَكَ لَا تُنِيبُ إِلَى الصَّوَابِ	أَلَا أُنَبِّغُ مُعَاوِيَةَ بْنَ حَرْبٍ
تُحَارِبُ مَنْ يَقُومُ لَدَى الْكِتَابِ	أَكَلَّ الدَّهْرُ مَرْجُوسٌ لَعَبٍ
نَزْرَكَ بِجَحْفَلٍ شَبَهَ الْهَضَابِ	فَإِنْ تَسْلِمَ وَتَبْقَى الدَّهْرُ يَوْمًا
يُرْدُّكَ عَنْ عَوَانِكَ وَارْتِيَابِ	يَقُودُهُمُ الْوَصِيُّ إِلَيْكَ حَتَّى

*åPcnfxk uygw L i hmxdcde szdgc ; x,*  
*Sckc kc ugwf, vi b dugh rhd`jl `nshk?*  
*Pcn vzmncv hby`kg`yh 'evc[c; sck?*  
*Phrr` x[nh evck, Rwn/hkh hgx! ughkgh mwnwah[hrshk?*  
*Fxg ; x, c'cn fñ 'i k rwnjhshk vh [hk`k`,*  
*Dhy`a vhl ghghn` ; xl x fzdi ; ruawkgh sckxk 'zni ai kc 'cgc-*  
*[cdx ;*  
*Egc fñ unvw ; x, mcsx ukh scn; cnvcvxn.*  
*Sckc jcnct 'zkcncn ; x, sckx pi ni f dugkw hbl hrvhk sho-*  
*ghs`k.ß*  
*L i yednc xfkx Phnxs xfkx Cfvi g-L i jjcgxf vedxn...*

<sup>1</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.381. Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvvxxk redv ejvxdxkc 'znc u, fw fed/jgcnx å{cl cgb l i phnxfcsxkvc vel xavxn. Pi [n xfkx Cv x : xkvx Pi [ni g-Oedn gcrfcx xgc l capwnvwn. U zb rcfxgcsxkxk ki l hdckvc ped/cjx xgc fxngx; -vc |edycl fcn i -xk pi bwnwkh 'cgxf Xsghl `rcfwg ejl xa, Rhvxsxddc l i phnxfcsxkvc xajxnh; ejl xa, Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k h\hny` l i phnxfcgcnvc u pcbncjgc dhkha` ugi wa mc : xkvx rcfxgcsxkxk scn; cnvcgdxkx zpvcxkx hgl `av`n. Bxdhv xfkx Cfxp ukw fñ rnw\gh L i hmxdcckxk dhk`kh 'zkcncv mc ukghn` 51-[x px[nx xgkvc Lcnc[x Cbnhvh rcjgc dejxnvx. Pi [n vedxn... åTcjp ugwk! wa zg; cgcnxk cjhnt`kvh jc; fñ scsxk vedck xg; l i scgl hk l ck xvxl .ß

<sup>2</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.382. Fw ae/nvc; x åcmhx;ß szbi åcmhß ; z; i kvck 'zji -ni gl i avi n mc xjxk pi nl csxkc, bxk'xgvcl csxkc vedxgx. åL i hmxdcß ; cgl csx xjgcnxk i sji kc pi nck xjc vedxgx.

يَا شُرَاطَةَ الْمَوْتِ صَبْرًا لَا يَهُولُكُمْ  
 دَيْنُ ابْنِ حَرْبٍ فَإِنَّ الْحَقَّ قَدْ ظَهَرَ  
 وَقَاتِلُوا كُلَّ مَنْ يَبْغِي غَوَائِلَكُمْ  
 فَأَيُّمَا النَّصْرُ فِي الضَّرِّ لِمَنْ صَبَرَ  
 سَيَقُوا الْجَوَارِحَ حَدَّ السَّيْفِ وَاحْتَسِبُوا  
 فِي ذَلِكَ الْخَيْرَ وَارْجُوا اللَّهَ وَالْظُّفْرَ  
 وَأَيُّقُنُوا أَنَّ مَنْ أَضْحَى يُخَالِفُكُمْ  
 أَضْحَى شَقِيًّا وَأَضْحَى نَفْسُهُ خَسِرًا  
 فِيكُمْ وَصِيُّ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ فَإِنَّدُكُمْ  
 وَأَهْلُهُ وَكِتَابُ اللَّهِ قَدْ نَشَرَ

âEd [hkghn`kvhk ; e]ck vzdi a]i gcn! Scfxngx ugwk,  
 L i hmxdcckxk l c; nx sxbx runowjl hs`k...phrr ha; hn ugh[hr!  
 Pcn ; cs txjkc dnhhv`nsh, ukwkgh vzdi ai k,  
 Rcgcf c u ; csxkvxn ; x, ]cjxkgx; vc scfxn ejxsk,  
 Fcvckgcnxkxbx r`g`k[ghn`k xjxgdxkc vuynw rumwk ; x, fw dug-  
 vh

Shmhfh, l i ; hthjh, Hgghp`k ; zl cdxkc i l xvmhn`r,  
 Dcrxk fxgxk...pcn ; cs sxbxkgc l i ohgxt ugsh,  
 Fcvfcojgxdc, bxdhkh, ocshncjc vi ]hn ughn.  
 } i k; x sxbxk scn; cnvckxb |edycl fcnxk mcsxsvxn.  
 Ukwk Cpgx-fedjx mc Rwn/hk sxbxk hnhk`bv hv`n.ß  
 Tcbg Xfkx Hffhs vedxn...

وَصِيُّ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ مِنْ دُونِ أَهْلِهِ  
 وَفَارِسُهُ إِنْ قِيلَ هَلْ مِنْ مَنَازِلِ

âU, |edycl fcn ohkcvhk`kvh de'hkc mcsxsvxn.  
 L i fhnxbc l edvhk`kvh de'hkc \cpgcmhk, de'hkc l i fhnxb  
 xsjcdckvxn.ß  
 L i kbcn xfkx Cfx Pi l edsc Mcvvhx vedxn...

لَيْسَ مِنَّا مَنْ لَمْ يَكُنْ لَكَ فِي  
 اللَّهُ وَلِيًّا يَا ذَا الْوَلَا وَالْوَصِيَّةِ

âSckx Hgghph 'znc seml cdck fxbvck vedxg.  
 Ed |edycl fcnxk mcsxddcj shpxfx mc mcsxsvxn.ß

<sup>1</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.385. L i yednc xfkx Phnxs xfkx Cfvi g-L i jjcgxf, Cfw  
 Si tdkh xfkx Pcnsxk rhnvha` mc fxn ahxn xv. Fc/bxgcnx pcn x; xsxkx fxn hvhl  
 peshf ejl xagcn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âWsvwg-yhfcßvc, csl h mc ; i kdcgcn  
 fhf`kvh redv ugwk l wavwn.

<sup>2</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.436. L i kbcn Pcl vkh rcfxgcsxkxk \cpgcmhk` mc ahnx  
 xv. Mcvhc vc Pcl vkhvkh ughk fxn ahockxk hv`v`n (Xfkx Vxndckxk âCg-  
 xajxrhrß ; xjh f). Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âCg-xshfcßvc redv evxgl xavxn. Unhvh  
 vedxgx ; x, u, |edycl fcnx 'zn l i a mc rhj`n`k \hd`k` vc mc mc hj`k \hd`kvkh  
 hb rcn hn menck xg; acos ugl wavw. Fw szb ocgxtc Zl cnxk rwghy`kh ]hjv`rvh,



4-Xfkx Hffhs`k I c;jwfwkvh mcsxddcj

Sxttedk I i phnxfcsxkvc Xfkx Hffhs L i hmxdcckxk I c;jwfwkh  
[hmf ughnhr fegc dnbv`...

Fxsl xgghpxn-ncpl hkn-ncpxl .

HI I h fc/v. Sckxk I c;jwfwk I ckc ]hjv`, dnbv`rghn`k`  
uowvwl , fxgvl ;x, Usl hk`k ;zl c;]xgcx xgc I i ohgxtcj  
ejl cdxl xbx mc Fckx-I l cddc pz;wl cjxkc rhna` ]`ol hy`l `b`  
ouaghl `nshk. {hk`l h hkv ugswk ;x, sck Usl hk`k rcjgx xgc zb  
epjxdh[`k` jc/l xk ejvxk. U bhl hk ;x, sckvck ;zl c; xsjcvx,  
ukh ;zl c; ejl cvxk. Fwkwkgh vh zb xsjcdxkc khxg ugvwk.  
Sckxkgc ukwk hnhs`kvh;` cghrc Usl hk`k hkh jcnctxkvck ughk  
rhvha` Mcgxv xfkx I rfcvxn. HI I h fxbx Jedl mc Cvxxk  
vi al ckx peshf ejvxdxkc `cgvx;vc xsc, fxg ;x, Cfw Fc;n mc  
ZI cn Usl hkh kxsfcjck dhoo` vxgc, Usl hk vh sckvck dhoo`  
vx. HI I h sckxk vevxdxk âRi neda fzdi;gcxkvck hgj`  
kctcnvck fharh pe] ;cs rhgl hd`fv`nß szbi kc `cgvx;vc xsc, fxg  
;x, u rcfxgckxk x]cnxsxkvc juo fzdi ; acosddcjgc mhnv`n mc  
ukghn`k vh ck dhoo`s` sckxkgc I i fhxhc h\hn`n. Fxbx  
fwnhohkghn dhgk`b u ;csvxn ;x, sckx vc fwnhol `av`n. Suknh  
I i phnxfckx ohj`nghv`nshk, fxg ;x, fxbx sckxkgc pcgc vc fc/bx  
I cscgcgcxl xb mhnv`næ sck ;e]l xagcnxkx wkwjl wshk, `cgc[cdc  
vc runow xgc fho`nshk. Sck I ckc dhbl `shk ;x, âc`cn [hl hhj  
sckxkgc fed/cj ejsc, I ck vc vcnphg sck jhfe ugh[hyhl ß. Fxg ;x,  
[hl hhj Cgx xgc fed/cj ejvxgc, phgfw;x u, |edycl fcxk rhvha`,  
ukwk cl x uygwsw, mcsx mc mcbxnxvn. U, I ckvck vhph dhoo`v`n.  
Sckxk xsc fw oxgthc]vc pe] fxn phrr`k duovwn. } i k;x sck  
jigcrvhk (I xkckj rudwgf hbhv evxgckgcncvck), cpbf`k  
ncxsgcnxkvck mc [xden dedck Pxxvxk uygwshk! Mcsscghl !ß

Xfkx Hffhs`k I c;jwfw L i hmxdcck ]hjv`rvh ukw uowdwf  
vevx...âZbi I ejvxl ;x... Hgghph hkv ugswk, ]hg`ahnhl ;x, fxn xg  
I i vvcjxkvc ukwkgh dnb`al hd`l .ß Suknh fegc fxn ae/n ruavw...

وَكَانَ أَمْرًا أَهْدِي إِلَيْهِ رَسُولِي	دَعَوْتُ ابْنَ عَبَّاسٍ إِلَى أَخَذِ خِطَّةٍ
وَلَمْ يَكُ فِي مَا نَابَنِي بِمَوَاصِلِي	فَأَخْلَفَ ظَنِّي وَالْحَوَادِثُ جُمَّةً
وَمَا زَادَ إِنْ أَعْلَى عَلَيْهِ مَرَا جِلِي	وَلَمْ يَكُ فِي مَا جَاءَ مَا يَسْتَحِقُّهُ

pedncjgckcnc; vel xavx...âKe[c vedxncs, egc vc evxk!ß âCg-xshfcß, 3-[i [xgv,  
scp.478.

فَقُلْ لِلّٰهِنَّ عِبَاسٍ اَرَاكَ مُخَوِّفًا  
بَجَهْلِكَ حِلْمِي اِنِّيْ غَيْرُ غَافِلٍ  
فَابْرِقْ وَاَرْعَدْ مَا اسْتَطَعْتَ فَاِنِّيْ  
اِلَيْكَ بِمَا يَشْجِيكَ سَبُطُ الْاَنَامِلِ  
وَصِفِّينِ دَارِي مَا حَيِّتُ وَلَيْسَ مَا  
تَرَبَّصَ مِنْ ذَاكَ الْوَعْدِ بِقَاتِلِيْ

âXfkx Hffhs` fñ dugw se]l cdc ]hy`nv`l .  
Ukw pcl xk dugh ghdxr 'zni f l c; jwfw dhbv`l .  
Gh; xk u, zdi vgcxl x jcnsxkc, phvxsckx c; sxkc 'zni n,  
U, ]cjxkgx; gcnvc l ckc ; zl c; evck vedxg,  
Fcdhk ejvx; gcnx ukwk pcvvxxkvc vedxg.  
Fñ aed hnj`nl hv` ; x, rcbcfxl x dekc [uavwnswk.  
Xfkx Hffhsh ve... L ckx runowvhk 'zni ncl ,  
} i k; x u, pegl xl xk rcvcnxkx fxgl xn, l ck vc rhtxg vedxgcl .  
Fegc xsc, fh[hnv`y`k rcvcn a`y`d`f ahrr`gvh!  
L ck sckx rcl gckvxnck aedgcnc cgx h]`yhl .  
Kc rcvcn ; x, vxnxdc l , Sxttedk l ckxl emxl vxn,  
Sckx 'zbgcl c; mc runowjvwywk aedgc, l ckx zgvi nc fxgl cb!  
Tcbg Xfkx Hffhs ukwk [hmhf kvh fegc dhbv` ...

اَلَا يٰۤاِبْنَ هٰنْدٍ اِنِّيْ غَيْرُ غَافِلٍ  
اَلَا نَ لَمَّا اَخْبَتَ الْحَرْبُ نَارَهَا  
وَاَصْبَحَ اَهْلُ الشَّامِ صَرَغٰى فَكُلُّهُمْ  
وَاَيَّقَنْتُ اَنَا اَهْلُ حَقٍّ وَاِنَّمَا  
دَعَوْتَ اِبْنَ عَبَّاسٍ اِلَى السَّلْمِ خُدْعَةً  
فَلَا سَلْمَ حَتّٰى يَشْجَرَ الْخَيْلُ بِالْقَنَا  
وَاَلَيْتَ لَا تَهْدِي اِلَيْهِ رِسَالَةً  
اَرَدْتَ بِهَا قَطَعَ الْجَوَابِ وَاِنَّمَا  
قُلْتَ لَهُ لَوْ بَايَعُوْكَ تَبِعْتَهُمْ  
وَصِيُّ رَسُوْلِ اللّٰهِ مِنْ دُوْنِ اَهْلِهِ  
فَدُوْنُكَ اِذْ كُنْتَ تَبْغِيْ مُهَاجِرًا  
وَاِنَّكَ مِمَّا تَبْتَغِيْ غَيْرُ نَائِلٍ  
عَلَيْكَ وَالْقَتَ بَرَكَهَا بِالْكَلَاكِلِ  
كَفَقَعَةٍ قَاعٍ اَوْ كَشَحْمَةٍ اَكَلُ  
دَعَوْتَ لِامْرِ كَانَ اَبْطَلَ بِاطِلِ  
وَلَيْسَ لَهَا حَتّٰى يَمُوْتَ بِقَاتِلِ  
وَتَضْرِبُ هَامَاتُ الرِّجَالِ الْاَوَائِلِ  
اِلَى اَنْ يَحْوَلَ الْحَوْلُ مِنْ رَاسٍ قَابِلِ  
رَمَاكَ فَلَمْ يَخْطِ بِثَارِ الْمَقَاتِلِ  
فَهٰذَا عَلَيَّ خَيْرٌ حَافٍ وَنَاعِلِ  
وَفَارِسُهُ اِذْ قِيلَ هَلْ مِنْ مَنَازِلِ  
اَسْمُ بَنَصَلِ السَّيْفِ لَيْسَ بِنَاكِلِ

Fxg, ed Pxxvxx uygw! L ck rhtxg vedxgcl ,  
Sck vc xsjcvvxdx aedc khxg ugl hbshk,  
Duosh l i phnxfc zb uvwkw szkvi nl cdc vuynw 'ejvxdx mhoj,  
Vxbgcnxkx fi ; i f, sxkcsxkx denc rudwfl w?!

Ahl cpgxkx fcvfcoj evxf, vcpacjc shg`f,  
 Phl `s` rcl vck vxbxkx rw[hrghd`f, dh vh ]`o`f 'evxfgc,  
 Sck ; x, fxbxl phrr ugl hy`l `bh xkhkl `shk,  
 Xkvx ncmh ugl hdhk fxn aedc ]hy`n`nshk?  
 Xfkx Hffhs` pxdgc xgc shbxac ]hy`nv`k.  
 U vh fw shbxax, zgckc rcvcn rcfwg ejl cdc[c;!  
 Pe] mhoj shbxa ugl hdh[hræ si mhnxcn kxbc xgc mwnwah[hr,  
 Ukw ; i tni k, [hpxgddcj fha]`ghn`k`k fha`kh ]`n`h[hr.  
 Suknh hkv x]l xsck ; x, hnj`r ukh (Xfkx Hffhsh) l c; jwf dhb-  
 l hdhshk.

U mhojvhk fxn xg ; e]ckc ; xl x,  
 Gh; xk sckxk xsjcdxk, ukwk [hmf`k`k rhna`s`k` hgh[hr,  
 : x, vcrxr ac; xgvc pcvctc mwnl wa, sckx rcbcfgckvxn! xavxn!  
 Ukh vel xsck...âc`cn [hl hhj sckxkgc fed/cj ejsc, ukghnh xjhcb  
 evcnsckß.

}uo dhoe! Fw Cgxvxn, \xdhvhghn`k, si mhnxcnck ck dhoe`s`!  
 |edycl fcnxk Cpgx-fedjx hnhs`kvh ukwk de`hkc mcsxsl  
 Vzdi ai k, [xphv l edvhk`k`k de`hkc ai [hcjgxsxvxn,  
 U xkvx sckxk rhna`kvhv`n, u aed ; x, ukw hojhn`nshk...  
 U ; cs ; x, r`g`k[`k xjxgdxkx fxgx mc pe] mhoj ukvhk i b vzk-  
 vcnl xn!

L hgx; Cavcn fegc vedxn...

وَهَلَاكَ الْإِمَامَ خَطْبٌ كَبِيرٌ	كُلُّ شَيْءٍ سِوَى الْإِمَامِ صَغِيرٌ
مَرَجُلًا بَزَلَ حُمَاةَ صُقُورٍ	فَذْأَصَبْنَا وَقَدْ أَصِيبَ لَنَا الْيَوْمُ
إِنَّ ذَا مِنْ ثَوَابِهِ لَكَثِيرٌ	وَاحِدٌ مِنْهُمْ بِأَلْفٍ كَبِيرٍ
فِيهِ نِعْمَى وَنِعْمَةٌ وَسُرُورٌ	إِنَّ ذَا الْجَمْعَ لَا يَزَالُ بِخَيْرٍ
أَنَّهُ فِي دُجَى الْحَنَادِسِ نُورٌ	مَنْ رَأَى غُرَّةَ الْوَصِيِّ عَلَيَّ
سُ سِرَاجٍ لَدَى الظُّلَامِ مُنِيرٌ	إِنَّهُ وَالَّذِي يَحُجُّ لَهُ النَّا
عُفُوا وَذَنْبُهُ مَغْفُورٌ	مَنْ رَضَاهُ إِمَامُهُ دَخَلَ الْجَنَّةَ
بِهِ لَيْسَ فِي الْهُدَى تَخِيرٌ	بَعْدَ أَنْ يَقْضِيَ الَّذِي أَمَرَ اللَّهُ

âXl hl vkh fharh pcn fxn aed ; x]x; vxn,  
 Xl hl `k mcthj` fzdi ; fxn xavxn,  
 Fxb fw `i k zb phrr pcvctxl xbc ]hjl `a`r,  
 Fw dugvh l i rhmxl cjgx, [cswn ; zl c; gcxl xbx tcvh r`gl `a`r,

: x, ukghnvhk fxx I xk kctnc fcnhfcnvxn,  
 Cgfcjjc, fegc ; csgcnxk I i ; hthj` shds`b-peshfs`bv`n,  
 Fxbxl vcsjcl xb pcl xac oedxn dugwkvhv`n,  
 Ke/I cjvc, schvcjvc, semxk[ dugwkvhv`n,  
 Pcn ; cs mcsx ughk Cgxkxk sxl hs`k` 'znsc,  
 Fxgc ; x, u, bi gl cjvc \hngdhk jcl xb fxn kwnvwn,  
 Hkv ugswk u ; csc ; x, [hl hhj ukwk i ]i k pc[[ evxn,  
 Cgx rhnhkg`r bi gl cjgcncv kwn sh]hk fxn ]`nhrv`n,  
 Pcn ; cs ukwk xl hl cjxkx nhb`g`rgh rcfwg ejsc,  
 "i khp` ctm evxgl c; gc I i jgr fepxajc 'evcn!  
 Cgfcjjc, Hgghp`k tcnl hk`kh cl cg ejvx; vck suknh,  
 Pxvhdcjc jhfe ugl hrvhk fharh fxn dug duovwn.ß<sup>1</sup>  
 L cs/wvx âL wnw[wb-bcpcfß ; xjhfkvh XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h I cn-  
 sxdc uowdhkgghn fhncsxkvc vedxn ; x, u pcbncjxk axcgcncxkvck fxx  
 fegc fxn ae/n rual wavw...

تَأْسَ فَكَمْ لَكَ مِنْ سُلُوءٍ      تُفَرِّجُ عَنْكَ غَلِيلَ الْحَزَنِ  
 بِمَوْتِ النَّبِيِّ وَقَتْلِ الْوَصِيِّ      وَقَتْلِ الْحُسَيْنِ وَسَمِّ الْحَسَنِ

âScfxngx ug! Kc Juo I caywgxddcj mc wkwjrhkg`r mhn ; x,  
 Sckxk rcl xkxk axvvcjxkx hnhvhk h\hnhn,  
 /edycl fcxk mcthj`, mcsxskxk rcjgc dejl csx,  
 Pi sedkxk acphvcjx mc Pcsckxk bcpcngckl csxkx dhvvhk  
 J`ohnl `av`n!ß<sup>2</sup>  
 Pi [n xfkx Cvxxkx rcjgc dejxngl csx fhncsxkvc fegc vedxn...  
 Pi [ni k rhjxgx ukh vevx... âCl xncg-l z/I xkxk (dc/kx L i hmxdc)  
 I ckc tcnl hk menxf ; x, hby`k fxn scn;cnvc, ; i tn mc ji ydhk  
 I ckacdx ugvywk, Cfw Jwnhf` semvxdxk i ]i k sckx mc  
 vusjghn`k` rcjgc dejxncl . HI I h c`cn ; i tni ki bvck rhd`v`f zb  
 ncpfcnxkxb gc/kcjgcsckxb mc ukvhk febhng`r ejscckxb, ukvh sxbx  
 zgvi nl cncl .ß Pi [n mc ukwk dugvhaghn`kvhk fxn vcsjcsx vevx-

<sup>1</sup> Xfkx C/scl âTi jwpß ; xjhfkvh (3-[i [xgv, scp.226) mc Ohncbl x âL c-  
 khrxfß ; xjhfkvh (scp.170) fxn ncmhdcj redv ejl xagcn ; x, ukwk oi ghscsx fegc-  
 vx... âFxn 'i k L hgx; Cajcn mc XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k shxn ; zI c; ]xgcnc u pcbncjx  
 Sxttedkvc 'znI cvxgc. Ukw hojhnr`rvh Ncfxc rcfxgcsxkxk unvw'hp`kvh  
 jh\`v`ghn. XI hl L hgx; Cajcnx \cnxahk phgvh 'znvi ; vc, fwdwnvw... âL hgx;!  
 Sckc kc ugl wavwn?! Uygwkx cgxkvck menl xsck?! Duosh sckc fharh fxn  
 I i sxfcj ]hj`f?ß L hgx; Cajcn [hmhfvh fw ae/ngcnx dhbl hyh fhaghv`...ß

<sup>2</sup> âL wnw[wb-bcpcfß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.428.

gcn...âFxbxl i ]i k xjx r`g`k[ghngh vuynhkl hyh scfxn ejl c; , vc/-  
mcj ejvxdxk aedx rcfwg ejl c; vck ]uo-]uo hshkv`n! Fwkvhk cgh-  
mc, Hgghp`k |edycl fcnx mc ukwk mcsxsxkx pi bwnwkvh ugl hr  
fxbxl i ]i k [cpckkcl uvwkh vhoxx ugl hrvhk ]uo-]uo semxl -  
gxvxn!B<sup>1</sup>

Cgx xfkx Lcpcl l cv Cgcmx, Shl c xfkx Gwx xfkx Rhgxfc  
l ckswf evxgck ae/ngcnvc fegc vedxn...

وَسَامَةٌ مِّنَا فَمَا بَنُوهُ  
فَأَمْرُهُمْ عِنْدَنَا مُطْلَمٌ  
أَنَاسٌ أَتَوْنَا بَأْسَابِهِمْ  
خِرَافَةٌ مُضْطَجَعٌ يَخْلُمُ  
وَقُلْنَا لَهُمْ مِثْلَ قَوْلِ الْوَصِيِّ  
وَكُلُّ أَقَاوِيلِهِ مُحْكَمٌ  
إِذَا مَا سُئِلَتْ فَلَمْ تَدْرِ مَا  
تَقُولُ فَقُلْ : رَبُّنَا أَعْلَمُ

âShl c fxbvckvxn, hl l h ukwk zmghvghn`k`k,  
Xagcnx fxbxl kcbcnxl xbvcl i cl l hg`v`n,  
Fc/bxgcnx zb kcscfgcnxkx fxbxl dhk`l `bvsh shdv`ghn,  
U kcscfgcn ; x, dwow `znck acosxk ctshkcsxvxn!  
Fxb ukghnh mcsxkxk vevxdx szbgcnx vevx; ,  
Phgfw; x, ukwk pcn szbi l zp; cl , l cjxkvxn...  
Fvgl cvxdxk aed fhncvc sckvck sunwashghn kc vedcnsck?  
Ve...âFxbxl Hgghp`l `b vphph dhoa` fxgxvxn.B<sup>2</sup>

5-Lc/l wkwk ae/nxkvc mcsxddcj

Cgcmxgcnc dho`kghal hr sxdhscjx Hffhsx ocgxtcsx Lc/l wkw  
mhvhn ejl xavx ; x, Xl hl Nxbh<sup>TM</sup> -` zbi kc mcgxcpv se]sxk. U,  
mcsxddcj l cscgcsxkx zbi ki k ruavwyw ae/nvc fegc redv evxn...

أَلَامٌ عَلَى حَبِيٍّ الْوَصِيِّ أَبَا الْحَسَنِ  
وَذَلِكَ عِنْدِي مِنْ أَعَاجِبِ ذَا الزَّمَنِ

âLckx vkhghd`nghn, ]i k; x |edycl fcnxk mcsxsx Cfcg-Pcsckx  
semxncl .

Fw l ckxl dhk`l vh vzmnhk`k rcnxfcgx; gcnxkvckvxn.B<sup>3</sup>

Pcl ]xkxk fharh denvc vedxn...

وَمِنْ غَاوٍ يَغْصُ عَلَيَّ غَيْظًا  
إِذَا أَدْنَيْتُ أَوْلَادَ الْوَصِيِّ

<sup>1</sup> Dekc unhvh, 3-[i [xgv, scp.4.

<sup>2</sup> Dekc unhvh, 2-[x [xgv, scp.408. Kcscfgcnx phrr`kvsh szpfcj `evck Shl c  
zmghvghn` vevx; vc l crscv, Fckx-Kh[xdcvxn.

<sup>3</sup> âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpx (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 2-[x [xgv, scp.22.

âHby`k fñn xkshkvhk (pedncjvcdcl ) ; x, l ckc rcbcfçckxn,  
 } i k; x mcsxkx zmghvghn`kh dho`kgha`nhl .ß¹

MCSX GCRCFXKXK CSNGCN FUDW XL HL CGX ™ I } I K  
 L CAPWN UGL HS-

L i fcnnvcv â: hl xgß ; xjh`kvh ahxn : wl edjvck fegc kcrç  
 evxn...

وَالْوَصِيَّ الَّذِي أَمَالَ التَّجُوَّ      بِي بِهِ عَرْشُ أُمَّةٍ لِّإِنْهَادِمْ

âMcsx u ; csvxn ; x, Jc[wfx ukw acphvcjc ]hjv`nv`.  
 U, i l l cjk cnax vxv ; x, ukw l cpm evxf, vhy`jv`.

L i fcnnvcv vedxn... âMcsx gcrcfx egc fñn aedvxn ; x, ukw vedxf  
 ]uo jc; nhnghd`ngn.ß²

Vel cçx, Xl hl Cçx ™ â|edycl fcñk mcsxsß gcrcfx xgc  
 l capwn vxv. U pcbncj âCfw Jwnhfß gcrcfx xgc l capwnghav`y`  
 ; xl x, âmcsxß gcrcfx xgc vc jhk`k`nv`.

L i fcnnvcv zbi ki k vevxdx âXl hl Cçx mcsx gcrcfx xgc  
 l capwn vxvß – szbi ki xsfhj ejl c; i ]i k Cfwg-Csmcv Vwcçkxk  
 szbgcnxkc xsjxkhv evxn. Fegc ; x, u ae/nvc mcsx ; cgl csx Pcl bc mc  
 Hffhs ; cgl cçcnx xgc dhkha` redv ugwkl wa mc cçhmc xbhç  
 menxgl cl xavxn...

أُحِبُّ مُحَمَّدًا حُبًّا شَدِيدًا      وَعَبَّاسًا وَحَمْرَةَ وَالْوَصِيَّ

âL i pcl l cvx axvvcjçc semxncl , pcl Hffhs`, pcl Pcl bckx,

¹ âCg-l cphsxkw mcg-l cshmxß (Fedpcrx), 1-[x [xgv, scp.105.

² â: hl xgß (L i fcnnvcv), Fednwj ]h`, 2-[x [xgv, scp.151. Jc[wfx vevx; vc, Cçx  
 ™ -`k rhjçx Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx L i g[cl L wnhvx kcbcnvc jwjwgwn. Ukw  
 fwkh `znc Jc[wfx hvghkv`nl `av`ghn ; x, : wtcdc px[ncj ejl cbvck rhfhr  
 L xsxnvc ugl wa mc pcl xk hvç` fñn l cpcççvc dhahl `av`n.

L i fcnnvcv, Cfwg-Hffhs L cpcl l cv xfkx Bedv Cbwvx Sul hçx Fcsnxvxn.  
 Ocjxf Fhyvhvx ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg`k` fegc redv evxn...âKcpm egl xkvc hçl  
 vxv, cncf egl çcnxkx cbfcngcl xavx. Ukwk ; xjh`ghn`kvhk fñn âCg-; hl xgw txg-  
 gi ycjßvxn. 285-[x xgvç Fhyvhvvh mthj ejl xavxn.ß (âJhnnox Fhyvhvß, 3-[i [xgv,  
 scp.380â: cati b-bi kwkß, â: hl xgß l hvvcsx).

: wl edj, Cfwg-L i sjcpxg xfkx Bedv Cscvx : wtc cphçsxkvckvxn. Cncf  
 hvçj-ck/ckççcnxkx, gi ycjçcnxkx mc kcscfçcnxkx ]uo dhoe` jhk`d`n mc zb  
 egl xkvc e/jxl hvç` fñn acos shd`g`nv`. Ukwk âPhaxl xddhjß ae/ngcnx hgl hk  
 vxçkç jcn[i l c ugwkl wavwn. U, 126-[` xgvç mthj ejl xavxn (Bcn; ççkxk âCg-  
 c/çhl ß ; xjh`f, 6-[` [xgv, scp.92).

Seddxv Pxl dcnxkxk ae/nxkvc xsc fegc vedxqxn...

åL ck pcl xk vxkvc dcl ; x, / edycl fcnxk mcsksx u vxkvc xvx.

Fharh fxn fedjvc xsc fegc vedxgx...

åHqghp L i p c l l c v x k m h s x j c s x q c u k q h n h l x k k c j r u d v w.

Ukghn |edycl fcnvck suknh dugw ukwk mcsx mc mcgxsxkc  
pyahv`ahn,

Ahtex | cbpcfxkxk ncxsx Lcpcl | cv xfkx Xvnxs Ahtex (204-[i  
xgvc mcthj evxf) vedxn...

*âC'cn |edycl fcnxk mcsixkx seml c; nctbvxnsc (vxkvck*

<sup>1</sup> â: hl xgβ (L i fcncv), 2-[x [xgv, scp.152æ äCyhksβ, Shsx ]h\, 7-[x [xgv, scp.10æ äJcsmnx jhnxx xfkx Csh; xñβ, xsghl x egl x l c[l c, 8-[x [xgv, 2-[x pxssc, scp.310, H.F.

Cfwg-Csmcv Bhgxl xfkx Zl cn Vwcx fzdi; Xsghl tcrxpgcnxkvck, hgxl gcnxkvck ugwf, ahxngcnxkvck mc kcpm egl xkxk fhkxsx vxv. Xl hl Cgx<sup>TM</sup> kcpm egl xkxk fxn rxsl xkx ukwk i j k fcdhk ejl xavx, Cfwg-Csmcv vc fw egl x rcgcl c hgl `a, cghmc xbhpghn menl xa, fharh hgxl gcn vc ukvhk cob ejl xagcn. U, Rwn/hkx-: cnxl c kzrjc rudhk xg; acos vxv. Xl hl Cgx<sup>TM</sup> -gh fxngx; vc Sxttedk l i phnxfcsxkvx xajxnh; ejl xa mc 69-[w px[nx xgxkvx Fcsncvc vi kdhvhk 'ejl xavxgcn. (âCg-c/ghl ß, Bcn; cgx, 3-[i [xgv, scp.34â âXrvwg-tcnxvß, L xsxn ]h\, 3-[i [xgv, scp.211).

<sup>2</sup> ä: hl xgß (L i fcncv), 2-[x [xgv, scp.175æ äCyhksß, Shsx ]h\, 7-[x [xgv, scp.21æ äXrvwg-tcnvß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.285æ äKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpx (Xfks Cfvg-Pcvv), 1-[x [xgv, scp.43æ L cpcl l cv Cf i gtcbg Xfnhpxl xk jcprxrx xgc ughk ]h\, 1-[x [xgv, scp.132.

Seddxv Pxl dcnx Xsl hxg xfkx Lcpcl l cv Xsghl mc [hpxgxddcj  
vzmni kvc ck ]uo ae/n ruahk ahxngcnvck fxnx vxv. Hffhsx ocgxtgcgnxkvck  
Lckswm mc Lepvxkxk kcbcnxkvck l crfwg shd'g'nv` mc 173-[i xgvv mcthj  
ejl xavxn (âC/ghl ß, Bcn; cqx, 1-[x [xqv, scp.320).

<sup>3</sup> āCyhksβ, Epdhwj-jwnhs ]h\, Fednwj, 7-[x [xqv, scp.178.

J`ol hrv`nsh),

Ukvh I ck fckvcgcn x]cnxsxkvc ck Juo nhtxbx ughkhl .<sup>β</sup>

Xfkx Vi nedv vedxn...

أَهْوَى النَّبِيَّ مُحَمَّدًا وَوَصِيَّهٖ وَأَبْنَيْهِ وَأَبْنَتَهُ الْبُتُولَ الطَّاهِرَةَ

âL ck L i pcl I cvx mc ukwk mcsixix semxncl .

Ukwk x; x uygwkw (Pcsckgc Pi sedkx) mc r`b` Fcjwgw – Jhpxnckx (Thjxl ckx) semxncl .<sup>β</sup>

L i jckcfffpxk vxmhk`kvh (468-[x xgvc mcthj evxf) redv ugwkwn ; x, ukh vevxgc... âSckc kc ugl wavwn ; x, Cl xncg-I z/I xkxk Cgxddxfkx Jhgxfx I cvp ejl xnsck?<sup>β</sup> U vevx...

وَتَرَكْتُ مَذْحِيَّ لِلْوَصِيِّ تَعَمُّدًا إِذْ كَانَ نُورًا مُسْتَطِيلًا شَامِلًا  
وَإِذَا اسْتَقَلَّ الشَّيْءُ قَامَ بِذَاتِهِ وَكَذَا ضِيَاءُ الشَّمْسِ يُذْهِبُ بَاطِلًا

âL ck mcsixix I cvp ejl cdx rcsvck jcn; ejl xacl .

} i k; x u, pcn denx cphjc evck fxn kwnvwn.

C`cn fxn aed I i sjcrxg ugsh, rhxl fxb-bhj ughn (pe] fxn aedc epjxdh[` ugl hb),

Ke[c ; x, 'i kcaxk kwnw pcn fhjxgx hnhvhk h\hn`n.<sup>β</sup>

Pcl ]xkxk, Jhpxn xfkx Pi sedk Cgcmxkxk I cvpxkvc vedxn...

âU, Ncswgwgghp`k uygw, mcsixix uygwvwn,

U x; xsxkc uoahn`kæ I ck wbwk jc[ni fcgcncvck suknh fw jcafpxx ejl xacl .<sup>β</sup>

Aedoi g-Xsghl Pcl mxkx { i medkx (722-[x xgvc mcthj evxf) vedxn...

أَخُو أَحْمَدَ الْمُخْتَارِ صَفْوَةَ هَاشِمٍ  
وَصِيُّ إِمَامِ الْمُرْسَلِينَ مُحَمَّدٍ  
أَبُو السَّادَةِ الْغَرِّ الْمَيَامِينِ مُؤْتَمَنٌ  
عَلَى أَمِيرِ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ أَبُو الْحَسَنِ

âCpl cvx L wojhn`k rhnvha`, Phaxl kcsgxkxk se]xgl xax,

Acnxt, I i fhnc; , cl hkcjvhn, hgxcckhfghn hjhs`,

L i nscggcnxk xl hl ` , L i pcl I cvxk mcsixix,

<sup>1</sup> âVxmhkx Ahtex<sup>β</sup>, Fednwj ]h\`, 1403-[i xg, scp.35.

<sup>2</sup> âCg-; wkh mcg-cgrhf<sup>β</sup>, 1-[x [xgv, scp.274. Xfkx Vi nedv Cfw Fc; n L cpcl I cv xfkx Pcsck Cbwvx Fcsnx kcpm]x, ahxn, gi ycj]xvxn. 321-[x xgvc mcthj ejl xavxn ; x, ukwk ; xjhfgghn`kvhk fxnx vc âCg-[cl pcnc<sup>β</sup>vxn.

<sup>3</sup> âVxmhkx L i jckcfffpx<sup>β</sup>, Tcnxv Nuowk jcprrx, Fengxk ]h\`, 1861-[x xg, scp.856.

<sup>4</sup> Dekc unhv, scp.333.



Cgx Cl xncg-l z/l xkxk Cfxg-Pcscvxn.β<sup>1</sup>

Fharh denvc vedxn...

أَخِي خَاتَمَ الرُّسُلِ الْكَرَامِ مُحَمَّدٍ  
رَسُولِ إِلَهِ الْعَالَمِينَ مُطَهَّرٍ  
عَلَيْ وَصِيِّ الْمُصْطَفَى وَوَزِيرُهُ  
أَبِي السَّادَةِ الْغُرِّ الْبَهَائِلِ حَيْدَرُ

âCxbx \edycl fcngcnxk ohjcl x – L i pcl l cvxk rhnvha,  
Hgcl gcnxk Ncfffkxk \h; fxn |edycl fcnxkxk.

Cgx L wsjthk`k mcsxk, ukwk mcbxnxvxn,

|h; txjncj, hgx[ckhf, kwnhkgcn hjhs` Pedvcnvxn!β<sup>2</sup>

L wsxg cphgxskxk l i tjxsx mc aedoi g-xsghl ` Seddxv L cpl vv  
Pcfxf l fedvx (1383-[i xgvc mchj evxf) 1920-[x xgvc Xk' xgjcncxk  
xsjxgh]`g`r sxdhscjgcnxkc rhna` xnhrg`ghn`k h\hvn`y` l i fhxabc  
pcnc; hj`kvh, zbi ki k xg; ocfcnvhng`y`kvh vedxn (xk' xgxsgcn  
Xnhrrh mc ukwk cphgxskc mcsxddcj phrr`k` xvvxh evxnvxgcn)...

أيها الغرب جئت شيئا فريا ما علمنا غير الوصي وصيا

âEd rcnf! }uo ]xn; xk mc dhghk fxn xvvxh 'cjxnl xsck!

Fxb |edycl fcnxk mcsxskvck fharh fxn mcsxkx jhk`l `n`r!β

قَسَمًا بِالْقُرْآنِ وَالْإِنْجِيلِ  
لَيْسَ نَرْضَى وَصَايَةَ لَقِيلِ  
أَوْ تَسِيلَ الدَّمَاءُ مِثْلَ السُّيُولِ  
أَفْبَعْدَ الْوَصِيِّ زَوْجِ الْبُتُولِ  
نَحْنُ نَرْضَى بِالْإِنْكِيلِ وَصِيًّا؟

âRwn/hkh, Xk[xgc hkv x]xncl l ck,

Fharh fxn mcsxkx rcfwg ejl cnx; –

Pcjjh rhkggn`l `b seg jc; hosh vh!

Duosh Ncswgwk mcsxk, Fcjwgwk pcdhj dugvha`kvhk suknh,

Fxb xk' xgxsgcnxk mcsxddcjxkc nhb`l `ughr?!

ذُوْنَ مَلِكٍ الْعِرَاقِ بَيْنَ الطَّلُولِ  
لِأَبِي عَبْدِ اللَّهِ نَجْلِ الْبُتُولِ  
قَدْ أَرِيقَتْ دِمَاءُ خَيْرِ قَتِيلِ  
أَفْبَعْدَ الْحُسَيْنِ سِبْطِ الرَّسُولِ  
نَحْنُ نَرْضَى بِالْإِنْكِيلِ وَصِيًّا؟

Xnhrr zg; csxkvc, ghgcgcnxk x]xkvc,

Bcpnhdx-Fcjwgwk uygw Cfh Cfvxgghp,

U denvc ck dhoa` acpxvgcnxk rhk` ho`v`g`f,

<sup>1</sup> âTcnhxvws-scl jedkβ, l i rcvvl c, scp.2. Jephnk wxmxensxjexkxk  
l cn; cbx ; xjhfohkhs`, 1690÷1164-kzl ncvc.

<sup>2</sup> Dekc unhhv, scp.7.

|edycl fcnxk uygw Pi sedkvck suknh,  
Fxb xk' xgxsgcnx zbi l i bc mcsx se]c; l x?!

فَدَ ظَلَمْنَا الْعَرَاقَ يَا سَاكِنِيهِ      إِنَّ دَمْعَ النَّسَاءِ لَا يُجْدِيهِ  
حِينَ تَبْكِي السَّبْطَيْنِ أَوْ تَبْكِيهِ      أَفَمَنْ بَعْدَ الْمُجْتَبَى وَآخِيهِ  
نَحْنُ نَرْضَى بِالْإِنْكِيلِزِ وَصِيًّا؟

Ed Xnhr cphgxsl Fxb Xnhrh bi gl ejl xax; ,  
Egc bi gl ; x, rhv'kghn`k 'zb dha` ukh thdvh menl cb,  
U bhl hk ; x, Pcsckc-Pi sedkc hyghs`kghn, duosh Xnhrh?!

U bhl hk ; x, Pcsckc-Pi sedkc hyghs`kghn, duosh Xnhrh?!

Xl hl L i [jcfhvhk, rhnvha` Pi sedkvck suknh,  
Fxb xk' xgxsgcnxk mcsxddcjxkc nhb` ughr l `?!

يَا مُحِبِّي آلِ النَّبِيِّ الْكَرَامِ      أَيْكُونُ الْعَرَاقُ مِلْكُ اللَّتَامِ  
وَهُوَ مِيرَاثُ آلِ خَيْرِ الْأَنَامِ      أَفَبَعْدَ الْأَنِمَةِ الْأَعْلَامِ  
نَحْنُ نَرْضَى بِالْإِنْكِيلِزِ وَصِيًّا؟

âEd |edycl fcnxk cbxb Cpgx-fedjxkx semckgcn!  
Xnhr hg]hr txjncjgxgcnxk denxvxn l x?!

U Xnhr ; x, ck dhoa` xkshkghn`k si ghgcsxkxk l xnhs`v`n.  
Di ; sc; l crhl g`, hgx[ckhf xl hl ghnvvhk suknh,  
Fxb xk' xgxsgcnx zb mcsxl xb se]c; l x?!

X; xk[x ocfcnvhng`y`kvh xsc vedxn...

إِشْهَدُوا يَا أَهْلَ الثَّرَى وَالثَّرِيَّا      قَدْ أَبَتْ شِيعَةُ الْوَصِيِّ وَصِيًّا  
قَدْ نَكُنَّا عَهْدَ النَّبِيِّ لَدَيْنَا      وَاحْتَمَلْنَا إِثْمًا وَعَارًا وَشِينًا  
إِنْ قَبِلْنَا وَصَايَةَ وَغَوَيْنَا      أَفَلَا يَسْخَطُ الْوَصِيُّ عَلَيْنَا  
إِنْ رَضِينَا بِالْإِنْكِيلِزِ وَصِيًّا؟      مَا عَسَى أَنْ نَقُولَ يَوْمَ الْجَزَاءِ  
لِنَبِيِّ الْهُدَى أَبِي الزَّهْرَاءِ      وَالشَّهِيدِ الْمُقِيمِ فِي كَرْبَلَاءَ  
وَأَمَامِ الْهُدَى بِسَامِرَاءَ      نَحْنُ نَرْضَى بِالْإِنْكِيلِزِ وَصِيًّا؟

âEd den cpgx, ed 'zd cpgxl Ahpxv ugwk sxb,  
Mcsxkxk axcsx fharh mcsx rcfwg ejl cblß  
Pcrxrcjck, |edycl fcngc cpv`vedl hk` \ubvwr,  
Zpvcl xbc fzdi ; 'i khp, ni smhd]`g`r 'zji nvi ; ,  
C'cn mcsxddcjx rcfwg evxf dugwl wbw hbshr,  
Fw phgvh |edycl fcnxk mcsx fxbc rcbcfwgckl cbl x?  
C'cn xk' xgxsgcnx zbi l i bc mcsx se]sc; ?ß

Rxdhl cj 'i ki kc vedc fxcnxc; ...  
 Bcphhk`k hjhs` pxvhdcj |edycl fcnxkc,  
 : cnfcghvh dhjhk acpxvc,  
 Shl xnnhvh ughk pxvhdcj xl hl `kh,  
 C'cn xk'xgxsgcn fxbc mcsx ughnsh?!B  
 Fharh fxn rcsxvcsxkvc xsc xk'xgxsgcnc fegc vedxn...

لَسْتُ مِنَّا وَلَمْ تَكُنْ مِنْكَ شَيْئاً  
 فَلَمَّاذَا تَكُونُ فِينَا وَصِيّاً  
 لَمْ تَكُنْ يَا ابْنَ لَنْدَنْ عَلَوِيّاً  
 هَاشِمِيّاً وَلَمْ تَكُنْ قُرَشِيّاً  
 لَا وَلَا مُسْلِمًا وَلَا عَرَبِيّاً  
 مِنْ بَنِي قَوْمِنَا وَلَا شَرْقِيّاً  
 فَلَمَّاذَا تَكُونُ فِينَا وَصِيّاً؟

åSck fxbvck vedxgsck, fxbxl vc sxbxkqc pe] fxn kxsfcjxl xb  
 duovwn,

Fcs phks` cshsh `znc fxbxl mcsxl xb mc rcddwl wl wbshk?  
 Ed Gukvuk fhghs`! Sck kc cgcmxsck, kc phaxl x, kc vc  
 ri nedax!

Sck pe] l i scgl hk vh vedxgsck! Pe] cnf vc vedxgsck,  
 Pcjjh fxb acnrgxcnxc xnrxkvck vc vedxgsck,  
 Fcs phks` vcgxc `znc fxbxl rcddwl wl wb, mcsxl xb ughshk?!B  
 Fharh fxn denvc vedxn...

لَا تَقُلْ جَعْفَرِيَّةً حَنْفِيَّةً  
 لَا تَقُلْ شَافِيَّةً زَيْدِيَّةً  
 جَمَعَتْنَا الشَّرِيعَةُ الْاَحْمَدِيَّةُ  
 وَهِيَ تَأْتِي الْوَصَايَةَ الْعَرَبِيَّةُ  
 فَلَمَّاذَا تَكُونُ فِينَا وَصِيّاً؟

åVel c ; x, sck {c/tnxsck, sck vc Pckctx.  
 Vel c sck Ahtexsck, u fxnxsx Bedvx!  
 Cpl cvx acnxcjx phl `l `b` ju\ghd`f,  
 Fw acnxcj rcnfxk mcsxddcjkx rcfwg ejl cb.  
 Fcs phks` cshsh `znc fxbxl mcsx mc rcddwl wl wb ugwshk?!B

قَدْ سَمْنَا سِيَّاسَةَ التَّفْرِيقِ  
 وَاهْتَدَيْنَا إِلَى سَوَاءِ الطَّرِيقِ  
 يَا عَدُوًّا لَنَا بِثُوبِ صِدِّيقِ  
 أَنْتَ بَيْنَ الْوَصِيِّ وَالصَّدِّيقِ  
 لَسْتُ إِلَّا مُزَوَّرًا أَجْنَبِيّاً  
 فَلَمَّاذَا تَكُونُ فِينَا وَصِيّاً؟

Fxb jctnxc sxdhscjxkvck vxhl febhn`r,  
 Vi b'i k dugh, phrrh pxvhdcj ugl wagh`r.  
 Ed vi al ckxl xb, fxb vusj \hgjhn`kvhd`r!

Fxg ; x, sck âmcxß xgc âsxvvrß hnhs`kvh,  
 Dhv fxn pxdgc'cnsck, fharh fxn aed vedxgsck,  
 Fcs phks`vcgxc 'znc fxbxl rcdawl mc mcsxl xbsck?ß  
 Fwnh rcvcl mcsx mc mcsdcl fhncsxkvc redv ugwxhkhghn`k  
 phl`s`1-[x px[nx csnxkvck 14-[i px[nx csnxkc rcvcl oi gcth  
 l c;jcfxkxk kcbcnxkvc jhk`kl`a mc l capwn fxn kcbcnxddcvxn.  
 Fegc ; x, Hdxackxk unvswkvh Bcfx rcfxgcsxkvck ughk fxn ; xax  
 {cl cg l i phnxfcsxkvc fegc vel xavx...

âFxb Bcfx zmghvghn`, Cgxkxk vi al ckgcxndx ;  
 Pcl xk ; cs ; x, rcvxl vck mcsx hv`xgc jhk`k`f,  
 Ukghn xl hl Cgx™ -`|edycl fcn j -xk mcsxsx ; xl x  
 jhk`d`n, u pcbncjxk uk fxn zmghv`kh âzmsxdhß (mcsxgc)  
 vedxnvxgc. Fegc ; x, Hffhsx ocgxtcsx Phnwk cn-Ncaxv zb uygw  
 Cl xkgc L c/l wkwk 'cgc[c; ]hn`al hghn`k`zk[cvck ocfcn  
 menl csxkx l cpb mcsxgcnc xsjxkhv ejl xavx.

Fcgx, ukghn xl hl Cgx™ -`rctgcj i bi kvck mc l c/khk`k  
 vcnxkgxdxkc, l zpjcmhs`kh vxrrcj dejxnl cvck mcsx  
 hvghkv`n`nv`ghn. Hl l h l c/khvhk h`hp ugvrghn`mc fw  
 gcrcfxk l cybxkx fxvx;gcx phgvh, fc/bck xk;hn evxn, fc/bck  
 'xbgcvxn, fc/bck vc ukwk l c/khs`k`jcpnxt evxnvxgc ; x, ukwk  
 ki l wkcgcnxkx jebgx;gc fcdhk evxf hnhav`nh[hy`r. Xkahgghp!

OI GCTH LC: JCFX MCSXDDCJ NCMHDCJGCNXXKX "XBGCVXN,  
 UKGHNVHK DHD-GHKGHN- XSC FHARH LC/KHDH DUBWNGHN  
 Mcsxddcj l zmbwswkw xk;hn evck xg; acos l l l i g-  
 l z/l xkxk Hdxac xv. Gh;xk ukwk mcsxddcjx xk;hn ejl c;gc  
 cghrcvhn pcvxsx 'zsjcnx ; x, mcsx i kmhk`ukwk csnxkvc xl hl  
 Cgx™ i j i k l capwn fxn xa xv...

HDXACKXK PCVXSX CGX™ --K MCSXGDXKX SI FWJ EVXN  
 xl hl Cgx™ -`k scphfcgc hnhs`kvh |edycl fcnxk mcsxsx  
 gcrcfx xgc jhk`kl hs`vcgxxgcxkvck fxnx, dwohn`vh redv  
 ugwxhkhghnvkh cghmc, l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxackxk pcvxsxvxn ; x,  
 âScpxp-L i sgi l ßvc kcrq ugwkl wavwn. L i sgi l dhb`n...  
 Hdxackxk dhk`kvh vevxgc ; x, âCgx mcsxvxnß. U xsc vevx...âU  
 (|edycl fcn) kc mhoj Cgxdc mcsxddcj ejvx, phgfw;x ukw zb  
 sxkcl c vhdhl`av`l - dhowv fegc vevx...Zb cjcdxl vc xv - mc  
 u, fxn jeaj xsjcvx, l ckxl cjcdxl vc phgvhk`ejvx, fegc ; x, ukwk

ke[c mcthj ejvxdxkx fxgl cvxl . Fcs ukh kc mhoj mcsxddcj  
ejvx?ß<sup>1</sup>

l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxac xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k cgedpxkc  
l i phnxfcdc fhaghl hr i ]i k [hl hhj` sctcnfcen ejl cgx xv. Fw  
dugvh thdvhg` ughk mc jc/sxn rudhk pcn fxn aedx fcdhk evxnvx.  
Fw szpfcj vc l i rcvvl csxb fhaghkl hl `av`æ c; sxkc fxn kzm  
(fharhs`k`k l i vvchs` rhna`s`kvh) vcgxg 'cjxnl cdc uoahd`n mc  
'zsjcnxnvx ; x, Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k |edycl fcn j -c mcsxgx; i kmhk`  
ukghn`k hnhs`kvh l capwn mc vkh`gl hb fxn l cscgc xv, ukwk  
fw [i n l zmre jwj l hs` vh u jhnnox 'en]c; gx; gc, pcl ]xkxk ukwk  
xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k l i rhfxgxkvc jwjvwyw shxn l zmregcngc vc  
l i khsxfvxn. Fegc ; x, Xfkx Sc/v Hdxacvck ncmhdcj evxn ; x,  
|edycl fcnxk ocsjcgdx fhncsxkvc fegc vel xavxn...â|edycl fcnxk  
hdhrghn` dengc si ni kck phgvh x; x ; xaxkxk hnhs`kvh – Xfkx  
Hffhs (dc/kx Tcbg) mc fharh fxn ; xax xgc ]zgc ]`ov`ß  
l fedvwgghp vedxn... Ukwk szbgcnxkx Xfkx Hffhsh vevx; vc, l ckc  
vevx...âHdxackxk hv`k` ]c; l cvxdx u fxnx ; xaxkxk ; xl ugvwywkw  
fxgxnsckl x?ß Vevxl ...âOedn.ß Xfkx Hffhs vevx...âU, Cgx xv ; x,  
Hdxac ukwk pcn kzm tcbxgcjxkx vxgc 'cjxnl cdc x; nhp pxssx xgc  
dhkha`nv`.ß<sup>2</sup>

âL i skcvx Cpl cvßvc kcrj ugwkhk vx`cn fxn pcvxsvc fegc  
vedxgx... Fxn kctcn Hdxackxk dhk`kh 'cgxf Cgx mc Cl l hnh rhna`  
khghdxr szbgcn vevx. Hdxac vevx...âHl l h Cgxdc 'cgvx; vc, l ck  
ukwk fhncsxkvc sckxkgc fxn szb vkh`al hdh[hyhl . Hl l h  
Cl l hnh 'cgvx; vc xsc, vedxn ; x, |edycl fcnxk fegc  
fwdwnvwywkw eaxjvxl ...âU pcn mhoj x; x xaxk hnhs`kvh phks`  
fxnxkx se]l c; vc xojxdhn shpxfx ugsh, ukwk ck dhóa`s`k` se]cn.ß<sup>3</sup>

Fcgx, l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxac Cl l hnh rhna` khghdxr szbgcn

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx L i sgi l ß (Ki mcmxkxk acnpx xgc), mcsxddcj ; xjh<sup>+</sup>, 11-[x [xgv,  
scp.89âScpxpx Fwohnxß, l cyhbx ; xjh<sup>+</sup>, l cncbi k-Kcfx fhf<sup>+</sup>, 3-[i [xgv, scp.65,  
mcsxddcj ; xjh<sup>+</sup>, mcshdh fhf<sup>+</sup> âTcjpi g-fhnxß, 6-[` [xgv, scp.291â âL i skcvx  
Cpl cvß, 6-[` [xgv, scp.32.

<sup>2</sup> âJcfcrhjß (xfkx Sc/v), Fednwj ]h\`, 2-[x [xgv, scp.332â Fwohnx vc zb  
âScpxpßxkvc, 3-[i [xgv, scp.63-vc vedxn... Xfkx Hffhs vevx...âHdxackxk hv`k`  
]c; l cvxdx u fxnx ; xaxkxk ; xl ugvwywkw fxgxnsckl x?ß Vevxl ...âDuo!ß Xfkx  
Hffhs vevx...âU, Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgx<sup>+</sup> xv.ß Fwohnx Xfkx Hffhs`k vevxdx  
âHdxackxk Cgxkxk pcn kzm tcbxgcjxkx vel c; vck h[`y` 'cgxnvxß – szbi ki fw  
pcvxsvc xojxshnh shgl `av`n.

<sup>3</sup> âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 6-[` [xgv, scp.113.

vedxgl csxkxk rhna`s`k` hg`n, gh;xk Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h fw [i n szbgcnxk  
vedxgl csx rhna`s`kvh si ;wj evxn!

âScpxpx Fwohnxß, âScpxpx L i sgi l ß mc vx'cn ncmhdcj  
;xjhfgnh`kvh Hdxackxk fegc vevxdx kcrq ugwkwn...â|edycl fcnc-  
C;ncl fñ scnxddcvc fñ kctcnx unvwdh scn;cnvc jc/dxk ejvx mc  
u, [hl hhj khl hb`kvh zb ;zl c;]xgcnx xgc fñngx;vc âRwg  
pwmcgghpw cpcvß swncsxkx rxnhcj ejvx. Rhd`jv`rvhk suknh  
fwkw |edycl fcnc ocfcñ menvxgcñ, u pcbncj vevx... âUkvhk  
sunwawk, 'zni k fw xax kc i ]i k ejl xavxn.ß Sunwavwrvh vevx...  
âFwkh 'znc uowvwl ;x, fw swnc ncpl hk Hgghp`k sxtcjcgnxkvck  
xfhncjvxñ. Lck ukw uowl hy` semxncl .ß |edycl fcnc-C;ncl  
i fwdwnvw...âUkh ocfcñ menxk ;x, Hgghp`vh ukw semxn.ß<sup>1</sup>

Sxbxk kcbcnxkxb[c, Hgghp`k semvxdx, hl l h Hdxackxk hv`k`  
bx;n ejl c;vck ]c;xkvxdx hvhl ;xl vxñ? Hdv`kv`n ;x, c'cn hjhs`  
Cfw Fc;n, dhowv Zl cn, dhowv rupwl ghn`kvhk fharh fñ acos,  
u [i l gcvck cl x uygsw Jcgpç ugshdv`, ukwk hv`k` l ijgcr  
vedcnvx. Rcnxfcvñ ;x, fxb oi gcth l c;jcfxkxk l ckfcgcnxkvck kc  
rcvcñ hojhn`a h`hnv`rsh, u ;xaxkxk hv`k` jh`h fñgl cvx;. Suknh  
l c[fwn rhg`f Cpgx-fedj l c;jcfxkxk l ckfcgcnxkx hñhav`nv`r mc  
u ncmhdcjx âLc[l ci g-fcdhkß mc âFwnphkß hvg` jctsn  
;xjhfgnh`kvh âXoghsß swncsxkxk jctsnxkvck, âRwg-pwmcgghpw  
cpcvß [i l gcsxkxk jcn[i l csx fhf`kvh mc Aedo Scvwrwk  
âJumpxvß ;xjhf`kvh (381-[x xgvc mcthj evxf) jh`v`r. Unhv  
vedxgn ;x, |edycl fcñ scphfcx Xl nhk xfkx Pcsxk fegc  
vel xavxn... â|edycl fcñ Cgxkxk scn;cnvcgdx xgc fñ ruawkw  
scnxddcdc 'zkvcnvx. Rhd`jv`rghn` bhl hk ukghnvhk mcbxddcjx  
sunwavw, vevxgcñ... âPcn fñ aed dhoa` vxv, gh;xk fi j i k  
khl hbghnvh âRwg pwmcgghpß swncsxkx rxnhcj evxnvx.ß Pcbncj  
|edycl fcñ Cgxvck âKc i ]i k fegc evxnvxk?ß - vedc  
sunwavwrvh, vevx... â}i k;x âRwg pwmcgghp swncsxkx ]uo  
semxncl .ß |edycl fcñ fwdwnvw...âSck ukw semvxdx i ]i k Hgghp  
vh sckx semxn.ß<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, scghjwg-l i shtnxk ;xjhf`, 263-[i pcvxsâ âScpxpx  
Fwohnxß, jumpxv ;xjhf`, 4-[i [xgv, scp.182.

<sup>2</sup> âJumpxvx Scvwrß, Jephk ]h`, 1387-[x px[nx rcl cnx, scp.94, 11-[x pcvxsâ  
âLc[l ci g-fcdhkß (Jcfcnx, 568-[x xgvc mcthj evxf), Sedvh ]h`, 1333-1356-[  
xgcñ, 10-[w [xgv, scp.576â âJctsnx Fwnphkß (Fcpnhkx, 1107, dhowv 1109-[w xgvc  
mcthj evxf), 3-[i ]h`, 1394-[i px[nx xgx, 4-[i [xgv, scp.521.

Fw pcvxsxk vi b'i kgi di ki xsfhj ejl c; i]i k x; x 'i [gi  
vcgxg l zm[wvvn...

1-âScpxpx Fwohnxßvc mc fharh ;xjhfgnhvh redv ugwkwn ;x,  
l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxac zb pcvxsxkvc Cgxkx ânc[i gß (fxn ; xax)  
jc/fxn xgc redv evxn.

2-Pcl ]xkxk âScpxpx Fwohnxßvc mc fharh ;xjhfgnhvh redv  
ugwkwn ;x, |edycl fcnc-C; ncl i Cgxdc fwdwnvw... âHggghp  
sckx semxnß Egc fw pcvxsvc vc âHggghp sckx semxnß – xthvcx  
mhnv`n.

Vel cgx, l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxac zb pcvxsxkvc Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k  
hv`k` 'c]xnl cl xa mc ukw ; xkhdc xgc ânc[i gß hvghkv`nl `a, ukwk  
fhncsxkvc ncmh 'znvi di fw rcvcn bi gl mc [cth xgc  
; xthdcjgckl cdxh hahy`vh; `ghn` vh cghmc ejl xavxn...

I L L I G-L Z/L X K X K H D X A C X L H L C G X <sup>TM</sup> --K ACPHVCJXKC  
SEMXXN!

Dwohn`vh redv ugwkxhghnhvhk vph ;cvcngxsx Cfwg-Tcnc[  
Xstphkxkxk Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k acphvcjx fhncsxkvc redv ejvxdx  
fxn ncmhdcjvxn. U dhn`n... âXl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k acphvcj ocfcnx  
Hdxacdc ]jhkhv ai ; i n sc[vcsx ejvx.ß<sup>1</sup> Dc/kx ukh menxgck fw  
âahvß ocfcnvck ai ; i n sc[vcsx denxkc dejxnvx.

Jcfcnx, Cfwg-Tcnc[, Xfkx Sc/v mc Xfkx Csx ncmhdcj evxngcn  
; x, Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k acphvcj ocfcnx Hdxacdc vedxgckvc fw ae/ngcnx  
uowvw...

فَالْقَتَّ عَصَاهَا وَاسْتَقَرَّ بِهَا النَّوَى كَمَا قَرَّ عَيْنًا بِالْأَيَّامِ الْمُسَافِرِ

âCshs`k` jwgghv`, pcnc; cjvck vhdhkv`,

Ke[c ; x, l i shtxnxk rhd`jl hs` 'zbgcnx xa`rghkv`nhn.ß

Suknh sunwavw... âUkw ; xl zgvi nvi ?ß Vevxgc... âL wnhv rcfx-  
gcsxkvck fxn kctcn.ß

Vevx...

فَإِنْ يَكُ نَائِبًا فَلَقَدْ نَعَاهُ غُلَامٌ لَيْسَ فِيهِ التُّرَابُ

Xl nhk xfkx Pcsxk Cfw Kc[xv Oi bnx. U, Oedfcnxk tcjp ugwkvwyyw xgv  
Xsghl` rcfwg ejl xavx. Zl cn ukw Fcsnc cphgxskc vxkx jc/gxl gcnx zdncj l c;  
i]i k fw acpcnc 'zkvcnl xavx. U, scphfckxk tcbxgcjgx acosxddcjcgnxkvck,  
vwhs` rcfwg ugwkxk fxn acos vxv mc 52-[x px[nx xgxkvc Fcsncvc mcthj ejl xavx.  
Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âWsvwg-yhfcb, 4-[i [xgv, scp.137-138-vc redv  
ugwkl wavvn.

<sup>1</sup> âL crhjxgwj-jhgxfxddxkß, Rhpnc ]h`, 1368-[x px[nx xgx, scp.43.

âC'cn u wbhrv`nsh, zgi l ocfcnxkx  
 Fxn [hmk ]hjv`nv` ; x, ukwk hyb`kh jun\hr vugl hs`k!ß  
 l l l i Scgcl ckxk r`b` Bedkcf ukh vevx...âCgxkxk fhncsxkvc  
 fegc vedxnsck?ß

Hdxac vevx... âPcn mhoj l ck wkwjshl , l ckc ohj`nghv`k.ß<sup>1</sup>  
 Suknh fw ae/nx l xshg 'cjxnvx...

مَا زَالَ اهْدَاءُ الْقَصَائِدِ بَيْنَنَا      بِاسْمِ الصَّدِيقِ وَكَثْرَةِ الْأَلْقَابِ  
 حَتَّى تَرَكْتَ كَانَ قَوْلُكَ فِيهِمْ      فِي كُلِّ مُجْتَمَعٍ طَيْنِ دُبَابٍ

âPcl xac fxn-fxnl xbc rcsxvc pcvddc evcnvx; ,  
 : x, vusj hv`kh mc gcrfcgncg vugw ughnv` ,  
 Kcphdcj fwnho`gv` , shk; x sckxk szbgcnxk ukwk hnhs`kvh,  
 Pcn fxn d`y`k[hrvh, l xg]cdxk m`b-m`b scsx xvxl!ß<sup>2</sup>

HDXACKXK PCVXSXKXK FHARH PCVXSGCNGC L I RHDXSCSX

Redv ejvx; gcnxl xb l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxackxk Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k  
 rhna`s`kvh jwjvwyw l zmrexxk fxn rxsl xkx fcdhk evxn. Ukwk  
 vevxdx âU (|edycl fcn) kc mhoj Cgxdc mcsxddcj ejvx, phgfw; x u  
 l ckxl rw[hy`l vh phgvhk 'ejvx mc l ckxl sxkcl vc (dhowv  
 sxkcl gc ]ckcl xk hnhs`kvh) [hk menvxß<sup>3</sup> – szbi kc 'cgvx; vc xsc,  
 fw ncmhdcjx dhgk`b ukwk zbi ncmhdcj ejl xavxn ; x, hahy`vh; `n  
 ncmhdcjgc bxvxxddcj jca; xg evxn...

Xfkx Sc/v âJcfcrhjß ; xjhf`kvh, â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl  
 Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfkx rw[hy`kvh mchj ejl xavxnß – fhf`kvh  
 Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -vhk fegc ncmhdcj evxn... â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl j  
 ocsjcgx; phg`kvh fwdwnvw... âRhnhvha`l ` l ckxl dhk`l h  
 ]hy`n`k.ß U vedxn... Lckx ]hy`nv`ghn mc fwdwnvw... âLckxl  
 dhk`l h 'cg.ß Dho`kghav`l mc u pcbncj l ckc szd; ckvx, pcl xk  
 phgvh l ckxl gc vkh`al hyh fhaghv`. Lckc u rcvcn dho`k xv  
 ; x, fc/bck l i fhnc; hyb`k`k swghn` i bi l c s`]nhd`nv`. Suknh  
 |edycl fcnxk c[cgx ]hjv` mc hywawl vh hy`nghav`...ß

<sup>1</sup> âJhnxox Jcfcnxß, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.3466æ âJhnxox xfkx Csxß,  
 Hmnu`h ]h`, 3-[i [xgv, scp.331, 1-[x ]h`, 3-[i [xgv, scp.157æ âJcfcrhjß (xfkx  
 Sc/v), 3-[i [xgv, scp.27æ âL crhjxgi j-jhgxfddxkß, scp.42.

<sup>2</sup> âL crhjxgwj-jhgxfddxkß, scp.42.

<sup>3</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, mcshdh ; xjhf`, 2-[x [xgv, scp.84, l cyhbx ; xjhf`, 3-[i  
 [xgv, scp.63æ âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, mcsxddcj ; xjhf`, 1-[x fhfæ âSi kckx xfkx L h[cß,  
 [ckhxb ; xjhf`, 64-[i fhfæ âL i skevx Cpl cvß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.32, 64, 77æ âJhnxox  
 Jcfcnxß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.1814.



Cgxddxfkx Pi sedk £ -vhk ncmhdcj evxn ; x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i fha` Cgx™ -`k rw[hy`kvh ughk fxn phgvh [hk menvx.

Ac/fxvck ncmhdcj evxn ; x...â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl egc fxn phgvh mcthj ejvx ; x, ukwk fha` Cgxkxk rw[hy`kvh vxv mc Cgx ukh rwsq menvx...ß

Cfx Rcjthk`k fegc vevxdxkx ncmhdcj evxn... Xfkx Hffhsvhk sunwavwl ... â|edycl fcn mcthj evcn; ck ukwk fha` ; xl xk rw[hy`kvh vxv?ß Fwdwnvw...âU pcbncj Cgxkxk sxkcsxkc szd; ckck phgvh mcthj ejvx.ß Sunwavwl ... âHo` l nmc l ckck vel xavxn ; x, Hdxac vedxn... |edycl fcn l ckxl sxkcl gc fuyhb`l `k hnhs`kvh [hk menvx.ß Xfkx Hffhs vevx...âSck vc xkhkv`kl `? Hgghph hkv ugswk, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i rcfbx-nwp phg`kvh Cgxkxk sxkcsxkc vdhkl `av` mc egc u vh |edycl fcnc rwsq menvx...ß

{ hfxn xfkx Cfvi ggph Ckshnxvck fegc ncmhdcj evxn... Zl cnxk oxghtcix vzmni kvc : c/fwg-Cpfhn fxbxl dhk`l `bvhdhyh rhgo`f Zl cnvck sunwavw...â|edycl fcnxk ho`n`k[` szbi kc vxv?ß Zl cn vevx...âFwkx Cgxvck sunwalß Vevx...âU phnhvhv`n?ß { hmf menvx...âUnhvh!ß : c/f ukvhk sunwavw mc Cgx vevx...âU pcbncjx sxkcl c vdhv`l , fha`k` ]xdxkl c rudvw mc fwdwnvw...âKhl hb, khl hb!ß : c/f vevx...âFw, \edycl fcngcnxk ho`n`k[` szbi vi n ; x, ukh cl n mc pcl xk xac vc l cf/ws ugwk l wagh.ß Suknh sunwavw...âDh Cl xncg-l z/l xkxk, ukh ; xl rwsq menvx?ß Zl cn vevx...âCgxvck sunwalß Sunwavwrvh, Cgx vevx...âL ck ukh rwsq menvx l , Hffhs ujwnl wavw, l shl c mc Acrnhk vh l ckxl i ]i k sw 'c]xnvnv.ß¹

Xkvx c'cn Hdxackxk xvvxh ejvxdx ; xl x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl ukwk sxkcsx xgc fha` hnhs`kvh, dhowv sxkcsx xgc ]ckcsx hnhs`kvh mcthj ejl xa ugshdv`, ukvh Zl cn : c/fwg-Cpfhnh kc i ]i k âl l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxacvck sunwa 'zn, |edycl fcnxk ho`n`k[` szbi kc ugvw?ß vel xnvx? C'cn fegc ugshdv`, fw l cscgcvc ukw pe] mhoj Cgxdc jcnc 'zkvcnl cbvx.

Fi ji k fw ncmhdcjgcncvck ck 'i [gi si zbi fw phvxscxk ahpvx ughk ; csxk - l l l i g-l z/l xkxk l l l i Scgcl ckxk ncmhdcjvxvn. U, fegc vedxn...âHv`kh hkv x]xgck : csc hkv ugswk! Pcrxrcjck Cgx cpv-\edl hkvh |edycl fcnc ck dho`k acos vxv.

¹ Fw fea pcvxsx Xfkx Sc/vxk âJcfcrhjß ; xjh`kvhk, Hmnu`h ]h`, 2-[x [xgv, 2-[x pxssc, scp.51-vck kcrq ejvx; .

Fxn 'i k si fp jebvck u pcbncjxk 'zni ai kc 'ejvx; vc 'znvi ; ; x,  
 vxhl fegc fwdwnwn... âCgx 'cgvxl x? Cgx 'cgvxl x?ß Thjxl c vevx...  
 âVedcscck, ukw fxn xa vhg`k[h 'zkvcnl xsxkxb.ß Cgx 'cgvx mc l ck  
 jcscmmi n ejvxl ; x, |edycl fcnxk ukh kcsc fxn epjxdh[` mhnv`n.  
 Fwkh 'znc vc ujhrvkh ]`o`f rh`k`k dho`kg`y`kvh ujwnvwl .  
 Fw phgvh |edycl fcn Cgxdc jcnct cdxgvx mc ukwkggh  
 \`]gvhal hyh fhaghv`. Fwkvkh suknh pcl xk 'i kvc [hk`k`  
 Hgghph jh`a`nv`. Vel cgx, [hl hhj hnhs`kvh cpv`vedl hkvh  
 |edycl fcnc ck dho`k ughk hvhl Cgx xv.ß<sup>1</sup>

Cfvi gghp xfkx Cl nxk ncmhdcjxkvc vedxgx... |edycl fcnc-  
 C;ncl j ocsjcgx; phg`kvh fwdwnvw...âRhnvha`l `l ckxl  
 dhk`l h ]hy`n`k...ß Cgxkx ukwk dhk`kh ]hy`nv`ghn. U pcbncj zb  
 \hgjhn`k` ukwk i sji kc znjvi mc ukh jcnct cdxgvx...ß<sup>2</sup>

Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k |edycl fcncxk mthj` fhncsxkvc vevxdx  
 szbgcnvck fxnx vc fvwvn...

âLck zb cgl gc sxbk dhkhy`k`b` rcfxnc jun`hyh rudvwl mc (l i fhnc;  
 fha`k`b) l ckxl sckcl xk mc fuyhb`l`k dwohn`s`kvh ughn;ck sxbk [hk`k`b ]ov`.  
 Fxb Hgghpvkh`r mc Ukh vuynw rhd`vh[hy`r.ß<sup>3</sup>

Pcl ]xkxk fwdwnwn...

â|edycl fcnc-C;ncl j , fha`l ckxl sckcl vc ughk, nwpw l ckxl  
 cgl vc [cncdhk evck phgvh [hk menvx mc ukw i bil c ]c;vxl , zbil rwsq xagcnkc  
 fhaghv`l , l cgc;gcnc vc l ckc ;zl c; ejvxcn. Rh`\, vxmhn khgc ]c;xf hyghd`nv`ghn,  
 l cgc;gcncx fixn rnw`w khbxg ugwn, fixn rnw`w scl hdh `evxnvx. Ukgghn`k u pcbncj  
 kh l hb (r`gl hr) mc shghmhj ('zkvcnl c;) scsgcnx l cbhn`kvh vctk ejvxdxl mhojh  
 rcvcn rwghy`l vh xv.ß<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âL i sjcvcnc; x Ph;xl ß-vc (3-[i [xgv, scp.138) vedxgx... âFw pcvxsxk  
 sckcvcgnx scpxpvxn, gh;xk Fwohnx mc Lisgi l ukw ncmhdcj ejl cl xagcn.ß  
 Bcpcfx vc âJcgoxswg-l i sjcvcnc;ßvc ukwk scpxp ugvywkw e/jxht ejl xavxn.  
 Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k jcn[l edx-phg` âJhnnox Xfkx Csh;xñß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.14-17-vc  
 l i ojcgxt dugghngh kcrq ugwk l wavvn. âL i sckkctß (Xfkx Cfx Aedfc), 6-[- [xgv,  
 scp.348â âL c[l ci b-bcmhxvß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.112â â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, tcbhxg ; xjh`f`,  
 tcbhxgw Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgx f`h`f`, 374-[i pcvxs, 15-[x [xgv, scp.128â âJcb;xncjw  
 ocmhssxg-i l l cjß, âkc[mhß mc âmcxddcjß pcvxsx, Cpl cv xfkx Pckfcgkx  
 âTcbhxgß ; xjh`f` kvhk kcrqck.

<sup>2</sup> â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 1-[x ]h`, 6-[- [xgv, scp.292â âJhnnox xfkx Csxñß, 7-[x [xgv,  
 scp.359â âXl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k jcn[i l edx-phg`ß, âJhnnox Xfkx Csh;xñß, Fednwj  
 ]h`, 1395-[x xg, 2-[x [xgv, scp.482.

<sup>3</sup> âKcp[i g-fcghycß, 202-[x oi jfc.

<sup>4</sup> Dekc unhvh, 197-[x oi jfc.

I L L I G-L Z/L X K X K H D X A C K X K P C V X S X K X K H N H A V-N-G L H S~...

â|edycl fcn I I I i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxackxk rw[hy`kvh mcthj ejvxb – pcvxsxkx dhgk`b Hdxackxk zbi ncmhdcj ejl xavxn. "i [gi epjxl hgh cshsck, (dwohn`vh vh redv ejvxdxl xb ; xl x) u fw szbi {cl cg I i phnxfcsxkvc vel xavxn. Dc/kx Zl cnvck mc Usl hkvhk suknh, dhowv L i hmxdcxk vzmn kvc vel xavxn ; x, fw szb vc u csnc I i jckhsxf vxv. } i k ; x u (L i hmxdc), Xl hl Cgxkxk tcbxgcjgcxkxk fcdhk evxgl csxkc rhvhyh rudnhhr tcnl hk menl xavx ; x, fw fhncvc kcrq ugwkxk pcn fxn pcvxsxk c ; sxkx vi bcgvxf kcrq ejxkxgc.

C'cn Hdxackxk szbi ki k vuynwgwywkw tcnb evcnc ; |edycl fcnxk ukwk rw[hy`kvh mcthj ejvxdxkx rcfwg ejsc ; vc fegc, fw szb I i jcmhxn ac ; xgvc kcrq evxgc âXl hl Cgx |edycl fcnxk mcsxsxvxnß pcvxsx xgc bxvvvxnI x? L c'cn |edycl fcn fharh fxn mhojvh zb mcsxddcjgcxkx Xl hl Cgxdc vedc fxgl cbvxl x? Ke[c ; x, ]uogw ncmhdcjgcn fwkh vcghgcj evxn. U [i l gcvck, âSi kckß mc âL i skcvß ; xjhfgghn`k`k I i cgxgtgcx Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k vxgxkvck fegc ncmhdcj evxngcn...

âLckxl |edycl fcngc x ; x 'znaiI mhn vxv... fxnx 'e[c, fxnx xsc 'i kvib. Pcn x ; x vctc 'evckvc u, khl hb phgkvh vxv mc âjckcpkzpß evxnvx (zs ; inl cdc uoahn scs).ß<sup>1</sup>

Vx'cn fxn ncmhdcjvc fwdwnl wavwn...

âLckxl |edycl fcnx-C ; ncl xk dhk`kvh egc fxn (di ; sc ; ) I crhl `I mhn vxv ; x, pe] fxn I cogwr i]ik fw I crhl duovw... Pcn si fp ]hy` ukwk dhk`kh 'evxf shghI menxvxl mc u vh âjckcpkzpß evxnvx...ß<sup>2</sup>

Xfkx Csh ; xnxk âJhnxoßxkvc { hfxnxk fegc vevxdx kcrq ugkwn... Jhxt rcbmcsxkvc |edycl fcnx-C ; ncl i Cgx xgc hsjhvhk vkh`a`nv`. Ukghn`k fw szpfcjx wbhkv`, kcpkdcj scphfcgcnvck fc/bxgcx vevxgc...â|edycl fcnxk zb cl x uygsw xgc `]`gj`s` (kc rcvxn) wbwk ]c ; vxlß Fw szb |edycl fcnc ]hjhkvh fwdwnvw... âUkwkgh `]`gvhahk I ck vedxvxl æ Hgghp ukwkgh `]`gvha`nv`!ß

Fw ncmhdcjgcn fharh xfhnc xgc vc fegc kcrq ugwkwn... âWbwk I i vvcj ukwkgh `]`gvhav`, Cfw Fc ; n, Zl cn mc shxn [hl hhj vh

<sup>1</sup> âSi kckx Xfkx L h[cß, cvcf ; xjh f, 3708-[x pcvxsæ âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.80.

<sup>2</sup> âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.85 mc 107. Ukwk cjhntg` fcdhk` âCpgx-fedj I c ; jcfxkvc xsghI x acnxcj I ckfcgcnxß fzgl csxkvc redv ugwkx[hr.

ukh fho`nv`ghn.ß Nhm̃x vedxn... Suknh fxbc jcnct rhd`jv`, [hl hhj  
vevx...âDh Ncswgcgghp! Fw' i k; i 'xbgx szpfcjxkxb kc rcvcn wbwk  
]c; vx!ß Fwdwnvw...

âUkwkgh \`j`gvhahk I ck vedxgvxl æ Hgghp ukwkggh \`j`gvha`nv`ß<sup>1</sup>

Fxb fw ncmhdcjgcnx vx'cn I ckfcgcncvck vc kcr̃g evcnc; egc  
fw ;xjh`f`k â|edycl fcn egl xkxk vha`d`[`ghn`ß fzgl csxkvc,  
egc[c vc âCpgx-fedj I c;jcfxkvc xsghl x acnxcj I ckfcgcncxß  
fzgl csxkvc redv ejl xax;.

XLHL CGX™ --K PCVXSX XGC I L L I G-L Z/LXKXK HDXACKXK  
PCVXSXKXK L I RHDXSX UGWKLHS...

Fw ncmhdcjx kcr̃g evck de'hkc acos I I I i g-I z/I xkxk  
Hdxacvxn. U, fegc vedxn...â ZI ni ki k suk hkghn`kvh |edycl fcn  
I ckvck fxn jeaj xsjcvx. Suknh phgvhk 'ejvx mc egc I ckxl  
cjcdxl vc vc [hk menvx.ß Fw pcvxsc, ukwk mcpdxk fhaghkl hs`  
xgc cghrcvhn kcr̃g ejvxdx vx'cn fxn pcvxsx vc cghmc evxnx;...  
â|edycl fcn xghpx mcpdx {cfnhxgvck hgv`y` xg; vzmngcnvc  
âXrncß swncsx khbxg ugvw. |edycl fcn ukwk fhncsxkvc ac;; -  
ai fpcdc vi avi, vevx ;x, âUgl hdh Aedjhk jcnctxkvckvxn mc  
I ckx cgc shgl hr xsjcdxn!ß Pcl ]xkxk Rwn/hkx-: cnxl xk shn  
hdcgcnxkx vc ;hpxkgcnxk rhtxdcgx âl i sc[[c/ß szbgcnxkc uoahjv`.  
Kcphdcj, I cspxx Mcncrc xfkx Kutcg ukw cl xk evxf xkhkv`nv`  
;x, u, \edycl fcnvxn, pcl vc ukh vevx ;x, pcbncj Lwsh xfkx  
XI nhkh mcpd ugwkvwyw ;xl x, sckc vc mcpd ugwkw. U pcbncj  
vc Mcncrcjxk szbgcnxkc xkhkv` mc \edycl fcn ugvwywkw  
hkghv`!ß

Oi gcth I c;jcfxkxk |edycl fcnx-C;ncl j -xk sxncsxgc  
cghrcvhn kcr̃g ejvx;gcnx fegc shojh ncmhdcjgc n ugvwr[h ]uovwn.  
Ukghn fw ;xl x pcvxsxgcnc ck di ;sc; I crhl h shpxf ughk xghpx  
|edycl fcnxk I crhl mc I ckbxgcjxkx ukh e/jxrhv  
fcsgcdckgcnxk kcbcnxkvc u rcvcn hahy` shg`ngghn ;x, pcjjh hvx  
xkshkghnvhk vh hahy` scmxdcdcd 'cgxf ]hj`n. Fwkh 'znc vc

<sup>1</sup> Pcn x;x ncmhdcj XI hl Cgx™ -`k jcn[i I edx-phg`kvh âJhnnox Xfkx  
Csh;xnß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.310-311-vc redv ugwkl wavwn. Pcl ]xkxk Xfkx : csxnk  
âJhnxoß ;xjh`f`, 7-[x [xgv, scp.356 mc âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpx (Xfkx Cfxg-  
Pcvxv), 1-[x ]h\, L xsxn ]h\, 2-[x [xgv, scp.78-vc fxn ncmhdcj redv  
ugwkl wavwn ;x, ukwk oi ghscsx fegcvxn...âHdxac vhoxg ugvwrvh 'znvi ;x, u  
x; xsx hsjhvhk szpfcj evxngcn. Vevx...âEd Cgx! L ckxl \hd`I, vurrwb 'i kvck  
dhgk`b fxn 'i kvi n. Ed Cfw Jhgxfxk uygw! L ckx nhphj fwnhol hbl `shk?ß

Scwvxddc Cncfxsjhk`kvh rhna`ghav`y`l , bhpnxvc hgxl ughk u ;xaxkxk âL i pcl l cv vc l ckxl ;xl x fñ hvhl xvx, zgi f 'ejvxB – vel csxkc l i cddck rcvñ phrr rhbhkv`nl hr ughn.

Phgfw; x, xghpx mcpdxk fhaghky`[`kvh fwkw l i ahpxvc evck de'hkc acos, dc/kx âPcñhß l hyhñs`kvh |edycl fcn j -xk de'hkc dugvha` Cgx <sup>TM</sup> zb pcvxsxkvc vedxn...

âMcpd khbxg ughk bhl hk fñ khgc eajvxl . |edycl fcn l ckc vevx ;x, fw, Aedjhk`k khgcsxvñ. }ik;x hñj`r [hl hhj`k ukh xjhj` ejl csxkvck khil xv ugl wavwn.ß

U pcbncj fharh fñ pcvxsvc fwdwnwn...

âHggp Zb |edycl fcnxk siyvck hdn`ghkvhk sukn ck fzdi; mc isjik fñ l cgc;gc dhkha` ejvx ;x, 'e[c-'ikvib cnbxkvc ukw ;cnhl cj, hg[ckhfj`r mc fw hgcl xk vx`cn fcdckxgl xa sxtcjcñx xgc jhk`a ejxk.ß

|edycl fcnxk mcthj` xgc cghrcvñ ughñr Cgxkxk fhncsxkvc fegc vedxgn...â|edycl fcn ukw (Cgxkx) zb dhk`kh ]hy`nv`, ukwkgh fñ l i vvcj `]`gvhav` mc sxngcnxkx ukh pcmhgc ejvx. Sukn ukh mcsxddcj ejvx mc fw bhl hk vi kdhvhk 'ejvx.<sup>1</sup> U pcbncjxk nwpw ukwk cgxkvc [cncdhkh 'cgvx mc cgxkx zb i bi kc siñvi , ukh zbi rwsq menxf ;ctckc fi ;vi , l cgc;gcñ vc fw xavc ukh ;zl c; ejvxgcñ. Cgx emxk rh`-vxnñ`k`k khgc scsgcnxkx eavxñ, l cgc;gcñvck fñ vcsjcsxkxk 'cgxaxkx, fñ vcsjcsxkxk xsc hxl hkh 'ejvxdxkx 'zni nvi , ukghn`k |edycl fcñc khl hb r`gl hghn`k`, shghmhj 'zkvñl c scsgcnxkx eavxñvx. Fw xa u pcbncjx vctk evckc rcvñ vhmhl ejvx.ß

Fcgx, oi gcth l c;jcfxkvc u [iñ pcvxsgcñ, Cpgx-fedj l c;jcfxkvc xsc fw [iñ pcvxsgcñ mhnv`n ;x, pcñ x;x l c;jcfc xkhkhkghn`k kcbcnxkvc zbi kcl cosws fñ jc/sxñ rudwn mc fw vh l i scgl hkghñ hñs`kvh dho`kghal hk` redñ-l il ;ik evxñ. Fw dho`kghal h dhgk`b u bhl hk l il ;ik ugh fxgcñ ;x, pcñ x;x l c;jcf hñv`[`gghn` fw pcvxsgcñ l c[l wcsxkx fñ denvc hñhav`ns`kghñ ;x, zb xj;xgcñxkx jh`h fxgsxkgcñ, l i scgl hk rhñvhaghñ fw jcvrxrhjghñ shdcsxkvc rhna`g`rg` hkghal hñh mc pcl nc/dgxdc khxg ugh fxgsxkgcñ. Xkahgghp!

Fñ vph jc;xv evxñx; ;x, fw fhncvc ck ]uo hñhav`n`gl hg` ughk aed, |edycl fcnxk sxncsxkx mc u pcbncjxk jhñxoxkx u pcbncjxk scphfcgcñxkx jhñxox xgc dhkha` hñhav`nl hrvhk

---

<sup>1</sup> Fw pcvxsxk l cbl wkkw l l l i Scgl c mc fharhghn` jcsvñr ejl xagcñ.

xfhncjvx.

I L L I G-L Z/L XKXK HDXACVCK KCRG UGWKHK, FXN-FXNXKC  
BXVV UGHK X: X PCVXS MC X: X L ZMRE

Xfkx Csh; xn ncmhdcj evxn ; x, x; x rhv`k Hdxacdc vevx... âEd  
I I I i g-l z/l xkxk! Cgxvck fxbxl i ]i k vkh`a.ß Hdxac vevx...âKc  
sunwawnswwkb? Egc fxn ; xax fhncsxkvc (sunwawnswwkb) ; x, zb  
cgxkx |edycl fcn i ]i k szd; ckc[c; rcnhn menvx, u pcbncjxk  
nwpw ukwk cgxkvc [cncdhk ejl cdc fhaghv` mc ukw zb i bi kc  
]c; vx?ß Vevxgc...âFcs kc i ]i k ukwk cgedpxkc rxdhl ejvxkxb?ß  
Vevx...âFw ugwf ; e]ck fxn xavxn. Ukwk cmcbxkx ]`ol hr i ]i k  
den i bi kvc ughk pcn fxn aedx menl c; xsjcnvxl .ß<sup>1</sup>

Hdxackxk fw pcvxsx Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k fwdwnvwyw  
â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i fha` sxlcl vc ughk fxn phgvh [hk menvx, ukwk  
nwpw cgl vc [cncdhk ejvx mc ukw i bil c sinjvil ß - pcvxsx xgc wdywkvwn  
mc fw vh Hdxackxk vevxdx âsxkcl gc ]ckcl hnhs`kvh phgs`b  
ugvwb – pcvxsx xgc bxvvxddcj jca; xg evxn.

Pcl ]xkxk Xfkx Csh; xn, Hdxackxk fegc vevxdxkx ncmhdcj evxn..  
â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl I ckxl emxkvc epjxbhn phg`kvh fwdwnvw..  
âPcfxfxl x I ckxl dhk`l h ]hy`n`k.ß Cgxkx ]hy`nv`ghn, u vh  
'cgvx. |edycl fcn ukw 'znck ; xl x i sji kvc; x znji di ; ckhn  
]c; vx, Cgxkx zb dhk`kh vhoxg ejvx mc vi kdhvhk 'evckc rcvsn  
ukw zb hywa`kvh shoghv`.ß<sup>2</sup>

Ukwk fw pcvxsx Cfvi gghp xfkx Cl nxk pcvxsx xgc vc  
I i mhtxrvxn ; x, unhvh fegc redv ugwkwn...â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl  
ocsjcgx; bhl hk` fwdwnvw...âCgxkx I ckxl dhk`l h ]hy`n`k...ß Fw  
vh Hdxackxk vevxdx â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl I ckxl sxlcl gc  
fuyhb`l hnhs`kvh mthj ejvxß pcvxsx xgc bxvvxddcj jca; xg evxn.  
Fxn-fxnxc bxvv ughk x; x ncmhdcjxk I I I i g-l z/l xkxkvck kcr  
evxgl csxkxk I ckacdx mc scfcfx, ukwk Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup>  
rhna`s`kvh jwjvwyw I zmregcn tcnrxkc rhd`v`n.

HDXACKXK XL HL CGX <sup>TM</sup> RHNA-S-KVH JWJVWYX X: X  
L I OJCGXT L ZMRE

|edycl fcnxk mthj`kvhk suknh Cfw Fc; ngc fed/cj evxgvx mc  
I I I i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxackxk ncmhdcjxkc 'znc âCgx mc Fckx-

<sup>1</sup> Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k jcn[i l edx-phg`, âJhnnox Xfkx Csh; xnß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.15.

<sup>2</sup> Dekc unhvh.

*Phaxl xk phl 's' hgj' hd l i vvcjxkvc – Thjxl c vi kdvhk  
'evck mhojh rcvcn – ukwkgf fed/cj ejl cvxgc.ß*

Fwkvhk suknh xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> Usl hk'k oxghtcjxkxk suk  
mhojghn'kh rcvcn sxdhscj scpkcsxkvc wbhrghav'n'gv', kcpdhcj  
l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxac Usl hkgh rhna'ghal hr i]i k ukwk  
cgedpxkc rxdhl evckgcxk – dc/kx Jcgpc, Bi fedn mc  
fharhghn'k'k ncpfcngxdxkx zb zpvcsxkc hg<sup>v</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Fw xagcnx vc  
dhgk'b Usl hkvhk suknh zbi ki k cl x uygwsw Jcgpcx oxghtcj  
jhjv'nl hr i l vxv xgc 'zni nvi. Usl hk rcjgc dejxnxgvx; vck mc  
l i scgl hkghn Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -gh fed/cj ejvx; vck suknh u pcbncjxk  
cgedpxkc {cl cg l i phnxfcsxkx fhaghv' mc ho'nvh vh l cygw<sup>f</sup>  
ugvw. xl hl ukw Lcvxkcdc rhdjhnv'. U pcbncj acpxv ugvyw  
mhojh rcvcn Hdxac zb rcgfkvc ukh rhna' ;xk-; i vwncj  
fcsgcdxnvx. Dwohn'vh vh redv ugwkvyw ;xl x, u, pcbncj Cgx  
<sup>TM</sup> -'k acphvcjxkvc semxk[ pxssx ;e]xnxnvx. Fwkvhk suknh  
L i hmxdc ph;xl xddcj 'cgvx. Ukghn'k pcn x; xsx (L i hmxdc mc  
Hdxac) Cgx <sup>TM</sup> rhna's'kvh edkx l zmre jwjvwrghn'kh 'znc  
hnhghn'kvh dhoe' cghrc fcnrcnvn ugvw. Hl l h L i hmxdc Pi [n  
xfkx Cvxx rcjgc dejxnvx; vck suknh fw fhyg'g'r \ubwgvw.

Pcl ]xkxk, L i hmxdc [hl hhjvhk zb uygw Debvx i]i k fed/cj  
hgl hr l crhl 'kh 'cgvdx bhl hk Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Cfw  
Fc; n Debvgc fed/cj axvvcjgc e/jxnhb ejvx. L i hmxdcxk  
jcnetxkvc Px[hbh ph;xl ughk Lcnmhk, |edycl fcn  
l cs[xvxkvc ]'o'a evcnc; vevx... âCl xncg-l z/l xkxk (dc/kx  
L i hmxdc) pcl xac sxbxk oednxkxb xsjcl xa, sxbxk fhncxbvc  
hbh[ 'r e/jxkhs'bg'r ejl cl xavxn. Xkvx vc uygw Debvx zbi kvck  
suknh [hkxak rcnvn menl xavxn.ß Fw bhl hk Cfvi n-Ncpl hk  
xfkx Cfw Fc; n hdhyh rhgo'f vevx... âEd Lcnmhk! Hgghph hkv  
ugswk ;x, pcl sck dhghk vedxnsck, pcl vc L i hmxdc!. Sxb  
L i pcl l cv i l l cjx i]i k pe] mhoj oedxn xsjcl cl xsxkbæ  
c; sxkc sxb xsjcdxnsxkb ;x, ukw Nul h \hvahpghn'k'k i swg-  
xvhncsx ac; gxk shghs'k'b... pcn mhoj fxn \hvahp zgsc, fharh fxn  
\hvahp ukwk denxkc ;e]sxk!ß

Mcbxddcjx fegc 'znck Lcnmhk vevx... âFw pcl xk ;csvxn ;x,

<sup>1</sup> Fw ncmhdcjxk l ckfcgcx âScrxtcß fzgl csxkvc redv ugwkvw.

<sup>2</sup> Hdxackxk Usl hk'k l i rhfxgkvc jwjvwyw l zmredx âHdxackxk  
Xsghl vh nugwß ;xjh'kvh âL i hmxdc xgc dhkha' ugl hrß fzgl csxkvc redv  
ejl xax; .

Hgghp-jhhgh fw hdckx ukwk fhncsxkvc khbxg ejl xavxn...âU ;cs ;x, zb mhgxvedkxkc âSxhc wtt ugswk!ß vevx.ß<sup>1</sup>

|cnvc hnohs`kvhk Lcnmhk`k szbi ki eavvck Hdxac hdhyh rhgo`f vevx...âLcnmhk! Lcnmhk!ß {hl hhj fxnvck-fxnc sh; xjgcavx, Lcnmhk ukh jcnct fhohkvh Hdxac vevx... âSckl x Cfvi n-Ncpl hkh vedxnsck ;x, fw hdc ukwk fhncsxkvc khbxg ugwf? Hgghp hkv ugswk ;x, dhghk vedxnsck! Fw, u vedxgvxn, c; sxkc txghk; cs uygw txghk; csvxn. Gh; xk sck Hgghp`k gc/kcjkxk fxn pxsscsxsck!ß

Fharh fxn ncmhdcjc 'znc fegc vevx...âHgghp hkv ugswk ;x, dhghk vel xavxn! Fw, u vedxgvxn. Gh; xk |edycl fcnc-C; ncl Lcnmhk`k hjhs`k` gc/kcjcgvdx bhl hk Lcnmhk ukwk si gfi kvc vxv. Vel cgx, Lcnmhk Hgghp-jhhghk`k gc/kcjkxk fxn pxsscsxvxn.ß<sup>2</sup>

Fwohnx vc fw pcvxsx zbi ki k âScpxpß ;xjh`kvh redv evcnc; vel xavxn... Li hmxdc jcnctxkvck Px[hbh ph; xl ughk Lcnmhk ]`o`a evcnc; Debvx jc/nxtgcvx ;x, Li hmxdcvck suknh ukh fed/cj ejsskxgc. Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Cfw Fc; n ukh fxn szb vevx, u vh 'zsjcna menvx ;x, ukw jwjswkghn. U xsc Hdxackxk emxkc 'ejvx, Lcnmhk ukw jwjh fxgl cvx. Fwkh 'znc vc vevx...âFw pcl xk ;csvxn ;x, Hgghp-jhhgh fw hdckx ukwk fhncsxkvc khbxg ejl xavxn.ß Fwkvhk suknh Hdxac \cnvc hnohs`kvhk scsgckxf vevx...âHgghp Rwn/hkvh fxbxl fhnc xbv pe] fxn aed khbxg ejl cl xavxn, dhgk`b lckxl i bn mc 'i khps`bg`y`l` (khbxg ejl xavxn).ß<sup>3</sup>

Fwohnx Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Cfw Fc; nxk vevvdx âsxb xsjcdxnsxkb ;x, ukw Nul h \hvahpghn`k`k i swg-xvhncsx tunl hs`kh shghs`k`b...ß szbi ki xojxshnh shgl `a, ukw l i cl l hg` ac; xgvc âfxn szb vevxß [i l gcsxkc ]emxn l xavxn. l l l i g- l z/ l xkxk Hdxackxk Lcnmhk fhncsxkvc kcrj ejvxdx ncmhdcjx vc i l wl xddcjgc xojxshnh shgl `av`n, phgfw; x Xfkx Pc[cn ukw âTcjpwg-fhnxß ;xjh`kvh (âScpxp-Fwohnxßkxk acnpvxvxn) cjhntg` ac; xgvc redv ejl xavxn. Fc/bx xfhncgcncv fegcvxn...âGh; xk Ncswgx-C; ncl Lcnmhk`k hjhs`k`, Lcnmhk ukwk si gfi kvc ughk fxn

<sup>1</sup> âCprhtß swncsx, hdc.17

<sup>2</sup> âJhnnox Xfkx Csxß, 56-[` xgxk phvxscgcx, 3-[i [xgv, scp.199.

<sup>3</sup> âScpxp Fwohnxß, âmcggcbx rhgc gxmhgxcvdpß fhf` (âCprhtß swncsxkxk jctsnxkvc), 3-[i [xgv, scp.126.



phgvh gc/kcjgcvx.ß<sup>1</sup>

Fwohnxxk fw xax 'znl csxkxk scfcfx fwvwn ;x, u, L i hmxdc mc Debxx i i scgl hkghn`k ocgxtcsx peshf evxn, ukwk kcbcnxkc 'znc i l wl ohgr ; i jgsx Cfvi n-Ncpl hk`k ukghn`k fhncsxkvc vevxdx áukghn oxghtcjx \hvahpg`r tunl hs`kh shgv`ghn ;x, pcn mhoj fxn \hvahp zgsc, fharh fxn \hvahp ukwk denxkc [hxxaxk ugswkß szbi ki eajl cl cgxvxn.

Fwohnx l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxackxk L cnmhk`k fhncsxkvc kcrj ejvxdx ncmhdcjx vc xojxshnh shgl `av`n. } i k ; x L cnmhk l i scgl hkghn`k ocgxtcsx ugl wavw mc Fwohnx ukwk ni smhd]`g`y`kh scfcf ughk aedx zb ; xjhfkvh redv ejl cdx ghdxr 'znl i n. Fw, Fwohnxxk zb áScpxpß ; xjhfkvh jwjvwyw dugvwn. U, Xsghl hgcl xkvc pz ; l nhkg`r evck ocgxtc mc ph ; xl gcnxk ni smhd]`g`y`kh scfcf ughk fxn aedx – pcn pcvsvc ugsh fegc, xojxshnh shg`n. Fwkh 'znc vc oi gcth l c ; jcfx ukw Rwn/hkvhk suknh ; xjhfgghn`k ck scpxpx peshf ejl xa, ukwk zbi ki vc ácpgx-pcvxsxk xl hl `ß ; xl x rcgcl c menl xagcn.

\*\*\*

L cnmhk Px[hbv h Debxx i ] i k fed/cj hgh fxgl cvx, fwkh 'znc vc L i hmxdc pc[[ i kmhk` xgc Px[hbh 'cgvx mc L cvxkcdc vhoxx ugvw. Xfkx Cfvi g-Fxnn fw phvxscxk fxn pxsscsxkx fegc redv evxn... áL i hmxdc l xkfcnc ]`o`f [hl hj` Debxxvc fed/cj vc/mcj ejvx. Pi sedk xfkx Cgx, Cfvi ggph xfkx Bi fedn mc Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Cfw Fc ; n ukwkh vkh`av`ghn. Cfw Fc ; nxk uygwkwk szbgcnx fegc vx... áPz ; wl cj \hvahpg`rv`nl ` ; x, fxn \hvahp zgvi ; vc, fharhs` ukwk denxkc ; e]sxk?! Hgghph hkv ugswk, fwkw pe] mhoj rcfwg ejl cdc[cdx ; ß Cfw Fc ; nxk uygw Debxxvc fed/cj vck xl jxkh ejvx ; vck suknh L i hmxdc ukh di b l xk vxnpcl \wg 'zkvcnvx, hl l h Cfvi n-Ncpl hk ukw rcfwg ejl cdx f vevx... áVxkxl x vi kdhdh shj`l l `?ß Suknh L c ; ; cdc 'ejvx, Debxxvc fed/cj l cnhsxl vck zk[c vi kdvhk 'ejvx.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> áTcjpwg-fhnxß, 10-[w [xgv, scp.97-98. Fw phvxscxk Cfwg-Tcnc[ áCyhxxß ; xjhfkvh (16-[ [xgv, scp.90-91) cjhntg` ac ; xgvc redv ejl xavxn. Pcl ]xkxk fw l ckfcgcnc vc l i nh[xcj evc fxgcnsxkxb... áXsxd/hfß, Pc ; cl xfkx Hs`k jcn[i l edx-phg, áWsvwg-yhfcß, áCg-xshfcß áL i sjcvnc ; x Ph ; xl ß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.481æ áJhnxox xfkx : csxnß, 8-[x [xgv, scp.98.

<sup>2</sup> áXsxd/hfß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.292æ áWsvwg-yhfcß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.306æ áCg-xshfcß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.400. Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Cfw Fc ; nxk jcn[i l edx-phg,

XfKx Cfvi g-Fxn vphph suknh dhn`n... âCfvi n-Ncpl hk  
'zbgckxgl cvck Pcfah<sup>1</sup> hvġ` fxn denvc zgvi mc pcl xk denvc vc  
vctk ugwkvw. Vedxgl xavxn ; x, u, dwowv h x; ck zgl i avi n. Ukwk  
zgi l ocfcnx vuyl h fh[`s` l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxacdc ]hjhkvh  
pc[[ i kmhk` xgc L cvxkcvck Pcfahdh 'cgvx, ukwk l hjcl xkvc  
xajxnh; evxf hyghv` mc fw ae/ngcnx uowvw...

وَكُنَّا كَنُذْمَانِي جَذِيمَةً حَقِيَّةً      مِنْ الدَّهْرِ حَتَّى قِيلَ لَنْ يَتَصَدَّعَا  
فَلَمَّا تَفَرَّقْنَا كَانِي وَمَالِكَا      لَطُولِ اجْتِمَاعٍ لَمْ مَتُ ثِيْلَةٌ مَعَا

âFxn bhl hkghn fxn rhkhv`k x; x fwvhy` xv; .

Vedxnvxgc n ; x, fwkghn fxn-fxnkvck hdn`gl hb.

Xkvx ; x, hdn`gl `a`r; shk; x l ck mc L hg; ,

Fw rcvcn fhyg`g`rgh fegc, fxn 'e[c vc dhkha` ugl hl `a`r.ß

Suknh vevx...âH'hp ugl Hgghph hkv ugsww, c'cn scxk dhk`kvh  
ugshdv`l , egc zgvi di k denvc vctk evcnvxl æ c'cn scxk  
dhk`kvh ugshdv`l , sckc hyghl hbv`l !ß

Ph; xl xk âL i sjcvnc; ß ; xjh`kvh vedxgn... âCfvi n-Ncpl hk  
dwowdh 'ejvx, ukw udhjl hr xsjcvx; gcnx bhl hk 'znvi gc n ; x,  
zgl i avi n. Fwkh 'znc vc Hdxac jcscmmi n evxnvx ; x, ukh rhna`  
pxdgc xagcvxgl xa mc vxnx-vxnx fhsv`nl `aghn.ß<sup>3</sup>

Fcgx, c'cn Cfvi n-Ncpl hk Debxvc rhna` jwjvwyw fw scnj  
l zmre xgc dhkha` shy rhgshdv`, Debxvc fed/cj ugwk l hdh[hrv`.  
U, L c; ; c dugwkvh zgvi æ ke[c ; x, L hg; Cajcn vc L xsxn  
dugwkvh L i hmxdcxk l cotx ac; xgvc menvxdx bcpcngc acpxv  
evxgvx.<sup>4</sup>

Cfvi n-Ncpl hk zgvi ; x, Debxv i ]i k fed/cj hg`kl hs`kh pe]  
fxn l hkec ugl hs`kæ ke[c ; x, fwkvhk zk[c xl hl Pcsck <sup>TM</sup>

âAcbcnhjwb-bcpcfß, 53-[i xgxk phvxscgcnx. Fw l cbl wkh dho`k ughk`  
âL i sjcvnc; ß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.476-vh uowdh fxgcnsxkxb.

<sup>1</sup> âL z/[cl i g-fi gvkhß ; xjh`kvh vedxgn... Pcfah L c; ; ckxk [ckwfwkvh mc  
ukvhk hgj` l xg l cshtvc dengcack fxn vhy`k hv`v`n ; x, Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfKx  
Cfw Fc; n 'zbgckxgl cvck unhvh mcthj ejl xavx. : xaxcn ukwk [ckhbcsxkx  
]xdxkc hg`f L c; ; cdc 'cjxnvxgc n, Hdxac vc L cvxkcvck 'cgxf ]hjv` mc ukwk  
rcfnxkxk i sji kc 'ejvx, fw ae/ngcnx uowl hyh fhaghv`... âMc ; wkkh  
; ckcvl hkx...ß

<sup>2</sup> Fho... âXsjxd/hfß (âCg-xshfcßkxk phaxdcxkvc), 2-[x [xgv, scp.393. Cfvi n-  
Ncpl hk xfKx Cfx Fc; nxk jcn[i l edx-phg`.

<sup>3</sup> âL i sjcvnc; ß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.376 mc ukwk Bcpcfxcvck ughk oi ghscsx.

<sup>4</sup> âHdxackxk nugwß ; xjh`kh fho`k.

L i hmx dckxk l cotx ac; xgvc menvxdx bcpncg acpxv evxgl xavx.

Cfvi n-Ncpl hkh fw dugvh swx-rcsv evxgvxæ ke[c ; x, Sc/v xfkx Cfx Mcrrhsh mc Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Ohgxv xfkx Mcgxvc rhna` swx-rcsv evxgl xavx.

Fw ; xl x l cscgcgn l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxacdc 'xbgx rhgl hl `av`, fwkh 'znc vc Fckx-l l cddckxk cgedpxkc 'ekxa scmxddcgx c; s-jcfxgyhjh fhaghv`. Xaxk cmmcgxkvc Lcnmhk mc ukwk hjhs` Pc; cl xk fhncsxkvc |edycl fcnx-C; ncl vck kcrq ugwkhhk pcvxsgcnx dhdl hyh fhaghv`, suknh vh L i hmx dckxk oi swsx sxdhscjxkxk cgedpxkc ]`ov`. Pcl xk sxdhscj ; x, i l wl x ac; xgvc Fckx-Phaxl xk, oi swsx ac; xgvc xsc Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k tcbxgcjgcnxkx l cpm ejl c; l crscvx vha`d`nv`. L crscvx vc fw vxv ; x, Xl hl Pcsck mc Xl hl Pi sedk £ -`k l i scgl hkghn`k kcbcnxkvc; x l crhl `k` ; x]xgvxf hahy` 'cjxnsxk, oxghtcjx zb ohkcvhk`kvh xnsx ac; gc shgs`k. Ukwk xax egc fxn pcvvc ]hjv` ; x, tcnl hk menvx ; x, Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -` l i scgl hkghn`k l xkfcngcnxkvc gc/kcjcgsxkgcn! l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxac mhn-ri mmsxgc L i hmx dckxk fw sxdhscjxkc rhna` ]`ov` mc fw vzmnavc Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k mc ukwk x; x zmghv` Pcsckgc Pi sedkxk, egc[c vc pcbncj Thjxl c fvkjx Ncswgwgghp`k tcbxgcjgcnxkxk dhdl gl hs`kh [xvvxddcj 'zsjcnvx.

Lcpb fw vzmnavck e/jxfhnck u, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl vck Cpgx-fedjxk tcbxgcjgcnx xgc cghrcvhn eajvxdx mc 'znvi di aedgcnxk fc/bxgcnxkx dhdl hyh fhaghv`. Ukghnvhk fxnx vc dwohn`vh redv ugwkhhk x; x pcvxsvxn ; x, ukwk |edycl fcnxk mcthj` fhncsxkvc kcrq ejvxdx vx`cn pcvxsgcnx xgc jhl hl xgc bxvvxddcj jca; xg evxn.

l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxackxk mcsxddcj fhncsxkvc jwjvwyw l zmredx Ri nedaxk oxghtcj i swg-xvhncsxkxk |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk Cpgx-fedj fhncsxkvc fwdwnvwyw pcvxsgcnxgc ke[c nctjhn ejl csxkx 'zsjcnxn. Ri nedaxk fw i l wl x sxdhscjx vc -dc/kx åoxghtcjgc ki fi mmcj - x; xsx fxngx; vc Fckx-Phaxl vc ugl hl hg`v`nß l cscgcx Hgghp`k ; zl cdx xgc suknh;` fzgl cvc redv ugwkhh[hrv`n.

XL HL CGX <sup>TM</sup> --K TCBXGCJGCNXKXK "XBGCVXGLCSX, U PCBNCJC RHNA- KHGHDXR SZBGCN VEDXGLCSX MC FWKWK SCFCFGCNX

Fw fzgl cvc Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k tcbxgcjgcnxkxk 'xbgcvxgl csx, ukh rhna` khghdxr szbgcn vedxgl csxkxk scfcfgcnxkx hnhav`nh[hy`r.

RI NEDA OXGHTCJGC KI FI MMCJXK X: XSXKXK FCKX-PHAXL VC  
UGL HS-KVHK KHNHB- XVX

Jcfcnx zb âJhnxoßkvc ocgxtc ZI cngc Xfkx Hffhs hnhs`kvh  
fha menck x; x szpfcjx kcrgevcnc; vedxn... Ocgxtc ZI cn fxnxk[x  
vctc Xfkx Hffhs vevx... âPhks` scfcfc 'znc sxbxk rzml i ki b  
(Ri neda) mxghdcj mc ncpfcngxdxkxbx rcfwg ejl cvx?ß

Xfkx Hffhs vevx... âFvgl xnci .ß

ZI cn vevx... âGh; xk l ck fxgxnci ... sxbxk ukghn i bcnxkvc; x  
ncpfcngx; mc mxghdcjxkxbx ouaghl `nghn.ß

Xfkx Hffhs vevx... âKc i ]i k? Fxb ; x, ukghn i ]i k oedxn  
l ckacdx ugl wawr!ß

ZI cn vevx... â: e]c; . Ukghn oxghtcjc ki fi mmcjxk pcn x; xsxkxk  
fxn denc d`y`al hs`k` mc kcjx[cvc sxbxk xtjxohngn`k`b`k rhj-rhj  
hnjl hs`k` xsjcl xnvxgcni! Fcg;c vedcgcn ; x, Cfw Fc;n fegc  
ejl xavxn. Oedn, Hgghph hkv ugswk, gh; xk Cfw Fc;n jcvfxngcnxk  
ck dhoad`s`k` se]vx!...ß

Xfkx Hffhsgh h\hmv`y` x; xk[x szpfcjvc ZI cn vedxn... âXfkx  
Hffhs! Fgxnsckl x ; x, sxbxk rzml i ki b kc i ]i k  
L i pcl l cvvck suknh sxbxk mxghdcjxkxbx rcfwg ejl cvx?ß

Xfkx Hffhs vevx... Ukh [hmhf menl c; xsjcl cvxdxl c 'znc  
vevxl ...âC'cn fxgl cscl , L z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx h' hpg`r mencn!ß

ZI cn vevx... âUkghn xsjcl cvxgcni ; x, ki fi mmcjgc oxghtc sxbvc  
fxn denc ju`ghas`k, sxb vc rhj-rhj xtjxohng, zb rzml i ki bc  
xtjxohn evcsxkxb. Fwkh 'znc vc Ri neda zbi i ]i k se]; xgcnc  
fhaghv` mc vi b`i k vc se]; x ; e]xnx f rcgcfc ]hgv`ghn!ß

Xfkx Hffhs... âEd l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx! C'cn l ckc vkh`al hr  
x[hbcsx mensck mc rcbcfgckl csck, [hmhf mencncl .ß

Vevx... âVe, Xfkx Hffhs!ß

Xfkx Hffhs... âEd L z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx! Sckxk vevxdxk âRi neda  
zbi se]; xgcnc fhaghv`, se]; x ; e]xnjvx mc fw se]; xgcncvc rcgcfc  
]hgv`ß szbi kc 'cgvx; vc xsc, vuywvvhk vh c'cn Ri neda zbi  
i ]i k Hgghp-jhhghk`k ukghn i ]i k se]vxdxk se]scdvxgcni, vi b`i k  
dugh vi al i a ughnv`ghn, fw phgvh fxn ; cs ukghnh rhna` pcscv  
ejl cb, ukghn` ncvv ejl cbvx. Hl l h sckxk vevxdxk âukghn  
oxghtcjc ki fi mmcjxk fxbvc ugl hs`k` xsjcl cvxgcniß szbi kc  
'cgvx; vc xsc, Hgghp-jhhgh fxn rzml i fegc (l csgcpcjgx) aedc  
x; nhpg` dhkhav`rgn`kh 'znc mcst evcnc; fwdwnl wavwn...

﴿ذَلِكَ بِأَنَّهُمْ كَرِهُوا مَا أُنزِلَ اللَّهُ فَاحْبَطَ أَعْمَالَهُمْ﴾

âFwkwk scfcfx u vxv ;x, ukghn Hgghp`k khbxg ejvx;gcnxkc x;nhp pssx xgc dhkha`nv`ghn. Fwkh 'znc vc Hgghp ukghn`k (dhoa') cl cggcnxkx l cpm ejvx.ß<sup>1</sup>

Zl cn vevx... âPedphj! Ed Xfkx Hffhs! Hgghph hkv ugsww, sckvck l ckc egc ocfcngcn ]hj`n ;x, eajvxdxl ;xl x jcscmmi n ejl cdxl x xsjcl xncl , sckxk l ckxl dhk`l vh ughk l crhl `k`k hbhgl hs`k` ouaghl `nhl .ß

Xfkx Hffhs... âUkghn kcvxn? Dh Cl xncg-l z/l xkxk! C'cn phrv`nsh, ukvh l ckxl sckxk kcbcnxkvc ughk l crhl `l`k hbhgl hs`kh ghdxr vedxgvxnæ duo, c'cn fhjxgvxnsc, l ckxl ;xl x fhjxgx zbi kvck wbhrglav`nhn!ß

Zl cn vevx... âLckc ocfcn ]hjl `av`n ;x, sck fegc vel xsck... Fwkx (oxghtcjx) fxbvck bi gl mc pcscvvc hgl `aghn.ß

Xfkx Hffhs...âEd l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx! Sckxk vevxdxk âbi gl gc ugl wavwnß szbi [hpxg mc rednxsx i]i k hdv`kv`n. Hl l h vevxdxk âpcscv i bi kvck ugl wavwnß szbi kc 'cgvx;vc xsc, fcgx, Xfgxs Hvcl c pcscv ejvx, fxb vc ukwk pcscv ugwk l wa zmghvghn`d`r!ß

Zl cn vevx...âPedphj! Hgghph hkv ugsww ;x, sxb Fckx-Phaxl xk rcgfgcnx pcscv, ;xk-;i vwncj mc pxdgcgcncvck pe] mhoj fuahgl hbl!ß

Xfkx Hffhs...âDh Cl xncg-l z/l xkxk! Fxn hb dhmha! Egc ;csgcnxk rcgfxkx vedxnsck ;x, Hgghp pcn kzm \xsgxdx mc hgwwvcgxdx ukghn`k rcgfxkvck jcl xbgcdxf, ukghn` \h; -\h; xbc rcnbn menl xavxn. Sck fegc rcgfgcnx pcscv mc pxdgc xgc mcst ejl c. }i k;x |edycl fcncx rcgfx Fckx-Phaxl xk rcgfgcnxkvckvxnlß

Zl cn vevx...âXfkx Hffhs! Lckvck wbhrgahlß

Xfkx Hffhs...âEdfx duovwn.ß

U hdhyh rhgo`f 'ejl c; xsjcdcn;ck Zl cn oc[hgcj ]c;xf vevx... âXfkx Hffhs! Cdgca, Hgghph hkv ugsww, l ck sckxk phrr`kh nxhdcj evxncl , sckxk ouawkh 'cgck aedgcncx semxncl .ß

Xfkx Hffhs...âEd L z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx! Lckxl sckxk mc shxn l i scgl hkghn`k i bcncxkvc egc fxn phrr`l mhnv`n ;x, pcn ;cs fw phrr` runwdwf shoghsh, ukvhk fcpncgckcn, pcn ;cs bhd ejsc, zb

<sup>1</sup> âLi pcl l cvß swncsx, hdc.9. Cl cggcnxk pcfj (l cpm) ugl hs` âRwn/hkx- : cnxl vc Xsghl crhxvxb ;xjh`f kvh hnhav`n`gl `a, cl cggcn rhna`s`kvh menxgck l i ;htj mc dh [cbh cjhntg` ac; xgv redv evxgl xavxn.

fcpncsxkx cgvck menl xa ughn!ß  
Suknh rhgo`f 'ejvx.<sup>1</sup>

FW X: X NCMHDCJ FHNC SXKVC JCKRXV MC LI GHPXBCGCN

Ocgxtc ZI cn fxxk[x ncmhdcjvc ha;hn ac;xgvc vedxn ;x,  
âRi neda ki fi mmcjgc oxghtcjxk pcn x;xsxkxk Fckx-Phaxl vc fxx  
denc d`y`al hs`k` ukh 'znc xsjcl xnvx ;x, Fckx-Phaxl fw x;x  
l crhl scfcfxgc Ri nedac xtjxohn evc[c; vx.ß

X;xk[x ncmhdcjvc xsc fegc vedxn... âRi neda zbgcnx i ]i k  
se];xgcnc fhaghv`ghn mc vi b'i k se]xf rhgxf ugvwghn.ß Vel cgx,  
Ri neda pxvhdcj mc ncpfcngx; l cscgcsxkvc shxn l i scgl hkghn`k  
vedxg, dhgk`b zbgcnxkxk vi kdcmx l crscv mc l ckhtegcnxkx  
'i vi nvi gcn, l i scgl hkghn vh |edycl fcnvck suknh Ri neda  
rcfxgcsxkvck phks` fxxkxk ph;xl xddcj c ]hjl hghn`k`k tcnrxkc  
mhn! `nv`ghn!

ZI cn Ri nedaxk cl cggcnxkc fcnhcj rhbhkv`nl hr i ]i k  
âRi neda zbi i ]i k se];xgcnc fhaghv`ß - vedc vcgxg 'cjxnvx,  
hl l h fw fhncvc Hgghp`k : xjh`f mc |edycl fcn si kkcsxkvck  
pe] fxx vcgxg 'cjxnl cvx.

Xfkx Hffhs`k ocgxtc ZI cnc vevxdx âc`cn Ri neda zbgcnx i ]i k  
Hgghp-jhhghk`k ukghn i ]i k se]vxdxkx se]scdvxgc, vi b'i k dugh  
'ejl xa ughnv`ghnß szbi kvck x;x l i pi l l cscgc fhah vi ai gi n...

Fxxk[xsx fwvwn ;x, Ri nedaxk se];xsx Hgghp`k se];xsxkvck  
jhl hl xgc fharhv`n, Hgghp`k se]vxdx vevx;vc l crscv xl hl Cgx  
™ -v`n. Fegc ;x, fw fhncvc l zm[wv ughk hdc mc pcvxsgcnx  
jebgx;gc redv evc[cdx; .

X;xk[xsx fwvwn ;x, Ri nedaxk Hgghp`k se]vxdxkvck fharhs`k`  
se]l cdc phrr` duo xv. Xfkx Hffhs vh fw szbgcngc Hgghp-jhhgh-  
k`k âCpbhfß swncsxkxk 36-[-` hdcxkvc fwdwnvwywkh xahnc evxn...

﴿وَمَا كَانَ لِمُؤْمِنٍ وَلَا مُؤْمِنَةٍ إِذَا قَضَى اللَّهُ وَرَسُولُهُ أَمْرًا أَنْ يَكُونَ لَهُمُ الْخِيَرَةُ مِنْ أَمْرِهِمْ وَمَنْ

يَعْصِ اللَّهَ وَرَسُولَهُ فَقَدْ ضَلَّ ضَلَالًا مُبِينًا﴾

âPe] fxx l z/l xk rhv`k mc ;xaxkxk phrr` duovwn ;x, Hgghp mc Ukwk  
|edycl fcnx fxx (aed fhncvc) pz;l ejvx;vc, zbgcnxkvck xojxdhnh shpxf ugswkghn.  
Pcn ;cs Hgghp mc Ukwk Ncswgwkh xjhcjsxbgx; ejsc, ha;hn bcghgcjvcvxn.ß

<sup>1</sup> âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, sxnedx ZI cn fzgl csx, 23-[i px[nx xgxkxk phvxscgcnx, 1-[x  
]h\, L xsxn, 5-[x [xgv, scp.30, 32, Hmnu`h ]h\, 1-[x [xgv, scp.2768-2772. X;xk[x  
ncmhdcj Xfkx Csxkxk âJhnnoxßkvc, 3-[i [xgv, scp.24-25-vc redv ugwkl wavwn.

Pcl ]xkxk Ri nedaxk ki fi mmcjgc oxghtcjxk pcn x; xsxkxk Fckx-Phaxl vc ugl hs`kh x; nhp pxssx xgc dhkhal hs`k` [xvxx ac; xgvc l cbcl l cj evcnc; vedxn... âHgghp-jhhgh fxn rzml i fw x; nhph l hgx; ugvwrghn`kh 'znc fegc mcst evxn...

Ocgxtc Zl cnxk Xfkx Hffhsh menvxdx [hmfhv ukwk xvvhx`k` ncvv ejl c; gc cghrcvhn pe] fxn aed 'zbc vcdl xn. } i k; x Xfkx Hffhs vevx... âRi nedaxk se]; xsx Hgghp`k se]; xsxkxk c; sxkc mc Hgghp`k khbxg ejvxdxkxk oxght`khv`n.ß Ocgxtc xsc ukwk [hmfhv vedxn... âLckc ocfc n ]hjl `av`n ; x, sck vel xsck ; x, Ri neda ukw fxbvck bi gl mc pcscvgc hgl `av`n.ß Fwkw Xfkx Hffhs xk; hn ejl cl xa, c; sxkc ukw xsfhj ejl c; i ]i k vcgxg 'cjxnx' vel xavxn... âFw xaxk (oxgthcjxk) bi gl xgc hg`kl hs`kh 'cgvx; vc xsc, fw, [hpxg mc redvxsx i ]i k hdv`kv`n.ß

Xfkx Hffhs`k fw szbvck l crscvx fwwvn ; x, Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k pz; wl cj mc ncpfcngx; vck ; ckhnghav`n`gl hs` xgc Fckx-Phaxl c ncmh 'zni gck bi gl mc phrs`bg`r egc fxn pcrxrcjvxn ; x, ukwk ; cat mc vcn; ugwk l hs`, jc; [c Xfkx Hffhsh l cosws vedxg, c; sxkc fi ji k xkshkghnh hdv`kv`n – xsjcn pwagw, hy`gg` ugswkghn, xsjcnsc vc vhn 'zni agi mc [hpxg, phl `g`rgh ukw fxgxngcn.

Zbi ki k vevxdx âpcscv i bi kvck fegc ejvxgc nß szbi kc fcnhcj rhbhkv`nl hr i ]i k vevx... âXfgxs Hvcl c pcscv ejvx, fxb vc ukwk pcscv ugwk l wa zmghvghn`d`r.ß

Fcg; c vc Xfkx Hffhs fw szbgc vel c; xsjcdxn ; x, Hgghp-jhhgh âHgx-Xl nhkß swncsxkxk 33-34-[i hdcgcnxkvc fegc fwdwnl wavwn...

﴿إِنَّ اللَّهَ اصْطَفَىٰ آدَمَ وَنُوحًا وَآلَ إِبْرَاهِيمَ وَآلَ عِمْرَانَ عَلَى الْعَالَمِينَ ذُرِّيَّةً بَعْضُهَا مِنْ بَعْضٍ

وَاللَّهُ سَمِيعٌ عَلِيمٌ﴾

âPcrxrcjck Hgghp Hvcl x, Kwpw, Hgx-Xfnhpxl x mc Hgx-Xl nhk` fijik hgcl -gcncvck isjik ejvx. Ukghn egc ohkcvhkgghn vxgcn ; x, fc/bxgcnx fc/bxgcnxkvck 'zjini gl iavin. Hgghp eavck mc fxgckvxn.ß

Dc/kx... Fckx-Phaxl u ohkcvhkv`n ; x, Xfgxs ukghnh pcscv ejl xavxn, ]i k; x Hgghp`k se]vxdx vx. Fw ohkcvhk vh hjh-fhfghn`k`k i sgwfwkw zbgnxkc ki l wkc 'zji nl i agcn.

Fw szpfcjxk sukwkvh ocgxtckxk rcbcfx [uawn, Xfkx Hffhs`k szbgcnxkc vzbc fxgl cdx vedxn... âPedphj! Hgghp hv ugswk, sxb Fckx-Phaxl xk rcgfgcnx pcscv, ; xk-; i vwncj mc pxdgc'cnx; gc vugvwn mc pe] mhoj fuahgl hblß Xfkx Hffhs vh ukwk [hmfhv vedxn... âEd l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx! Fxn hb dhmha. Egc fxn

rzml i k rcgfgcnxkx vedxnsck ; x, Hgghp pcn kzm hgwwcgxdx mc ]xn; xkgxdx ukghnvkh ]`ohn`f, ukghn` \h; -\h; xbc rcnbn menl xavxn, fegc rcgfgcnx pcscv mc pxdgc xgc mcst ejl c. } i k; x | edycl fcnxk rcgfx vc Fckx-Phaxl xk rcgfxkvckvxn!ß

Fxb ocgxtckxk jhl vhai nc; gxgx; gc vevxdx szbgcnvck ; e]xn; . Gh; xk Xfkx Hffhs`k [hmhf ughnhr vevxdx szbgcn xsc âCpbhfß swncsxkxk 33-[i hdcxkx xahncvxn. Unhvh fwdwnwgwn...

﴿إِنَّمَا يُرِيدُ اللَّهُ لِيُذْهِبَ عَنْكُمُ الرِّجْسَ أَهْلَ الْبَيْتِ وَيُطَهِّرَكُمْ تَطْهِيرًا﴾

âHgghp`k xnhvcsx dhgk`b fw ugl wavwn ; x, sxb Cpgx-fedjvck pcn kzm ]xn; xkgxdx wbhrgnav`n`f, sxbx \h; -\h; xbc rcnbn mensxk.ß

Ocgxtc, Xfkx Hffhs`k 'cjxnvxdx vcgxx rhna`s`kvh pe] fxn szb vedc fxgl cvxdx i ]i k âXfkx Hffhs, l ckvck wbhrgnalß – vedc cscfxgcavx.

Xfkx Hffhs vh ukwk cl nxkc 'znc rhgo`f 'ejl c; xsjcvx; vc, ocgxtc dekxvck ukwkg h l i ghdxl vkh`al hyh fhaghv` mc fw l cscgc \s kcx[cgcn menl cvx. Ri nedaxk oxghtcjx Fckx-Phaxl xk ph; xl xddcxkx x; nhp pxssx xgc dhkha` ugvw mc fw mcbxddcj vhmhl ejvx.

Ocgxtc Zl cn xgc Xfkx Hffhs`k hnhs`kvh vx'cn fxn szbgcal c vc Pcl sxk mhgxskxk zgi l i kvck suknh fha menl xavx. Fegc ; x, ocgxtc Zl cn Xfkx Hffhs oxjh`f evcnc; vevx... âXfkx Hffhs! Pcl sxk mhgxskx mcthj ejl xavxn. U, cl cgxshgepgcnvck vx. Lck i l xvmhn vxxl ; x, sck vc ukghnvkh ughshk, gh; xk rcgfxl sckxk fhncvck, sckvck 'znl cvxdx aedgcnc acphvcj menxn mc fw xa l ckx dunl wavwn. Xkvx ve 'znl l , mhgxgx; fhncsxkvc kcbcnxk kcvxn?ß

Xfkx Hffhs vevx... âRcgfxkvck ; e]ckgcx vel cdxk[c, fwkw pe] mhoj rcfwg ejl cncl !ß

Zl cn vevx... âKc i ]i k xsjcdxnsck?ß

Xfkx Hffhs vevx... âPcl xk l cscgckxk pcdhj`l ` jcpgi ; cdc shgh[hr aedgcncvck ugwf-ugl hv`y`k` fxgl c; xsjcdxncl . C'cn fw ; xl x aedgcncvck wblr ugl wahl sh, fhah vi acncl ; x, ukh ghdxr vedxgcl mc fw phgvh mhgxgxdx sckvck rcfwg evcncl . Lck ]uo hb 'znl i acl ; x, sck xsjcvxdx fxn aedx vcnphg denxkc dejxnl cdcscck!ß

Zl cn vevx... âXfkx Hffhs! Lck runownhl ; x, zgvi di l bhl hk sck mhgx ugvywk phgvh âfxbxl jcnctxl xbc 'cgxk!ß



vedcsxkxb, phgfw; x, 'cnc; sxbvck fharhghn`kvhk hdn`g`f sxbc  
jcnc 'cgl csxkgn.ß<sup>1</sup>

Bhpxnck fw szpfcjgc Zl cnxk pcdhj`k`k ho`nghn`kvh fha  
menl xavxn. Zl cnxk pcdhj`k`k suk hkghn`kvh vx`cn fxn phvxsc  
vc fha menl xavxn ; x, Fwohnx ukw sckcvgcx xgc fegc ncmhdcj  
evxn...

Xfkx Hffhs vevx... âLi ph[xngcnvck fxn ke]c kctcnc Rwn/hk  
jctsnx mc rxnhcjx zdncvxnvl . Ukghnvhk fxx vc Cfvi n-  
Ncpl hk xfkx Umt vxv. Fxn 'i k l ck Lxkhv, ukwk ]hv`n`k`k  
dhk`kvh xvxl , u vh Zl cnxk dhk`kvh vxv mc ukwkg h i bfc i b  
ujwnl wavw. (Zl cn zbi ki k ho`n`k[` pc[[xkx denxkc dejxnxvx.)  
Fxnvck-fxnc l ckc jcnc fho`f vevx... â: ha fw 'i k l z/l xkgcnxk  
cl xnxkxk dhk`kh 'cgck ; xaxx 'zncdvxk!ß U 'cgxf vevx... âDh  
Cl xncg-l z/l xkxk! Txghk; cs fegc vedxn... âC'cn Zl cn zgsc, l ck  
txghk; csgc fed/cj evc[cdcl . Hgghph hkv ugswk, Cfw Fc; ngc  
fed/cj hy`gs`bg`r i bi kvck fha menck fxn xa ugl wavw ; x, ; e]xf  
'ejvx.ß Zl cn rcbcfgckxf vevx... âLck fw 'e[c, xkahgghp,  
[hl hhj`k pi bwnwkvh hdhyh rhgo`f, ukghn` oxghtcj xaxx rcsf  
evcnc; cgc ; e]xnl c; xsjcdckgcnvck wbhrgHAV`nh[hyhl !ß

Cfvi n-Ncpl hk vevx... Lck ukh vevxl ; x, dh cl xncg-  
l z/l xkxk! Fegc fxn xa 'znl c, ]i k; x pc[[ l zmsi l i hg]hr  
txjncjgx xkshkghn` fxn denc d`y`n. Ukghn egc ; csgcnvx ; x, c'cn  
fxn szb vkh`al hr i ]i k hdhyh rhgoshghn, sckc phl `vhk ]uo  
dho`kgahghn. Lck runownhl ; x, hdhyh rhgo`f fxn szb  
vedcsck, ahdxc dhdhkghn ukw sckvck eavxf vi b`i k fhah  
vi al csxkgn, ghb`l ughk denvc vel csxkgn! Fegc xsc fxn hb  
'zbgc, Lcvxkcdc ]hj`f unhvh vedcsck. } i k; x unh px[ncj mc  
si kkcj denxvx, unhvh fxgx; gx mc acnhtcjgx vxkgcdx[xgcn mhnv`n.  
Sck unhvh jhl ri vncjgc vkh`ahnshk, egl cpqx sckxk szbgcnxkx  
fhah vi acnc; ghb`l ughk denvc xagcvncgn.ß

Zl cn vevx... âHd`r ug! Hgghph hkv ugswk, c'cn Hgghp  
xsjcdcnsc, Lcvxkcv; x xg; szbi l i fw fhncvc vedc[cdcl !ß

Xfkx Hffhs vedxn... Bxg-rc/vckxk ho`n`kvh Lcvxkcdc vhoxg  
ugvwr. { i l c 'i ki 'i k fhjhk ]hy` si n/cjgc l cs[xvc 'ejvx; .  
Lck Scxv xfkx Bedv xfkx Cl n xfkx Ki tedgx jh`v`l , ukwkg h  
vxb-vxhc ujwnvwr. } uo ; e]l cvck Zl cn xfkx Ocjjhf 'cgvx. Ukw

---

<sup>1</sup> âL wnw[wb-bcpcfß (L cs/wvx), 2-[x [xgv, scp.321-322.

'znvi ; vc, Scxvc vevxl ...âZl cn fw 'e[c egc fñ szb vedc[c; vxñ  
; x, oxghtcjxkxk cmmcgxkvck xkvxdc rcvcñ ukw vel cl xavxn.ß U  
l ckxl szbi l i rcfwg ejl cdx f vevx...âSck ke[c xkhk`nshk ; x,  
xkvxdc rcvcñ vxgxkc 'cjñl cvxdx fñ szbi vedc fxgsxk?ß Zl cn  
l xkfcnc ]`ov`, hbhk]` hbhk` rwnjhn`f sh;xj ugvwrvh, hdhyh  
rhgov`, Hgghph pcl v-sckh evcnc; vevx...âHl l h fc/v. Sxhc fñ  
szbi l mhnv`n ; x, ukw vel c; l ckxl i]i k ghb`l v`n.  
Fvgl xñcl , fcg;c vc zgi l i l vck rhfhr ho`n`k[` szbi l ugh!  
Fvgxk, pcñ ; cs ukw fhah vi ai f vcñ; ejsc, fh[hnv`y` rcvcñ  
fharhghn`kh vh ]hjv`ns`kæ pcñ ; cs szbi l i dhóa` ac; xgvc fhah  
vi al cdc[cdxkvck runownsh, l ckxl fhñcl vc dhghk  
vhk`al hyh x[hbcxs duovwn. Lckc fegc ocfcñ ]hjl `av`n ; x,  
sxbvck fñ kctcn fegc vel xavxn...âHgghph hkv ugswk, c'cn Zl cn  
zgsc, l ck txghk; csgc fed/cj evc[cdcl .ß Hl hkv`n, pe] ; csc  
hgvhkl hd`k, ]i k; x, u fegc vedc fxgcn...âCfw Fc;ngc fed/cj  
jcgcs; ckx; phgvh ugvw mc ; e]xf 'ejvx.ß Fcgx, fegc vxv, gh; xk  
Hgghp ukwk acnxkx i l l cjvck wbhrghav`nv`. Xkvx sxbxk  
hnhk`bvñ 'zbgcnx vx; xgvxdx Cfw Fc; n ; xl x fñ hvhl duovwn!  
Fegc xsc, c'cn fñ ; cs l i scgl hkghn`k l camcncjx ugl hvhk  
fharhs` xgc fed/cj ejsc, pcl fed/cj evck, pcl vc fed/cj  
ugwkhk zbi ki zgi l c menl xavxn!... (Oijfcxk ho`n`kvñ dekvck  
vevx.) Fegc xsc, c'cn fñ ; cs l i scgl hkghn`k l camcncjx ugl hvhk  
fharhs` xgc fed/cj ejsc, fed/cj evck mc fed/cj ugwkhk pcñ x; xsx  
zbi ki zgi l c menl xavxn.ß<sup>1</sup>

Sxbxk kcbcnxkb[c, fed/cj ejl c; xsjcvx; gcnx acos ; xl vxñ?  
Ocgxtckx rcbcfgckvxñck mc kcjx[cvc ukw oijfc szdgcl cdc mc  
oijfcsxkv fcw szbgcnx jc;nhñ ejl cdc l c[fwñ evck âtxghk; csß  
; xl vxñ? Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv Ahtex fw l i cl l hk` h]hñhr vedxn...  
âC'cn Zl cn zgsc, txghk; csgc fed/cj evc[cdcl ß – vedck Cl l hn  
xfkx Dhsñ vxv. U vel xavx ; x, c'cn Zl cn zgsc, Cgx xgc fed/cj  
evc[cdcl .ß Fw szb Zl cnx u rcvcñ rcbcfgckvxñl xavx ; x,  
l cs[xvc 'cgxf oijfc uowl wavw.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, pi vvv ; xjh`f, 4-[i [xgv, scp.119-120. (Fwkvhk cmmcg vc  
epjxdh[ vwdwghk l xrvhn redv ugwk l wavwn.)

<sup>2</sup> âKcp[i g-fcgghycßkxk acnp (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 26-[` oijfc.

# FW OI JFC FHNC SXKVC JCKRXVX LI GHPXBCGCN

ZI cnxk fw oijfcvc vevxdx szbvck hdv`k ugwn ;x, u, zgi l i kvck suknh ncpfcngxdxk Ri nedaxk cgxkvck ]`oh[hy`kvhk mc Ri nedavck ugl hdhk scphfc mc jhfexkgcnxk XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> xgc fed/cj ejl csx xgc kcjx[cgckc[cdxkvck runownvw. Fwkh 'znc vc zbi ki k deks i sgwfw xgc fw epjxl hg` gcy m ejvx mc vevx... âPcn ;cs l i scgl hkghn`k l camcncjx ugl hvhk fxn ;csgc fed/cj ejsc, pcl fed/cj evck, pcl vc fed/cj ugwkhhk zbi ki zgi l c menl xavxn.ß Phgfw;x, ukwk zbi l i scgl hkghn`k l camcncjx ugl hvhk ukghnh ncpfcn ugl wavw mc zb ncpfcngxdxkc rhkwk vukw 'edxkvxn l c; i]i k Cfw Fc;n xk mcsxddcjxkc xsjxkhv evxnvx! Pcn phgvh, fegc fxn jcvfxngc ncpfcngx; xaxkx ri vncjgc cgxkc hg v. Bcnfcjgckck bhl hk vh ]uo r`sh l i vvcj cnbxkvc tcnl hk menvx ;x, Ri nedavck ughk hgj` kctcngx; awnh fxn denc d`y`a`f zb hnhghn`kvhk fxnxkx oxghtcjc se]sxkgcn, fw xaxk xojxdhn`k` vh Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Umth menvx.

Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Umt vh fed/cjvc Hgghp`k : xjh`f`kh, |edycl fcnxk si kkcxsxkc mc aedodkxk sxncsxkc cl cg ejl cdx acnj ejvx mc Usl hk vh fwkw rcfwg ejvx, gh;xk XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> rcfwg ejl cvx. Ukghn cmmcg[cvck fxgxnvxgc n ;x, XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> pe] mhoj Cfw Fc;ngc ZI cnxk jwjvwyw dugwk Hgghp`k : xjh`f` mc |edycl fcnxk si kkcxsx xgc edkx scmxddcvc rudwgl hs`k` rcfwg ejl cdc[c;vx n. : xjh`f`k cmmcgcnxkc l i nh[xcj ejvx;vc, hdv`k ugwn ;x, ocgxtc ZI cn fwkvhk cmmcg Scxv xfkx Hs Cl cmxdc vel xavx ;x, kzmfcjx ncpfcn Scxvxk rupwl - crncfhs`kvhkv`n. Xkvx xsc, ZI cnvck suknh Usl hk xfkx Ctmhk Cl cmx, Scxvxk rupwl w ughk fxn phgvh pz;wl cjc ]hjv`. Cmmcg;x fcpsgcnvck vc ocgxtc jc/dxk ugwkl hs`kvh l zm[wv ughk l cotx sxngcnx vcn; evc fxgc n x; . Fegc ;x, Cfw Fc;n Usl hk` ]hy`n`f ocgmcjvc ukh vel xavx... âDhb... Fw Cfw Fc;n xk l i scgl hkghnh ughk mcsxddcjxvx n. HI l h fc/v...ß Fwkvhk suknh pwavhk 'ejl xa mc [i l gc dhn`l ]`r rhgv`y` phgvh, Usl hk ukw jhl hl ghd`f fegc dhbl `av`... âHI l h fc/v. Lck ZI cn xfkx Ocjjhf` zbi l i k sxbc [hcxaxxl jc/dxk evxncl .ß Hd`g`f pwah 'cgvx;vck suknh Usl hk`k dnbv`rghn`k` jcsvxrgcl xa mc ukwk xsjcdxkc nhb` ugvw ywk w fxgvxn l xavx.

# USL HKVHK SUKNH OCGXTC

Dc/rwfx ncmhdcj evxn ;x, Usl hk axvvcjgc ocsjcgckvxdx bhl hk Pcl nhk xfkx Cfhk` ]hy`nv` ;x, zbi kvck suknh;` ocgxtc pz;l i ki dhbs`k mc pz;l vc ocgxtckxk hv`k`k denxkx fua rudswk. Suknh zb cgx xgc pcl xk fua denc fegc dnbv`...âCfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Umt.ß Vhph suknh l c;jwfwk hyb`k` fhyghd`f l l l i Pcfxfcdc (Cfw Si tdhk`k r`b`) 'zkvcnvx. Pcl nhk dugvh ukw h]`f uowvw mc Cfvi n-Ncpl hk`k dhk`kh 'cgxf ukw l cscgcvcck ocfcnvhn ejvx. Cfvi n-Ncpl hk fcn; rcbcfgckxf vevx...âLck ukw ha;hnh ph;xl xddcjc ]hjv`nv`l , u xsc l ckx 'xbgxk ac; xgvc?ß Fw ocfcn Lcvxkcvc dhd`gv` mc Fckx-l l cddckx rcbcfgckvxnvx. Usl hk Pcl nhk` ]hy`n`f ukh di b ahgghr bcnfcsx mwnvw mc suknh Fcsncdc si`n`i k ejvx. Fw vh ukwkgf Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Umtwk hnhs`kvh vi al ck]xgxdc scfcf ugvw.

Fwkvhk suknh Cfvi n-Ncpl hk zb ugwkw Usl hk`k dhk`kh 'zkvcnvx ;x, ukh fegc vesxk...âHgghph hkv ugsww, l ck scckxgc fed/cj ejvxl , phgfw;x l hgx; ugvwywl i ] oxsgcjc 'znc scckvck i sji kcl .ß<sup>1</sup>

Fw ncmhdcjvck hdv`k ugnv ;x, ukghn zb 'xbgx d`y`k[hrghn`kvh nhb`gha`f rcninh hgl `av`ghn ;x, Usl hkvhk suknh Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Umt ph;xl xddcjc ]hjs`k. Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xsc Usl hkvhk rhfhr 31-32-[x xggcnvc, ukwkgf fhn`al hb vi al ck ugvwyw fxn phgvh vi kdhvhk 'ejvx.<sup>2</sup>

Pcl ]xkxk, Fckx-l l cddc (Ri nedavck ughk ph;xl si ghgc) xgc shxn Ri neda rcfxgcgnx hnhs`kvh vi al ck]xgx; fhaghkv`, l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxac zb si ghgcsxkxk mc fharh l i ohgxtgcnxk ncpfcngxdxkc 'znc rxdhl ejvx, kcpkdcj Usl hk`k [ckhbcx zb emxkvc l i ph[xn mc ckshn`k pi bwnwkvh denvc rhgv`.<sup>3</sup>

Fw bhl hk l i scgl hkghn pcn kzm fed/cjvck i b ]emxncnc; zb xojxdhngghn`k` cggcnxkc hgv`ghn, |edycl fcn i -xk scphfc-gcnx rhfhrvh 'ejvxdx phgvh, xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h jcnct 'evcnc; ukwkgf fed/cj ejvxgcn. xl hl <sup>TM</sup> pz;wl cj xagcnxkc fhaghdhk-vh Ri nedaxk cmmcg; x ocgxtcgcnxk vzmni kvc l hgx; ugvwrgghn`

<sup>1</sup> âJhnnox Dc/rwfxß, 2-[x ]xgv, scp.169.

<sup>2</sup> Fho... âCg-cmhxgß (Cfx Pxghg Cs'cnx), Fednwj ]h`, 1407-[x xg, scp.129æ âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpv (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), Lcpcl l cv Cfi g-tcbg Xfnhpxl xk jcprrx xgc, 1-[x ]xgv, scp.169.

<sup>3</sup> âHdxackxk nugwß, âUsl hkgh dhkha`ß fzgl csx.

fi ji k xl jxdhbgñ` gcy m ejvx, Ri nedaxk ahocgcñx xgc shñ l i scg-  
l hkghñ hñhs`kvñ fñhfcñgx; dññhjv`, fedji g-l hg`k mc x[jxl hñ  
l crhl gñ`k fñzi avi ni gl csxkvc cñcfgc redñx-cñcfx edkx  
scmddcvc rudvw. Fwkh `zñc vc ukwk pz;wl cjxkvck [cl xsx  
vzñv hd ;e]ckvck suknñ Ri neda zb phmhvñhññ`k` fññ denc  
ju`ghd`f {cl cg l i phñxfcsxkx jzñcjvxgñ. Egc fññ l i phñxfc ;x,  
Usl hk`k xkjxrhñ `k` hgl hr xvvxhs` evck Lcnmhk ukwk  
rcjgkxc acñhj dññhvñk Jcgpc mc Bi fedngc edkx [cñ`cvc vxñ,  
ukwk ncpfcñgxdkx xsc Usl hk`k rcjgkxc tcñl hk menck  
l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxac zpvcsxkc hgñ. Vhph suknñ, u  
pcbñcjxk cgedpxkx Sxttedk l i phñxfcsxkx jca; xg ejvxgñ.

U pcbñcjxk cgedpxkx h`ññ`ghk fw x;x l i phñxfc Usl hk`k  
xkjxrhñ `k` hgl hr fcphkcsx xgc fhaghkv` mc Ri neda zbi ki k  
fw xax xgc Lcvxkckxk ohñx[xkvc dhahdhk l i scgl hkghñ`k  
tx; xñgcñxkx rhñ`av`ñv`. Sxttedk l i phñxfcsxkvck mc pc;cl edkxk  
(Cl n Hs mc Cfw Lwsh Ca/cñx) rcfwg evxgl csxkvck suknñ  
Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> Kcpñcmhk ohñx[xgcñx xgc vzdi ac `ejvx.

Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> Ri nedaxk ncmh `zñvi di bi gl mc phrs`b-  
g`rgññvhk vctgcñgc szb h]l `a, zb rhñvha` Crxgc fegc dhbl `av`...  
فَدْعُ عَنْكَ قُرَيْشًا وَتَرَكَا ضَهُمَ فِي الضَّلَالِ وَتَجَوَّاهُمْ فِي الشَّقَاقِ وَجَاهُهمُ فِي التَّيِّهِ فَإِنَّهمُ قَدْ  
أَجْمَعُوا عَلَى حَرْبِي كَاجْمَاعِهِمْ عَلَى حَرْبِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ (ص) قَبْلِي فَجَزَتْ قُرَيْشًا عَنِّي الْجَوَازِي  
فَقَدْ قَطَعُوا رَحْمِي الْكِتَابِ

åRinedax fuagh, [ik;x ukghñ zb hby`k]`g`rghñ`kh xsnñ evññ, vial ck]xgdx  
r`b`av`ññ, x`c-sh`h dhñl hdhk pedmhkghñ ;xl x xkhv;hñgr `zsjcñxñgñ! Ukghñ l c-  
kxl gc l i phñxfc ejl c; i]ik cgfññ ugl waghñ, ke[c ;x, l ckvck rhfñr Ncswgwgghpgh  
l i phñxfcdc cgfññ ugl wavwghñ. Fegc xsc, Rinedaxk xaxkxk [cbhs` [cbh menckgcñxk  
zpvcsxkc ugswk, [ik;x ukghñ l ckl gc ughk rupwl gwr cghrcgcñxkx ;csvgñcñ.ß

Pcl ]xkxk u pcbñcjgc ukghñvhk ughk fññ kctcñxk hñhs`kvñ  
fegc fññ szbgcal c ugl wavw...

وَقَدْ قَالَ قَائِلٌ: إِنَّكَ عَلَى هَذَا أَمْرٍ لَحْرِصْ. فَقُلْتُ: بَلْ أَنْتُمْ وَاللَّهِ لَأَحْرَصُ وَأَبْعَدُ وَأَنَا أَخْصُ  
وَأَقْرَبُ وَيَنْهَ وَتَضْرِبُونَ وَجْهِي دُونَهُ فَلَمَّا قَرَعْتُهُ بِالْحُجَّةِ فِي الْمَلَا الْحَاضِرِينَ هَبْ كَأَنَّهُ [بَهت] لَا  
يَذَرِي مَا يُجِيبُنِي بِهِ اللَّهُمَّ إِنِّي أَسْتَعِينُكَ عَلَى قُرَيْشٍ وَمَنْ أَعَانَهُمْ فَإِنَّهمُ قَطَعُوا رَحْمِي وَصَغَّرُوا  
عَظِيمَ مَنْزِلَتِي وَاجْمَعُوا عَلَى مُنَازَعَتِي أَمْرًا هُوَ لِي ثُمَّ قَالُوا: أَلَا إِنَّ [فِي] الْحَقِّ أَنْ تَأْخُذَهُ وَفِي الْحَقِّ  
أَنْ تَتْرُكَهُ

âVhk'ahk fxn kctcn vevx... âSck pz;wl cjc ]hjl hr i]ik kc rcvcn pcnxsck!ß  
 Vevxl ...âOedn, Hgghph hkv ugswk, sxb vph pcnxs mc wbhrs'k'b, l ck xsc vph ]uo  
 se]xgl xa mc dho'khl ! L ck dhgk'b zb phrr'l` jcgcf evxnc l, sxb l ckxl gc ukwk  
 (phrr'l`k) hnhs'kvh thsxc shgl's'k'b mc l ckxl gc liphnxfc evxnsxkb!ß  
 Xajxnh;]`ghn'k pi bwnkvh fw vcgwg-sifwjgh ukh pcl gc ejvxdxl bhl hk egc  
 rcbcfgckvx ;x, kc [hmhf menc[cdxkx vc figl cvx! |cnmcnvx'hnh! L ck Rineda mc  
 ukwk ;zl c;]xgcx l irhfxgkvc Sckvck ;zl c; xsjcdxnc l ! }ik;x ukghn l ckxl gc  
 ughk rupwl gwr cghrcgcnxkx ;csl xa, l ckxl l crhl mc l ckbxgcjxl x ;x]x; shdl`a,  
 zb phrr'l` ughk aedvc l ckxl gc liphnxfcdc cfxn ugl wa mc suknh fegc vel xagcn...  
 âPhrr uvwn ;x, sck pz;wl cjc cgc hghshk mc phrr fwvwn ;x, ukw fuaghdhshk!ß¹

Fharh fxn oi jfcvc xsc fegc fwdwnwn...

اللَّهُمَّ إِنِّي أَسْتَعِيدُكَ عَلَى قُرَيْشٍ وَمَنْ أَعَانَهُمْ فَأَيْتُهُمْ قَطَعُوا رَحِمِي وَكَفَّوْا أُنَائِي وَاجْمَعُوا عَلَيَّ  
 مُنَازَعَتِي حَقًّا كُنْتُ أَوَّلَى بِهِ مِنْ غَيْرِي وَقَالُوا أَلَا إِنَّ فِي الْحَقِّ أَنْ تَأْخُذَهُ وَفِي الْحَقِّ أَنْ تَمْنَعَهُ  
 فَاصْبِرْ مَغْمُومًا أَوْ مَتَّاسِفًا فَتَنْظَرْتُ فَإِذَا لَيْسَ لِي رَافِدٌ وَلَا ذَابٌّ وَلَا مُسَاعِدٌ إِلَّا أَهْلُ بَيْتِي  
 فَضَنَنْتُ بِهِمْ عَنِ الْمُنْيَةِ فَأَغْضَيْتُ عَلَى الْقَذَى وَجَرَعْتُ رِيقِي عَلَى الشَّجَى وَصَبَرْتُ مِنْ كَظَمِ  
 الْغَيْظِ عَلَى أَمْرِ مِنَ الْعَلَمِ وَالْمِ لِلْقَلْبِ مِنْ حَزِّ الشَّقَارِ

â|cnmcnvx'hnh! L ck Rinedaxk l irhfxgkvc Sckvck ;zl c; xsjcdxnc l ! }ik;x  
 ukghn l ckxl gc ughk rupwl gwr cghrcgcnxkx ;csvgcn, phrr'l` bhd ejvxcn,  
 fharhghn'kvh hnj'r phrg ugvywl aedgcnc l ckxl gc liphnxfcdc cfxn ugvgghn  
 mc vevxcn ;x, phrr uvwn ;x, pz;wl cjc hghshk mc phrr fwvwn ;x, ukw fuaghdhshk,  
 suknh xsc ]uo rcl -rissc xgc, dhowv jccsivck zgcck! Cpgx-fedjxl vck fharh  
 phmhvhn'l, l i vhtx]xl mc ;zl c;]xl ugl hv'y` mc ukghn'k zgi l c menxgl csxkx  
 l csgcpcj 'zn l cvxdxl bhl hk ]hncsxb ughnhr 'zbi l vc jx;hk, fuyhb'l vh sil i ;,  
 pckbcgvck (h[ l edmcvck) vc h[ ughk rcbcf mc rhkgg vugw rcgfgc scfxn ejvxl .ß²

Kcphdcj Xl hl Cgx™ ocmhnx[vck ughk fxn kctcnxk cgx xgc  
 : wtc l epnhf'kvh acphvcjc ]hjv` mc acphvcjxkvck suknh, 40-[`  
 px[nx xgkvc L i hmxdc pz;wl cjc cgc ;e]xnx ukw hl wg-[cl hcj  
 (pcl nc/dgx; xgx) hvghkv`nv` ;x, pcrxrcjvc fw, Ri nedagc  
 pcl nc/dgx; xgx vxv. L i hmxdcxk pz;wl cjc vc xdxnl x xg vhmhl  
 ejvx mc kcphdcj 60-[` xgvc ukwk zgi l i xgc sukh ]hjv`.

Fwnh rcvcn redv evxgckgc Ri nedaxk Xl hl Cgx™ -`k pz-  
 ;wl cjxkc rhna` x;nhp pxssx xgc dhkhal hs`k`k scfcfgcnx vxv. Fw

¹ âKcp[i g-fcgchycßkxk acnpx (L cpcl l cv Cfvi p), 167-[x oi jfc, Si fpx Shgepxk âKcp[i g-fcgchycßsx, 172-[x oi jfc.

² Dekc unvhv, 212-[x oi jfc, Si fpx Shgep, 217-[x oi jfc.

xaxk vx'cn kcjx[gcgnxkvck fñx vc |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -  
 xk fwdwnvwyw pcvxsgcnxk dhd'gl hs'k'k rhna's'k'k hg'kl hs' xv  
 ; x, suknh;` fzgl cvc redv ugwk[h]r.

|EDYCLFCNX C: NCL i -XK SZBGCNXXKXK MC  
 PCVXSGCNXXKXK DHD-GLHS-K-K RHNA-S-K-K HG-KLHS-

Cfvi gghp xfkx Cl n Hs fegc ncmhdcj evxn... Lck  
 |edycl fcnvck eajvx;gcxl xk phl`s'k` dnb'nv'l , kcpkdcj,  
 Ri neda (fha]ghn`) l ckk jwjwf vevx...â|edycl fcnvck eajvxdxk  
 pcn fñ aedx dnb'nshk, phgf; x u, shvc[c fñ fcacnvxn, rcbcf-  
 gckckvc vc, nhb` ughkvh vh vkh`a'n!ß Fwkh 'znc vc dhbl hy`  
 shoghv`l mc l cscgckx |edycl fcngc l i bh; xnc ejvxl . U pcbncj  
 zb fhnl hy` xgc hyb`kh xahnc evxf fwdwnvw...âDhb! {hk'l cglkvck ughk  
 Hgghp hkv ugswk ; x, fw hy'bvkh phrvkh fharh fñ aed ]zgc ]'ol hb.ß<sup>1</sup>

Ri neda |edycl fcnxk szbgcnxkxk dhd'gl hs'kh l hke  
 ugl hs'k'k scfcfxkvc fegc xvvh ejl xavxn ; x, u pcbncj pcl  
 rcbcfgx, pcl vc nhb` ugvywyw phgvh vkh`ah fxgcn. Fñxk[x phgvh  
 |edycl fcnxk Ri nedaxk \xs mc dhnhl hb cl cggcnx fhncsxkvc  
 fwdwnvwyw szbgcn zb denxkvc rhg'n. } i k; x fxgvxdxl xb ; xl x, u  
 pcbncj Ri neda xkhv; hngn'k` l cbcl l cj evck hdcgcnxk jctsnx  
 fhncsxkvc ]uogw szbgcn vel xavxn. X; xk[x phgvh xsc,  
 |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk ha; hn ac; xgvc fwdwnvwyw szbgcn u ; csxk  
 phrr ugvywykw jc/; xv evxn ; x, ukghn (Ri neda xkhv; hngn')  
 ukwk fhncsxkvc fegc szbgcnxk dhd'gl hs'kh nhb` vedxgvxngcn!  
 Lcpb fwkh 'znc vc |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk suk mcsxddcjxkxk dh-  
 b'gl hs'kh l hke]xgx; jzncjvxgcn. |edycl fcn âLckc ; hy'b-rcgcl  
 'cjxnxk, sxbxk i]ik fñ mcsxddcj dnb'l ; x, lckvck suknh pe] mhoj dugkwbbw  
 hbl hdhshk'b.ß - vedc fwdwnvwyw bhl hk Zl cn vel xavx...  
 â|edycl fcnxk ocsjcgdx axvvcjgckl xavxn! Hgghp`k : xjh f` sxbxk  
 dhk`k`bv hv`n mc fw fxbc ; xthdcjvxnl!ß

Vevxgcn... âUkh kc ugl wavwn? Shdhrghd`nl`?!ß<sup>2</sup> |edycl fcnxk

<sup>1</sup> âSi kckx Vhnl xß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.125â âSi kckx Cfx Vhmwvß, 2-[x [xgv,  
 scp.26, ; xjhfcj i g-egl fhf`â âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.162, 192, 197, 215â  
 âL i sjcvnc; ß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.105-106â â{ hl xw fcdhcxg-egl ß (Xfkx Cfvi g-Fñn), 1-  
 [x [xgv, scp.85.

<sup>2</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, egl ; xjh f`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.22-23, [xphv ; xjh f`, 2-[x [xgv,  
 scp.120â âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, mcsxddcj ; xjh f`â Fw pcvxsk vx'cn l ckfcgcnxkx  
 âCfvi gghp xfkx Scfhß ; xjh f` kvh (1-[x [xgv, scp.98 mc 102) redv ejl xax; .

pcl mcsxddcjxkxk dhd`gl hs`kh, pcl vc suknghn szbgcnxkxk dhd`gl hs`kh l cpb fwkh 'znc l hke]xgx; jzncjvxgc ;x, ukghn Ri neda jcnctxkvck mxghdcjx rcfwg evxgl cdck ;csgcn fhncsxkvc u pcbncjxk ha; hn ac; xgvc fwdwnvwyw szbgcnvck runownvwghn. } i k; x ukghn ki fi mmcjgc oxghtcjxk u pcbncjxk si ghgcsxkvc fxn denvc [cl ugl hs`k` xsjcl xnvxgc! Fwkh 'znc vc ocgxtc Zl cn zb oxghtcjx vzmni kvc |edycl fcn pcvxsgcnxkxk dhd`gl hs`kh l hke ugvw, scphfcgcnxk i sji kvc pcvxs dhbv`rghn` ;hy`bghn` hg`f dhkv`nv`. Fw rhvhyghn (xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -k oxghtcj vzmni xsjxskh ugl hrgh) cl cmx ocgxtcsx Zl cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxbxk vzmni kc rcvcn ri mmcvc rhgv`.<sup>1</sup> Fw vzhv ocgxtcvck suknh vh hahy`vh redv ugwkxhk hnv`[`gg`rgh ugl wavwn...

#### *L I HMXDCKXK VZMNI KVC RI NEDAXK SXDHSCJX*

Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv âKcp[i g-fcghycßdc dhbv`y` acnpkxvc {hpxbvck fegc ncmhdcj evxn... âLi hmxdc Xnhr, Ahl mc shxn zg; cgcxk cphgxskc 'zsjcnxa menl xavx ;x, Cgxkx gc/kcjgcsxkgcn, ukvhk febhng`r ejxskgc. Fw l cscgc xsghl x l xkfcngcnvc szdgckxgck oi jfckxk fxn pxsscsx vx mc Fckx-l l cddc vzmni kvc si kkcde Jemnxgvx. Kcphdcj, Zl cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxb oxghtcj jhjhkvh fw xax d`y`av`nv`.ß

{hpxb vedxn... Li hmxdc [i l c khl hb` oi jfcsxkxk sukwkvh vedxnvx... â|cnmcnvx'hnh! Cfw Jwnhf Sckxk vxkxkxk pznl cjxkx \ubl wa, [hl hhj` Sckxk dugwkvkh shoghl `av`n. Fegc xsc, ukh gc/kcj ej, ukw Zbi ki k axvvcjgx cbhf`kh vi ]hn ej]ß U, fw rhny`a` dhb`f mhgxgcnc 'zkcvcn xavx. Fw ;cgl cgc Zl cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxbxk vzmni kc rcvcn l xkfcngcnvc jc; nhnghk`nv`.<sup>2</sup>

Jcfcnx ncmhdcj evcnc; vedxn... Li hmxdc 41-[x px[nx xgxkvc Li yednc xfkx Az/fckx :wtcdc mhgx jc/dxk ejvx. Ukwk pz;l i ki dhbv`y` bhl hk ]hy`n`f vevx... âSckxk i ]i k ]uogw

<sup>1</sup> Ukghn`k 'znvi di shxn xagcn fw ;xjhfk` âocgxtcgcnxk vzmni kvc pcvxs dhd`gl hs`k`k rhna`s`k`k hg`kl hs`ß tcsgxkvc redv ejl xax; .

<sup>2</sup> âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpk (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 57-[x oi jfc, 1-[x ]h\, 1-[x ]xgv, scp.356, L xsxn ]h`, 1378æ L cpcl l cv Cfi g-tcbg Xfnhpxl xk jcprxr, 4-[i ]xgv, scp.56.

Cfw Usl hk {hpxb Fcsnc hgl gcnxkvck fxnx, gi ycj mc kcpmvc l capwn fxn l i jccssxs vx ;x, 255-[x xgvc mcthj ejl xavxn. U, kcsf mc khsxfxgdc l edg ejl xavxn. Ukwk dhbv`y` âUsl hkxddcß ;xjhfk` Cfw {c/tcn Cs; htx (240-[` xgvc mcthj evxf) mc Aedo L i txv (413-[i xgvc mcthj evxf) ncvv ejl xagcn.



jzmsxdcgcnxl mhnv`n ;x, sckxk vcnnh;c mc hd`rg`y`kh e/jxl hv  
 ejvxdxl i ]i k ukghnvhk ;e]xncl . Gh;xk fxn jzmsxdckx pz;l ck  
 vel cgdcl ... u vh fwvwn ;x, Cgxkx l cbcl l cj ejl cdx, ukw  
 szdl cdx mc ukh khghdxr szbgcn vel cdx pe] mhoj jcn; ejl c.  
 Pcl ]xkxk, Usl hkh xsjxythn ejl cdx mc ukwk fhncsxkvc  
 Hgghpvhk ncpl cj vxgcl cdx vc wkwjl h. Cgxkxk scphfcgcnxkxk  
 edfxkx hojhn, ukghn` zbi kvck wbrghav`n. Usl hk`k  
 scphfcgcnxkc xsc l hg-vzmgcj pcvddc evxf ukghn` zbi kc  
 dho`kghav`n!ß Li yednc ukh vel xavx...âLck xl jhphkghn menl xa,  
 s`khrghnvhk ]`ol `ahl . Sckvck cmmcg fharhghn` i ]i k vc  
 xagcl xacl mc ukghn l ckx l cbcl l cj ejl cl xagcn. Sck vc  
 jebgx;gc l ckx xl jhphkvhk ]`ohnvhn, jcac;;i n, dhowv  
 l cbcl l cj evcnsck.ß Li hmxdc vevx...âCgfcjjc! Xkahhghp ;x, sckc  
 jcac;;i n evcncl .ß<sup>1</sup>

Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv Lcvhxkxvck fegc ncmhdcj evxn... Li hmxdc  
 âhl wg-[cl hcjßvck suknh zb mhgxgcnxkc fegc fxn e/ghk dhb`f  
 'zkvcnvx... âLck Cfw Jwnhf`k zbi mc ukwk Cpgx-fedjxkxk  
 tcbxgcjxkvck fxn aed kcrq evckgcnvck zb hl hk mc pxi hdcl x  
 'zjinvi l ...ß : wtc cphgxss fw vzmnvc axvvcjgx fcghghnh vi ]hn  
 ugl wavwghn.<sup>2</sup>

Lcvhxkx vedxn... Li hmxdc zbi ki k fi ji k xa]xgcnxkc fegc  
 dhbv`...âCgxkxk mc ukwk Cpgx-fedjxkxk axcgcnxkvck ughk pe] fxn  
 acosxk acphvcjxkx rcfwg ejl cdxklß Pcl ]xkxk dhbl `av`...  
 âUsl hk`k axcgcnxkc, ukw semckgcnc, ukwk hnv`[`gghn`kh mc  
 ukwk tcbxgcjgcnxkx ncmhdcj evckgcnc ]uo vxrrcj dejxnxk, ukghn`k  
 l c]gxsgcnxkc `evxk, ukghn` zbi ki bc dho`kghv`f pzn l cj  
 'zsjcnxk. Ukghn`k ncmhdcj ejvxdx pcn aedx ncmhdcj evckxk  
 zbi ki k, hjhs`k`k mc rupwl -crncfhs`k`k hv` xgc fxngx;vc dhb`f  
 l ckck 'zkvcnxk.ß<sup>3</sup>

Li hmxdcckxk fw tcnl hk` denxkc dejxngxvx mc kcjx[cvc  
 Usl hk`k tcbxgcjgcnx ha`f-vhal hyh fhaghv`. Li hmxdc fw nhmxgcn

<sup>1</sup> âJhnnox Jcfcnß, 51-[x xgxk phvxscgcnx, Hmnu`h ]h`, 2-[x ]xgv, scp.112-113,  
 1-[x ]h`, 6-[` ]xgv, scp.108, Rhpncckxk âVhnwg-l chnxtß ]h`, 5-[x ]xgv, scp.253-  
 154æâJhnnox xfkx Csxß, 3-[i ]xgv, scp.202.

<sup>2</sup> âKcp[i g-fcgchycßkxk acnpv (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 208-[x oi jfc, L xsnx ]h`, 3-  
 [i ]xgv, scp.15-16.

<sup>3</sup> Li hmxdcckxk fw l c;jwfwkw Cpl cv Cl xk L xsnx vc âTc[ni g-Xsghl ß  
 ;xjh`kvh redv ejl xavxn.

i ]i k ]uogw pcvxddcgcn, rxdl c]gx cfghgn mc fcoaxagcn 'zkvcnvx, ukghnh ]uogw l hg-vzmgcj menvx, cncf mc rednx-cncfx fwkghnvhk thdvhghkv`nv`. Ukwk jwjvwyw fw isgwfi fijk acpcngcnc dhd`gv`, vi kdh l hg`rhhbkl hr i ]i k fxn l i shfxrcdc ]emnxgvx. Xa u denc ]hjv` ; x, [cl xddcjvck rumwghk fxn acos L i hmxdcckxk xa]xgcnxkxk dhk`kh 'cgxn, Usl hk`k tcbxgcjx fhncsxkvc fxn ncmhdcj kcrgevxnvx. L c/l wnghn vcnphg ukwk hv`k` dhb`f, ukw zbgcnxkc dho`kghv`n mc ukwk fhncsxkvc acthcj evxnvxgc. Fw xa wbwk l i vvcj vhmhl ejvx. Kcphdcj, L i hmxdc zb xa]xgcnxkc dhbv`... âUsl hk`k tcbxgcjx fhncsxkvc kcrgevgwkhk pcvxsgcn pcvvxkvck hnj`r ]uohgl `a, fijk zg;cgnc, acpcngcnc, khpxdcgcnc dhd`gl `av`n. L ckl l c;jwfwl w hghk ;xl x [hl hhj` scphfcgcnxk mc cmmcg;x ocgxtcgcnxk tcbxgcjx fhncvc ncmhdcj szdgl cdc ]hy`n`k. L i scgl hkgghnvhk pcn fxnxkxk Cfw Jwnhf`k l cbcl l cjxkc vxhn kcrgejvxdx ncmhdcjxk c;sxx scphfcgcnc fhncsxkvc vibcgvxf l ckc 'zkvcnxk. }ik;x fw xa l ckc vphh vh semxkvxncn, 'zbgcnxl ukwkg h x`rghkh, Cfw Jwnhf mc ukwk axcgcnxkxk vcgvggcnxkx bcncnsxbgcavxnl c;vc, Usl hk`k tcbxgcjgcnxkxk dhd`gl hs`kvh vphh jc/sxngx ughn.ß

L i hmxdcckxk l c;jwfw [hl hhj i ]i k uowkvwrvh scphfcgcnxk tcbxgcjx fhncsxkvc rwnhav`n`ghk shojh pcvxsgcn si n/cjgc hnj l hyh fhaghv`. Xa u denc ]hjv` ; x, fw pcvxsgcn xsghl x l xkfcngcnc sxnhdcj ejvx, l c;jcfohkhghn`k cshs vcnsgcnxkc ]emnxgvx, wahrgn`k, [hmhkgghn`k bepka mc kcbngcnx ukwkg h vugvw, ncmhdcj l cscgcgcnxkc Rwn/hk ;xl x [xvvx ac;xgvc fha ruavwghn, pcjjh zb r`bghn`k, rhv`kghn`k mc oxvl c]xgcnxkx fegc, fwkvhk l cpnwl ejl cvxgc. Sukn fw cshsvh fzdi di f fudh-fhah ]hjv`ghn, Hgghp`k xsjcvxdx mhojh rcvcn vc fw cshsvh vhmhl evc[c;vx. Fwkh 'znc vc shds`b-peshfs`b shojh pcvxsgcn vibcgvgvx, densxb jzpl c]gc mwnwgvw mc tcrxpgcnx, rhbxgcnx mc mhgxgcnx zb hnv`k[h ]c;l cdc fhaghv`.<sup>1</sup>

Kxtjcmcdp hv` xgc l capwn ughk Xfkx l ntcj fzdi ; xsghl x acosxddcjgcnvck mc l i pcvvxsgcnvck fxnvxn. Ukwk dhb`y` âJhnxoß ; xjh`kvh kcrgejvxdx fxn ncmhdcjxk dwohn`vh;` l zmbw xgc wdywkgwyw mhnv`n. U vedxn...âScphfcgcnxk tcbxgcjx fhncsxkvc

<sup>1</sup> âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpk (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 3-[i [xgv, scp.15-16â L cvhxkx Cfwg-Pcsck Cgx xfkx L cpcl l cv xfkx Cfvi gghp (315-[x xgvc mcthj evxfvx)ââTepnesjwk-Kcvxl ß, scp.115.

ck ]uo Fckx-l l cddckxk vzmni kvc mc ukghnh dho`kghal hr l crscvxcg ncmhdcj ddb`g`nv`. Ukghn fegc 'i l hk evxnvxgc ; x, fw ncmhdcjgcngc Fckx-Phaxl x ohn evxf rcbcfgckvxc[c; gcn.β<sup>1</sup>

Pcl ]xkxk Xfck Cfxg-Pcvxv, Cfw {c/tcn Cs;htxvck fegc ncmhdcj evxn... âL i hmxdc scphfcgcnvck fxn rnw\wkx, egc[c vc jhfexkvck fc/bxgcxkx mfvhn evxnvx ; x, Cgx fhncsxkvc, ukwk ]xn;xk mc rcfhpcjgx xagcn 'znl csxkc vcghgcj evck ncmhdcjgc vi bcgjsxkgn ; x, ukh jc/kc mwnwgl hs`kh, febhng`r e/ghk evxgl csxkc 'cjxnx f ]`ohnjs`k. Fw xa i ]i k pcvvxkvck hnj`r fzd i ; l i ; hthjghn jc/dxk ejl xavx.β<sup>2</sup>

U vedxn... âFw pcvctgc vi bcgvxgc shojh pcvxsgcnvck fxnx vc, Fwohnx mc L i sgi l i k Cl n xfkx Hsh ]hjhk fxn sckcvgc kerg ejvx; gcnvxn. U (Cl n xfkx Hs) vedxn... |edycl fcnxk hnhvh pe] fxn \cnvc ugl hvhk ha; hn ac; xgvc fegc vevxdxk eajvxl ... âHgx-Cfx Jhgx f (Cfw Jhgx f zmghvghn`) l ckxl vusjghn`l vedxgvxngcnæ l ckxl vusjwl mc mcgxl dhgk`b Hgghp mc shgcp l z/l xkgcnvxn.β<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Dekc unhvha pcl ]xkxk âTc[ni g-Xsgl β, scp.215. Kxtjcmcdp Xfnhpxl xfkx L cpcl l cv xfkx l ntc Cbwvx. Ocjxf Fhyvhv âJhnxx Fhyvhvβ ; xjh f`kvh ddb`n... âU, vuynw]wvwn mc ]uogw ; xjh fghn` mhnv`n.β L cs/wvx âL wnw[wb-bcpcfβ ; xjh f`k`k cmmcgcnxkvc (1-[x [xgv, scp.23) vedxn... âKxtjcmcdp hv` xgc l capwn ughk Cfw Cfvxgghp`k âJhnxxβ ; xjh f`kvh ]uogw thdvghn mhnv`n. Jcskxthjvh mc ; xjh f` dhbl hrvh zb vzmni ki k ck fzd i ; acosddcjx vxv.β Ukwk ; xjh fghn`k`k hv`k` âPcvxddcjwg-hnxtkβ ; xjh f`k`k 5-[x scpxtcsxkvc redv ejl xagcn. Vedxgl xavxn ; x, u, 323-[i xgvc mchj ejl xavxn.

<sup>2</sup> âKcp[i g-fcgchycβkxk acnpx, 1-[x [xgv, scp.358. Cs;htx âXs;ht l cpcggcsxkc l ckswf ughkβ vel c; vxn ; x, Kcpncmhk`k cjhnt khpxdcgcnxkvc dengcaxn. U, Fhyvhvgh Mhsxj acpcngcnx hnhs`kvh dengcaxn. Cs;htx l z/jcbxgc l i j;c;cgxgl gcnxkvck vxv. Xfkx Pc[cn ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg`kvh vedxn... âL cpcl l cv xfkx Cfvigghp Cs;htx Fhyvhv cpgxkxk l z/jcbxgc txnrscsxkxk l i j;c;cgxgl gcnxkvck mc ncpfcngcnxkvck vxv. Csgx Scl cnrckvgxvxn.β Xfkx Kcvxl vedxn... âU, egl , bc;h, sxdhkcj (kctsxk \h;g`y), pxl l cj mc \h;xbcgx;vc xkshk` jcc[[i fc 'cjxnxvx. Wbwk zl i n sinl i a, L z/jcsxl Hffhsx ukw cbcl cjgc dhv ejl xavxn. U, : cnhfxsx mc fharhghn` xgc l i khbxc ejl xa mc egl x l i fhpxscgcn h\hnl `a, 240-[` xgvc mchj ejl xavxn. (âGxshkwg-l xbhkβ, 5-[x [xgv, scp.221.)

<sup>3</sup> Fwohnx fw pcvxsx zb âScpxpβxkvc, cvcf ; xjh f`kvh (4-[i [xgv, scp.34) x; x mhsxjc xgc Cl n xfkx Hsvhk ncmhdcj ejl xavxn ; x, ukwk suk vzmngcnvc ddb`gl `a ki socsxkvc âHgx-Cfx Jhgx fβ denxkc âHgx-Cfx txghkβ redv ugwk l wavwn. L i sgi l vc pcl xk pcvxsx zb âScpxpβxkxk xl hk ; xjh f`kvh (1-[x [xgv, scp.136), l wmghjwg-l z/l xkxk fh f`kvh redv ejl xavxn.

Fwohnx ukw fharh fñn duggv vh ncmhdcj evcnc; ho`nvh fegc vedxn... â...Gh; xk ukghn`k (Cfw Jhgxf zmghvghn`k`k) rupwl gwr phrr` mhnv`n ; x, l ck fwkh nxhdcj evxncl .ß¹

Fw, Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvvxxk âScpxpx Fwohnxßvck kcrq ejvxdx ncmhdcjvxn ; x, suk csnxk ]h\ghn`kvh âHgx-Cfx Jhgxfß denxkc âHgx-Cfx twghkß redv ugwkl wavwn.

Jcfcnx fegc ncmhdcj evxn... âLi yednc xfkx Az/fc devvx xgvck hñj`r : wtckxk mhgxskx ugvw. Fw l i vvcj cnbxkvc Cgx fhncsxkvc khghdxr szbgcn vñk`al hrñhk mc ukh edf jwjl hrñhk pe] mhoj ]c;xkl cl xa, Usl hk`k rhjxggcnxkx gc/kcjcgl c;vck, ukwk zbi i ]i ksc Hgghpvñk ncpl cj mc fhy`aghkl hr vxgcdxf ; zl c;]xgcnxkc vñh ejl c;vck fharh fñn xax ugl hl `av`. Hl l h u, hd`r pcnc; cj evcnc; fc/bx phgghnvñ axvvcjgx, fc/bx phgghnvñ xsc l i ghdxl gx; 'zsjcnxnvx.ß²

Pcl ]xkxk vedxn... Li yednc xfkx Az/fc, Sc/sc xfkx Swphk Cfvxdc fegc vevx... âHl hkv`n! (Epjxdhjg` ugl) Sckxk Usl hk fhncsxkvc khghdxr szbgcn vñk`al hy`k l ckc ]hj`f. Epjxdhjg` ug, Cgxkxk tcbxgcjx fhncvc ha; hñvñ fñn szb vel cdcscck. } i k; x l ck sckxk Cgxkxk tcbxgcjx fhncvc vevxdxk pcn aedx, sckvck vc dhòa` fxgxnccl . Gh; xk xkvx fw ph; xl (Li hmxdc) rcgcfc ]hgl `a mc fxbx l c[fwn ejl xavxn ; x, ukwk edfgcnxkx [hl hhj i ]i k fcdhk evc; . Fxb, cl n ugwkñkghn`k ]uowkw denxkc dejxnl xnx; mc dhgk`b kh]hn ugvwywl wb l xrvhñvñ vedxnx; , fwkgñ` vh jcrxddc acnhxjxkvc mc [hk`l `b` runwl hr i ]i k fcdhk evxnx; . Fegc xsc, Cgxkxk tcbxgcjxkvck fñn szb vel c; xsjcsck, ukw zbi kgc dugvhaghñk hnñs`kvñ mc zb l ckbxgxkvc, zbi vc `xbgx ac; xgv c fcdhk ej, l cs[xvvc mc h]`r-ha; hñvñ xsc duoæ ]i k; x ocgxte fxbxl fw xaxl xbc vzbl cb mc ukwk fhncsxkvc i bñl l i bi rcfwg ejl cbl...ß³

Dc/rwfx dñb`n... âPi [n xfkx Cvñ : xkvx, Cl n xfkx Pcl cr Oi bñx, pcl ]xkxk Cgxkxk vx`cn axcgcñ pcn mhoj Li yedncxk mc Li hmxdcxk vx`cn ; zl c;]xgcnxkx l xkfcñvc Cgxkx gc/k ejvxdxkx `znvi ; vc, hdhyh rhgo`f e/jxñhbgh vñk`al hyh fhaghdxñ mc gc/kcjc ukghn`k zbgcnxkc rhdxññv`ghñ.ß⁴ : wtcdc `cgxf

¹ âKcp[i g-fcgñyckxk acñpx, 1-[x [xgv, scp.358.

² âJhñxox Jcfcñxß, Hmnu`h ]h` , 2-[x [xgv, scp.112.

³ Dekc unhvñ, 2-[x [xgv, scp.38.

⁴ âJhñxox Dc/rwfxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.230-231.

kcbl xddc xvhncsxkxk (u vzmni k \ugxs xvhncsxkxk) ncxsqdxkx  
 zpvcsxkc hghk Bxdhv xfkx Cfxp ukghnvhk fxn rnw\wkw jwjwf  
 rcjgc dejxnvx. Cl n xfkx Pcl cr fxn ke]c kctcngc Lwsxgc rh]v`.  
 Bxdhv Pi [n xfkx Cvxxk uk i] kctcn ;zl c;]xsx xgc fxngx;vc  
 jwjwf Li hmxdcckxk dhk`kh 'zkvcnvx mc ukh fegc dnbv`...  
 âFwkghn il wl [hl hhj`k c;sxkc ughnhr Cfw Jwnhf` gc/k  
 ejl c;gc l i ohgxtcj evxf mhgxgcx vkhghd`ngn mc fw xagcnx xgc  
 xjhcvck ]`ol`aghn.ß Fxn rnw\w vh mhvhn ejvx ;x, fw xac  
 ahpxvgx; ejsskxgc... Vcl carvck fxn ke]c l xg l cshtcvc dengcack  
 Lcnc[-Cbnhdh ]hjv`rghn` bhl hk Li hmxdc 'zsjcnxa menvx ;x,  
 ukghn` pcl xk denvc shoghs`kghn. Suknh fxn ke]c kctcnx  
 'zkvcnvx ;x, ukghn`k fudkwkw mwnskw. Ukghnvhk hgj` kctcn  
 Li hmxdcckxk cjhnt`kvh ughkghn`k mhsxjc]xgdx xgc hbhv  
 ugwkvwghn. Vx'cngcnxkc xsc fegc 'zsjcnxa menvx ;x, Cgxvck  
 febhng` evcnc; ukw gc/kcjcgsxkxgc. Suknh ukghnh fegc vevx...âC'cn  
 fwkw rcfwg ejscckxb, sxbx hbhv evc[cdx; , c'cn xl jxkh ejscckxb,  
 sxbx zgvi nc[cdx;! Fegc xsc, Cgxvck febhng`r evxk ;x, sxbx hbhv  
 evc;ß Vevxgc... â|cnmcnvx'hnh! (Ahpvx ugl) Fxb fw xax pe] mhoj  
 'znl cdc[cdx;ß

Kcphdcj, ukghn`k rcfxngcnxkx rhb`f ;ctckgcxkx fudwkghn`kh  
 shgv`ghn. Ukghn vh fijk 'e[ckx khl hb r`gv`ghn. Si fp  
 h]ghkvh Cgxdc gc/k 'zkvcnl cdx jc;gxt ejvxgc, gh;xk ukghn  
 vevxgc...âFxb ukw semxnx; , ukvhk febhng`r evck pcn ;csvck vc  
 febhnr`ß Lc/l wghnvhk pcn fxnx ukghnvhk fxnxkx zgvi nl c;  
 i]ik se]xgvx. Pi [n vevx...âLckc x[hbc menxk, vcsjcl hb hg`f  
 khl hb r`gl .ß Khl hb` r`gf rwnjhnr`rvh cmmcg[c ukw, suknh  
 vh fharhghn`k zgvi nvi gc. Zgvi ni gckgc Cv xgc fxngx;vc hgj`  
 kctcn xv. Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Pcsshk Ckx mc :cnxl xfkx  
 Ctxt Ocs/cl x vevxgc...âFxb Cl xncg-l z/l xkxkxk dhk`kh 'zkvcn,  
 fxb [hl hhj`k fw ;xax fhncsxkvc vevx;gcxkx vedc;ß Ukghn`  
 Li hmxdcckxk dhk`kh 'zkvcnvxgc. Ukghn 'cgxf Li hmxdcckxk  
 dhk`kh ]hjv`rvh Li hmxdc Ocs/cl xdc vevx...âCgx fhncsxkvc kc  
 vedxnsck?ß Ocs/cl x vevx...âSck kc vedxnscksc, l ck vc ukw  
 vedxnc!ß Li hmxdc vevx...âLck Cgxkxk vxkxkvck febhng`r  
 evxnc!ß Ocs/cl x xsc si ;wj ejvx, ukwk cl x uygwsw  
 Li hmxdcvck xsjcvx ;x, ukw fhy`aghs`k. Li hmxdc vc ukw fxn hd  
 pcfsvc shoghv`rvhk suknh hbhv ejvx ;x, :wtcdc 'ejsxk.  
 Li hmxdc Ckxdc vevx...âEd Ncfxcvck ughk pcl \edl hk! Cgx

fhncsxkvc kc vedxnsck?ß Vevx...âAcphvcj menxncl ;x, u, Hgghp`  
 ]uo dhv evckgcnvck, phrrh cl n evckgcnvck, cvhgcyj fcnrcnhn  
 evckgcnvck mc [hl hhjh 'i bcjlc 'evckgcnvckvxn.ß Li hmxdc  
 vevx...âUsl hk fhncsxkvc kc vedxnsck?ß Vevx...âU xg; acos vxv ;x,  
 bi gl rh`s`k` h]v` mc phrr rh`ghn`k` fhyghv!ß Li hmxdc  
 vevx...âZbi ki zgi l c menvxk!ß Vevx...âOedn, zbi l i duo, sckx  
 zgi l c menvxl !ß

Li hmxdc ukw Bxdhv`k dhk`kh 'zkvcnvx mc ukh fegc dhbv`...  
 âHl l h fc/v. Fw Ckbx, l ckxl dhk`l h 'zkvcnvx;gcnxkxk ck  
 \xsxvxn. Ukh ghdxrxk[c [cbh men mc ck \xs zgi l gc rcjgc dejxn!ß  
 U l c;jwfw Bxdhvh menvx;gcnx bhl hk, Bxdhv ukw Rcssxk-  
 khjxtc 'zkvcnvx mc ukw vxnx-vxnx vctk ejvxgc.<sup>1</sup>

Bxdhv xfkx Cfxpxk fw fhncvc jzncjvxdx [xkhdcjgcncvck fxx  
 vc ukwkg Sedtx xfkx Ti sedgxk hnhs`kvh fha menck phvxscvxn.  
 Bxdhv tcnl hk menvx, ukw pi bwnwkh 'cjxnvxgc. Suknh ukh vevx...  
 âEd Hgghp`k vi al ckx! Cfw Jwnhf fhncsxkvc kc vedxnsck?ß  
 Sedtx vevx...âL ck Cfw Jwnhf` jhk`l`nhl !ß Bxdhv vevx...âSck  
 ukw ]uo dhoa` jhk`d`nshk!ß Vevx...âUkw jhk`l`nhl .ß Bxdhv  
 vevx...âCgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfx jhk`d`nshk!`?ß Vevx...âCgfcjcc ;xlß  
 Bxdhv vevx...âEgc uvwn!ß Ukghn`k hnhs`kvh fha menck fw  
 szpfcjgcncvck suknh Sedtx vevx...âHgghp fckvcgcncxkvck ughk fxn  
 fckvckxk fhncsxkvc fxgvxdx ck dhoa` szbi Cl xncg-l z/l xkxk  
 Cgxddxfkx Cfxjhgxf fhncsxkvc vedxncl !ß Bxdhv vevx...âCsh xgc  
 fudkwkh u rcvcn mwnwk ;x, zgi f denc scnxgsxk.ß Ukw csh xgc u  
 rcvcn mwnvwghn ;x, jhrcjvck vi ai f denc d`o`gv`. Bxdhv suknh  
 vevx...âUkw fwnho`k!ß Fwnhov`rvhk suknh Bxdhv ukh dho`kgha`f  
 vevx...âFxn hb vel Cgx fhncsxkvc kc vedxnsck?ß Vevx...âHgghp  
 hkv ugswk, c`cn l ckx r`g`k[ghngh, ock[cngcngc jx;c-jx;c  
 vuynhshk`b, eajvxdxkxbvck fharh pe] fxn aed vel cdc[cdcl !ß  
 Bxdhv vevx...âDh ukh gc/k evc[c;sck, dh vh fudkwkw  
 mwnh[hyhl !ß U vevx...âFegc xsc, Hgghp hkv ugswk, fwkw  
 vel cbvck rhfhr fudkw l w mwnwk, (fw phgvh) l ck  
 ouafcojgcncvck, sck vc fcvfcojgcncvck ughnshk!ß Bxdhv vevx...  
 âFudkwkw fhyghd`k, bck[xnc ]c;xk mc bxkvkh shg`k!ß Suknh

<sup>1</sup> Fho...âCfvi ggph xfkx Scfhß (cncf[c), 2-[x [xgv, scp.268-292. Fxb ukw r`sh  
 ac; xgv redv ejvx; . Fw ncmhdcj 'ekxa ac; xgv Xfkx Csh; xnxk âJhnnox Vcl carß  
 ;xjh`kvh, ukwk oi ghscsx xsc Pi [n xfkx Cvxxk jcn[i l edx-phg`kvh redv  
 ugwk l wavwn.

ukw Pi [n xfkx Cvx xgc fxngx; vc rcjgc dejxnvx.<sup>1</sup>

Pcl ]xkxk, Pcbncl x rcfxgcsxkvck<sup>2</sup> ughk x; x kctcn fhncsxxkvc Li hmxdcdc fegc dxbv`ghn... âFw x; x kctcn Cgxkxk vxkxkvc mc nc/dxkvcvxngcn.ß Li hmxdc [hmhf`kvh dxbv`... âPcn ;cs Cgxkxk vxkxkvc mc nc/dxkvc ugsh, ukw zgvi n, l i sgc ej (fwnwk, rwghr mc s. fcvck i bmgcnxkx ;cs). Fw x; x kctcnx vc : wtcvc zb emgcnxkxk rhfhy`kvh[h ]hnl `oh ]c; !ß<sup>3</sup>

Lcs/wvx mc Xfkx Csh; xn Bxdhv`k pcdhj`k`k ho`n`k` fegc ncmhdcj evxngcn... âBxdhv : wtc cphgxskx ]hy`n`f fxn denc d`yv`... l cs[xv, l edvhk mc rcsnx ukghngh vugvwnvw ;x, Cgxdc febhn`y` mc ukh rhna` kxtncj pxssxk ukghnh jcrvxl ejsxk, pcn ;cs vc rcfwg ejl csc, r`g`k[vhk ;e]xnsxk. Egc fw phgvh jhwk ocsjcgdxkc jwjwgvw mc [hl hhj ukwk acnxkvck oxghs ugvwghn.<sup>4</sup>

Bxdhv`k fw [xkhdcjgcnxkvc rcjgc dejxnxgck ;csgcnvck fxnx vc Cl n xfkx Pcl cr Oi bhx vxv. U, ]zggcnc rh]v`. Ukw hojhn`f jh`v`rvhk suknh fha`k` fcvckxkvck hd`nv`ghn mc Li hmxdcdc `zkvcnvxgc. U `zsjcnxa menvx ;x, ;csx; fha` fhbhn rh`s`kvhk hss`kghn. Fxn ke]c `i kvck suknh vh ukw pcdhj dugvha`kh `zkvcnvxgc (ukw vh cnxkc `znc pcfs ejl xavxgc). Ukw h`hnhk acos ;csx; fha` Cl nxk hnmhv`k`k cjcdxkc jwgghv`...<sup>5</sup>

Fw sxdhscj fi j i k Xsghl zg; cgcnxkc ph; xl ;csxgl xavx. Li hmxdcckxk shxn mhgxgcnx, u [i l gcvck Fcsnckxk mhgxsc Fwsn xfkx Cnjhj, Nedxk mhgxsc Xfkx Acphf ukh jhfe ughnhr fw `zsjcnxax denxkc dejxnxnvxgc. Jhnxo ;xjhfggh`kvh ukghn`k vh ]uogw th[xcgcj jzncjl cgcnx redv ugwkwn.<sup>6</sup> Fw i sgwf suknghn Fckx-l l cddckxk crxvc, l cvckxddc mc sxdhscjxkc ]emnxgvx... Xsghl zg; cgcnxkxk acnr-rcnfxxkvc Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf

<sup>1</sup> âJhnxox Jcfcnxß, 6-[- [xgv, scp.108 mc 149â âJhnxox xfkx Csxñß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.204â âCyhxxß, 16-[- [xgv, scp.7â âJhnxox xfkx Csh; xnß, 6-[- [xgv, scp.456.

<sup>2</sup> Pcbncl x – Dcl ckvc dengcack Pcbnc-L umjh l ckswf evxgc vel c; vxñ.

<sup>3</sup> âCg-l cpfcñß, scp.479.

<sup>4</sup> âL wnw[wb-bcpcfß, 7-[x [xgv, scp.scp.30â âJhnxox xfkx Csh; xnß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.421.

<sup>5</sup> âCg-l chnxtß (Xfkx Ri jedfc), 7-[x [xgv, scp.12â âCg-xsjxd/hfß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.517â âCg-xshfcß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.526â âJhnxox xfkx : csxñß, 8-[x [xgv, scp.48... âCg-l cpfcñß, scp.490.

<sup>6</sup> âJhnxox Jcfcnxß, 6-[- [xgv, scp.96â âJhnxox xfkx Csxñß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.165â âJhnxox xfkx : csxñß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.179, 41-[x px[nx xgxkxk phvxscgcnx.

I xkfcngcnvc gc/k evxgl cdc, ukh rhna` khghdxr szbgcn vedxgl cdc fhaghv`. Dhgk`b Sxsjhc cdhgjxkvc fxn vctc I xkfcnvvc gc/k evxgvx mc [hl hhj fw xax Fckx-I I cddcvck rcfwg ejl cvxgc, zb fed/cjgcnxkvc acnj ejvxgc ; x, pe] ; cs I xkfcnvvc u pcbncjc khghdxr szb vel csxk. Phgfw; x pcl xk vzmngcnvc L c; ; c-L cvxkc I xkfcngcnxkvc XI hl h khghdxr szbgcn vedxgvxv.<sup>1</sup>

XI hl Cgx™ -`k u pcbncjxk Cpgx-fedjxkxk pi bwnwkvh gc/k evxgl csx fhncvc ]uogw phvxscgc kcrq ugwkl wavwn ; x, ukghnvkh dhgk`b fxnxkx redv ejl c; gc ; xthdcjgckxnx; . Xfkx Pc[cn åJcjpwnwg-gxshkß ; xjh`kvh ddb`n... CI n xfkx Hs I xkfcnc ]`ohnr Cgxkx gc/k ejvx, suknh L i yednc xfkx Az/fc pcl xk xax jc; nhnghv`. Fwkvkh suknh XI hl Pcsckc vevxgc... åL xkfcnc ]`o`f ukghn`k [hmhf`k` men!ß U pcbncj cmmcg[c rcfwg ejl cvxæ suknh fw acnjgc rcfwg ejvx ; x, phrr vedcnsc, ukw jcsvrgcsxkgcn, c'cn fhjxg fxn szb vedcnsc, ukw jc; bxf ejsxkgcn. Ukghn fw acnjx rcfwg ejvxgc, XI hl Pcsck I xkfcnc ]`o`f Hgghph pcl v-sckh ejvx; vck suknh vevx... åEd CI n! Sckx hkv menxcl Hgghph! Ed L i yednc! Sck fxgxnsckl x ; x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j u (l xkx; vc) 'evckx mc u (l xkxdxk di dckxkx) ]c; ckx, ukghnvkh fxn txghk; cs ugvwyw phgvh gc/kcjcgvx?ß Vevxgc... åFcgx.ß Suknh fwdwnvw... åEd L i hmxdc! Ed L i yednc! L c'cn fxgl cvxkxb ; x, |edycl fcn CI n Hs` phks` vxggc vkh`a`fsh, fxn vctc gc/kcjcgvx?ß Vevxgc... å|cnmcnvx' hnh (ahpxv ug ; x), vi bvi n...ß<sup>2</sup>

{hl hhj ukghn`k ouah`cgl cb szbgcnxkx eajl cl c; i ]i k si kkc xgc I i ohgxcj ejvxgc mc fhdnhl khl hb`k`k oi jfcgcnxkx (khl hbvhk) rhfhyy shgv`ghn. Xfkx Pcbl åL i pcgghß ; xjh`kvh fegc ddb`n... åFckx-I I cddc rwnfhk fhdnhl` khl hb`kvh oi jfcgcnx khl hbvhk rhfhyy shgl hy` fxv/cj rudvwghn mc fegc fcpkcc 'cjxnx' vevxgc ; x, [hl hhj khl hbvhk suknh ukw jcn; evxn, oi jfcdc rwghr hsl hr i ]i k ujwnl wngghn. } i k; x ocjxfgc Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfc gc/k evxnvxgc, I i scgl hkghn xsc fw xavck rh]`nv`ghn. Fw vh ukghn`k phrr` vxv.<sup>3</sup>

Dc/rwfx ddb`n... åL i hmxdc 44-[i px[nx xgkvc I cs[xvvc oi swsx fxn den vi bcgvxnvx mc I xkfcngcnx Txjn mc Rwnfhk

<sup>1</sup> åL z/[cl i g-fi gvkhß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.38.

<sup>2</sup> åJcjpwnwg-gxshkß, scp.55.

<sup>3</sup> åCg-I i pcgghß (Xfkx Pcbl ), Cpl cv L cpcl I cv Ah; xnxk jcprrx, 5-[x [xgv, scp.85-86å: xjhfwg-I I cl ß (Ahtex), 1-[x [xgv, scp.208.



fhdnhl ghn`kvh l i scgghdh h\hmv, oi jfcgcnx fhdnhl  
 khl hb`kvhk rhfhr szdgcvx. } i k; x [hl hhj khl hbvhk suknh  
 vhy`g`a`nv` ; x, ocjxfkx Cgxdc rhna` gc/k ejl csxkx eajl csxkgcn.  
 L i hmxdc oi jfckx xncgx shgv, Tcvc; x L cnmhk xfkx Pc; cl c  
 fhy`aghv` ; x, | edycl fcnxk Cpgx-fedjxkx rcbcfgckvxnsxk.β<sup>1</sup>

âScpxpx Fwohnxβ, âScpxpx L i sgi l β, egc[c vc shxn ; xjhfgnhv  
 Cfw Scxv Oxvnxvck fegc ncmhdcj ugwkwn... âTxjn (mc dh Rwnfhk)  
 fhdnhl ` ' i ki kvc L cvxkckxk cl xnx L cnmhkgh fxngx; vc ]zgc  
 ]`ov`r. L i scgghdh ]hjv`rvh 'znvi ; ; x, : csxn xfkx Scgcj fxn  
 l xkfcnc vi bcgvxn. L cnmhk khl hb` r`gl hbvhk rhfhr l xkfcnc  
 ]`ol hr xsjcvx; vc, \hgjhn`kvhk jwjvwl , u vh l ckvck jwjvw mc  
 l xkfcnc ]`ov, oi jfcgcnx khl hbvhk rhfhr szdgcvx. L ck ukh  
 vevxl ... âHgghph hkx ugswk ; x, (si kckx) vcdxavxnvxk!β U vevx...  
 âEd Cfh Scxv! Fxgvxdxk aedgcnc ; e]xf 'ejvx!β Vevxl ... âHgghph hkx  
 ugswk ; x, fxgvxdxk aedgcnc fxgl cvxdxk aedgcncvck vph  
 dhov`v`n.β U xsc vevx... â{hl hhj khl hbvhk suknh ujwnl wngn,  
 fwkh 'znc vc oi jfckx rhfhyh shgv`l .β<sup>2</sup>

Ukghn fw l xrvhng ; xthdcjgckl cdx scphfckx vc fw xac cl n  
 evxnvxgcnc. Fegc ; x, âScpxpx L i sgi l β mc fharh ; xjhfgnhv Scpg  
 xfkx Sc/vvck fegc ncmhdcj ugwkwn... L cnmhk zmghvghn`kvhk fxn  
 kctcn L cvxkckxk cl xnx ugvrhv Scpg xfkx Scxv ]hy`nv` mc ukh  
 'zsjcnxa menvx ; x, Cgxkx szdsi k. Scpg rcfwg ejl cvx; vc, cl xn  
 ukh vevx... âXkvx ; x, rcfwg ejl xnsck, fegc ve... âHgghp`k gc/kcix  
 Cfw Jwnhfh ugswk!β Sc/v vevx... âCgxkxk kcbcnxkvc pe] fxn hv  
 Cfw Jwnhf rcvnc semxl gx vedxgvx. Pcn mhoj u hvgh  
 ]hy`n`g`nv`sh, ]uo ouaphg ugwnvw.β Cl xn vevx... âFxbxl i ]i k  
 phvxscx ve, 'znc; u kc i ]i k Cfw Jwnhf hvghkv`n`g`f.β Scpg  
 vevx... â| edycl fcnx-C; ncl Thjxl ckxk emxkc 'cgvx, 'znvi ; x, Cgx  
 emvc duovwn, Thjxl cdc vevx... âCl x uygwk phnhvhv`n?...β Thjxl c  
 vevx... âCgx l cs[xvvc dhjl `av`n.β | edycl fcn ukwk fha` i sji kc  
 'cgxf 'znvi ; x, cfhs` ]dxkxkvck vi ai f (mc jub-jun\hyh fwgha`f).  
 | edycl fcn ukwk i sji kvc; x jub-jun\hy` jcl xbgcvx mc fwdwnvw...

<sup>1</sup> âJhnnox Dc/rwFxβ, 2-[x [xgv, scp.223.

<sup>2</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxβ, 2-[x [xgv, scp.11æ âScpxpx L i sgi l β, 3-[i [xgv, scp.20æ  
 âSi kckx Cfx Vhmwvβ, 1-[x [xgv, scp.178æ âSi kckx xfkx L h[cβ, 1-[x [xgv, scp.386æ  
 âSi kckx Fedpcrxβ, 3-[i [xgv, scp.297æ âL i skcvx Cpl cvβ, 3-[i [xgv, scp.10, 20,  
 52 54, 92. âL i skcvx Cpl cvβ ; xjhfvkvh L cnmhkh e/jxnhb evck acos Cfw Scxv  
 Oxvnxvck fharhs`v`n.

âEd Cfh Jwnhf, rhgo! Ed Cfh Jwnhf, rhgo!ß (Cfw Jwnhf, dc/kx jun\hry`k hjhs`.)<sup>1</sup>

Hl xn xfkx Sc/v xfkx Mcrrhsvhk fegc ncmhdcj ugwkwn...  
Li hmxdc Sc/vc vevx... âKc i ]i k Cfw Jwnhfh gc/k ejl xnsck?ß  
Sc/v vevx... âLck kc rcvcn ;x, |edycl fcnxk Cgx fhncsxkvc  
vevxdx i] szbi ohj`nghd`nhl , pe] mhoj ukw szdl cncl .  
|edycl fcn ukh egc szbgcn vel xavx ;x, c'cn ukghnvhk fxn[csx  
l ckxl fhnci vc vedxgscdvx, l ckxl i ]i k r`nl `b` nck'gx  
vcmcgcnvck vph semxl gx ughnv`... Eaxjvxl ;x, |edycl fcnx-  
C;ncl rcbmcgcnxk fxnxkvc Cgxkx zb denxkc [hkxaxk rudvwyw  
bhl hk Cgx vel xavx... âLckx rhv`kghngh mc wahrgngh fwnhvh  
rudwf `evxnsck?ß |edycl fcn ukh fwdwnl wavw... âOuaphg  
ugl hbshkl ` ;x, l ckxl gc sckxk l i khsxfcjxk L wsh xgc  
Phnwkwk l i khsxfcjx ;xl x ugswkæ fw tcnrgc ;x, l ckvck suknh  
pe] fxn \edycl fcn ugl hhd[hrv`n?ß Oedfc n l i phnxfcsxkvc xsc  
|edycl fcnxk fegc vevxdxkx eaxjvxl ...âFw fhdnhy` shfhp egc fxn  
acosc menc[cdcl ;x, u, Hgghp` mc Ukwk Ncswgkw semxn, Hgghp  
mc Ncswgw vh ukw semxngcn.ß Phl `l `b fhdnhy` 'zjini c; earx  
xgc fudwkghn`l `b` wbhjl `av`r ;x, |edycl fcn fwdwnvw... âCgxkx  
l ckxl dhk`l h ]hy`n`k.ß U, 'zb hyn`s`kh vi ]hn ugl wavw,  
|edycl fcn hyb`k`k swdwkw ukwk 'zbi kc ]c; vx, 'zbi shyhg`v  
mc fhdnhy` ukh menvx. Hgghp vh ukw rhgxf ejvx.

Egc[c vc âHgx-Xl nhkß swncsxkxk 61-[x hdcx khbxg ughkvh...

﴿فَقُلْ تَعَالَوْا نَدْعُ أَبْنَاءَنَا وَأَبْنَاءَكُمْ وَنِسَاءَنَا وَنِسَاءَكُمْ...﴾

âVe... "cgk sxb vc zmghvghn`k`b`, fxb vc zmghvghn`l `b` ]hy`nhr...ß – hdcx  
khbxg ughkvh |edycl fcnx-C;ncl Cgx, Thjxl c, Pcsck mc  
Pi sedkx ]hy`n`f fwdwnvw... â|cnmcnv` hnh, fwkghn l ckxl Cpgx-  
fedjxl vx.ß<sup>2</sup>

Fw ncmhdcjx Jcfcnx Lcs/wvxcvck fegc kcr g evxn... âLi hmxdc

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx Li sgi l ß, 7-[x [xgv, scp.124, l ckhrxfw Cgx fhf. Fxb ukwk  
oi ghscsxkx redv ejvx; . Fwohnx vc ukwk jcpnxt ugwk l wawkw l ckhrxfw Cgx  
fhf`kvh, egc[c vc kuml wn-nc[wg txg-l cs[xv fhf`kvh, 2-[x [xgv, scp.199-vh  
redv ejl xavxnæ âXnahvws-shnxß ;xjh`kvh (6-[` [xgv, scp.112) fw cl xnx Lcnmhk  
xfkx Pc; cl peshf ejl xagcnæ âSi kckx Fedpcrxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.446.

<sup>2</sup> âScpxpx Li sgi l ß, 7-[x [xgv, scp.120æ âScpxpx Jxnl xbxß, 13-[i [xgv, scp.171æ  
âLi sjcvnc; x Ph; xl ß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.108-109. Unhvh fegc cghmc evxgn... âHgghp  
hkv ugswk, Li hmxdc Lcvxkcvck ]`ohk mhojh rcvcn ukwkgh vkh`al hv`ß  
âCg-Xshfcß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.509æ âOcshxsw Kcshxß, scp.15.

pc[[c 'ejvxdx bhl hk Sc/v Mcrrhs ukwkgf fxngx; vc Fedjx jcmht evxnvx. Jcmht rwnjhvn`rvhk suknh âVhnwk-ki vmcßdc 'ejvx, Sc/vx vc zb ;i nsi si kvc ujwnjvw. Fwkvhk suknh Cgxdc rhna` khghdxr szbgcn vel cdc fhaghv`. Fw bhl hk Sc/v ;cknhh ]c; xgxf vevx... âL ckx jhoj`k i sji kvc zb dhk`kvh ujwnvwnshk, suknh Cgxkxk fhncsxkvc khghdxr szbgcn vkh`a`nshk?! Hgghph hkv ugswk, c'cn Cgxkxk oxsgcjgcnxkvck fxn[c vckcsx l ckvc ugshdv`, l ckxl i ]i k r`nl `b` nck'gx vcmcgcnvck vc semxl gx ughnv`... (Ho`nvh vevx.) Hgghph hkv ugswk, vxnx ugvwywl mhohj rcvcn scckxkgc fxngx; vc pe] fxn emc vxoxg ugl hdh[hyhl .ß Suknh unvhvk rhgo`f 'ejvx.<sup>1</sup>

Xfkw Cfvx Ncffxp xsc Li hmxdc xgc cghrcvhn ocfngcnxk fxn pxsscsxkvc fwkw fegc redv evxn...âPcsck xfkx Cgx mthj evcn; ck Li hmxdc pc[[c 'ejvx. Lcvxkdc vxoxg ugvwrvh |edycl fcnxk l xkfcnxkvc Cgxdc gc/k ejl c; xsjcvx, ukh vedxgvx ;x, Sc/v xfkx Cfx Mcrrhs fwnhvhv`n, 'il hk ejl xnx; ;x, fw xac nhb`g`r mensxk. Cmmcg[c ukwk dhk`kh hvhl 'zkcvcnf kcbcnxkx zdncck. Li hmxdc ukwk dhk`kh fxn hvhl 'zkcvcnx mc l cscgckx ukwkgf l i bh; xnc ejvx. Sc/v vevx...âC'cn fegc fxn xa 'znsck, l cs[xvvck ]`oh[hyhl mc pe] mhoj unh rhd`jl hdh[hyhl .ß Sc/v mthj evck mhohj rcvcn Li hmxdc Cgxkx gc/kcgcl c; vck ]c; xkvx. Hl l h ukwk mthj`kvhk suknh dekvck u pcbncjc khghdxr szbgcn vel cdc fhaghv` mc zb xa]xgcnxkc dnbv` ;x, l xkfcngcnvc Cgxdc gc/k ejsxkgcn. Fw xax u rcvcn jc; nhnghv` ;x, ho`nvh |edycl fcnxk hnmhv` l l l i Scgcl c [hkh 'cgxf Li hmxdcdc dnbv`... âSxb l xkfcngcnxkxbvc Hgghp` mc Hgghp`k Ncswgwkw gc/k evxnsxkxb, ]i k; x Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfx mc ukw semckgcnx gc/kcgcdxnsxkxb. Lck acphvcj menxncl ;x, Hgghp mc Ukwk Ncswgw ukw semxnvx.ß Li hmxdc ukwk szbgcnxkc hbh[`r fegc, e/jxkh ejl cvx.<sup>2</sup>

Xfkx Cfvg-Pcvxv dnb`n... Cfw Usl hk {hpxb vc ncmhdcj evxn ;x, Fckx-l l cddcvck fxn vcsjc hvhl Li hmxdcdc vevxgc...âDh Cl xncg-l z/l xkxk! Xkvx ;x, scck zb hnbwkh ]hjl`shk, ;ha fw ;xaxkx (Cgxkx) gc/k ejl c; vck cg ]c; cdvxl!ß Li hmxdc vevx...âDuo,

<sup>1</sup> âL wnw[wb-bcpcfß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.34. Fw [hmfvhk suknh Li hmxdcckx u l c[gsvc jzncjvxdx cl cggcnx redv evxn ;x, rcgcl ukghn`dhbl hrvhk pcdh evxn.

<sup>2</sup> âCrvi g-tcnxvß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.127ââHdxackxk nugwß ;x]hf`kh l i nh[xcj evc fxgcnsxkxb.

Hgghph hkv ugswk, fw xax u rcvcn jc; nhnghdh[hyhl ; x, wahrgn fw xavc fzdi si kgc, fzdi ; gc fw xavc ru[hgs`kghn mc pe] fxn vkh`ahk ukwk tcbxgcjgcnxkx dhv ejl csxk.<sup>1</sup>

*AHL CPHGXSXKXK CGX™ -H RHNA~ : XK-: I VWNCJ MC GC/K CSHS-KVH JCNFXDC EVXGL CSX*

Scrctx âCg-yhnhjß ; xjhfkvh dhb`n... Zl cn xfkx Shfxj L i hmxdkxk oxghtcjkx vzmni kvc Ahl h mc ukwk cjhnt khpxdcgcnxkc 'evxn, vhoxg ugvyw pcn fxn acpcnxk mc vxdh`k cphgxsxkx fxn denc ju`ghd`f vedxnvx...âEd [hl hhj! Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgfx I i khtxr fxn acos xv ; x, âCrcfcß 'e[csxkvc |edycl fcnc zgvi nl c; xsjcdxnvx. Fegc xsc, ukh gc/kcj 'zkvcnxk!ß U dhb`n... Fw dengcnxk cphgxsx Cgxkx gc/kcjgcdxnvx, suknh u fharh fxn acpcnc 'evxf pcl xk xagcnx jc; nhnghd`nv`.<sup>2</sup>

*"CRCFC "E{CSX≥ NCMHDCJXKXK OI GHSCSX*

âCl jhwg-csl hß ; xjhfkvh vedxgn... |edycl fcnc-C; ncl 9-[w px[nx xgxkvc Jcfw; I i phnxfcsxkvck rhd`v`nv`. âCrcfcß 'cvxdx-kc ]hjkh bhl hk cs'cngcnc fwdwnvw ; x, vcncxk x]xkvck 'ejsxk-gcn. U pcbncjxk zbi xsc 'e[c x; ck âCrcfcß dugw xgc xncgxgcvx. L i khtxrgcnvck fc/bxgcnx pxdgc rwnl wavwghn ; x, |edycl fcnck vmcsxkx pi n; i vi f u pcbncjx rcjgc dejxnsxkgcn. Hl I h x; x scphfc – Cl I hn Dhsxn mc Pi bedtc fw swx-rcsvx bcncnsxb-gcavxnvx.<sup>3</sup>

Dwohn`vh redv ugwkvyw ; xl x, L i hmxdkxk cghgj`ghn` fw xax |edycl fcncx cl x uygsw Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgfx fc kxsfcj menxnvxgc.

*L I HMXDCKXK FW XAVC L CRSCVX*

Ri nedagxcnxk Xl hl Cgx™ rhna`s`kvh jwjvwrghn` scnj I zmre ukghn`k ki fi mmcjgc oxghtcjkx pcn x; xsxkxk Fckx-Phaxl -vc fxn denvc d`y`al hs`kh x; nhp pxssx ; e]xnl cgcnx vxsc, cl cmx-ri nedax ughk L i hmxdkxk Fckx-Phaxl c rhna` fcsgcvxdx ; xk-; i -vwncj vc jc/sxnsxb vedxgvx. Fegc ; x, hahy`vh;` ncmhdcjc vxrrcj dejxnxk...

<sup>1</sup> âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnp (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 57-[x oi jfc.

<sup>2</sup> âCg-rhnhjß, scp.397.

<sup>3</sup> âCl jhwg-csl hß, scp.447æ fharh I ckfcgcnc fw ; xjhfvh xahnc ugwkx[hrv`n.

Bi fedn xfkx Fc; ; hn ncmhdcj evcnc; dhn`n... L i yednc xfkx Az/fckxk ugw L i jcnct vedxn... Hjhl gh fxngx; vc L i hmxdcckxk dhk`kh 'ejl xavxl . Hjhl ukwk l c[gxsgcnxkc 'evxa-'cgxa evxn, ukwkggh szpfcj evxnvx. L cckxl dhk`l h rhd`jv`rvhk suknh L i hmxdc mc ukwk hyg`kvhk hy`svugwsw vkh`a`n, ukwk jctc; ; i n mc nctjhn`kvhk pedncjc vhgvy`k` fxgvxnxnvx. Fxn 'e[c emc 'cgvx, hl l h del c; del cvxæ fxn rcvcn rcl gx kcbnc jhn`nv`. Fxn l i vvcj 'zbgcvx; vck suknh tx; xngcavxl ; x, fcg; c fxbxl xagcnxl xbvck khnhphjv`n. Suknh ukh vevxl ... âL ckc kc ugl wavwn ; x, sckx fw rcvcn rcl gx 'zni ncl ?ß Vevx... âUygw! Xkvx [hl hhj`k hnhs`kvh ck ; htxn mc ck ocfxs ughk fxn acosxk dhk`kvhk 'cgxncl .ß Vevxl ... âKe[c fcdcl ?ß Vevx... âOcgmcjvc L i hmxdcdc vevxl ... Dh Cl xncg-l z/l xkxk! Xkvx ; x, ru[hg`r mhoj`k`bh ]hj l `s`k`b, ; ha cvhgcjx ha; hn evcdvxxb, oedxn mc dhoe`g`rghn` dhdhdv`k`b, Phaxl x rhnvhagh`k`bh vh vxrrcj dejxncnvxxb, ukghnh rhna` sxgedx-ncpxl evcdvxxb. Hgghph hkv ugsww ; x, ukghn`k dhk`kvh sckxk runoh[hy`k fxn aed duovwn. C`cn fegc evcnscksc, fw xaxk hv` mc shmhf` sckxk i ]i k rhgh[hrv`n.ß U xsc vevx... âPedphj, pedphj! Phks` dhoe` xaxk rhgh[hy`kh i l xvmhn ugw! ?! U Jcl xl x ; xax (Cfw Fc; n) pz; wl cjc ]hjv`, cvhgcjx dhv`, zb 'znvi di xagcnx 'znvi . Ukwk zgi l i kvck ]uo ; e]l cl xavxn ; x, hv` vh zbi xgc l cpm ugwf 'ejvx. Shvc[c fc/bck fc/bx hvhl ghn fegc vedxn... âCfw Fc; n!ß Suknh Cvxxck ughk fxn ; xax (Zl cn) ph; xl xddcjc ]hjv` mc ]hg`av`, uk xg pxl l cj 'zsjcnvx, zgi l i kvck ]uo ; e]l cdx f ; x, ukwk dhv` wkwvwgwfvwn. Fc/bck fc/bx acosgc n âZl cnß – vedc scgcdn. Hl l h Xfkx Cfx : cfackxk<sup>1</sup> (dc/kx | edycl fcnxk) hv` mc dhv` pcn 'i k ohj`nghv`g`n mc 'i kvc fea vctc âcapcvw ckkc L wpcl l cvck Ncswgwgghpß – szbi jc; nhn ugwkwn. Fcs, fwkvhk suknh phks` fxn cl cg rhgh fxgc n mc phks` fxn dhv, ohjxnc vhmhl evc fxgc n, ed dejxl ?! Oedn, Hgghph hkv ugsww, fw hv` vctk ejl cdxk[c pe] kcdx csxn'cl cdc[cdcl !ß<sup>2</sup>

Fw vh L i hmxdcckxk Fckx-Phaxl c rhna` 'zsjcnvxdx ; xk- ; i vwncjxk pcvvxxk 'zsjcnxn.

<sup>1</sup> Ri nedagxcn xsjepbh i bi kvck | edycl fcnx-C; ncl c âXfkx Cfx : cfacß vedxnvxcn.

<sup>2</sup> âCg-l i mcttcrxddhjß, scp.576-577æ âL wnw[wb-bcpcfß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.454æ âKcp[i g-fcgihyckxk acnpx (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 1-[x [xgv, scp.463.

L I HMXDCKXK : XK-: I VWNCJGCNXXKXK : Z: GCNX

L i hmxdcckxk Fckx-Phaxl c rhna` fcsgecvxdx ;xk-; i vwncjxk scfcfcgcnxkvck h'hp ugl hr i ]i k, dhoa` ughn ;x, fxbxl rcgcl c hgv`y'l `b âHdxackxk Xsghl jhnnoxkvc nugwß ;xjhfk`k 3-[i [xgvxkxk âL i hmxdcckxk pcdhj`kh fxn fho`aß fzgl csxkx vxrrcjgc hnhav`nhs`k`b. Fxb unhvh fwkw cjnhtg`ac; xgvc xbhph ejl xax;. L i hmxdc fw ;xk-; i vwncjx hkhs` Pxxkvck xns h\hnl `av`. Pxxkv l pi v vzdi ai kvc |edycl fcnxk cl xsx Pcl bckxk [cscvxxk dhnhhr [xdncgcnxkx ]`ohnj l `a, ]edkcl xa, ukwk fcvck i bmgcnxkx ;cscnc; fudwkfhy` vi bcgjl xa mc fwkwkgh vh, Fckx-Phaxl c ughk rcbcfxkx szkvi nl c; xsjcl xavx.

Kcphdcj, Cfw Si tdhk zmghvghn`k`k fhjxkvc ;e]xnvx; gcnx fw ;xk-; i vwncj L i hmxdcckxk uygw Debxvxk ck mcpax[csxkc ughk [xkhdcjgcx xgc sukh dejvxæ Debxv Cpgx-fedjx rcjgc dejxnx f ukghn`k fha`k` ;csl c; gc mc hnmhv-wahrghn`k` csxn hgl hrgh zb rcgfxkvc; x dhnhghnh l cgpcl rudvw. Fxb fwkw pcl xk ;xjhfk i ]i k[i [xgvxkvc redv evc[cdx;.

CFVI GGHP XFKX BI FEDNXK SXDHSCJX

Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvvx dhn`n... âZl cn xfkx Acffcp, Xfkx : cgfx, Mhrxvx mc shxn ;xl x sxnc dhbhkghn ncmhdcj evxngcn ;x, Cfvi ggph xfkx Bi fedn oxghtcj ejvxdx vzmngcnvc r`no [i l c 'i ki |edycl fcnc shghmhj 'zkvcnl c; vck xl jxkh evcnc; vevx... âL ckl shghmhj 'zkvcnl cdxl c dhgk`b ukwkgh fha`w[h ugh[hr ;csgcnxk xtjxohn ejl csx l hke ugwnlß

U dhn`n... âL cpcl l cv xfkx Pcxf mc L i cl l cn xfkx L i sckkhk`k pcvxsxkvc vedxgn ;x, |edycl fcnxk juo \xs Cpgx-fedjx mhn vxv ;x, pcn mhoj ukwk hv` ]c; xgnvxsc, fha`k` deggcvxnvx.ß

Dekc vedxn... âSc/v xfkx { i fedn ncmhdcj evxn ;x, Cfvi ggph xfkx Bi fedn fxn 'i k Cfvi ggph Xfkx Hffhsh vevx... âFw kc szbvi n ;x, sckvck eavxnc l ?lß Cfvi ggph Xfkx Hffhs vevx... âPhks` szb?ß Vevx... âL ckl vkhghd`f l cbcl l cj ejl cdxkx!ß U vevx... âL ck |edycl fcnxk âke[c vc \xs xavxn ;x, l i scgl hk fxn acos juo phgvh dhjs`k mc ukwk rukawsw h[ ugswkß - vedc fwdwnvwykw eajvxl .ß<sup>1</sup> Cfvi ggph xfkx Bi fedn vevx... âL ck

<sup>1</sup> Cfvi ggph xfkx Hffhs fw szbgc Cfvi ggph xfkx Bi fednxk \ho`gg`y`kh mc ocsxsgdxkc xahnc evxnvx.

r`no xgvxn ;x, fw hxgckxk Cpgx-fedjxkc – sxbc ;xk-; i vwncjx rcgfxl vc 'xbgcjl xacl .ß

Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv dhb`n... âZl cn xfkx Acffcp, Scxv xfkx {i fednvck ncmhdcj evxn ;x, Xfkx Bi fedn fxn oi jfc uowdnhnr Cgxdc pznI cjsxbgx; 'zsjcnvx. Ukwk szbgcnx Lcpcl I cv Pckctxddcdc ]hjv` (u, 81-[x xgvc mthj evxf). Xfkx Bi fedn oi jfc uowdhk fxn phgvh Lcpcl I cv ukh vuynw 'cgvx, ;i nsi ki k i sjike ]`ov` mc ukwk szbi ki ;csxf vevx... âEd cncfgcn! Fw i bgcn rhnh ugswk! Sxbxk pi bwnwkwbv Cgxdc pznI cjsxbgx; ugwkwn?! Cgx ;x, Hgghp vi al ckgcnxkc rhna` Hgghp cgx, Hgghp tcnl hk`k`k xgv`n`l `v`n! Hgghp ukw ;htxngcnc mc ukwk zb phrr`k` xk;hn evckgcnc vuynw 'zkvcnvx, u vh pcl xk acosgcnx ;i tngcnxkc 'znc rcjgc dejxnvx, ukghn vh I cpb fwkh 'znc rcgfgcnxkvc ukh rhna` ;xk-; i vwncj fcsgecvxgc. Phgfw;x pcgc |edycl fcnxk cl x uygsw ugh-ugh ukwk cgedpxkc pcscv mc ;xk-; i vwncj r`g`k[ghn`k` rcgfgcnxkvc 'xbgcjl xavxgcn?! Hgghp ukw Zbi ki k ncpl cj vcn`hp`kh h`hnhkvh mc Zb dhk`kvh ughkghn` ukwk i ]i k fcdckckvc fc/bxgcnx zb ;xk-; i vwncjgcnxkx ukwk cgedpxkc ha;hn ejvxgc, zb vi al ck]xgx;gcnxkx sukh ]hjv`nv`ghn. Ukghnvhk fc/bxgcnx ukw zbi ki k I cosws phrr`kvhk wbhrgHAV`nv`ghn, fcbxgcnx ukh rhna` swx-rcsv phb`nghv`ghn, fharhghn` vh ukh rhna` dhnhl hb szbgcn vel cdc, jzpl cj mwnwfszdi a szdl cdc fhaghv`ghn. C'cn fw 'i k ukwk zmghvghn`k`k mc ;zl c;]xgcnxkxk vzmgcj mc ri vncjx ugshdv`, ukghn`k si I i ;gcnx \cnh;ckvc, rcfxngcnx vhy`k`r, fcvckgcnx ]i ni I i a, vxnxgcnx rcjgc dejxnagl xa, fudwkghn` ohn mc bcgxg ughnv`. Hgghp-jhhgh ukghn` fxbxl cgxl xbgc cbhfh vi ]hn mc ohn ejvx, fxbx ukghnh rhgxf ejvx mc fxbxl rcgfgcnxl xbc acth fhy`aghv`. Hgghph hkv ugswk ;x, Cgxdc dhgk`b u ;htxngcn khghdxr szbgcn vedcn ;x, |edycl fcnx-C;ncl c 'xbgxkvc khghdxr szbgcn vedxn mc ukw ha;hn ejl c;vck runownvwghn. Ukghn Cgxdc khghdxr szbgcn vel c;gc csgxkvc |edycl fcnc khghdxr szbgcn vedxngcn! H'hp ugwk, zgi I sxbxk dhag`ghn`k`b` pcvct jwjI wavwn! U ;csgcn ;x, Cgxkxk fhncsxkvc |edycl fcnxk fegc fwdwnvwywkw eaxl xagcn... âDh Cgx! Sckx I z/I xkvck fharhs` seml cb, I i khtxrvc fharhs` vi al ck jwjI hb!ß

﴿وَسَيَعْلَمُ الَّذِينَ ظَلَمُوا أَيَّ مُنْقَلَبٍ يَنْقَلِبُونَ﴾

âBigl evckgcñ jebgx;gc hkgñdh[hrgññ ;x, ukghñ phñh rhðjññ'gh[hrgññ.ß¹  
 Xfñx Cfxg-Pcvxv dñb`ñ... âCfvi gghp xñx Bi fedn Cgxkxk  
 vi al ckx vx mc ukh khghdxr szbgcn vedxn, pznñ cñxkx  
 \ubwnvw.ß²

Dc/rwfx dñb`ñ... Cfvi gghp xñx Bi fedn Fckx-Phaxl c rhna`  
 axvvcjgx c; si g-cl cg 'zsjcnxn mc ukghñgh ha; hñvh vi al ck]xgx;  
 h`hn`nv`, pcjjh |edycl fcnc shghmhj` vh oi jfcgcñxkvck  
 ]`ohnjñ `av`. Ukvñk â|edycl fcnc shghmhj 'zkvññ cdx kc i ]i k  
 jcn; ejvxk?ß – vedc sunwawrvh, [hmhf menvx... âUkwk juo \xs  
 fxñ ohkcvñk` mñhv` ;x, ukw dhv ejvx; vc, rug-rhkhv h]`ñ mc  
 ukwk hv` xgc fha`w[h ugwnghñ.ß

Xfñx Bi fedn Lcpcl l cv xñx Pckctxddckx, Cfvi gghp  
 Xfñx Hffhs` mc Fckx-Phaxl vck ughk xdxññ x vñzv kctcnx  
 ukwkgh fed/cj ejñ c; i ]i k jwjwf shoghv`. Ukghñ rcfwg  
 ejñ cvx; vc ukghñ` Bcl -bcl pi [ncsxkvc pcfs ejvx mc Hgghph  
 hkv x]cnc; vevx... âDh fed/cj evc[c;gcñ, dh vh ukghñ` uvvh  
 dhkv`ñh[hñhl !ß Lcpcl l cv xñx Pckctxddc kh]ññ rhg`f  
 Lwojññ xñx Cfx l fedvcñc fegc dñbv`...

âFxsñ xgghpxñ-ncpl hñxñ-ncpxl ! Lcpcl l cv xñx Cgx mc  
 ukwk |edycl fcñ ohkcvñk`kvñk ughk dugvhaghñ`kvñk Lwojññ  
 xñx Cfx l fedvc mc ukwkgh fxñ`c ughk l i scgl hkgññh. Hñ l h  
 fc/v. Lc/gwl wk ugswk ;x, Cfvi gghp xñx Bi fedn fñbx jwjwf  
 Bcl -bcl pi [ncsxkvc pcfs ejñ xa mc de'hkc Hgghph hkv  
 x]ñ xavxñ ;x, dh ukwkgh fed/cj ejñ cgxdx; , dh vh fñbx uvvh  
 dhkv`ñh[hrv`ñ! Fegc xsc, fñbxñ ; zñ cdxñ xbc dejxaxk!ß

Lwojññ Cfñ Cfvxgghp {cvcgxkx vñzv l xk kctcn si mññx  
 xgc fxngx; vc ukghññ jcnct 'zkvññvx. U, Lc; ;cdc vhoxg ugwf  
 pi [ñckxk rh`s`k` s`kv`nv` mc Lcpcl l cv xñx Cgxñc vevx...  
 âCfvi gghp xñx Bi fedññ l ckñ pcmhgc ej.ß U vevx... âLck  
 rupwl gwr cghrcgcñxkx ; cscñ mc l ckññ rhk`l` l i fñp evck

¹ âKcp[i g-fcgñycßkxk acñpx (Xfñx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 57-[x oi jfcckxk acñpx, 1-[x  
 ]h\, 1-[x [xgv, scp.358. Lcpcl l cv Cfñ g-tcbg Xfñhpxl xk jcpñrxñ xgc, 4-[i  
 [xgv, scp.61-63. Fw ncmhdcjñ Dc/rwfx zb jññxo ; xjhñ kvh (2-[x [xgv, scp.262)  
 vñph hñj`r xbhpgñ redv ejñ xavxñ. Cfvi gghp xñx Bi fedn Debvxk  
 zgñ l i kvck sukññ 64-[i px[ññ xgxkvc Px[hbvñ mc Xñhrvñ oxghtcj xvññs`kh  
 rhgov`. Ukwk pz;wl cñx 67-[x px[ññ xgxkvc Px[hbvñ zgvi ni gvi di mñojñ  
 rcvññ vñmññl ejvx.

² Dekc unhvñ.



fxn acosgc ukwk ejvxdx cl cg ;xl x l i rhfxgc ejl cncl .ß<sup>1</sup>

Cfvi ggph xfkx Bi fednxk zgi l i kvck suknh Xsghl  
[cl xddcjxkvc l zm[wv tcbh Cl cmx mc Lcnmhk ocgxtcgcnx i ]i k  
l i khsxf ugvw mc ukghn dekvck L i hmxdkxk Cgx <sup>TM</sup>  
fhncsxkvc; x sxdhscjxkx hahy`vh redv ugwkxk jcnbvc vhmhl  
ejvxnvxgc.

RI NEDAXK CFVI G-L CGX: MC UKWK UYGW MCGXVXK  
VZMNI KVC: X SxDHSCJX

Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv { hpxbvck fegc ncmhdcj evxn... âCfvi g-  
L cgx; Lcnmhk zbi ki k l hgx; ugvwyw tcbxgcjx mc vi b'i kgi di  
xgc dhkha`, u ; csgcnvck vedxgvx ; x, Cgx (<sup>TM</sup> -k tcbxgcj mc  
i sji kgi di ukh 'xbgx rhgl `a ugswk. U dhoe` fvgxnvx ; x, Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -  
h ha; hn ac; xgvc mc l xkfcngcnvc oi jfcgcnxk hnv`k[h gc/kcj  
ejl c; egc fxn xavxn ; x, fwkwk edfx ukwk zbi kc rhd`vh[hrv`n.  
} i k; x ukghn`k phl `s` Cfvi Lckht zmghvghn` xvvgcn mc mhpvx  
fxn kcsge rhd`v`nv`ghn. Gh; xk u zb pz; wl cjxkxk fi kzmncgcnxkx  
l zp; cl gcjl c; , scgctgcnxkxk jwjvwyw i sgwfw jc/; xv mc jcsvvr  
ejl c; xsjcdxn mc ]hg`a`nv` ; x, [hl hhj Fckx-Phaxl xk mxghdcj mc  
pz; wl cjvck pe] fxn phrr`, fcpncsx ugl hv`y`kh xkhks`kghn,  
ukghnh jcgrxk ejl c; xsjcdxnvx ; x, ukghn`k seddxvgcnxkxk mc  
fzdi ; acosddcjgcnxkxk (; x, ukwk mhsxjcsxgc ri vncj jh`f mc  
ukwkgh xtjxohn mc fha`w[hg`r pxss ejl c; xsjcdxngcn) phg`, 'i [i  
mc vcdcnx fegcvxn. Vel cgx, ukghn`k zbgcnxkxk l ckswf evcnc;  
dugkwk 'ejl c; xsjcvx; gcnx acos pz; wl cj mc mxghdcjvck  
ugvwr[h wbhrvhv`n!

Pcl ]xkxk dhb`n... âSxnc dhhbkghn ncmhdcj evxngcn ; x, Mcgxv  
xfkx Cfvi g-L cgx; zb oxghtcjx vzmni kvc Cgxkx dhv evcnc;  
vedxnvx... âGcckcpwgghpx, ; hkc gwsscfkc gwssxk – Hgghp ukh  
gc/kcj ejxk ; x, uynw ugw uynw vxv!ß U, fw szbi vedckvc,  
Hgghp ; cgl csxkc âbcl l cß denxkc â; csncß menxn, [hl hhj vh  
ukwk fw rcvcn scpmgcnxkvck jcc[[i fgckxnvvgcn, phgfw; x fw  
scpmgcn hvx hvhl ghnvhk fegc, fha menl xnvx. Ukghn pcl vc Cgx  
<sup>TM</sup> -h uynwgwr kxsfcj menl csxkvck jcc[[i fc 'cgxf vedxnvvgcn...  
âFvgl xnx; fwkghn`k phks` fxnx vphh rcnxfcvxn!ß (Mcgxv

---

<sup>1</sup> âJhnnox Dc/rwfxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.261. Lcpcl l cv xfkx Pckctxddc Xl hl  
Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf <sup>TM</sup> -k uvgwvwn ; x, 81-[x px[nx xgxkvc mcthj ejl xavxn.

vhk`ahkvh ]uogw jeokx; x scpmgcnc dug menxnvx.)<sup>1</sup>

Fwkx jcsvxrgcdck vx`cn fxn ncmhdcjvc redv ugwkwn ; x,  
Nwp xfkx Bckfh vevx... Fxn `i k Cfvi g-L cgx; xk dhk`kh `ejvxl  
mc ukw rcl gx phgvh `znvi l . U vevx... âL ck tx; xngcaxncl ; x,  
zbi l vck suknh cncfgcnc ; xl x ph; xl mc [hkxaxk jc/dxk evxl ,  
hl l h fxn ; cs jh`h fxgl xncl .ß Vevxl ...âRi nedaxk nedphkcsx mc  
ukwk hyhs` Mcgxvx wkwjl wswkwbl w?ß Vevx... âEd Bckfhk`k  
uygw, cncfc dhgk`b u ; cs ph; xl ugh fxgcnc ; x, ukghn`k vxgxkvc  
vhk`ah fxgsxk!ß U vedxn... Mcgxv fw szbi eaxjvx; vc hdhyh rhgov` ,  
kcpm hgxl gcnxkx fxn denc ju`ghv` mc ukghngh fxn denvc  
dhahl hyh fhaghv` , hgj` hd l i vvcjxkvc cncf vxgxkx zdncxv.  
Hl l h hgj` hdvhk suknh zbi ki cmmcg; xkvck vhph ]uo khvhk  
`znvi . Cfvi g-L cgx; vevx...âUkwk i bi ngi scfcfx mhnv`n!<sup>2</sup>

PC{ {H{ XFKX DWSXT MC UKWK RI NEDAXK SXDHSCJGCNXXKX  
X{NH EJLC: VC " ZSJCNVXDX SC/DGCN

Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv dhb`n... Pc[[h[ (Hgghp`k gc/kcix ukh ugswk)  
Cgxdc gc/k evxnvx mc ukh gc/k ejl cdc vhn tcnl hk vh menl xavx.  
Fxn `i k si mhn phgvh `evckvc fxn kctcn ukwk rhna`s`kh ]`o`f  
vevx... âEd cl xn! Hxgcl l ckc rhna` l epnxfhks`bg`r evxf mc  
hv`l` Cgx rudl wagn. Xkvx hv`l` vcdxavxn, l ckxl i ]i k fxn  
l i ; hthj jc/dxk ej ; x, ukwkg h rckhcjgckxl , ]i k; x l ck tcrxn mc  
cgxfuahl .ß Pc[[h[ vevx... â: cgl cvc xagc]vxdxk xk[c bcnhtc]gxdc  
`znc scxk fegc hvghkv`nv`l mc txghk; csxk denxkc rudvwl . Fegc  
xsc, ukh jcnc t `ej!<sup>3</sup>

L cs/wvx ncmhdcj evcnc; dhb`n... Fxn `i k Pc[[h[ Cfvi ggph  
xfkx Phkxdc (u, csgck dcl ckgx mc Umv rcfxgcsxkxk c/dhk-  
canhtghn`kvhk xv, Pc[[h[`k jcncvhnghn`kvhk shd`g`nv` mc ukwk  
fi ji k ]hn`al hghn`kvh, egc[c vc Hgghp emxkxk

<sup>1</sup> âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpx (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 1-[x ]xgv, scp.356.  
L cpcl l cv Cfi g-tcbg Xfnhpxl xk jcprxrx, 4-[i ]xgv, scp.57-58. Cfvi g-L cgx;  
L cnmhk 65-[x px[nx xgxkvc oxghtcjc ]hjv` mc 84-[i xgvc mcthj evckvc uygw  
Mcgxvx zbi kc [hkxaxk jc/dxk ejvx.

<sup>2</sup> âJhnnox Xsgl ß (Bcpcfx), 4-[i ]xgv, scp.65, Mcgxvxk jcn[i l edx-phg`.  
Bcpcfx pcl vc âSxdni c/ghl xk-ki fcghß ; xjh`kvh (l-[x ]h\, 4-[i ]xgv,  
scp.251) Nwp xfkx Bckfhk`k jcn[i l edx-phg`kvh dhb`n... âU, ocgxtc Cfvi g-  
L cgx; i ]i k mcbxn pz; l i kvc xv mc 84-[i xgvc mcthj ejl xavxn.ß

<sup>3</sup> âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpx (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 1-[x ]xgv, scp.356.  
L cpcl l cv Cfi g-tcbg Xfnhpxl xk jcprxrx, 4-[i ]xgv, scp.58.

dhkv`n`gl hs`kvh xajxnh; ejl xavx) vevx...âHgghph hkv ugswk! Fxb  
sckc ghdxr ughk l i ;hthj menl cl xax;ß Suknh Tcbhnc  
rcfxgcsxkvck ughk Csl h xfkx Ohnx[ckx ]hy`nv` mc ukh vevx...  
âZb r`b`k` Cfvi gghp xfkx Phkxkxk crvxkc ;e]xnj!ß U vevx...  
âHgghph hkv ugswk, fegc ejl cncl æ ]i k;x fw xavc pe] fxn  
;cnhl cj duovwn.ß Pc[[h[ ahgghr xsjcdxf ukh vevx...âL ck ukwk  
crvxkc ;e]xncncl !ß Suknh ukwk r`b`k` Cfvi gghp`k crvxkc  
;e]xnjvx, vphph suknh dcl ckxgcnxk ncxsx Sc/v xfkx Reds  
Pcl vkhx ]hy`nv` mc ukh vevx... âCfvi gghp xfkx Phkxkx  
emgckvxn!ß U vevx...âUmv rcfxgcsx ;xl vxn ;x, l ck ukghnh r`b  
mencl ?! Hgghph hkv ugswk, pe] mhoj ukwk crvxkc ;e]xnj! cncl ,  
]i k;x fw xavc pe] fxn ;cnhl cj duovwn.ß Pc[[h[ vevx...  
âR`g`k[`l ` ` 'cjxnxk!ß U vevx...âX[hbc men, rud hxgcl gc l camcncj  
evxl .ß U emxkc 'evxf l camcncj ejvx, vevxgc n ;x, edfx duovwn,  
crvxkc ;e]xnj ;x, fw thsxr sckx rcjgc dejxnl csxk. Suknh ukwk  
crvxkc ;e]xnjvx. Fwkvhk suknh Pc[[h[ Cfvi gghp xfkx Phkxdc  
vevx...âEd Cfvi gghp! Lck Fckx Tcbhnc rcfxgcsxkxk seddxvxkxk,  
Pcl vkh rcfxgcsxkxk hyhs`k`k mc : cpgh fzdi di ki k r`b`k`  
sckxk crvxkc ;e]xnjvxl . Sckc egc fxn l crhl menvxl ;x, Umv  
rcfxgcsx i ]i k unhvh pe] fxn den duo vxv.ß Cfvi gghp vevx...  
âHgghp cl xnx shghl hj egcsxk. Fegc vel c, ]i k;x fxbxl egc fxn  
tcbxgcjxl xb mhnv`n ;x, cncfgcnvck pe] fxnx i ]i k fw tcbxgcj  
duovwn!ß Pc[[h[ vevx...âFw phks` tcbxgcjvxv?ß Vevx...âCl xncg-  
l z/l xkxk Usl hk pe] mhoj fxbxl d`y`k[hy`l `bvh szdi a  
szdl cbvx.ß Pc[[h[ vevx...âHgghph hkv ugswk ;x, fw, thdvhg` fxn  
tcbxgcjvxv.ß Vevx...âFxbvck dejl xa l xk kctcn Cl xncg-l z/l xkxk  
L i hmxdcxkxk jcncxkvc Sxttedkvc xajxnh; evxnvx, fxbvck dhgk`b  
fxn kctcn Cfw Jwnhfgh dhkha` vxv. Hgghph hkv ugswk, l ck ukw  
\xs fxn ;xax peshf ejl xnvxl !ß Pc[[h[ vevx...âHgghph hkv ugswk  
;x, fw, thdvhg` fxn tcbxgcjvxv!ß U, vevx...âFxbgcnvck pe] fxn ;xax  
Cfw Jwnhf` semckgcnxk mc ukw mcgx peshf evckgcnxk rhv`kghn`  
xgc emgckl cl xavxn!ß Pc[[h[ vevx...âHgghph hkv ugswk ;x, fw,  
jc/nxtgx fxn tcbxgcjvxv.ß U vevx...âFxbvck egc fxn rhv`k duovwn ;x,  
âc`cn Pi sedk zgvi ni gsc, uk vckc vcme rwnfhkg`r evc[c;ß -  
vedc kcbxn ejl csxk mc fw kcbnxkc vc cl cg ejl csxk.ß Pc[[h[  
vevx...âHgghph hkv ugswk ;x, fw, fcdckxgck fxn tcbxgcjvxv!ß U  
vevx...âFxbgcnvck egc fxn ;xax duovwn ;x, ukh Cfw Jwnhf` gc/k  
evxf szdl c; jc;gxt evxgckvc ukw denxkc dejxnl cl xa ugswk.ß

Pc[[h[ vevx... âHgghph hkv ugswk ;x, fw, jc/nxtc ghdxr fñ  
 tcbxgcjvxñlß U vevx...âFwkvhk zk[c vc ugw Pcscckgc Pi sedkx mc  
 ukghñ`k hkhghñ` Thjxl cklß Pc[[h[ vevx...âHgghph hkv ugswk, fw,  
 jc/nxtc ghdxr fñ tcbxgcjvxñlß U vevx...âCncfgcnvck pe] ;cs fxbxl  
 ;xl x l cghpcj mc 'zbcgxdc l hgx; vedxgvxn.ß Pc[[h[ 'i gi f vevx...  
 âEd Cfh Phkx, fwkw fuaghß } i k; x Cfvi gghp ]uo ]xn; xk xvñ...  
 ukwk i bi kvc hgh[h ocsjcgxdx mhn xvñ, hyb` cdñx, ]c\`zb mc  
 fcvrxdhtc fñ hvhl xvñ.<sup>1</sup>

âJcfcrhjß ;xjh`k`k l i cggxtx Cjxddc xfkx Sc/v xfkx  
 { i khvc Umtxkx jcn[i l edx-phg`k` dhbñ; ck fegc ncmhdcj evñ...  
 Pc[[h[ L cpcl l cv xfkx Rhsxl Scrctxdc fegc dhbv`...âCjxddckx  
 ]hy`n, Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfc gc/k ejsexk, c`cn rcfwg ejl csc, di b  
 ahgghr mwn, fha`k` mc shrrhg`k` r`no.ß L cpcl l cv ukw ]hy`nv`  
 mc Pc[[h[`k l c; jwfwkw ukh 'zsjcnxf uowvw. Cjxddc rcfwg  
 ejl cvñ; vc, ukh di b ahgghr mwnwf fha`k` mc shrrhg`k` jcnha  
 ejvx.<sup>2</sup>

PC{ { H{ -K RHNVA- L CPCL L CV XFKX DWSXT UKWK  
 DUGWKV VHMHL EJVNXX

Bcpcfx Pi [n Lcvcnxvck fñ ncmhdcj kcrj ejl xavñ ;x,  
 ukwk oi ghscsx fegcvñ... Pi [n vedñ... Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgx l ckc  
 vevx...âC`cn l ckx gc/k ejl c; fhncsxkvc sckc tcnl hk menscgñ,  
 kc evc[c; sck?ß Vevxl ...âL c`cn fw ughk xavñl x?ß Vevx...âFcgxlß  
 Vevxl ...âKc evxl ?ß Vevx...âL ckx gc/k ej, gh; xk l ckvck  
 febhng`r ejl clß

U vedñ... Kcphdcj, Pc[[h[`k rhnvha` L cpcl l cv xfkx

<sup>1</sup> âL wnw[wb-bcpcfß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.144â âKcp[i g-fcgghyckkx acñpx (Xfkx  
 Cfxg-Pcvv), 1-[x [xgv, scp.357â L cpcl l cv Cf i g-tcbg Xfnhpxl xk jcpñrx, 4-[i  
 [xgv, scp.61.

<sup>2</sup> âJcfcrhjß (xfkx Sc/v), Hmnu`h ]h`, 2-[x [xgv, scp.212-213â âJhñox  
 Jcfcnß, Hmnu`h ]h`, 2-[x [xgv, scp.249â âJcpbxfwj-jcpbxfß, 7-[x [xgv, scp.224-  
 226â âJcrñxfwj-jcpbxfßvc vedxgn... Cjxddckx pcvxskx Fwoñx, Cfw Vhmñv,  
 Jñl xbx mc Xfkx L h[c ncmhdcj ejl xagn. U, 111-[x px[nx xgkvc mthj  
 ejl xavñ. L cpcl l cv xfkx Rhsxl Scrctx Thñs cdhgckxkvc scñ;cnvc xvñ.  
 Pc[[h[ 90-[` xgvc ukh tcnl hk menl xavñ ;x, Sxkv cdhgckxk tcjp ejl c; i ]i k  
 unh ruawk denxsxk. U pcl xk denc 'evxf unhk` tcjp ejvx mc `hvahp`k`  
 zgvi nvi. Ukwk cgx xgc tcjp evxgc dengcnvck ]h;xsjhk`k : cnh]x mc L wjghkx  
 cdhgckcnxkx redv ejl c; ughñ. Si gedl hk oxghtcjc ]jhk bhl hk Pc[[h[`k  
 jc/dxk ejvxdx mhgxkx ]`ohn`f L cpcl l cv xfkx Rhsxl x pcfs ejvx mc u, 92-[x  
 px[nx xgkvc mthj ejvx.

Dwsxt l ckc 'zsjcnxa menvx ;x, Cgxkx gc/k evxl . L ck vevxl ...  
 âCl xn l ckc tcnl hk menxn ;x, Cgxkx gc/k evxl . Ukh gc/k evxk,  
 Hgghp`k gc/kc]x ukh ugswk!ß  
 Fxn kctcnvck fharh pe] ;cs ukwk szbi ki k l c/khs`k`  
 fhah vi al cvx.<sup>1</sup>

## ZL CN XFKX CFVI G-CBxB RI NEDA SXDHSCJGCNXXKX |UBWN

Zl cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxb cl cmx ocgxtcgcnxkxk sxdhscjx xgc  
 l i ohgxtcjc rhgov` mc 'zsjcnxa menvx ;x, Xl hl Cgx™ -h gc/k  
 ejl cdx jcn; ejsxkgn. Scfcfx vc Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxvxk mc  
 fharhghn`k`k kcrgejvxdx hahy`vh;` phvxscvx...

Dhb`ngn ;x, Zl cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxb vedxn! xa... L ck wahr  
 mhoj` l jfc xfkx Lcs/wvwk zmghvghn`k`k fc/bxgcnxkxk dhk`kvh  
 Rwn/hk zdnckxnvxl . Fxn `ik ukwk wahrgn` xgc udkhv`y`l  
 phgvh Cgxdc gc/k ejvxl . U fxbxl dhk`l`bvkh ;e]xnvx mc fw  
 szbi eavvxf xaxl xbx ouaghl hv`. Lcs[xvc vhoxg ugvrwvhl ck  
 wahrgnvhk hdn`g`f ukwk dhk`kh `ejvxl ;x, pxtb ejvxdxl  
 vcnsgecnx ukwk i]jik uowdwl . U l ckx `znck ;xl x hdhyh  
 rhgo`f khl hb`r`gl hyh fhgaghv` mc khl hb`k` ]uo wbjv`. Fegc  
 ;x, l ckvck xk[xvxdxkx pxss ejvxl . Khl hb` rwnjhnr`rvhk  
 suknh i b-`zbi ki jwnawjvw, l ck jcc[[i fgc ukh vevxl ...âFxbxl  
 aedoxl xbc kc ugl wavwn?!ß U vevx...âUygw! Sck fw `ik Cgxkx  
 gc/k ejvxl x?!ß Vevxl ...âFcgx!ß Vevx...âPhnhvhk fxxnsck ;x,  
 Hgghp-jhhgh Fcvn cpgxkvck nhb` ugvrwvhl suknh, suknvhk  
 ukghnh rcbcfgckvx?!ß Vevxl ...âLc`cn Cgx Fcvn cpgxkvck xvxl x?!ß  
 Vevx...âMhd ugswk sck! Lc`cn fijik Fcvn ukvhk fharh  
 fxnxsxkx xvxl x?!ß Vevxl ...âFxn vph j;c;nhn ejl cncl !ß Vevx...  
 âHgghp` ahpxv jwjwnshkl` ;x, fxn vph j;c;nhn ejl cdc[c;sck?!ß  
 Vevxl ...âFcgx.ß Ukvhl suknh ukw pe] mhoj gc/k ejl cvxl .ß<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âJhnxowg-Xsghl ß (Bcpcfx), 4-[i [xgv, scp.51-52. Lcpcl l cv xfkx Dwsxt  
 Scrctxkxk jcn[i l edx-phg`. Pi [n xfkx Reds Pcl vkhx Lcvcnx Dcl ck  
 vhyghn`kvhl fxnx ughk Lcvcnc l ckswf xv. Xfkx Pc[cn ukwk fhncsxkvc  
 dnb`n...âSxrc (e/jxl hv ugwkhl) jhfexkvn mc ukwk pcvxskx Cfw Vhmwv,  
 Kcshx, Xfkx Lh[c ncmhdcj ejl xagcn.ß Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âJcpbxfwj-  
 jcpbxfß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.215ââJcrnxfwj-jcpbxfß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.155-vc l zm[wvvn.

<sup>2</sup> âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpx (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), Lcpcl l cv Cfi g-tcbg  
 Xfnhpxl xk jcprrx, 4-[i [xgv, scp.58-59ââJhnxox Vcl carß (Xfkx Csh;xn),  
 âLc[l cdx egl xde xsghl xßvc cgdhbl h jcsmxnx (12-[x [xgv, 1321-[x xg, cgxt),

Fwkvhk suknh [i l c 'i kgcnx L cvxkvc r`g`khk [i l c  
khl hb`kh 'evxn, hjhl `k oijfcgcnxkc rwghr hs`nv`l (hjhl  
L cvxkckxk cl xnx xv) mc 'zni nvil ; x, u, oijfcgcnvc phd-; i d  
ru\hn`n, gh; xk Cgx ™ -h ]hjkhvh fc/bx khghdxr szbgcn vkh`a`n  
mc fw bhl hk kc rcvcn ri vncjsxb ugvwywkw, vxgxkxk ju\wr  
]hgv`y`k` dhgk`b Hgghp fxgn. L ck fw xavck jcc[[i fgckvxl , fxn  
'i k ukvhk sunwavwl ...âHjh [hk! Sck [hl hhj hnhs`kvh 'zbcg szb  
wsjhs`, ck tcshpcjgx mc fcghycjgx hvhl shk, gh; xk fxgl xnci kc  
i ]i k zb l c[gsxkvc fw ; xaxdc khghdxr szbgcn vedxf gc/k  
ejl cdc ]hjkhvh vxgxk fxn hb ju\wr ]hg`n mc 'i [si b ugwnskh?ß  
U vevx...âUygl ! Lckxl l xkfcncv; x ]`o`a`l h rwghr hsl hyh  
'cgck Ahl cpgx mc fharhghn` sckxk hjhk`k fw ; xaxkxk tcbxgcjx  
fhncsxkvc fxgvx; gcnxkx fxgscdvxcn, pe] mhoj fxbc jhfe  
ugl hbv`ghn!ß

Wahrg`rvh l i cggl xl xk vevx; gcnxkx ohj`nghjv`rvh, ukwk  
szbgcnx l ckxl [hk`l h ujwnvw mc Hgghpgh cpv`ledl hk  
fhyghv`l ; x, c'cn fxn mhoj ph; xl xddcjc ]hjnhhl sh, fw i sgwfw  
vcdxac[cdcl . Hgghp vh l ckc l xkckj rudvw mc oxghtcjc  
]hjv`l , fw bhl hk fw szbi gcym ejvxl mc hahy`vh; `hdckx  
ukwk denxkc rudvwl ...

﴿إِنَّ اللَّهَ يَأْمُرُ بِالْعَدْلِ وَالْإِحْسَانِ وَإِيتَاءِ ذِي الْقُرْبَىٰ وَيَنْهَىٰ عَنِ الْفَحْشَاءِ وَالْمُنْكَرِ وَالْبَغْيِ  
يَعْظُمُ لَعَلَّكُمْ تَذَكَّرُونَ﴾

âHgghp sabc cl n evxn ; x, cvhgcjgx ugwf epshk evcsxkxb mc dho`k  
hvhl ghn`k`bh fcoaxa evcsxkxbæ U sabc tcpahvhk, l i k; cnvck, bi gl vck ]c; xkvxn, x,  
sabc zdiv-kcsxpcj menxn ; x, fcg; c rcfwg evcsxkxb.B<sup>1</sup> Mc fwkw dhh`f fi ji k  
cdhgcjgcnc 'zkvcnvxl .B<sup>2</sup>

: csxn xfkx Cfvi n-Ncpl hk, fw xax 'znvi di kc 'znc Zl cn  
xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxbx jc/nxtgcdcnc; vedxn...

وَلَيْتَ فَلَمْ تَشْتَمْ عَلَيَّ وَلَمْ تَخَفْ      بَرِيًّا وَلَمْ تَقْبَلْ إِسَاءَةً مُّجْرِمٍ

Zl cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxbxk jcn[i l edx-phg`. U, 99-[w px[nx xgxkvc oxghtcjc  
]hjl `a mc 101-[x xgvc bcpcngckvxnxcnc; mcthj ejl xavxn.

<sup>1</sup> âKcpgß swncsx, hdc.90

<sup>2</sup> âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpx (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 7-[x oijfcckxk acnpx.  
Ukwkwk oi ghscsx âJhnnox Jcfcnß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.305æ âJhnnox Xfkx Csxñß, 5-[x  
[xgv, scp.16æ âL wnw[wb-bcpcfß (L cs/wvx), 3-[i [xgv, scp.184-vc vc redv  
ugwkl wavwn.

وَكَفَرْتُ بِالْغُفْرِ الذُّنُوبَ مَعَ الَّذِي أَتَيْتُ فَاضْحَى رَاضِيًا كُلُّ مُسْلِمٍ

âPh;xl ugvwk mc Cgxdc khghdxr szbgcn vel cvxk, fxn  
;csvck vc runol hv`k.

Pe] fxn 'i khp;hn mc \xs acosc \xs szb vedxgl csxkx rcfwg  
ejl cvxk.

"cjaxnvxdxk aedgcngc fi ji k 'i khpgghn`k ctm evxgvx.

Fi ji k l i scgl hkghn` zbi kvck nhb` mc ouakwv egcvxk.ß

Seddxv Ncbx xsc fegc vedxn...

يَا ابْنَ عَبْدِ الْعَزِيزِ لَوْ بَكَتِ	الْعَيْنُ فَتَى مِنْ أُمِّيَّةَ لَبَكَيْتُكَ
غَيْرَ أَنِّي أَقُولُ إِنَّكَ قَدْ طَبِتَ	وَأَنْ لَمْ يَطْبُ وَلَمْ يَزُكْ يَبِتُكَ
أَنْتَ نَزَهْتَنَا عَنِ السَّبِّ وَالْقَدْ	فَ فَلَوْ أَمَكْنَ الْجَزَاءَ جَزَيْتُكَ

âEd Cfvi g-Cbxbxk uygw! C'cn 'zbpgcn

Fckx-l l cddcvck fxn [hmhkh hyghsh,

L ck vc sckxk i ]i k hyghdh[hyhl .

HI l h l ck vedxncl ;x, sck \h; ugvwk,

Fhol h ;x, sckxk kcsghxk kc \h; , kc \h; xbc xv.

Sck fxbx szdi avck, jzpl cjvck \h; i -l i fcnnh ejv.

C'cn l i ; hthj xl ; hk` ugsh, l i ; hthj mencncl sckclß

Fwkwwgh fegc, Zl cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxb fxn ke]c scfcfc 'znc  
zb xagcnxkvc l i mettcxddcj rhbkhk fxgl cvx. U [i l gcvck...

1-U 'i ki k l i scgl hkghn` Xl hl Cgx™ -` gc/k ejl cdc  
hvcj ejl xavxgc mc ukw vcdxaxgl cb fxn si kkc shd'nv`ghn. Fegc  
;x, ukghnvkh fc/bxgcx fw xax pcjjh Zl cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxbxk  
vzmni kvc vc jcn; ejl cvxgc. Fwkh Pcnnhk cphgxskx l xshg  
'zsjcnl c; ughn... âL z/[cl i g-fi gvkhß ;xjh`k`k l i cgxxtx mc  
L cs/wvx ukghn`k fhncsxkvc fegc dnb`n... âCgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfx  
gc/k ejl c; fxv/cjx [i l c khl hbghn`k`k oi jfcgcnxkvck  
'zji ni gvi ;vc Pcnnhk cphgxskx - Hgghp ukghn` zgvi nsi k! - fw  
xavck xl jxkh evcnc; vevxgc... âKhl hb, Cfw Jwnhfh gc/k  
ejl cvck khl hb shd'gl `n!ß Ukghn fxn xg l i vvcjxkvc, rhnh  
\hgjhng`ghn l canxr jcnctvck (Ounhshkvkh) rxdhl evckc rcvcn

<sup>1</sup> âCyhkkß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.205, ncmhdcjvc hbb[`r tcnrgc.

<sup>2</sup> âVxmhw Seddxv Ncbxß, 124-[i kzl ncæ âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpx (Xfkx  
Cfxg-Pcvxv), 1-[x [xgv, scp.357.

fw xac xsnhn ejvxgn.<sup>1</sup>

2-ZI cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxbvck suknh CI cmx ocgxtcgcnx fw ]xn;xk mc dhnhl hb hvcjx cmmcgvc ugvyw ;xl x vhmhl ejvxnl cdc fhaghv'ghn.

PXABL XFKX CFVI G-L CGX: RI NEDA MC CL CMX

SXDHSCJGCNXX VHMHL EJVNXXN

Xfkx Csh; xn {i khvc xfkx CI n xfkx {i kedvxx jcn[i l edx-phg'kvh dnb'n... (U, Fckx-l l cddckxk pcl \edl hk' vx.) {i khvc zb fhfh's {i kedvxx vxgkvck fegc ncmhdcj evxn... âPumnhkvkh Vcl carc 'cgvxl ;x, zb l hha'l `hg'l . {i l c khl hb'k' r'gv'l , Fhfww-vcn[vck ]`ohkvh, 'znvi l ;x, Cfw Aedfc hv'g' f'xn ;xax [hl hhjh khy'g vkh'a'n. Ukwk menvxdx l i qvcgcnvck semxkxf, runowjl hghn'kvkh ]uo hyghv'l , szbi rwnjhnhkvh vevx... âL c[gxsl Cfw Jwnhfh gc/k ejl c;gc sukh ]hjv'n'nhl !ß Phl `g'rgf Cfw Jwnhf gc/k ejvxgn. Lck shy jcnctxl vc vhdhkhk hvhl h vevxl ... âCfw Jwnhf ;xl vxn?ß Vevx... âCgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfâ |edycl fcnxk r'b' Bcpnhk'k cnxvxn, xl hk 'cjxnck xg; acosvxn, Pcsckgc Pi sedkxk hjhs'v'n!ß Vevxl ... âFw khy'g vedckc kc ugl wavwn?ß Ukh jcnct pi [wl ejvxl , wbwk shrrhg'kvkh dh'a'f i bi kc sxgc mwnl hyh fhaghv'l mc fha'k' vxmnhh ]'n'v'l . Fxnvck l cs[xvxx ;eax;]xgcnx 'cgxf l ckx jwjvwghn, cfhl `fudkwl h hj'f l ckx si ni dc-si ni dc Pxahl xfkx Cfvi g-L cgx; xk dhk'kh h'hnv'ghn. Cfw Aedfc l ckvck rhfhr unh vhoxg ugvw mc tcndhv evcnc; vevx... âDh CI xncg-l z/l xkxk! "zn sckc mc sckxk hjh-fhfghn'kh khy'g vedckx kc 'i kc shgl `aghn!ß Pxahl vevx...â: xl sckx fegc ejl xavxn?ß âVevx... Fw ;xax!ß Pxahl l ckx fho'f vevx...âEd Cfh Dcpdh! Kc mhoj 'cgl xsck?ß Vevxl ... âVi kck. CI xncg-l z/l xkxkxk dhk'kh 'cgcn; ck [i l c khl hb'k'k mhoj' 'cgxf ]hjv'. Khl hb' r'gv'l , Fhfww-vcn[vck ]`ohkvh 'znvi l ;x, fw aedo khy'g vedxn. Ukwk dhk'kvh ujwnvwl . U vevx, fxb vc eajvx; . Fc/bxgcnx semxkvx, fc/bxgcnx xsc ;cvcngckvx. Suknh vwh ejvx, fxb vc âhl xk!ß vevx; . Szbgcnxkxk ho'n'kvh vevx... âL c[gxsl xbx Cfw Jwnhfh gc/k ejl c;gc sukh ]hjv'nhf.ß Lck

<sup>1</sup> âL wnw[wb-bcpcfß (L cs/wvx), 3-[i [xgv, scp.254â âL z/[cl i g-fi gvkhß ;xjh'kvh âpcnnhkß l hvvcxkvc vedxgn... Pcnhk - L wsg, Ahl mc Nwl (Ji n; xdc) denx i bcxkvc dengack f'xn acpcnvxn. Scgctx l cbpcfxxkxk jc/sxs]xsx Xfkx Jedl xddc vc unhvhk dhnhkl `av'n (728-[x xgvz zgi fvi n).



vevxl ; x, âCfw Jwnhf ; xl vxn?ß Vevxgcñ ; x, Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf  
 – xg; l i scgl hk, |edycl fcnxk cl x uygwsw, Pcsckgc Pi sedkxk  
 hjhs`, |edycl fcnxk r`b`k`k cnx. Hgghph hkv ugsww, dh Cl xncg-  
 l z/l xkxk! C'cn fxn ; csxk scxkxgc rupwl gwyw ugshdv` mc fegc  
 gc/kcjpgcnc vi ]hn ugshdv`, ukwkgg ejvxdxl cl cgx pcl xk acosgc  
 vc evcnvxl . Fcs ke[c ugwn ; x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk rupwl wkh  
 mc u pcbncjxk r`b`k`k cnxkc vedxgck szbgcnvck  
 rcbcfgckl cdxl ?ß Pxahl vevx... â}uo \xs xa 'znl i avi nß Suknh  
 Sxkv pz; wl cjxkxk tcnl hk`k` l ckxl i ]i k dhhv`, zb  
 cjhnt`kvh;`ghnh vevx... âFw ; xl x acosgcñ fwnhvh, l ckxl  
 ;ckhn`l vh ugl hl hg`v`n, c;s phgvh, fxbxl 'znvi di l i b xax  
 \w]h ]`ohnvhn mc acpcnvc xyjxaha dhnvhn. Fwkh 'znc vc ukw  
 wblr fxn denc – Sxkvc¹ 'zkvcnvxl ! U vh mcthj ejvxdx mhojh  
 rcvcn unhvh rhgv`ß

Ahxn ukwk fhncsxxvc fegc vedxn...

فَعَلَى الْجُودِ وَالْجَنِّدِ السَّلَامُ ذَهَبَ الْجُودُ وَالْجَنِّدُ جَمِيعًا

â{wv (epshk) xgc {i kedv pcn x; xsx hnhvvhk 'ejvx.

Pcl {wvh, pcl {i kedvc thjxpc uowl hr ghb`l v`n!ß

Redv ugwkhhkghn Cl cmx ocgxtcsx Pxahl xfkx Cfvi g-  
 L cgx; xk nctjhn` xv. Suknh;` fcpsvc ukwk xa]xgcnxkxk  
 nctjhngghn`kvhk fc/bxgcnxkx redv evc[cdx; ...

OHGXV XFKX CFVI GGHP RCSNX MC UKWK NCTJHNGHN-

L i fcncv âCg-; hl xgß ; xjh`kvh dhh`n... Ohgxv xfkx  
 Cfvi gghp Rcsnx Pxahl `k oxghtcjx vzmni kvc (u fw vzmncv  
 Xnhr`k cl xnx xv) l xkfcnvc Cgxdc gc/k evxf vedxnvx...  
 â|cnmcnvx'hnh! Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf xfkx Cfvi g-L i j]cgxf xfkx  
 Phaxl c – |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk r`b`k`k cnxkc, Pcsckgc  
 Pi sedkxk hjhs`kh gc/kc j ej!ß Suknh [hl hhjh i b ji ji f vedxnvx...  
 âUkw dhwa` jcrvxl ejvxl l x?ß³

¹ âL z/[cl i g-fi gvkhß ; xjh`kvh vedxgn... Sxkv – Pxxvxsjhk, : enl hk mc  
 Sxsjhk hnhs`kvh dengcack fxn l ckjcrckxk hv`v`n ; x, phb`n;` |h; xsjhk  
 zg; csxkxk rcnf cdhgcjxkc hxvvxn.

² âJcpbxfw jhnnox Vcl carß (Xfkx Fcvnhk), 3-[i [xgv, scp.410. {i khvc xfkx  
 Cl n xfkx {i kedvxk jcn[i l edx-phg` mc ukwk r`sh ac; xgvc xbhph` Xfkx  
 L ckbnwvk ; xjh`kvh (6-[` [xgv, scp.116-117-118) redv ugwk l wavwn.

³ âCg-; hl xgß, Hmnu`h ]h`, scp.414æ âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpx (Xfkx Cfxg-  
 Pcvxv), 1-[x [xgv, scp.356æ Cfxg-hffhs L i fcncv L cpcl l cv xfkx Debv  
 Cbwvx Fcsnx, kcpm hgxl gcnxkvck mc cnf phtxbgcnxkvckvx. U, Fhyvhvvh

Ohgxv xfkx Cfvi ggghp Rcsnx ;xl xv?

Fxbxl kcbcnxl xbvC Cfwg-pedscl Ohgxv xfkx Cfvi ggghp Rcsnx l csxpx vxkxkvc vxv<sup>1</sup> mc l i scgl hkghn`k fedji g-l hg`k`k mhsxjcsxgc scohmcjgx ugl wa, ukw [hl hhjh ocn[gcl c;gc phl `k`k pzn l cjxkx rhbhl `av`. U, Cfvi g-L cgx; xk uyghkghn` – Mcgxv, Si gedl hk mc Pxahl jcnctxkvck L c; ; ckxk mhgxsv vxv. Pxahl `k jcnctxkvck vc Xnhr`k mhgxsv ugl wavw. Xfkx Csh;xn ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg`kvh fegc dhb`n... U, L c; ;cdc fxn sw ]c; vxnvx, Bcl bcl xk ;ckhn`kvh ;x]x; fxn pumwb vi bcgjvxnvx, suknh ]`o`a evcnc; vevx...âSxbxk i ]i k kcbcnvc jwjvwywkwb swdw 'cjxnvxl æ egc fxn sw ;x, l l l i g-Ockhtxs (dc/kx Bcl bcl swdw) xgc pe] fxn uoahng`y` duovwn mc Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfc dhnhl hb szbgcn vedxnvx.ß U vedxn...âOhgxv egc szbgcn vkh`av` ;x, fcdhk evxgl csx ncmh vedxgvxn.ß Pcl ]xkxk vedxn... Ohgxv fxn oi jfc uowdhnhr vevx...âHggghp hkx ugsww, c'cn Cl xncg-l z/l xkxk l ckc tcnl hk mensc, : c/fckxk vhaghn`k` fxn-fxn sz; i f vhy`vhnhl !ß

Pxahl ho`nvh Ohgxvx Dwsxt xfkx Zl cnc (Xnhr`k px; xl xkc) jcpmxg menvx mc u vh 126-[] px[nx xgxkvc Ohgxvx bxkvkhk shg`f cbhf-cbxdcdj menvx; vck suknh rcjgc dejxnvx.<sup>2</sup>

Xfkx Oi ggc; hk dhb`n...âOhgxv zb emxkvc hkhs` i ]i k ;x]x; fxn ;xgsc jx; l xavx.ß<sup>3</sup>

Fxn szbgc, Cl cmx oxghtc]x mhn`i [i xgc ]hg`a`nv` ;x, l i scgl hkghn` Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k hv mc ohjxncsxkvck wbrghav`ns`k. Ukghn fw dugvh u rcvcn xncgxgl xavxgc; x, pcjjh wahrghnh Cgx hv` rudwgl hs`k` vh rhvhyhk ejl xavxgc.

*FCKX-I L CDDC CGX HV- XGC VC L I FHNXBC H/HN-N...*

Xfkx Pc[cn Cgxddxfkx Nxfhp`k jcn[i l edx-phg`kvh dhb`n... Fckx-l l cddc pcn mhoj fxn ;zn`ckxk hv`k`k Cgx rudwgl hs`k`

---

dhahl `a mc 285-[x xgvc mchj ejl xavxn. Ukwk ck l capwn ;xjh`f`âCg-;hl xgßvx. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg`âJhnnox Fhyvhvß ;xjh`f`kvh redv ugwkl wavwn.

<sup>1</sup> Fw i kmhkghn acnrai khs Vx Oi dckxk dhbv`y`âTepnesjx Jcfcnxß ;xjh`f`kvh (scp.163) redv ugwkl wavwn.

<sup>2</sup> âL i ojcsnw jhnnox Vcl carß (Xfkx L ckbn), 7-[x [xgv, scp.369-384.

<sup>3</sup> Fw szbi Xfkx : csxn zb jhnxo ;xjh`f`kvh (10-[w [xgv, scp.221) ncmhdcj ejl xavxn. L cjkv redv ugwkhhkghn ukwk szbgcnxvxn. Ohgxvxk ocfcngcnxkxk fc/bxgcx vc âLwnw[wb-bcpcfßvc (3-[i [xgv, scp.120, 174, 280) mc Xfkx Oi ggc; hk`k ;xjh`f`kvh (2-[x [xgv, scp.7) redv ugwkl wavwn.

eaxjscdvxgc, ukw vcnphg rcjgc dejxnxnvxgc. Fw ocfc n Nxfhp`k  
 rwghy`kh ]hjv`rvh vevx... âLckxl uygwl wk hv` l gedvxn  
 (âCgxßkxk ;x]xgj l c tunl hs`.)ß Ukwk Cgx hv`kvhk h[`y` 'cgxn mc  
 uygkw fw hvgh ]hy`nhkgghn rcbcfgckxnx! U pcl ]xkxk dhn`n...  
 Cgxddxfkx Nxfhp vedxnvx ;x, âpcn ;cs l ckx Cgx ]hy`nsh, ukw  
 fhv`aghl hnhl . } i k ;x l ckxl hv`l l gedvxn!ß<sup>1</sup>

Zl cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxbxk mc Pxahl xfkx Cfvi g-Lcgx; xk  
 jcn[i l edx-phg`kvhk hdv`k ugwn ;x, xl hl Cgx™ -h gc/k ejl c;  
 Fckx-l l cddc jcnctxkvck, zbi vc u pcbncjxk di ;sc; l crhl mc  
 l ckbxgcjxkx fxgc-fxgc x[hv evxgl xavx. Fegc ;x, Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv  
 ncmhdcj evcnc; dhn`n... Pxahl xfkx Cfvi g-Lcgx; pc[[c 'ejvx mc  
 pc[[ l zmsi l i kvc oijfc uowvw. Fxn kctcn ukwk rhna`s`kh  
 ]`o`f vevx... âDh Cl xncg-l z/l xkxk! Fw 'i k egc fxn 'i kvi n ;x,  
 ocgxtgc n u 'i kvc Cfw Jwnhf` gc/k ejl cdx l i sjcpcf fxgl xagcn!ß  
 Pxahl vevx... âFcsvx n! Fxb fw xa i ]i k 'cgl cl xax; !ß<sup>2</sup>

Pxahl `k pc[[ l zmsi l i kvc Cgx™ -` gc/k ejl c; vck  
 ]c; xkl csxkxk scfcfx egc Cfvi g-Cbxbxk Lcvxkvc [i l c  
 khl hb`k`k oijfcsxkvc Cgx™ -h dhnhl hb szbgcn vel c;  
 xsjcvxdx bhl hk vxgxkxk ju\wr ]hgl hs`kh scfcf ughk aed vxv.  
 Fegc ;x, ukw zb uygw Zl cn i ]i k fcdhk evcnc; vel xavx...  
 âUygwl ! Lckxl oijfcgc nxl c rwghr hsl hyh 'cgckgc n – Ahl  
 unvwghn`, shnhd xa]xgc n mc fharhghn` – c`cn hjhk`k fw ;xax (Cgx)  
 tcbxgcjgc n fhncsxkvc fxgvxdxkx fxgscdvxgc, pe] fxnx fxbc xjhcj  
 ejl cbvxlß

Vel cgx, Fckx-l l cddc mc Ri neda ocgxtgc nxlkxk fw l zmbw  
 xgc cghrcvhn sxdhscjx ]edycl fc n-C; ncl vck suknh;` Ri neda  
 oxghtcjxkxk fhkxgc nxlkxk sxdhscjxkc jhfevx n! Fw sxdhscjxk Xsghl  
 [cl xddcjxkvc rudvwyw jc/sxngcn Fckx-l l cddcvck suknh vh  
 rhgl `av`. Suknh;` fzgl cvc Hffhsx ocgxtgc nxlkxk vzmni kvc  
 ukghn`k 'znvi ;gc n xagcn phrr`kvh fcps evc[cdx; .

<sup>1</sup> âJcpbxfwj-jcpbxfß, 7-[x ]xgv, scp.319. Cgx xfkx Nxfhp Gcol xkxk  
 jcn[i l edx-phg`. (114, dhowv 117-[x xgvc mchj evxf).

<sup>2</sup> âKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnp (Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv), 1-[x ]xgv, scp.356.

## 1-HGXL GCN JCFCRC SXKXK CL CG MC NCTJHN-

Xfkx Pc[cn Pcnxb xfkx Usl hk Pcl sxk<sup>1</sup> jcn[i l edx-phg`kvh dhb`n...âU, Cgxkx jckrxv evxn mc ukh rhna` pzn l cjsxbgx; 'zsjcnxnvx.ß Xsl hxg xfkx Cddha<sup>2</sup> vedxn...âPcnxb xfkx Usl hk xgc fxngx; vc L xsxnvck Lc; ;cdc 'cgvx; . U vhl Cgxdc khghdxr szbgcn vedxn mc ukh gc/k evxnvxlß Pcl ]xkxk vedxnvx...âEaxjvxl ;x, Pcnxb xfkx Usl hk fegc vedxn...â{hl hhj`k Cgx fhncsxkvc |edycl fcnvck kcr g ejvx; gcnx âsckxkgc l ckxl l i khsxfcjxl Phnwkg h L wshk`k l i khsxfcjx ;xl xvxnß pcvxsx phrv`n, gh; xk eavvck ocjh ejl xavxn.ß Sunwavwl ... âKe[c l c'cn?ß Vevx...âPcvxsxk vi bi âSckxkgc l ckxl l i khsxfcjxl Rhnwkg h L wshk`k l i khsxfcjx ;xl xvxnß - ugl hg`v`n.ß

Cbv x vedxn...âPcnxb xfkx Usl hk ncmhdcj evxn ;x, |edycl fcn vcmcdc l xkl c; xsjcdckvc, Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf 'cgvx mc vcmckxk di dckxkx h]v` ;x, |edycl fcn denc d'o`gs`k.ß

Dcpdh xfkx Shgepc<sup>3</sup> vevxgc n...âKc i]i k Pcnxb xfkx Usl hkv h k fxn aed ncmhdcj ejl xnsck?ß U vevx...âFegc fxn ;csvck ke[c ncmhdcj kcr g evxl , phgfw;x, devvx xg ukwkg h fxngx; vc si fp khl hb` r'gv`l , u, Cgxdc dejl xa vctc gc/kcj 'zkvcnl cdxk[c l cs[xvvck ]`ol hbv`.ß

Xfkx Pcfffhk vedxn.<sup>4</sup> âU, si fp mc hoahl mhojghn` Cgxdc dejl xa vctc gc/kcj 'zkvcnvnv.ß

## 2-Ph;xl gc n jcfrcsxxkxk cl cg mc nctjhn`

Xfkx Pc[cn, Kcsn xfkx Cgxkxk jcn[i l edx-phg`kvh dhb`n...

<sup>1</sup> Pcnxb xfkx Usl hk (63-[i xgvc mcthj evxf). Xfkx Pc[cnxk âJcpbxfwj-jcpbxfß ;xjh`kv h (2-[x [xgv, scp.237-240) mc âJcrnxfwj-jcpbxfß ;xjh`kv h (1-[x [xgv, scp.159) ukwk fhncsxkvc vedxgn...âU, sxrc mc e/jxl hv g` fxn acosvxn mc khsxfxg;gc l i jcpxl ugwkwn. Ukwk pcvxsgcnxkx Fwohnx mc vx`cngcnx – L i sgi l vck fharh – ncmhdcj ejl xagcn.ß Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âJcpbxfw jhnox Xfkx Csh;xnß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.116-118-vc redv ugwkl wavwn.

<sup>2</sup> Xsl hxg xfkx Cddha 81-[x, dhowv 82-[x xgvc mcthj ejl xavxn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âJcrnxfwj-jcpbxfß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.73-vc redv ugwkl wavwn. Ukwk pcvxsxkx âSi cckß l i cgxtgc n vc kcr g ejl xagcn.

<sup>3</sup> Dcpdh xfkx Shgep. âJcrnxfwj-jcpbxfß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.349-vh vedxgn ;x, ukwk pcvxsxkx âSxphß mc âSi cckß l i cgxtgc n ncmhdcj ejl xagcn.

<sup>4</sup> Cpl cv xfkx Pcfffhk Cfw Phjcl Fcsjx, oi gct h l c;jcfxkxk l capwn nx[hgai khs`v`n mc 354-[i xgvc vi kdhvhk 'ejl xavxn.

Kcsn xfkx Cgx, Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfkx pcvxsxkx ncmhdcj evxnvx...  
 |edycl fcn Pcsckgc Pi sedkxk cgxkvck jwjnhnr fwdwnvw...  
 إِنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ (ص) أَخَذَ بِيَدِ حَسَنِ وَحُسَيْنٍ فَقَالَ: مَنْ أَحَبَّنِي وَأَحَبَّ هَذَيْنِ وَأَبَاهُمَا  
 وَأُمَّهُمَا كَانَ فِي دَرَجَتِي يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ

âPcn ;cs l ckx mc fw x;xsxkx hjh-hkhs` xgc fxgx;vc semsc, rxdhl cj 'iki  
 l ckxl gc fxn vcnc[cvc ugh[hrv'n.ß  
 L i jcmc; ; xg fw pcvxsxk ncmhdcj evxgl csxkvck  
 rcbcfgckcnc; 'zsjcnxa menvx ;x, ukh l xk ahggghr mwnswkghn.  
 Hl l h, {c/tcn xfkx Cfxi g-Mhpxv ukwk fhncsxkvc mhsxjc]xgx;  
 ejvx mc L i jcmc; ; xgc vevx... âFw, Cpgx-si kkcvcckvx.ß Fwkvhk  
 suknh ukw hbhv ejvxgc.¹

3-l l wl ohgr ; i jcsxkxk cl cg mc nctjhn`

Bcpafx Xfkx Scrrhk`k jcn[i l edx-phg`kvh dnb`n... âXl hl x-  
 Phtxb, L i pcvvxsx-Mhsxj Cfw L cpcl l cv Cfxi ggghp xfkx  
 L cpcl l cv xfkx Usl hk Mhsxjx fxn vctc âJednß pcvxsxkx  
 ncmhdcj ejvx, [hl hhj ukw eaxj l cdc jhf 'cjxnc fxgl cvxgc mc  
 ukh jcnct pi [wl ejvxgcna ukw hdhr i sjc shoghd`f ujwnvwyw  
 denx swdh ]c; vxgc. U 'evxf ohkckxaxk ugvw mc Mhsxj cpgxkvck  
 pe] ;csc pcvxs vel cvx. Fwkh 'znc vc ukghn`k dhk`kvh ukwk  
 kcrq ejvxdx pcvxsgcn ]uo hbv`n.ß²

Oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk ph; xl gcnx |edycl fcn Cpgx-fedjxkc  
 rhna` nctjhngn`kvh ukghnh rhna` khghdxr szbgcn vel c; , ukghn`  
 gc/kcjgcdxf febhng`r ejl c; mc |edycl fcnc ukghn`k tcbxgcjx  
 fhncsxkvc fwdwnvwyw pcvxsgcnxk rhna`s`k` hgl hrgh  
 ;xthdcjgckl cl xagcnæ c; sxkc, ukghnh rhna` l i ojcgxt cbhf-  
 cbxddcjcgnx, xa; ck[cgcnx, ; i jgcmx r`ny`kghn`, si n'i kgcnx ncmh  
 'znl i a mc ukghn` mcjckgcnxkvck vxvcn`xk shgl `aghn ;x, fxb  
 ukghn`k fc/bx ki l wkcgcnxkx fw ; xjh`k 3-[i [xgvxkvc –

¹ âJcpbxfwj-jcpbxfß, 10-[w [xgv, scp.430.

² âJcb; xncjwg-pwtthbß, scp.965-966. âJednß pcvxsx fegc ugi wavw...  
 R`bhv`gl `a fxn judwyw |edycl fcnc pcvxddc 'cjxnvxgc. U pcbncjxk  
 rhna`s`kh rudvwrghn` bhl hk fegc vwh ejvx... â|cnmcnvx`hnh! Ck semxl gx  
 fckvckx l ckxl i ]i k 'zkvcn (fwkw) fxngx;vc dedc; .ß Fw bhl hk Cgxddxfkx  
 Cfx Jhgxf 'cgvx mc u pcbncj judwyw ukwkgf fxngx;vc devx. âJednß pcvxsxkxk  
 sckcvx Xfkx Csh; xnxk âJhnxox Vcl car ; xjh`kvh (Fednwj ]h`, 1395-[x xg)æ  
 {ckhf L cpl wvxkxk jcprrx xgc, 2-[x [xgv, scp.10-155-vc redv ugwk l wavwn.

â: cnfcgh phvxscsx mc |edycl fcn Cpgx-fedjxkc fha menck  
 l i sxfcjgcnß fzgl csxkvc redv ejl xax; . Fw ; i jgcmx r`ny`kghn mc  
 rcjg phvxscgcnx Cl cmxgcnxk mc Hffhsxgcnxk vzmni kvc vc  
 vhmhl ejl xavx. Fegc ; x, Cfwg-Tcnc[ Xsthphkx âL crhjpgwj-  
 jhgxfxddxkß ; xjhfkvh fwkghn` rcgcl c hgl `av`n. Fc/bx phggghnvh  
 Hffhsx ocgxtcgcnx jcnctxkvck ukghnh rhna` ncmh 'zni gck cbhf-  
 cbxddcjgcn cmmcg; x ocgxtcgcnx kxsfcjck vhph hnj`r mc ncpl sbx  
 ugl wavwn ; x, ukghnvhk fxn ke]c ki l wkckx redv ejl c; gc  
 ; xthdcjgckxnx; ...

h) Lckswnwk |edycl fcn Cpgx-fedjxkc rhna` nctjhn`

Jcfcnx mc Cfwg-Tcnc[ ncmhdcj evxngcn ; x, Hffhsx ocgxtcsx  
 Lckswn, Lcpcl l cv xfkx Xfnhpxl xfkx Pcscck xfkx Pcscck xfkx  
 Cgxddxfkx Cfxjhgxfc vevx... âVxfh[ Cstcn sckskl x?ß Vevx... âFcgx.ß  
 Vevx... âHgghph hkv ugswk, sckx egc zgvi nc[cdcl ; x, sckxk Cpgx-  
 fedjxkvck pe] ; csx u [i n zgvi nl cl xacl !ß Suknh 'zsjcnxa  
 menvx, fxn si jwkx dhnv`ghn, Lcpcl l cvx si jwkxk x]xkc rudwf  
 suknh pznvi gcn mc u, si jwkxk x]xkvc rhgv`.ß<sup>1</sup>

f) Hffhsx ocgxtcsx Lijcmc; ; xgk Cpgx-fedjc rhna` nctjhn`

Jcfcnx 236-[` px[nx xgxkxk phvxscgcnxkx rcgcl c hghn; ck  
 dhb`n... Fw xgvc Lijcmc; ; xg tcnl hk menl xavx ; x, Pi sedk xfkx  
 Cgxkxk rcfnxkx mc ukwk cjhnt`kvh ughk emgcnx vhy`js`kghn,  
 ukwk denxkx awl ghd`f juowl sc\sxkgcn, c; xk denxkc sw  
 fwnhos`kghn mc [hl hhj`k unhdh 'cgl csxkxk rhna`s`k` hgs`kghn!  
 Vedxgl xavxn ; x, kcbi xddc [hn]`s` fi j i k khpxdcgcnvc e/ghk  
 evcnc; vevx... âl ] 'i kvck suknh pcn ; csx fw rcfnxk dhk`kvh  
 jh`shl , vcnxk rwdwghnh shgh[hyhl .ß Fwkh 'znc vc [hl hhj  
 rh]v` mc rcfnc jcnct 'ejl c; vck ]c; xkvxgcn. U den mc ukwk  
 cjhnt` awl ghkv` mc c; xk shpcsxkc ]emnxgvx.<sup>2</sup>

Xfkx Csx 126-[` xgk phvxscgcnxkx redv evcn; ck dhb`n... Fw  
 xgvc Lijcmc; ; xg 'zsjcnxa menl xavx ; x, Pi sedk xfkx Cgxkxk  
 rcfnxkx mc ukwk cjhnt`kvh dengcack emgcnx vhy`js`kghn, ukwk

<sup>1</sup> âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.198â âL crhjpgwj-jhgxfxddxkß, scp.200. Ukwk  
 jcn[i l csx Seddxv Phaxl Ncswgx, scp.193.

<sup>2</sup> Dekc unhvh, 3-[i [xgv, scp.1407. Lijcmc; ; xg Cgcgghp {c/tcn xfkx  
 L z/jcsxl xfkx PhnwkcNcaxv 121-[x xgvc oxghtcjc ]hjl `a mc 247-[x xgvc  
 zgl i avi n.

denxkx c; xk shpcsxkc ]emxnx f sw fwnhos`kghn, [hl hhj`k bxdhncjc  
'cgl csxkx rhna`s`k` hgs`kghn. Fwkvhk suknh cjhnt khpxdcgcnvc  
[hl hhjh fegc e/ghk menxgvx...âPcn ; csx i ] 'i kvck suknh rcfnxk  
dhk`kvh jh`shr, rhnhkg`r bxkvhkghnh shgh[hy`r.ß {hl hhj rh]v`  
mc ukwk bxdhncjxkx jcn; ejvxgc. Fwnhk` vhy`v`f c; xk shpcsxkc  
]emxnvxgc. Li jcmc; ; xg Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf mc ukwk Cpgx-  
fedjxkc rhna` ; cs; xk vi al ck]xgx; fcsgcdxnvx. U rcnhh hgl `av`  
; x, Cgx mc ukwk Cpgx-fedjxkx semckgcxk l hg-vzmgcjgcxkx  
l i shvxc ejxk. Ukwk jcgocdx l fhvc Li ockkcs zb  
; zdkcdxkx hgj`kvhk fxn fhg`a fhyghd`n, ncrs evcnc; Cgxddxfkx  
Cfx Jhgxf dhl s`ghd`nv`. L hpk` uowdhkghn fegc vedxnvxgc...

âRhnik` de; c, fha` ji ; si b l i scgl hkghn`k ocgxtcsx `cgvx.ß  
Li jcmc; ; xg acnhf x]c-x]c ukh fhohnhr `i gi nvi! Fxn `i k  
Li kjcsxnk pi bwnwkvh fegc ejvx mc Li kjcsxn ukw xahnc xgc  
jcpvxv ejvx. l fhvc ukwk runowskvhk scsxkx ; csvx; vc,  
Li jcmc; ; xg vevx...âKc i ]i k fegc ugl wshk?ß U, hdhyh rhgo`f  
phvxscx vevx; vc Li kjcsxn vevx...âDh Cl xncg-l z/l xkxk! U ; cs  
; x, fw xj ukw dhl s`ghd`n mc [hl hhj` `i gvi ni n, u ; cs sckxk  
ohkcvhk`k`k fzdi di , cl x uygw mc sckxk xtjxohn`kv`n! C`cn  
zbi k ukwk cjxkx del c; xsjcdxnscksc de, gh; xk fw xj mc ukwk  
; xl xgcnc devxnjl clß Li jcmc; ; xg ncrhscgcnc vevx ; x, phl `g`rgh  
fw ae/nx uowswkghn...

رَأْسُ الْفَتَى لَائِنَ عَمِّهِ غَارُ الْفَتَى لَائِنَ عَمِّهِ

âFw [hmhk cl x uygwswkwk redncjxk ]c; xn,  
Fw [hmhk`k fha` hkhs`k`k txghk denxkc ugswk!  
Lcpb fwkh `znc vc Li kjcsxn Li jcmc; ; xgxk rcjgxkc  
tcnl hk menl xavx.<sup>1</sup>

Cfwg-tcnc[ dhb`n... Li jcmc; ; xg zb jcgoc; gcxkvck Vxdnc[  
hvg` fxnxkx (u, dcpwvxddcjvck Xsghl h `cgl xavx) Xl hl  
Pi sedkxk rcfnxkc jcnct `zkcvcnvx mc cl n ejvx ; x, unhk`  
awl ghs`k, rcfnx hnhvhk `zji nsi k, ukwk cjhnt`kvh; ` fxkhghn`  
vh vhy`js`k. U `evxf rcfnxk i sji kvc jx; xgl xa fxkhk` ukwk  
cjhnt`kvh x; x di b [cnxf<sup>2</sup> l xrvhnh vhy`v`f dengc de; shk ejvx,  
Pi sedkxk rcfnxkc jcnct `ejvx; vc, pe] ; cs ukwkg rhfhyh  
`ejl cvx. Fwkh `znc vc dcpwvxgcncvck fxn ke]csxkx ]hy`nv` ; x,

<sup>1</sup> âCg-; hl xgw txj-jhnxoß (Xfkx Csx), 7-[x [xgv, scp.18, L xsxn, 1-[x ]h`.

<sup>2</sup> Pcn [cnxf uk l xk ; mhvnjh l ejnc fcnhfcnvxn.

unhk`awl ghd`f i sji kc sw fwnhos`kghn. Fwkvhk suknh  
hnhghn`kvh fxn l xg l cshtc ugl hrgh ;eax;]xgcj jc/dxk ejvx ;x,  
pcn ;cs ukwk bxdhncjxkc 'cgsc, jwjwf ocgxtckxk dhk`kh  
'zkcnsxkgc.ß<sup>1</sup>

L cpcl l cv xfkx Pi sedk l akhkvck fegc ncmhdcj ugwkwn...  
Fw vzmncvck fxn l i vvcj ;e]vx, l ck runowvhk bxdhncj 'evc  
fxgl cvxl . Fwkvhk suknh zb [hk`l vkh ;e]cnc; cjxn shjhkghn`k  
fxnx xgc bxdhncj dugh vi avi ;. " i kvi bgcn 'xbgckxn, 'e[cgcn dug  
'evxnvx; , kcpdcl Yhbxnddc l ckjcrsckc ]hjv`r. " e[c dhn`s  
unhvhk ]`ov`r mc x;x 'zbcj]x l ckjcrsckvck ;e]cnc; (ukghn`k  
pcn x;xsx dwowdh 'ejl xavx) rcfnc jcnct 'cgvx; . Rcfnx 'znc  
fxgl cvxdx l xb i ]i k ukw xdgcdx mc [cpcjgcx jh`nv`r. Kcpdcl  
ukh dho`kghav`r, 'znvi ; ;x, ukwk i sji kvc ughk shkvy` rhb`f  
]`ohnl `a, dhkv`nl `a mc i sji kc sw fwnhol `av`n. : cn\][gc  
xsgkhnh r denc fhj l `a, ockvc; ac;gxkc vi al i avi . Rcfnx  
bxdhncj evxf ukwk 'zbcg cjnxkx xdgcvx; ;x, pe] mhoj fegc fxn  
cjxngx aed xdgcl cl xavx; . L ckx l gc 'cgck cjxn shjhkh vevxl ...  
âFw ke[c vc 'zbcg xdvxn!ß U vevx... âHgghph hkv ugswk, xkvxc  
rcvcn fegc fxn cjxn xdgcl cl xavxl !ß Suknh Xl hl <sup>TM</sup> -gh  
mxvhghav`r, rcfnxk cjnht`kh fxn ke]c cghl cj rudvwr.  
L i jcmc; ;xg rcjgc dejnxgckvck suknh Cfw Jhgxf zmghvghn`kvhk  
mc axgcnxkvck fxn rnw\w xgc rcfnc jcnct 'cgvx; , cghl cjgcngc  
rcfnx jh`v`r, cmmcgvc ugvyw ;xl x jc/l xn ejvx; .

Pcl ]xkxk dhn`n... L i jcmc; ;xg, Zl cn xfkx Tcnc[ Nco[xkx  
L c; ;c-L cvxckckxk mhgxsc jc/dxk ejvx. U vh Cfw Jhgxf  
zmghvghn`k` [hl hhj`k xagcnkxk vcohcj ejl c;vck ]c;xkvxnvx,  
[hl hhj`k vh ukghnh pcvddc menl csxkx mc epshk ejl csxkx  
rhvhyhk ejvx. C'cn fxn ;csxk ukghnh fxn aed pcvddc ejvxdxkx  
fxgscdvx, pcjjh hb ugshdv` fegc, axvvcjgc [cbhghkv`n`n, ukwk  
i ]i k hy`n [cnx l cgcj jc/dxk evxnvx. Xa u denc ]hj l `av` ;x, cgcmx  
ohk`l ghn` fxn ;zdkcdx kzmfc xgc 'edxnvxgcæ fxn-fxn kzmfc  
vwnwf pcl xk ;zdkc;gc khl hb r`g`nv`ghn, [n`gv`rvh ukw  
dhl hdnhr runwdwf shoghd`nv`ghn. } i k;x fcvckgcnxkx znj l cdc  
pe] fxn aedgcx duo vx. Kcpdcl L i jcmc; ;xg rcjgc dejnxgvx mc  
L i kjcsxn ukghn`k mcbxddcjxkvck h'hp ugwf ukghnh epshk ejvx,  
fxn rcvcn l hg-vzmgcjx ukghn`k hnhs`kvh fzi avi nvi . U,

<sup>1</sup> âL crhjxgwj-jhgxfxddxkß, scp.598-599æ ukwk jcn[i l csx, seddxv Phaxl  
Ncswgx, scp.551.



rhna`dh ]`ohk fi ji k acnhxj mc mcbxddcjgcnvc hjhs`k`k cl cg mc  
tx; xngcnxkc bxvv fxn l zmre se]xnvx ; x, ukw fcvkhl , zbi ki xsc  
rhgxf ejxsk.ß¹

Fwnh rcvcn redv ugwkhhkghn Ri neda ocgxtcgcnxkxk  
|edycl fcn Cpgx-fedjxkc rhna` denxjvx; gcnx rhks`b sxdhscjgcn  
xvx. Fw fcpsvck kc]x[c hgv`rvhk suknh vx`cn sxdhscjgcnxkx vc  
redv evc[cdx; .

#### FW FCPSXK OI GHSCSX...

Ri neda ki fi mmcjgc oxghtcjxk pcn x; xsxkxk Fckx-Phaxl  
rcfxgcsxkvc fxn denc d`y`al hs`k` xsjcl xnvx, fwkh `znc vc  
fh[hnv`rghn` rcvcn |edycl fcn pcvxsxkxk dhh`gl hs`k`k  
rhna`s`k` egc u pcbncjxk pcdhj` vzmni kvc hg`nv`ghn ; x,  
|edycl fcnxk ukghn`k xsjcl cvxdx fxn acosxk (Pcbncj Cgx)  
oxghtcjx fhncsxkvc ha; hn fwdwnvwrghn` dhh`gl hs`k mc [hl hhjh  
]hj] hs`k. Pcl ]xkxk ]hg`a`nv`ghn ; x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk  
Ri neda fha]`ghn`k l cbcl l cj ejl c; gc cghrcvhn fwdwnvwyw  
szbgcn vc dhd`gl hs`k. } i k; x fxgxnvxgc ; x, fw szbgcn Ri neda  
fha]`ghn`k pz; wl cj l ckscfxkvck wbhrgHAV`nh[hr, ukghn`k  
Fckx-Phaxl vck mc ckshnvhk ughk ncrxfgcxkc tcbxgcj mc  
i sji kgi ; `cjxnc[c; vxn.

L cpb fw l crscvgc |edycl fcnxk l i fhnc; Zl ni ki k suk  
hkghn`kvh mcsxddcjxkxk dhh`gl hs`k`k rhna`s`k` hgv`ghn.  
Phgfw; x, |edycl fcn ukwk fhncsxkvc æegc fxn mcsxddcj dhh`l ; x,  
ukvhk suknh pe] mhoj dugkwbw hbl hdhs`k`bß – vedc fwdwnl wavw.  
} i k; x Ri neda runownvw ; x, |edycl fcnxk fw ha; hn fcdhk`  
zbi kvck suknh Xsghl pz; wl cjxkxk ncpfcngxdxkx zpvcsxkc  
hgh[hr fxn acos fhncsxkvc ugswk. U Fckx-Phaxl vck ughk fxn  
hvhl ugl hg` xvx ; x, Ri neda vc oxghtcjgc ki fi mmcjxk ukghn`k  
ohkcvhk`kvh fxn denc d`y`al hs`k` xsjcl xnvx!

Egc fwkh `znc vc Ri nedaxk l capwn scphfcsx ughk Zl cn  
xfkx Ocjjhf mc ukwk fharh pcl tx; xngcnx ]hg`a`nv`ghn ; x,  
|edycl fcnx-C; ncl vck suknh dhgk`b Ri nedavck ughk Cfw  
Fc; ngc fed/cj ugwkswk!

Pcl ]xkxk pcl xk sxdhscjgcnxk vhmhl `kvh Cfw Fc; n  
Jedl x Ri nedax oxghtcjx Usl hk Cl cmx Ri nedaxkxk mhsxjcsxgc

---

¹ Dekc unhv, scp.539, jcn[i l csx, scp.552.

zbi ki k ;e]l xa vusjw Zl cn Cvmx Ri nedaxdc menvx.<sup>1</sup>

Fwkh 'znc vc ocgxtc Zl cn |edycl fcnxk ho`n`k[ pcvxsxkxk dhb`gl hs`kh l hke ugl hrvhk cghmc, |edycl fcnxk shxn pcvxsqcnxkxk vc dhd`gl hs`k`k rhna`s`k` hgv, scphfcgcnxk dhbv`rghn` pcvxsqcnx vc d`y`f dhkv`nv`. U, fw xagc l i ohgxtcj evcnc; |edycl fcn pcvxsxkx Lcvxkcvck ohnx[vc mc Xsghl zg;cgcnxkvc dhd l hr xsjcdckgcnx Lcvxkcdc ]hy`n`f [xvwx kcbhncj hgj`kvh shoghd`nv`.<sup>2</sup>

Fwkh 'znc vc Zl cn pcn mhoj mhgxqcnx fxn denc 'zkvcnvnvsc, ukghn` l i ahdcj evcnc; vedxnvx... å...Dhgk`b Rwn/hkvhk szb h]`k, |edycl fcnxk ncmhdcjgcnxkx ck hb pcvvc ]hjv`n`kæ fxgxk ;x, l ck sxbc kcbhncj evxncl .ß<sup>3</sup>

Pcl xk sxdhscjxk jcgcfxkc 'znc vc, xg; x;x ocgxtc – Cfw Fc;n mc Zl cn Fckx-Phaxl vck pe] fxnxkx unvw scn;cnvcgdxkx mc dh acpcn mhgxgdxkx (tcjp ugwkl wa l ckjcrqcnvc) jc/dxk ejl cvxgc.<sup>4</sup>

Zl cn Ri nedavck ughk hgj` kctcngx; awnhk` egc jckbxl ejl xavx ;x, Usl hk, Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Umtwk mhsxjcsxgc l i jgcr oxghtcj ]h] hg` vxv.<sup>5</sup>

Lcpb pcl xk sxdhscjgcnxk kc]x[csxkvc Usl hk Rwn/hkx- :cnxl x |edycl fcnx-C;ncl xk jctsn dzkgi pcvxsqcnxkvc hd`nv` mc fxn ke]c l i spct ac;gxkvc ukghn`k ki socsxkx ;z]i nvi f Xsghl zg;cgcnxkc 'zkvcnvx, scphfcgcnxk vx`cn l i spctgcnxkx – Rwn/hkx-:cnxl c mc |edycl fcnxk jctsn dzkgi szbgcnxkc ahl xg ughk vx`cn ki socgcnxkx dhkv`nv`, l i spctgcnxk dhkv`n`gl hs` xgc l i ohgxt ughk scphfc Cfvi ggghp xfkx Lcs/wvw :wtcvck ]hy`n`f jckfxp ejvx mc fedji g-l hgvhk ughk l hha`k`

<sup>1</sup> Pcl xk ;xjh`k åoxghtcj jca;xg ugwkl hs`kvh jhnnox 'en]c;gx;gcnß fzgl csxkc l i nh]xcj evxk.

<sup>2</sup> Pcl xk ;xjh`k 3-[i [xgvxkvc åoi gcth bhl hk`kvh pcvxs dhb`gl hs`k`k rhna`s`k`k hg`kl hs`ß fzgl csxkc fhoh fxgcnsxkxb.

<sup>3</sup> åJhnnox Jcfcnxß, Zl cnxk sxncsx, 20-[x xgxk phvxscgcnx, 5-[x [xgv, scp.19.

<sup>4</sup> åLwnw[wb-bcpcfß (Lcs/wvx), 2-[x [xgv, scp.321-322. Fwkw jcsvxrgcdck l cscgc uvwn ;x, i ] ocgxtcvck pe] fxnx Fckx-Phaxl vck pe] ;csx mhgx jc/dxk ejl cl xavxgc!

<sup>5</sup> Fw phvxscxkx cjnhtg`xbhp`cmmcgvc redv ugwkvw.

;csvx.<sup>1</sup> |edycl fcn pcvxsgcnxkx [hl hj hnhs`kvh dhdhk scphfc Cfwbcnx Ncfcbcdc si n`i k ejvxgc.<sup>2</sup>

Usl hk ocsjcgckvxdx bhl hk mcsxddcj ejvx ;x, ukvhk suknh Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Umt Ri nedax oxghtcjc ]hjs`k!<sup>3</sup> Hl l h Cfvi n-Ncpl hk Usl hkvhk cmmcg vi kdhvhk `ejvx mc Usl hk vh rcjgc dejxngxv mc Rwnedavck fharh fxnxsxkx oxghtcjc ]hjv`nl hyh ti nscj jh`h fxgl cvx. Li scgl hkghn zb xagcnxkx xvhnc ugwk l hs`k` zb xojxdhngnh`kh ;e]xncnc; fed/cj ejl c; i]i k Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h jcnct jcgcsvxgc. Pcn phks` fxn jcvfxn `znl c; i]i k ri vncjx cgvc menck Ri neda scphfc fha]`ghn` xncgx vi ai f Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -gh fed/cj ejvxgc.

Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> ph;xl xddcj ]hjv`rvhk suknh Ri neda jcvnx[x ughnh zb ri mmcgcnxkx shpl hkh shgv` mc vznv hdvkh suknh ri mmcgcnxkx sctcnfcn evcnc; l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxac, Jcgpc mc Bi fednxk fha]`g`y` xgc xl hl `k cgedpxkc {cl cg l i phnxfcsxkx jzncjvxgc ;x, fcg;c Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -vhk pz;wl cjx hg`f zb cggcnxkc ;e]xnc fxgsxkgcn.<sup>4</sup> Fw xavc l i mctterxddcj rhbkh fxgl cvx;gcnxkvck Sxttedk l i phnxfcsxkc acnhj dnhhjv`ghn mc pcn x;x l i phnxfvc zb dnhl hb xagcnxkc fcncj rhbkhv`nl hr i]i k Lcvxkcvck ohnx[vc ughk l i scgl hkghn`k hnhs`kvh fegc fxn ahdxc dhdv`ghn ;x, Xl hl Cgx Usl hk` zgvi nl i a mc ph;xl xddcj ;e]l xavxn!<sup>5</sup>

Lcvxkcvck ohnx[vc dhahdhk l i scgl hkghn vh zb vxkx l hhnxtgcnxkx, egc[c vc |edycl fcnc-C;nc l xk, Cpgx-fedjxk mc scphfcgcnxk sxncsx fhncvc ughk ncmhdcjgcnx dhgk`b ph;xl scphfcgcncvck cgvc evxnvxgc. Ukghnh ph;xl ughk mhgxgc mc scn;cnvcgc vc phl `g`rgh dh Ri nedavck xv, dh ukghn`k pcl `edl hkghn` mc dh ukghnh fhyg` vxgc. Ukghn Rwn/hk`k zbi mc Rwn/hk cpgxkxk sxncsx (hvcj mc nctjhn`) fhncsxkvc Ri neda fha]`ghn`k`k ukghnh ]hjv`nv`rghn`kvhk fharh fxn aed

<sup>1</sup> Fho... âCg-Rwn/hkwg-;cnx l mc ncmhdhjwg-l cvncscjedkß, âUsl hk`k vzmn i kvc Rwn/hk jhnxoß fzgl csx, egc[c vc l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxackxk pcvxsgcnx, 1-[x [xgv.

<sup>2</sup> Pcl xk ;xjh`k` âoi gcth vzmn i kvc pcvxs dhb`gl hs`k`k rhna`s`k`k hg`kl hs`ß fzgl csxkc fhoh fxgcnxkxb.

<sup>3</sup> Fwkwk l ckfcgcnx cmmcgvc redv ugwkvw.

<sup>4</sup> l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxackxk pcvxsgcnx, â{cl cg l i phnxfcsxß fzgl csx.

<sup>5</sup> Jcfcnxkx, Xfkx Csxnxk mc Xfkx :csnxk jhnxo ;xjh`ghn`, âSxttedk ocfncgcxß fzgl csx.

fxgl xnvxgc. Fw fhncvc l c/nxtcj ;csf ejl c; i]i k fwkvhk  
 fharh dugghn` vh duo xv. Fi ji k fwkghn Ri nedac xl ;hk  
 menxnvx ;x, ukghn`k XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> fhncsxkvc;x kcbngcnxkvc  
 ac;; -ai fpc dnhhs`kghn, ukwk cl cggcnxkx jcnsxkc  
 [xgmcgckvxnsxkgcn. Fw th[xcgc u mhoj vph vh axvvcjgckvx ;x,  
 Li hmxdkxk unvsw Sxttedk l i phnxfcsxkvc l cygwf ugl h  
 cnctcsxkvc ughn; ck Rwn/hkghn` kxbcgcnxk fha`kh ;e]xnvxf XI hl  
 Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -` mc ukwk unvswkw Rwn/hk`k pc;cl xddcjxkc  
 (l i ph;xl c di ni j l csxkc), fwkvhk suknh xsc x; x kctcnxk – Cl n  
 xfkx Hs mc Cfw Lwsh Ca/cnxkx pc;cl xddcjxkc ]hy`ns`kghn.  
 XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k unvswkvh ughk Rwn/hk rhnxcn mc ukghn`k  
 hnv`[`gghn` pc;cl xddcjxk rcfwg evxgl csxkc xsnhn ejvxgc.  
 Ri nedac-cl cmx scphfc ughk Cl n xfkx Hs pc;cl xddcj  
 l crhl `kvh Cfw Lwsh Ca/cnxkx hgvhjv`. Fw ocfen dhd`gv`rvh,  
 : wtc cphgxskvck pc;cl xddcjx rcfwg evck rhnxcnvc ]uow  
 ukw densxb fxgvxgc mc fi ji k l i scgl hkghn` ;htxn peshf  
 evcnc; XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k cgedpxkc rxdhl ejvxgc mc  
 Kcpncmhkv ukwgh l i phnxf h`hnh`ghn. Ukghnvhk ]uow rcjgc  
 dejxngxv mc suknh ukghnvhk shy rhghk fxn kctcn XI hl Cgx  
<sup>TM</sup> -` : wtc l epnhf`kvh acphvcjc ]hjv`nv`.<sup>1</sup>

Fi ji k fwkghn Lcvxkcvc ohnx[vc dhahdhk  
 l i scgl hkghnv XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h rhna` ac;; -ai fpc dnhhjv`, u  
 pcbncjxk l crhl `k` jcnsxkc [xgmcgckvxnvx mc kcjx[cvc u  
 pcbncjxk fhncsxkvc 'en]c;gxdc bxvv ughk pcn fxn ahdxckx  
 pcrxrcj ;xl x rcfwg ejvxgc.

Vx'cn jcncvck vc Ri nedaxk Fckx-Phaxl xk pz;wl cjc  
 ]hj[hrgghn`kvhk ;e]xnvxdx x;nhp pxssx (ukghn`k cshs pcvctx  
 XI hl Cgx xv) kcjx[c e/jxfhn` xgc u pcbncjc rhna` ;xk-; i vwncj  
 mc vi al ck]xgxdc ]emnxgvx, u pcbncjvck suknh Ri neda  
 pz;wl cjxkxk fi kzmncsx XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h ;xk-; i vwncj mc  
 vi al ck]xg; cshs`kvh l zp;cl gckvx, cl cmxgcnxk ph;xl xddcjx  
 vzmni kv vc zbi ki k ck di ;sc; pcvvxkc ]hjv` ;x, suknh;`  
 fzgl cvc ukw fcdhk evc[cdx;.

---

<sup>1</sup> Dekc unhvh.

CL CMX MC HFFHSX OCGXTCGCNXXKXK XL HL CGX <sup>TM</sup> -H RHNA-  
VIALCK}XGX: MC CVHMCJGCNX

h) Hgx Cfx Sitdhk, Lihmxdc mc Debxv Cl cmx

Lihmxdc pz;wl cjc ]hjhk bhl hk zb sxdhscjxkxk cshs`k`  
hahy`vh;`x;x l epmcnvc rcnln menvx...

1-Cmmcg[c uygw Debxvxk oxghtcjxkc acnhxj dnhhjv`æ phgfw;x  
cmmcg;x ocgxtcgcnxk sxdhscjx fegc xv ;x, oxghtcj Ri nedaxk  
ahocgcnx hnhs`kvh cgvcck-cgc zji ni gsi k. Ukghn`k ai hn` vh fw  
xvx... åOxghtcj Ri neda rcfxgcgcnxkvc fxn-fxnxkxkbc zjini k ;x,  
'ekxagcksxk.ß<sup>1</sup>

2-|edycl fcnxk Cpgx-fedjx, oi swsxcg ukghn`k fha]`s` Cgx  
<sup>TM</sup> -gh vial ck]xgx; sxdhscjgcnxkx 'ekxagckvxnx'f vhmhl  
ejvxn l c; ...

Lihmxdcckxk Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> mc Fckx-Phaxl vck ughk shxn  
acosgcngc vial ck]xgx dx l xsxgsxbvxn. U zb ph;xl xddcjxkxk  
cshsgn`k` ukghn`k fhncsxkvc khghdxr szbgcn vel c; , ukghn`  
jckrxv evxf edf jwjl hr, egc[c vc fharhghn` i]i k dhghkvhk  
tcbxgcj vi bcgjl c; cshs`kvh rwnvw, fwkghn` vh [hl hhj hnhs`kvh  
dhdl hyh fhaghv`. Suknh tcnl hk menvx ;x, Xsghl vi kdhs`k`k  
pcn fxn denxkvc, l c]gxsgcnvc, oi swsxcg l cs[xvgcnvc, [i l c  
khl hbghn`k`k oi jfcgcnxkvc Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h gc/k ejsxkgcn. U  
hkv x]l xa mc rcnlnh hgl `av` ;x, fw xax u rcvcn vhmhl  
ejvxnc[c; vx ;x, wahrghn ukwk cshs`kvh dhagha`f ru[hgs`kghn,  
ru[hghn vh ukwk cshs`kvh cgvcck vi asi kgcn! Fw xavck xl jxkh  
evck pcn phks` fxn fzdi ; acosxddcjgx l i scgl hk` l i ojcgxt  
pxdgcgcngc rcjgc dejxnxnvx. Uygw Debxvx vc pcl xk cshsvh  
fzdi jvi , u vh Cpgx-fedjx : cnfcghvh acphvcjc ]hjv`nv`, ukghn`k  
fhaghn`k` ; csvx mc ; csx; fhaghn`k` csxn ugwkl wa hnmhv-  
wahrghngh fxngx; vc acpcnvc 'cbvxnvx! Cfw Si tdhk si ghgcsxkxk  
oxghtcjx sukh ]hjv`rvhk sukn ph;xl xddcj Lcnmhkh mc ukwk  
cl cmx hnv`[`gghn`kh ;e]vx.

2-Lcnmhk mc cl cmx l cnmhkxgc

Fckx-Lcnmhk ocgxtcgcnx Lihmxdcckxk sxdhscjxkx vhmhl

<sup>1</sup> åKcp[i g-fcghycßkxk acnpx (Xfka Cfxg-Pcvxv), 2-[x [xgv, scp.18æ  
Lcpcl l cv Cfi g-tcbg Xfnhpxl xk jcprxr, 6-[` [xgv, scp.43. Fw ai hn`k ha; hn  
vcgxgx vc Ri nedaxk |edycl fcnvck sukn zbi kvck ughk l i ojcgxt rcfxgcgcnx  
kzmfc xgc ph;xl xddcj ]hjv`nl hghn` xv.

ejvxnxf ph;xl xddcjx zb hxgxcnxcv fñ-fñxkc zji nvi gcn, Cgx<sup>TM</sup> -h edf jwjl hr mc ukw gc/k ejl cdx vhmhl ejvxnvcgn. Kcphdcj, Zl cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxb ph;xl xddcj [hjv` mc fw xaxk jcn; evxgl csxkc vñcn tcnl hk menvx, hl l h [hl hhj u pcbncjx gc/k ejl cdc hvcj ejl xavxcn. Pcjjh fc/bxcgnx fwkw jcn; evxgl csx rednx-l il ;i k ughk tcnxc (mh[xf cl cg) peshf evxn, [il c khl hb`k` fwkswb fcncnñn ejl xnvxcn! Fegc ;x, Pcnnhk cphgxv vedxnvxcn... âKhl hb Cfw Jwnhf gc/k ejl cvck khl hb shd`gl `nlß Pcn fñ phgvh, Zl cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxbx tcnl hk` x; x xgvck hñj`r vhmhl `cñxc fxgl cvx.<sup>1</sup> hjhs`k`k jcnctxkvck ughk rupwl -crncfhs` ukh bcpcn menxf zgvi nvi gcn.<sup>2</sup> Ukvhk sukñh Fckx-l l cddc zb ;e]l xa hvcjgcncx rhd`vññr dekxcvck Xl hl `gc/k ejl cdc fhaghv`ghn. Kcphdcj, ph;xl xddcj Hffhsxcnc [hjv`.

### 3-Hffhsx ocgxcgnx

Hffhsx ocgxcgnx hnhs`kvh fc/bxcgnx mñn vxv ;x, |edycl fcn Cpgx-fedjxkx rcjgc dejxnl c; mc l i scgl hkghn hnhs`kvh ukghn`k di ;sc; l crhl gñ`kh jcxpñgc dhkhal hrñh Fckx-l l cddcvck vc rhfhñh ;e]l xavxcn. U [il gcvck... Lckswñ Vcmhkñrx, Phñwk cn-Ncaxv mc Lijcmc;;xgx redv ejl c; ughn. Cgfcjjc, ukghn`k hnhs`kvh fc/bxcgnx vc mñn vxv ;x, fw sxdhscjgcnc l i ohgxtcj evñn mc |edycl fcn Cpgx-fedjxc l i cddck rcvcn l edg evxnvxcn.<sup>3</sup> Gh;xk Fckx-l l cddckxk vuoshk xgx; ph;xl xddcjx vzmni kvc [hl hhj Xl hl Cgx<sup>TM</sup> -h febhñg`r ejl c; , u pcbncjx fhncsxkvc khghdxr szbgcn vñk`a`f ukw gc/k ejl c; cshs`kvh fzdi di f fudh-fhah ]hjl `av`ghn.<sup>4</sup> Fw l cktx jcnfxdcxk jc/sxncgnx Hffhsxcncxk vzmni kc rcvcn rhgl hrñh vxv. Fc/bx hgx l mc l i pcvvsxcn fegc, u [il gcvck, Pcñxb xfkx Usl hk si fp-hoahl Xl hl Cgx<sup>TM</sup> -h dejl xa vctc gc/k evñn, ukwk l cbcl l cxkx

<sup>1</sup> âL wñw[wb-bcpcfß (Lcs/wvñ), 3-[i [xgv, scp.35.

<sup>2</sup> âJhñox xfkx : csñß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.209.

<sup>3</sup> Lxshg ughññr Ckksxñw Gvxkxgghp` redv ejl c; ughn ;x, u Cpgx-fedj l c;jcfxkxk hñv`[`gghn`kvñk vxv. Lck ukwk cscngcnxkx Shl xññh acpcñkxk âCxl l cß l i scgghs`kvñ âRedfcj scñvhf`ß hv` xgc l capwñ ughk âLcs[xvi g-Lcpvñßvc `zn l i acl . Ujhrñh fñ l ejñ w[hg`y`kvñ dengcack fñ jhojhk`k i bcñkvc uk x;x xl hl `k hv` dhb`gl `a mc fw ujhr vñ ocgxc Khsñw Gvxkxgghp`k cl ñx xgc fxkh ugwk l wavvñ.

<sup>4</sup> âL wñw[wb-bcpcfß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.235.

vhn zbi kvck pcvxs vi bcgvxn mc ukw Fhyvhvvh mc Xsghl  
pz;wl cjxkxk shxn l cn; cb dengcnxkvc ncmhdcj evxnvx!

Ukghn`k acpcngcnxkvc Mhsxj cphgxsx ;xl xgcn vc mhn vxv ;x,  
unhk`k l capwn l i pcvvxs mc hgx l gcnxkvck ughk Cfvi gghp xfkx  
L cpcl l cv xfkx Usl hk (371-[x xgvc mthj evxf) fxn vctc åJednß  
pcvxsxkx ukghn i ]i k uowvwyw bhl hk, ukw hdhyh rhgv`nv`ghn,  
ujwnvwyw denx dwvwghn mc zbi ki vc ohkckxaxk ejvxgc!

Fcgx, u acpcnxk l i pcvvxsx Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k tcbxgcjx fhncvc  
dhgk`b fxn[c vctc fxn ncmhdcj kerg ejl xa, [hl hhj ukw pcl xk  
denvc rhgv`nl `a, ujwnvwyw denx swdh ]c; l xagcn!

Redv ugwkhh l zmbw fxbxl fcdhk ejvxdxl xb, hvghn`k`  
]c;vxdxl xb mc shvhghv`rghn`l `bgh l cpvwwghal `n. C; sxkc, fw  
l cscgc fxbxl csxl xbc rcvcn vc pcl xk l xkmhggv vhmhl  
ejl xavxn. Fxb cmmcgvc |edycl fcn Cpgx-fedjxkxk ohjxncgcnxkxk  
dhgk`b ph;xl gcn jcnctxkvck 'xbgcvxgl csxkx mc tcbxgcjgcnxkxk  
ukghn jcnctxkvck xk;hn evxgl csxkxk fc/bx ki l wkcgcnxkx redv  
ejvx;. Ukghn vhl ]hg`a`nv`ghn ;x, Cpgx-fedjxk fhnx  
tcbxgcjgcnxkx 'xbgcvxf ukghn`k fhncsxkvc ncbxgcj mc edfc vcghgcj  
evck ncmhdcjgcn vi bcgjsxkgcn ;x, l i scgl hkghn ukghn vxrrcj  
dejxnl csxkgcn, zbgcnxkxk vc pz;wl cjgcnxkxk cshs` – Ri nedax  
ocgxtcgcnxk pz;wl cjx – si sjgal csxk, ]i k;x fxgxnvxgc ;x, ukwk  
si sjgal csx mc vhy`gl hs` xgc |edycl fcn Cpgx-fedjxkxk  
pz;wl cjx fcnrcnln ugh[hrv`.

Fcgx, cl cmxgcnxk, hffhsxgcnxk mc ukghn`k dugkw 'evck  
Ri neda ocgxtcgcnxkxk sxdhscjgcnx, kcjx[c ughnhr Cpgx-fedjc rhna`  
hl hks`b nctjhngghn` zb hnv`k[h 'cjxnvx mc oi gcth l c;jcfxkx  
l c[fwn ejvx ;x, |edycl fcnx-C;ncl xk si kkcsxkx, Cpgx-fedjxk  
mc u pcbncjxk csphf`k`k sxncsxkxk ncmhdcjgcnxkx jcpnxt evxf  
'xbgcj l c;vc uk mhsxjcvck xsjxthvc ejsxkgcn ;x, xkahgghp, 'cgck  
fcpsvc ukghn` hnhav`nh[hy`r.

|EDYCLFCNX-C: NCL ; -xk si kKCSXKX, UKWK CPGX-  
FEDJXKXK MC SCPHFCSXKXK SXNCSXKX "ZSJCNCK  
NCMHDCJGCNXK "XBGCVXGXF JCPNXT EVXGLCSXKVCK UK  
KI L WKC

OI GCTH LC: JCFXKXK, |EDYCLFCN SI KKCSXKVC UKGHN-K  
KCBCNGCNX XGC LI OHGXT UGHK NCMHDCJGCNC RHNA-  
JWJVWYW LZMRE

Oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk, zb kcbcnxddcgcnx xgc l i ohgxt ughk  
|edycl fcn si kKCSX xgc nctjhn`k`k ck fhnx ki l wkcsx XI hl  
Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k mcsxgdx fhncsxkvc |edycl fcn ; -xk  
si kKCSXKX mc scphfcgcnxk szbgcnxkx hahy`vh redv ugwkxk  
ac; xgvc 'xbgcjl cgcxvxn...

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl ; -xk scphfcgcnx ]uogw l z/jcfcn  
ncmhdcjgcnc u pcbncjxk fegc fwdwnvwywkw kcrj ejl xagcn...âCgx  
l ckl mcsxl , mcbxncl mc mhnxsxl vxn.B

Fc/bx pcvxsgcnvc... âMc l ckl ocgtcl vxnB [i l gcsx vc cghmc  
ugwkwn. XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> ukh menxgck gcrfcgcn hnhs`kv mcsx  
gcrfcx xgc l capwnghav`, fw gcrfc u pcbncj i ]i k oi swsx fxn  
cghl cjc ]emnxgvx mc ukvkh fharh fxn acos fwkwkgh jhk`kl hv`.  
Ke[c ; x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl ; ukh Cfw Jwnhf ; i kdcx  
menl xavx mc fw ; i kdc vc dhgk`b ukh l cosws xv, Cgx <sup>TM</sup> vh  
fw ; i kdc xgc l capwnghav` mc Cfw Jwnhf ; cgl csx ukwk i ]i k  
oi swsx hvh, kxahkdc ]emnxgvx. Suknhghn scphfcgcnxk mc  
jhfxkgcnxk vxgxkvc, pcl ]xkxk ahxngcnxk ae/ngcnxkvc mc sukh;`  
kcsxggcnvc vctgcngc mcsx hvghkv`n`gl `av`. Pcjjh ; xjhf-cpgx  
hgx l gcnxkxk kcbcnxkvc vc fw hvgh jhk`kl `av` mc ukghn  
[hl hhj` fw l cscgcvc h'hp ejl xavxgc. HI l h...

*MCSXDDCJXK XK: HN UGWKL HS-*

Cgx <sup>TM</sup> i ]i k mcsx gcrfcfxkxk azpncj jh`l hs` oi gcth  
l c; jcfxkxk sxdhscjgcnx xgc bxvxdccj jca; xg ejvxdxkvck, ukghn  
fw azpncjgc [xvxx ac; xgvc l i fhnxbc h`hnl hyh, ukh vcghgcj  
evck ncmhdcjgcnx 'xbgcxvf xk; hn ejl cdc fhaghv`ghn.

Cmmcg[c l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxac ]uo 'i [gi jcfgyxhj  
pi [wl ghn` xgc mcsxddcjd xk; hn ejl cdc fhaghv`, Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k mcsx  
gcrfcfxkxk azpncj jh`l hs` xgc l i fhnxbckx zbi ki k i l vc



I cscgcsx rcnbn menvx. Fwkvhk suknh vh oi gcth I c;jcfx wbwk  
csngcn fudw fw gcrccfxk azpncj jh\I hs` xgc I i fhxhbc h\hmv`ghn.  
Fw I crhl vh ukghn`k 'znvi ;gcnx ck I i pi I jcvfxngcnvck fxnx  
mcsxddcj fhncsxkvc kcrj ugwkhhk pcvxsgcnxk 'xbgcvxgl csx vxv ;x,  
fw vh ck hd`r jcvrxrhj]`ghn` fegc, zb jcvrxrhjghn`kvh ugvwr[h  
jcpgi ;cgx fxn dugh shg`nv`!

Oi gcth I c;jcfxkvc fw pcrxrcjxk 'xbgcvxgl csxkxk  
ki I wkcgcnxkvck fxnx |edycl fcnx-C;ncl xk si kkcsxkvc  
hahy`vh;` uk I cscgckxk 'xbgcvxgl csxvxv ;x, ukghn` I i pi I gi ;  
vcnc[csx cshs`kvh fcdhk evxnx; ...

1-|edycl fcn si kkcsxkxk pcvxsgcnxkxk fxn rxsl xkxk  
xojxshnh shg`kl hs` mc ukghn`k I i cl I hg` ;cgl cgc n ac;gxkc  
Jemnxgl csx.

1-Scphfcgcnxk sxncsxkvck, xojxshnh shg`kl hs`kh xahnc  
evxgl c;gc, fi ji k ocfngcnxk xojxshnh shg`kl hs`.

3-|edycl fcn pcvxskxk zb pcrxrx I c/khs`kvhk fharh  
I c/kghnh dubwgl hs`.

4-Xojxshnh shg`kl hs`kh xahnc evxgl cvck scphfckxk  
szbgcnxkvck fc/bxsxkxk xojxshnh shg`kl hs`.

5-Xojxshnh shg`kl hs`kh xahnc evxgl cvck |edycl fcn  
si kkcsxkxk fi ji k ncmhdcjgcxkxk xojxshnh shg`kl hs`.

6-|edycl fcn si kkcsxkxk dhb`gl hs`k`k rhvhyhk evxgl csx.

7-Ph;xl gcxk cl cggcnxkx xtah ejvxdx phgvh |edycl fcn  
si kkcsxkx ncmhdcj evckgcxk mc ncmhdcjgcxk bcxtgcvxgl csx.

8-: xjhfgn`k mc ;xjhfohkhghn`k dhkv`n`gl hs`.

9-Scphfcgcnxk sxncsxkx 'zsjcnck ocfngcnxk fxn rxsl xkxk  
xojxshnh shg`kl hs` mc ukghn`k jcpnxt evxgl csx.

10-|edycl fcn si kkcsx mc scphfcgcnxk sxncsxkvck;x vi b'i k  
ncmhdcjgcxk ]`ohn`g`f ukghn`k denxkc shojh ncmhdcjgcxk  
rudwgl hs`.

1. |EDYCLFCN SI KKCSXKXK PCVXSGCNXKXK FXN RXSLXKXK  
XOJXSHNH SHG-KLHS- MC UKGHN-K L I CL L HG- : CGL CGCN  
AC: GXKC }EMNXGL CSX.

Jcfcnx mc XfKx : csxn amc ckbn camcjc;cg-crncfxk<sup>1</sup> hdcxkxk  
jctsxnxkvck |edycl fcnxk fwdwnvwyw amc mcsxddx mc ocgicjx tx;wl B  
[i I gcsxkx xojxshnh shghnhr ukwk denxkc a;cbh mc ;cbhB (txghk-

<sup>1</sup> aAi cnhB swncsx, hdc.214.

txghk szbgcn) rudl wagh.

Fwohnz zbi ki k āScpxpß ; xjh<sup>f</sup> kvh Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Cf<sup>w</sup> Fc; nxk Lcnmhkh vevxdx szbgcnx xojxshnh shgl<sup>1</sup> a mc ukwk denxkc l i cl l hg<sup>1</sup> szbgcn redv evcnc; dhbl<sup>1</sup> av<sup>1</sup>n... āCfvi n-Ncpl hk fxn aed vevx.ß Pcl jxkxk, l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxackxk Lcnmhk<sup>1</sup>k hjhs<sup>1</sup> Pc; cl fhncsxkvc |edycl fcnc-C; ncl vck kcrj ejvx; gcnxkx jhl hl xgc xojxshnh shgl<sup>1</sup> aghn.

|edycl fcnc-C; ncl xk Fc<sup>1</sup>n vzdi ai fhncsxkvc scphfcgcnc l camcncj ejl csx mc ukghn<sup>1</sup>k hahy<sup>1</sup>vh redv evxgc[c; jcnbvc menvxdx [hmhf<sup>1</sup> xojxshnh shghnhr ukw l icddck rcvcn vi bcgjl cdc jhg<sup>1</sup>al<sup>1</sup> aghn. Xfkx Pxahl mc Jcf<sup>1</sup>cnx ddb<sup>1</sup>n... Ri neda ruawkwkwk zb jx[hncj ; hnmhkghn<sup>1</sup>k<sup>1</sup> pxl hdc ejl c; l crscvxc pcnc; cjc fhaghl hs<sup>1</sup> ocfcnc |edycl fcnc jhvj<sup>1</sup>. U pcncj vc scphfcgcnc l camcncj ejvx mc ukghn<sup>1</sup> Ri nedaxk<sup>1</sup> 'znvi di jcvfxnvck ocfcnvhn ejvx. Cf<sup>w</sup> Fc; n Sxvvr hdhyh rhgov<sup>1</sup> mc dhōa<sup>1</sup> vkh<sup>1</sup>av<sup>1</sup>. Suknh Zl cn xfkx Ocjjhf hdhyh rhgo<sup>1</sup>f vkh<sup>1</sup>av<sup>1</sup> mc dhōa<sup>1</sup> szbgcn vevx. Suknh Lxrvhv xfkx Cl n hdhyh rhgo<sup>1</sup>f vevx... āDh Ncswgcgghp! Hgghp<sup>1</sup>k cl nxk denxkc dejxn, fxb pcl xac sckxkgcdx; . Hgghp<sup>1</sup>h kv ugs<sup>w</sup>k ; x, Fckx-Xsnhxg ; xl x vedxgx; mc āsck zb |cnmcnvx<sup>1</sup>hn<sup>1</sup>kgh<sup>1</sup> 'evxf [xphv evxk, fxb xsc fwnhv ujnwl wawr<sup>1</sup> szbgcnxkx vel cnx; . C; sxkc, fxb vedxnx; ; x, sck mc |cnmcnvx<sup>1</sup>hn<sup>1</sup>k<sup>1</sup> 'evxf mwnwawk, fxb vc sxbxkgc fxngx; vc 'cgc[cdx; ß Ho<sup>1</sup>nv<sup>1</sup>h ddb<sup>1</sup>n... |edycl fcnc-C; ncl ācpsck!ß vedcnc; ukwk fhncsxkvc vwh ejvx.

Sc/v xfkx Lchb Ckshnxkxk menvxdx [hmhf<sup>1</sup> xsc fegc redv evxngcn. Sc/v vevx... āDh Ncswgcgghp! Pcn kc xsjcdxnscksc, ukw vh ej... fxb sxbxkgcdx; . Sckx phrr ughnhr \edycl fcngxdc l cf/ws evck Hgghp<sup>1</sup>h kv ugs<sup>w</sup>k, c'cn fw vcndhk<sup>1</sup> fxbxl rhna<sup>1</sup>l<sup>1</sup> bvh rcn<sup>1</sup>hn mensck, sckxkgc fxngx; vc ukh vho<sup>1</sup>xg ugh[hy<sup>1</sup>r, pe] fxn<sup>1</sup>xl xb fw cl nvck fudwk rh]n<sup>1</sup>l hdh[hy<sup>1</sup>r!ß |edycl fcnc-C; ncl Sc/vxk szbgcnxkvck semxkvx.

Sxbxk kcbcnxkxb[c, Ri nedaxk l i ph[xn scphfcx ughk Cf<sup>w</sup> Fc; ngc Zl cnxk |edycl fcnc menvxdx [hmhf<sup>1</sup> kc xl xa ; x, fw ncmhdcjvc ukw xojxshnh shg<sup>1</sup>f ukwk denxkc ādhōa<sup>1</sup> szbgcn vevxß - vedc redv ejl xagcn?! Vuynsw, c'cn ukghn<sup>1</sup>k menvxdx [hmhf<sup>1</sup> dhōa<sup>1</sup> szb ugshdv<sup>1</sup>, ukvh<sup>1</sup> 'zncsck, kc i ]i k dhōa<sup>1</sup> szbgcnx xojxshnh shg<sup>1</sup>ngn?! Pcl xk phgvh xsc l i ph[xnvck ughk Lxrvhv<sup>1</sup>k mc

<sup>1</sup> āL hxvcß swncsx, hdc.24.

ckshnvhk ughk Sc/v xfkx L chb`k szbgcnxkx redv evxngcn?!

L i sgi l i k âScpxpß ; xjhfk h l i nh[cj ejvx; vc, ukwk fegc ncmhdcj kcrq ejvxdxkx 'zncnx; ... â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl Cfw Si tdhk`k pcnc; cj ocfcnxkx eajvx; vck suknh zb scphfcngcnx xgc l camcncj ejvx. Cfw Fc; n fxn szb vevx, |edycl fcn ukh e/jxnhb ejvx. Suknh Zl cn vkh`av`, |edycl fcn ukvhk i b ]emxnvx...ß

Sxbxk kcbcnxkxb[c, c'cn Cfw Fc; n mc Zl cnxk szbgcnx dhov` ugshdv`, ukvh |edycl fcn kc i ]i k ukghnh e/jxnhb evxf i b vzkvcnvnv?! Fxb fwkwk [hmhf`k` Mhrxvxkxk mc L crnxbkxk ; xjhfgnh`kvhk hojhnhr. Unvh vedxgn... Zl cn vevx... âDh Ncswgcgghp! Hgghph hkv ugswk ; x, fw Ri nedavxn! Ukghn zbi kc l cosws xbbcjcgnx xgc 'cgl xagn! Hgghph hkv ugswk, ukghn xbbcj jh`v`rgnh` fxn 'i kvck pe] mhoj bcgxg ugl hl `aghn. Hgghph hkv ugswk, ; htn ugvrghn` bhl hkvhk pe] mhoj xl hk 'c]xnl cl xagn! Hgghph hkv ugswk, (Ri neda) pe] mhoj xbbcjxkvck cg ]c; l cdc[c; mc sckxkgc l i jgr l i phnxfc evc[c; gcn. Fegc xsc, hdr`ug mc ukghnh ghdxr ughk ri mmc phb`ngl...ß<sup>1</sup>

Dwohn`vh Xfkx Pxahl `k mc Jcfcnxkxk ncmhdcjxkvck hdv`k ugvw ; x, Zl cn Cfw Fc; nvck suknh vkh`al `av` mc fw x; x nhmx ukghn`k pcn fxnkxkxk menvxdx [hmhf` âdhoa` szbgcn vevxß szbi xgc mcst ejl xagn. Phgfw; x, L i sgi l i k ncmhdcjxkvck |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk cmmcg[c Cfw Fc; nvck, suknh xsc Zl cnvck i b ]emxn csx redv ugwkwn. Fwnvhk vh hkghd`n`r ; x, ukghn`k pcn x; xsxkxk szbgcnx l cbl wk [cpcjxkvck edkx ugl wavwn. L crnxbx mc Mhrxvx Zl cnxk szbi ki redv ejl xa, hl l h Cfw Fc; nxk szbi ki 'xbgcj l xagn. Zl cnxk szbi Cfw Fc; nxk szbgcnxkx vc fxbxl i ]i k ha; hn evxn!

Fw x; x l capwn scphfckxk szbgcnxkxk ; xjhfvh redv ugwkl hs` fc/bxgcnxkxk ; zkgi ki xk[xjvxdxkvck, ukwk szbgcnx Jcfcnxkxk, Xfkx Pxahl `k mc L i sgi l i k ncmhdcjgcnxkvck xojxshnh shg`kl `av`n! Fw ; xl x ; xjhfgnh l cpb fw [i n xojxshnh shg`kl hghn mc szbgcn menxgck vi bcgxagn kc]x[csxkvc oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk ck l z/jcfc n ; xjhfgnh`kvhk shd`gl `av`n! Fw ocfcnx pe] [i n... kc l i cl l hg`, kc vc ha; hn ac; xgvc redv ejl cdck âScpxp Fwohnß xsc, ukghn`k ck l z/jcfc n mc ck vi b' i k ; xjhfk` peshf ugwkwn.

<sup>1</sup> Fw ocfcnxk l ckfcgcnx âawnhdh xsjxvghgvh l i khrxacc fzgl csxkvc l i ghpxbc evc fxgcnskxb.

Fcgx, Jcfcnx mc Xfkx : csxn |edycl fcnxk pcvxsxkvc; x âmc  
 mcsxddx mc ocgxcjxß ; cgl cgcnxkx xojxshnh shghnhr ukghn`k denxkc âmc  
 ; cbh mc ; cbhß xthvcgcnxkx rudl wagh. } i k; x fw xfhncgc  
 i l wl ohgr ; i jgcsxkx Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k ph; xl xddcj phrr`kvhk  
 h'hp evxnvx, fwkh 'znc vc ukwk dhd`gl hs` vi b'i k ugl hbv`!

Fwohnx vc Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Cfw Fc; nxk szbgcnxkx âfxn  
 szb vevxß ; xl x redv ejl xavxn. } i k; x ukwk cl cmx  
 ocgxcgcnxkvck Li hmxdc, Debvx mc Lcnmhkh vevxdx szbgcn  
 ukghn`k pedsxddcjxkc bcncn dejxnxn, i l wl ohgr ; i jgcgcnxkx  
 fxgl cvx; gcnx aedvck h'hp evxnvx!

Egc[c vc, Cfw Fc; nxk mc Zl cnxk |edycl fcnc menvx; gcnx  
 [hmhfghn Xfkx Pxahl `k âSxncßsxkvc mc âJhnxox Jcfcnxßvc âdhoa`  
 szbgcn vevxß [i l gcsxkc ]emnxgl xa, âScpxpx Li sgi l Bvck xsc,  
 i l wl xddcjgc xojxshnh shg`kl `av`n. } i k; x u szbgcnvc 'xbgckck  
 l cscgcgc fw x; x ocgxcdc dhnhal `nv`. Oi gcth l c; jcfxkc  
 l ckswf ughk hgxl gcnxk phrr` fw [i n 'xbgcjl cgcnx pcvvxxkvck  
 hnj`r ]uovwn.

2-XOJXSHNH SHG-KLHS-KH XAHNC EVXGLC: GC SCPHFCKXK  
 SXNCSXKVCK FI JI K OCFCNGCNXK XOJXSHNH SHG-KLHS-

Pcrxrcjxk 'xbgcvxgl csxkx ki l wkcgcnxkvck fxnx vc  
 Lcpcl l cv xfkx Cfw Fc; ngc Li hmxdcckxk fxn-fxnxkc dxbv`rghn`  
 l c; jwfgghnv`n. Lcpcl l cv xfkx Cfw Fc; nxk Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k  
 tcbxgcjgcnxkc, |edycl fcnxk mcsxsx ugl hs`kh ahl xg ughk  
 l cjgcfgcngc fxngx; vc Li hmxdcdc dxbv`y` l c; jwfwk acnp mc  
 Li hmxdcckxk fwkghn` e/jxnht ejl csx Kcsn xfkx Li bhppl xk  
 âSxttedkß ; xjhfkvh (212-[x xgvc mcthj evxf) mc Lcs/vvxxkx  
 âLwnw[wb-bcpcfß ; xjhfkvh (346-[` xgvc mcthj evxf) redv  
 ugwk l wavwn. Pcl ]xkxk Jcfcnx vc (313-[i xgvc mcthj evxf)  
 dhd`gl hs` ocgxcgcnxk l crhl `kh dhnhal hdhk fc/bx l cscgcgcnx  
 – pcn x; x l c; jwfwk sckcvxkx 'zsjcnl c; mc ukghn`k l cjxkx  
 xojxshnh shgl hrgh – fegc redv evxn... âl l wl ohgr ; i jgcgcnxkx  
 ukghn` eajl cdc jhrcjx ]hjl hblß Dc/kx u, pcrxrcjgcnx [hl hhjvhk  
 'xbgcjl xavxn!

Ukvhk suknh vh Xfkx Csx (630-[i xgvc mcthj evxf) edkxgc  
 Jcfcnxkxk dugkwk 'ejl xa, ukwk 'cixnvxdx fcphkcgnc cg  
 hjl `av`n. Fw x; x jhnxo]xvck suknh Xfkx : csxn vc zbi ki k fzdi ;  
 jhnxo l c[l wcsxkvc jc; [c Lcpcl l cv xfkx Cfw Fc; nxk

I c; jwfwkh xahnc evcnc; vedxn... âUkwk xthvcgcnx ]uo scnj mc ;ufwvwn.B<sup>1</sup> Jcfcnxkxk mc Xfkx Csxnxk vevxdx âi l wl ohgr ;ijgcgcnx ukw eajl cdc jhf 'cjxnl cbß szbgcnxkvc l crscvvcgcnx fwvwn ;x, i l wl ohgr [hl hhj` fw x; x l c; jwfw eajvx; vck suknh ocgxtcgn fhncsxkvc; x crxvcgcnxkx cgvcck menc[c; vxgcn. Phrr`k fw [i n 'xbgcvxgl csx, dc/kx xojxshnh shg`kl hs`kh xahnc evxgl c; gc fi ji k ncmhdcjxk ]`ohn`gl hs` oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk hgxl gcnx hnhs`kvh ]uo hbv`n.

3- |edycl fcn si kkcscxkxk pcvxsgcnxkxk pcrxrx l c/khs`kvhk fharh l c/khdh dubwgl hs`...

Oi gcth l c; jcfxkvc pcrxrcjxk 'xbgcvxgl csxkxk vx`cn fxn dugw vh |edycl fcn pcvxsgcnxkxk fharh l c/khghnh dubwgl hs`v`n. Fegc ;x, Bcpcfx (748-[x xgvc mcthj evxf) Kcshxkxk (u, âSi kckß l i cgxtxvxn) jcn[i l edx-phg`kvh fegc dhb`n... Kcshxdc vevxgc ;x, L i hmxdcxk tcbxgcjgcgnxkx ncmhdcj ej. U vevx... âKc ncmhdcj evxl ?! Ukwk fhncsxkvc |edycl fcnxk fwdwnvwyw â|cnmcnvx`hnh, ukwk rhnk`k` pe] mhoj vudwnl hß pcvxsxkx kcrg evxl l x?ß<sup>2</sup>

Bcpcfx dhb`n... Lckxl kcbcnxl [c, fcg;c vc fw pcvxs L i hmxdc i] i k fxn xtjxohn ugh fxgcnvx. } i k; x |edycl fcn fwdwnl wavwn ;x, âXghpx, l ckxl fharhghn`k` gc/kcjcxdx mc khghdxr szbgcn vel cdxl x ukghn i] i k \h; -\h; xbcgx; mc ncpl cj scfcfx rcnhn men.ß

Fcgx, Bcpcfx âfcg;c vc...ß vedxn. Ukvhk suknh Xfkx : csxn (774-[i xgvc mcthj evxf) dhb`n... âVuynwvvhk vh, L i hmxdc zb vi kdh mc hoxncjxkvc fw vwhvhk (rhny`avhk) fcpncgckvx.ß Mc fw, ukwk ; cghl `k`k ha; hn fcdhk`v`n.<sup>3</sup>

âScpxpx L i sgi l ßi k âcg-fxnnw mcs-sxgcß ;xjhfkvh âl ck gcckcpwk-Kcfxddw um scffcpx [ccgcpwgghp gcpw bc;hjck mc jcpwnhß fhfkvh Xfkx Hffhs L i hmxdc fhncsxkvc fegc kcrg evxn... âL ck wahrghngh udkhd`nv`l ;x, |edycl fcn 'cgxf ]hjv`, l ck rh`k`k hnohs`kvh 'xbgckvxl . Gh;xk |edycl fcn 'cgxf cgxkx l ckxl ; i ncdxl c rudvw mc fwdwnvw... â"ej, L i hmxdcxk

<sup>1</sup> âCg-fxvhdcjw mck-kxphdcß, 7-[x [xgv, scp.314.

<sup>2</sup> âJcb; xncjwg-pi tthbß, scp.698-701.

<sup>3</sup> âCg-fxvhdcjw mck-kxphdcß, 8-[x [xgv, scp.119.

I ckxl dhk`l h ]hy`n.ß L ck 'ejvxl (mc rhd`jv`l ), vevxl ... âU  
 dedxn.ß Dekxvck I ckc fwdwnvw... â"ej L i hmxdcckx I ckxl  
 dhk`l h ]hy`n.ß L ck 'ejvxl (mc rhd`jv`l ) vevxl ... âU, del c;  
 phg`kvhv`n.ß |edycl fcn fwdwnvw... âHggph ukwk rhnk`k`  
 vudvwnl hs`k!ß¹

Fw pcvxsx Xfkx : csxn vc zb jhnxo ; xjh`f`kvh redv evcnc;  
 âmc ; hkc dc; jwfwg-mcpdcß xfhncsxkx (dc/kx L i hmxdc mcpd  
 dhhkhghnvhk xv) ukh cghmc evcnc; vedxn ; x, Xfkx Hffhs fegc  
 vel xavxn... Wahrghngh udkhd`nv`l ; x, |edycl fcn 'cgxf ]hjv`. Zb-  
 zbi I c tx; xngcavxl ; x, jc; [c I ckxl dhk`l h 'cgc[c; . Fwkh 'znc  
 vc rh`k`k` vhg`kvh 'xbgckvxl . |edycl fcn 'cgxf x; x vctc  
 ; i ncdxl c dhmha[h mwnvw mc fwdwnvw...â"ej L i hmxdcckx I ckxl  
 dhk`l h ]hy`n.ß U, mcpd dhh`]'s` xv. (Xfkx Hffhs vedxn.) L ck  
 'evxf ukw ]hy`nv`l . Dekc vc vevxgc ; x, del c; dedxn.  
 |edycl fcnxk dhk`kh 'cgxf vevxl ... U, del c; phg`kvhv`n.  
 |edycl fcn fwdwnvw...â"ej ukw ]hy`n.ß X; xk[x vctc ukwk dhk`kh  
 'ejvxl , vevxgc ; x, u, del c; phg`kvhv`n. Fw szbi |edycl fcnc  
 ]hjv`nv`l . Fw phvxs i ]i k[i vctc vc edkxgc jc; nhn ugwkvw,  
 pcbncj fwdwnvw... âHggph ukwk rhnk`k` vudvwnl hs`k!ß Xfkx  
 Hffhs vedxn...Ukvhk suknh L i hmxdc pe] mhoj vudl hbv¹

Xfkx : csxn dhh`n... Pcrxrcjck, L i hmxdc zb vi kdh mc  
 hoxncjxkvc fw vwhvhk (rhny`avhk) fcpncgckvx. Ukwk  
 vi kdhs`kh 'cgvx; vc xsc u, Ahl ph; xl xddcjxkc ]hjv`y`  
 bhl hkvhk 'i kvc devvx vctc del c; dedxnvx. Fxal xa cj mc  
 suyhkgh vugw ughk fxn sxkxkx ukwk dhk`kh 'cjxnxvxgc mc u,  
 phl `s`k` dedxnvx! Zbi vc devvx vctc cjgx del c; ! Fwkvhk suknh  
 ]uogw axnkxddhj mc I edmc vc dedxnvx. Suknh vedxnvx... âHggph  
 hkv ugswk, del c; vck vudl hv`l , hl I h dunwgvw! ß Fw  
 ke/I cj egc fxn ke/I cj mc I c/vcvxn ; x, fi ji k `hvahpghn ukw  
 xsjcdxngcn! Hl I h hoxncj thdvhs`kh 'cgvx; vc xsc, L i sgi I fw  
 pcvxsxk hnv`k[h fxn pcvxs vc 'cjxnl xavxn ; x, Fwohnx mc  
 fharhghn` fxnvck hnj`r dugg h scphfcgcnxk fxn ke]csxkvck  
 ncmhdcj ejl xagcn. U ncmhdcjvc vedxgn ; x, |edycl fcn fwdwnvw...  
 â|cnmcnvx`hnh! L ck dhgk`b fxn fcacnl , fegc xsc, pcn fckvcdc  
 ghdxr ugl hv`y` phgvh dhnhl hb szb vevxl sc, dhowv ukw rhny`a  
 ejvxl sc, ukw ; ctthnc mc ri nfcj (dho`kghal hr mhsxjcsx) rcnhn  
 men ; x, rxdhl cjvc ukw pcl xk rhny`a`k mhsxjcsxgc Zb vcn'hp`kh

¹ âScpxpx L i sgi I ß, cgfxnnw mcs-sxgc ; xjh`f` , 96-[- pcvxs.

dho`kghvshsk!ß Li sgi l dwohn`vh;` pcvxsgc dhkha` fw pcvxsx  
'cjxnl c;gc, Li hmxdc i]i k jcn;xfgx fxn tcbxgcj vi bcgj l xa,  
fwkvhk fharh Li hmxdc fhncsxkvc pe] fxn aed redv  
ejl cl xavxn.<sup>1</sup>

Xfkx : csxn â|edycl fcnxk Li hmxdcxk cgedpxkc ejvdx  
vwh vi kdh mc hoxncjvc ukh oedxn ]hjv`nvß vel c;gc dhkha`,  
ukwk i]i k vi kdhvh \hvahpghn`k rhn`krwggwr  
âl cbxddcjgcxkxß l xshg 'cjxnl xa, hoxncj xagcnxkvc xsc  
|edycl fcnc kxsfcj menxgck egc pcvxsgcnc e/jxl hv ejl xavxn ;x,  
u pcvxsgcnvc pcbncj - kcwbw fxgghp! – l z/l xkgcnx gc/kcjpgcdxn  
mc fwkvhk suknh vwh evxn ;x, u gc/kcj pcl xk l z/l xkgcn i]i k  
bc;hj mc \h; -\h; xbcgx; scfcfx ugswk. U dhb`n...âFw pcvxsx fhf`k  
ho`n`kvh 'cjxnck Li sgi l Li hmxdc i]i k rxdhl cjvc Hgghp-  
jhhgh vcn'hp`kh dho`kg`r mc Ukwk nxbmhk`k` xsfhj ejl xavxn.ß

Fwkwkgh vh, ph;xl ocgxtcgcxk mc bhg`l mhgxgcxk  
l cbcl l cj ugwkl hs` fhncsxkvc kcrq ugwkxk ncmhdcjgcn mc  
pcvxsgcn egc dubwgwnvw ;x, ukghn i]i k jhl hl xgc bxvv  
l c/khdh – l cvp mc jc/nxt pcvvxkc 'cgxf ]`o`nv`.

---

<sup>1</sup> âCg-fxvhdcjw mck-kxphdcß, 8-[x [xgv, scp.119.

μ|EDYCL FCNXX GC/KCJGCVXDX ACOSGCN FHF~"  
NCMHDCJXKVC L I GHPXBCGCN

L i sgi l zbi ki k āScpxpß ;xjhƒ`k`k ā|edycl fcnxk  
gc/kcjcvcvdx acosgcñß fhƒ kvh |edycl fcnxk fegc fwdwnvwykw  
kcrġ evxn... ā|cnmcnvx' hnh! L ck Sckvck fxn \edl hk xsjcdxncl  
mc (fxgxncł ;x,) pe] mhoj ukwk c;sxkx ejl cbsck. L ck vc fxn  
fcacncł , pcn fxn l z/l xkx xk[xjł cdxl , szdl cdxl ,  
gc/kcjcł cdxl mc ahgghr mwñl hy`l ;xl x xagcnxl x ukwk i ]i k  
scghj, bc;hj, \h; -\h; xbcgx; mc Zb vcn'hp`kh dho`kg`r mhsxjcsx  
rcñhn men ;x, rxdhl cj `i ki kvc ukw Zb vcn'hp`kh  
dho`kghvshk.ß

L i cġxt vedñ...Fw szbgcnx kcrġ ejvxdxl bhl hk shk;x rcġfxl c  
f`]hr shk[`gv`y`k` pxxs evxncl ! Ukghñ |edycl fcnx-C;ncł  
i -c ke[c vc densxb jzpl cjġcn mwñl wa, xtjxñghñ  
dhyv`ñl `aghñ. Pcl vc fw ;xl x shojh pcvxsgcnx Hgghp-jhhghk`k  
fwdwnvwyw hahy`vh;` hdc xġc edkx bhl hkvh kcrġ evxñgcñ...

﴿وَإِنَّكَ لَعَلَىٰ خُلُقٍ عَظِيمٍ﴾

āPcñrcjck, (ed |edycl fcn) scġ, fzdi ; mc fcdckxġc coghrvshk.ß<sup>1</sup>  
Dhoa` ughñv` ;x, fw pcvxsgcnx phr`r`k `xbġcvxġl csxkxk  
sc; ;xbxk[x kzmi kvc – āscpxp ncmhdcjġcnxk denxkc shojh  
ncmhdcjġcnxk rudwġl hs`ß fzġl csxkvc hñhav`ñhr. } i k;x  
|edycl fcnx-C;ncł c kxsƒcj menxġckġcn u pcbñcjxk sxñcsx (hvcj,  
cl cġ mc nctjhn`) fhñcsxkvc kcrġ ugwkħk l i jcmhjñ  
ncmhdcjġcnġc, pcl ]xkxk u pcbñcjxk fi j i k l i scġl hkghñ`k  
kbcñxkvc rcfwġ ugwkħk `zbcġ coghrx sc[xddcġcnx xġc jhl hl xġc  
bxvvxddcj jca;xġ evxn. Fw shojh ncmhdcjġcn |edycl fcnx-C;ncł c  
kxsƒcj menxġxñv` ;x, l l l i ġ-l z/l xkxk Hdxackxk cmmcġvc;x  
ncmhdcjxkxk uoahñghñ`k, phƒegc |edycl fcnx-C;ncł vck Pc;cl  
xfkx Cƒx Hs (Cl cmx ocġxtcsx L cñmhk`k hjhs`v`ñ) fhñcsxkvc kcrġ  
ugwkħk pcvxsgcnx ;zg`cvc shoghs`k, fxn ;cs u pcbñcjvck cl cmx  
ocġxtcsx L i hñxdc fhñcsxkvc kcrġ ugwkħk l i jcmhjñ pcvxsgcnx  
hñhav`ñl hs`k. Fegc ;x, Xfkx : csñ ukw fharh l c/khdh dubl wa  
mc L i hñxdckxk jc/nxtxkc `cjxñxf ]`ohnl `av`ñ! Fxb fw ;xl x  
pcvxsgcnx āHdxackxk Xsġhl pcvxsgcnxkvc;x nugwß ;xjhƒ kvh,  
egc[c vc āXl hl ġhñ`k vxkxk vxn]cġvxġl csxkvc;x nugghñ`ß

<sup>1</sup> āRcġcl ß swñcsx, hdc.4.



;xjhfk`k 3-[i [xgvxkvc hnhav`n`f jckrxv ejl xax;. Ukghn`k  
fwnhvh fxn vph j;c;nhn evxgl csxkc gi bwl 'znl i ni ;.

#### *FXN RCVCN CMMCGC RHD-VHR*

Xkvv xsc āncmhdcjxk 'xbgcvxgl csx l c/khs`kh ughk dubwl β  
fzgl csxkc rhd`v`f vedxn;... "cgc[c;vc vc ohj`nghv`gh[hy` ;xl x,  
pcvxsxcnck pcrxrx l c/khs`kvhk fharh l c/khdh dubwgl hs`  
ki l wkcgcnxkvck fxnx vc ukghn`k vevxdx fw pcvxsvxn... Cfx  
Lzp[ck acnhf x]l xavx, hl l h Sc/v xfkx Cfx Mcrrhs ukh  
mwnwgh[hr pcvvck – ahgghr pz;l i kvck 'i bcajc 'ejvx. Gh;xk  
Xfkx Tcjpwk mc Xfkx Pc[cn Sc/vxk Cfx Lzp[ckc vevxdx  
āHgghph hkv ugsww ;x, acnhf x]vxdxkc 'znc sckc ahgghr  
mwnl wnhl β szbi ki fharh l c/khdh dubl waghnl

Pcl ]xkxk, |edycl fcnc-C;ncl xk ha;hn ac;xgvc  
fwdwnvwyw āxl hl ghn uk x;x kctcnvxnβ (fwkwk fcpsx suknhvhk  
'cgc[c;vxn) pcvxsxkx fharh l c/khdh dubl hr i ]i k [xvvx-[cpvgc  
]hg`al `agh, gh;xk uk x;x xl hl `k dhgk`b |edycl fcn Cpgx-  
fedjxkxk xl hl ghn` xgc vi b 'cgvxdxkx 'znvi;vc, pcvxs  
hgxl gcnxkvck pcn fxnx sc/d ejl xavxn ;x, ukw |edycl fcn Cpgx-  
fedjxkvck ughk uk x;x xl hl vkh fharhghn`kh dubwf l c/kh  
ejsxkgcn. Fegc ;x, fharh fxn hgxl vc fw dubwl w fcdckl cdcnc;  
ukghn`k szbgcnxkx jckrxv ejl cdc fhagl `av`n.

Pcrxrcjck 'xbgcvxgl csxkxk vx`cn fxn ki l wkcsx vc  
Jcfcnhkxkxk hahy`vh;` pcvxsvc kcrj ejvxdxvxn...

Shgl hk vedxn... |edycl fcnc-C;ncl c vevxl ... āDh  
Ncswgcgghp! Pcn fxn \edycl fcnck fxn mcsxsx ugl wavwn, sxbxk  
mcsxkxb ;xl vxn?β |edycl fcn l ckc [hmhf menl cvx. Fxn ke]c  
'i kvck suknh l ckx 'zni f fwdwnvw...āShgl hk!β Ukh jcnct rh]`f  
vevxl ... āGcfffed;!β Fwdwnvw... āFgxnsck Lwshk`k mcsxsx ;xl  
xvx?β Vevxl ... āFcgx, Dwac xfkx Kwk xvxb Fwdwnvw... āKc i ]i k?β  
Vevxl ... ā}i k; x u, pcl xk vzmncv xkshkghn`k ck fxgx;gxss xvxb  
Fwdwnvw...

āPcrxrcjck, l ckxl mcsxl , sxxnl x shogdhk, zbil vck suknh rudvwywl  
ck dhoa' acos, mc/vcgcxl x denxkc dejnck mc fun[ghn`l` rhdjnhk acos Cgddxfkx  
Cfx Jhgxfvxn.β

Jcfcnhkx fw pcvxsx ncmhdcj evcnc; vedxn... |edycl fcn  
āl ckxl mcsxl β vevx;vc, ukwk oxghtcj mc [hkxaxkgx;  
l crhl `kvh vedxg, zb hxgcsxkvc rudvwyw [hkxaxkx kbcnvc

jwjwnvw.<sup>1</sup>

FW PCVXSXK HNHAV-N-GL HS- MC JCFCNHKXKXK DUBWLWKVH  
L I KHRXAC

Jcfcnhkxkxk fw [i n dubwl wkw vcdngckvxnl c; i] i k fw  
acnxt pcvxsx i] [cpcjvck hnhav`n`n`r... Fw pcvxsvc shwg  
sunwahk`k Shgl hk Thnsx mc px;l c jgx [hmhf menckxk xsc  
|edycl fcnx-C;ncl ugvwywkw 'zni ni ;. Swhg evck Shgl hk  
Thnsxvxn, dc/kx Cfvi g-L i j jcgxfxk zmghvghn`kvhk, dhowv u  
pcbncjxk bzm[cgcnxkvck mc ;i nc;ckgcnxkvck vedxgvx ;x,  
|edycl fcnx-C;ncl xk zb hxgcsxkvc [hkxaxkgx; l cscgcsxkc 'zb  
vx;l xa ugswk. U, |edycl fcnxk cgx xgc Xsghl `rcfwg ejl cbvck  
cmmcg, l csxpx hgx l gcnx mc nhpxfgcnx xgc ujwnwf-vwnwnvw.  
Cmmcg;x i l l c jgcnxk egl xkx, \edycl fcngcnxk mc ukghn`k  
mcsxgcnxkxk ocfcngcnxkx vc ukghnvhk cgvc ejl xavx. Fwkh 'znc  
vc |edycl fcnx-C;ncl c vedxn...âPcn fxn \edycl fcnxk fxn mcsx  
ugl wavwn, sxbxk mcsxkxb ;xl vxn?ß Fwnhvhk 'zni kvi di ;xl x u,  
|edycl fcncvck suknh ukwk mcgxcpvx mc acnxcjxkc shpxf ]`oh[hr  
mcsx fhncsxkvc sunwawn mc pe] vc âpcn fxn hxgc shpxfx zb  
hxgcsxkvc fxn ketcnx mcsx jc/dxk evxn, fcs sxbxk hxgckxbvc;x  
mcsxkxb ;xl vxn?ß – vedc sunwal wn ;x, fw swhgvhk |edycl fcnx-  
C;ncl xk zb hxgcsxkvc ;xl x [hkxaxk se]c[cdx fhncsxkvc shwg  
menl csx vi ai ki gl csxk.

HI l h |edycl fcnxk vcnphg [hmhf menl cl csx mc [hmhf  
fxn l i vvcj jc/oxnc shgl hs`k`k scfcfxkc 'cgvx;vc xsc, fwkw  
vel cgxdx; ;x, u pcbncj l i pi l xagcnvc Hgghp jcnctxkvck  
mcpdxk 'cgxaxkx 'zbgcdxnvx. Fegc ;x, L cvxkcvx rxfgckxk  
vcdxavxnxgl csx l cscgcsxkvc vc xghpx mcpdxk 'cgxaxkx 'zbgcvx,  
phgfw;x rxfgckxk : c/fcdc jcnct vzkvcnxc[cdxkx fxgxnvx.  
Kcphdcj, hahy`vh;`hdc khbxg ugvw...

﴿قَدْ نَرَى تَقَلُّبَ وَجْهِكَ فِي السَّمَاءِ فَلَنُوَلِّيَنَّكَ قِبْلَةً تَرْضَاهَا فَوَلِّ وَجْهَكَ شَطْرَ الْمَسْجِدِ  
الْحَرَامِ وَحَيْثُ مَا كُنْتُمْ فَوَلُّوا وُجُوهَكُمْ شَطْرَهُ وَإِنَّ الَّذِينَ أُوتُوا الْكِتَابَ لَيَعْلَمُونَ أَنَّهُ الْحَقُّ مِنْ  
رَبِّهِمْ وَمَا اللَّهُ بِغَافِلٍ عَمَّا يَعْمَلُونَ﴾

âSckxk hxl hkh vx;xgck xkjbhng` fho`aghn`k 'zni nvi ;. Xkvx sck i bi ki egc

<sup>1</sup> âL c[I ci b-bcmhxvß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.113-114.

fxn rxfgcdc jcnct vzkvcn ;x, u, scx nhb` shgh[hrv`n.ß<sup>1</sup>

Cncf rzml i ki k pz;wl cj, ncpfcngx; mc ncdhscj i ]i k pcnxs ugvwykw mc fw l cscgcvc ncrhfcj h\hmv`y`k` 'znc |edycl fcn fxgxnvx<sup>2</sup> ;x, L cvxkvc jcbc[c fcnrcnhn ugwkxk ;x]; Xsgl [cl xddcjx Xl hl Cgxkxk mcgxcpvgx; ofcnxkxk dhv`gl hs`kh jhf 'cjxnc fxgl cb. Fkh 'znc vc Shgl hk`k [hmhf`k` jc/oxnc shgv` mc Hgghp jcnctxkvck [hmhf menl cdc x[hbc hgv`y` mhoj L wshk`k mcsxsxkx xncgx ]c;l c;gc Shgl hk`k [hmhf`k` menvx. Shgl hk`k fw l cscgckx fxgvdxkc mc ukw ;xjhfcpgxkvck zdncvdxkc 'znc âL wshk`k mcsxsx Dwac xfkx Kwk xvxB vevx;vc, ukh fwdwnvw... âKc i ]i k?ß Shgl hk`k â}i k;x u, zb bcl hkcsxkvc ck fxgx;gx hvhl xvxB – vedc [hmhf menckvc |edycl fcn fwdwnvw... âPcrxcjck l ckl mcsxl mc... Cgddxfkx Cfx Jhgvxn.ß

|edycl fcnxk Shgl hkh fegc [hmhf menl csxkxk px;l cjx hahy`vh redv ugwkxkghnvkh xfhncjvxn...

1-|edycl fcnx-C;ncl xghpx ncswgghn`k mcsxgcxkxk ck l capwnw ughk Dwac xfkx Kwk ki l wkc ughnhr se]vx. L wsh xfkx Xl nhk ukw zb i l l cjxkc [hxxaxk jc/dxk ejvx. }i k;x Dwac Fckx-Xsnhxc ncpfcngx; ejl c;vc mc l i phnxfcgcnvc xl jhphkvkh ]`ol `av`. Fegc ;x, Cgx <sup>TM</sup> vh |edycl fcn j -vck suknh zb pz;wl cjxkxk vzmni kvc fegc vx.

2-|edycl fcnx-C;ncl âkc i ]i k L wshk`k mcsxsx Dwac xvxB – vedc sunwahk bhl hk csxkvc Dwackxk [hxxaxk se]xgl csxkxk scfcfxk fcdhk ejl c; xsjcdxnvx. Shgl hk`k vh vel xavxn... â}i k;x u, [hl hhj`k x]cnxsxkvc ck fxgx;gx xvxB.

|edycl fcnx-C;ncl j zbi ki k fw szbi xgc hdv`kghav`nl hr xsjcdxnvx ;x, Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> u pcbncjxk cl x uygsw ugvwywkx mc dhowv Xsgl` [hkgf-fhagh l i vhtx ejvdxkc 'znc vedxg, dhgk`b ukghn`k x]cnxsxkvc ck fxgx;gx ugvwywkx 'znc mcsx peshf ugwkwn. Dc/kx u pcbncj, Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k mcsxgx; fhncsxkvc ughk rhfxgddcjxkx ha;hn ejl xa mc zbi ki k fwdwnvwyw âU l ckl sxnnxl xk runwdw[wsx mc zbi l vck suknh [hxxaxk rudvwywl ck dhov` ;csvxB – szbi xgc fwkw jc;/xv ejl xavxn. Cgfcjjc, fw szbi vc Jcfcnhxx fharh

<sup>1</sup> âFcrncß swncsx, hdc.144

<sup>2</sup> Fwkwk ha;hn ki l wkcgcnxkvck fc/bxgcx âxl hl cj mc oxghtcj fcpsxkxk xsjxghpghn`ßkvh redv ugkwvw.

I c/khdh dubnhnr fegc xbhþ evxn... âDc/kx I ckxl zbi I vck  
 suknh Cpgx-fedjxl vck rudvwywl ck dhoa` acosvxn!ß Fcgx, fw  
 pcvxsx I zp;cl , pcl ]xkxk pe] fxn bcxt [cpcjx mc xnhv`  
 ugl hdhk fxn pcvxs fxgck Jcfcnhkx dekc vc ukw jc/mxg evxf  
 fharh I c/khdh dubwn!

*MCSXDDCJ : CGL CSXKXK L C/KHS- FHNC SXKVC VX" CN FXN  
 HGXLXK PEDNCJ MC SCN" CNVHKG-Y-*

XI hl Cgxddxfkx Cfxjhgxf <sup>TM</sup> fwdwnwn...

âFw i l l cvck pe] fxn ;cs Hgx L i pcl I cvgc I irhdxc ugwkI hb... Ukghn  
 vxkxk cshsghn`v`n... Pz;wl cj mc mxghdcj ukghnh I cosws ughk fxn phrv`n, mcsxddcj  
 mc mcnhscj ukghn`k hnhs`kvhv`n.ß<sup>1</sup>

Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv Ahtex fw szbi k acnpkvc fegc dhh`n...  
 âMcsxddcj c 'cgvx;vc xsc, fxb Cgxkxk |edycl fcnxk mcsxsx  
 ugvywkvh csg h ac;; -ai fpc ejl xnx;æ fc/bxgcnxkxk fxbxl  
 kcbcnxl xbv c xkhvh I hgx; ugvrghn` mc ukwkgh I i ohgxtcj  
 ejl csxkc fhol hdhnhr, fxb fw mcsxddcj oxghtcj ha; hn vcgxg  
 peshf ejl xnx;; c; sxkc fw jhl fharh fxn I cscgcvx n ;x, c`cn  
 vxrrcj I cn; cbxkvc shoghksh, vph di ;sc; mc w[h ughn.ß

Ukwk [hmf`kvh vedxn;... XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> âjc; [c I ck  
 mxghdcj, mcsxddcj mc mcnhscj phrr`kh I hgx; cl ß vel cl xavxn ;x,  
 ukwk szbi ki fharh fxn I c/khdh dubwf âu, Hgx-Ncswgwggph`k  
 mcsxddcj mc mxghdcj phrr`kh I hgx; vx nß - vedc; . C; sxkc, u  
 fwdwnl wavwn ;x, âHgx L i pcl I cv vxkxk cshs`v`n, mcsxddcj ukghn`k  
 hnhs`kvhv`n...ß XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> fxnx vc mcsxddcj ugl hrgh fw oi swsx  
 sc[xddcgcnx Hgx L i pcl I cv i ]i k xsfhj evxn. Fwkwkgh fegc, pe]  
 mhoj xvvxh evxf vel c; ugl hb ;x, mcsxddcj Hgx-Ncswgxgghp`k  
 Hgx-Ncswgwggph ughk oi swsx phrr`v`n. XI hl <sup>TM</sup> fw  
 oi swsxddcjgcx Hgx-L i pcl I cv i ]i k xsfhj ejvx... Hgx-Ncswgxgghp  
 mc ukwk Cpgx-fedjx ;x, u pcbncjxk zbi kc mc zmghvghn`kvhk  
 ughk uk fxn xl hl h ahl xgvxn.

Fcgx, Cgghl c Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv Ahtex mcsxddcjxk I c/khs`  
 fhncsxkvc pedncjc vi ]hn ugl wa, hl I h Jcfcnhkxkxk dwohn`vh  
 redv ugwkxk dubwl ghn`k` jc; nhnghl hl `av`n. U shvc[c ughnh  
 vel xavxn ;x, âfxb fw mcsxddcj ukwk oxghtcjxkc ha; hn vcgxg  
 peshf ejl xnx;; c; sxkc u, jhl hl xgc fharh xagcnvx n.ß

Fxb xsc sunwawnwr... Ed fw pcvxsxk I c/khs`k` fhah

<sup>1</sup> âKcp[i g-fcghycß, 2-[x oi jfc.

vi al c;vc scn'cnvhk rhghk hgxl ! Redv ejvxdxk âfharh xagcnß phks`ghnv`n?!

Pcrxrcjx fw [i n 'xbgcvcck oi gcth l c;jcfxkxk hgxl gcnx |edycl fcnx-C;ncl xk, ukwk Cpgx-fedjxkxk mc u pcbncjxk scphfcgcnxkxk pcvxs mc sxncsxkvc ocgxtcgcnxk acosx l csgcpcjxkc, ukghn`k jwjvwyw dugh mc l i scgl hkghn i bcnxkvc;x ph;xl xddcjxkc l i ohgxt ughk fxn aed jh`shdv`ghn, ukw vcnpfhg fharh l c/khdh dubwn, kcpdhcj l cbcl l cj ugwkxhk acosgc fhncsxkvc kcrq ugwkxhk fw ncmhdcjgcnx l cvpc, jc/nxtc ]emxnxnvxgcnl

4-XOJXSHNH SHG-KL HS-KH XAHNC EJL CVCK SCPHF CGCNXK  
SZBGCN XKVCK FXN RXSL XKXK XOJXSHNH SHG-KL HS-

Oi gcth l c;jcfxkvc pcrxrcjxk 'xbgcvxgl csxkxk vx'cn fxn kzmi xojxshnh shg`kl hs`kh xahnc ejl cvck pcvxsxk fxn pxsscckxk ]`ohn`gl hs`v`n. Ckshnvkh ughk scphfc Kz/l hk xfkx C[ghk`k rcsxvcx fwkh l xshg ugh fxgc. (Fxb âmcxddcj fhncsxkvc vedxgck pcvxsgcnß fhf`kvh ukh xsjxkhv ejvx;.) Bi fedn xfkx Fc;;hn fw rcsxvcckxk phl `s`k` âScrxtc ocfengcnxß fzgl csxkvc l i ph[xn mc ckshn`k fxn-fxn xgc ]c;xal csxkx mc ukghn`k fxn-fxnkc vevxdx vi al ck[csxkc szbgcnx ncmhdcj evcn;ck redv ejl xavxn. Ukghnvkh fxn vc Cl n xfkx Hs`k ckshn`k cgedpxkc vevxdx szbgcn mc Kz/l hk`k ukh menvxdx [hmfhv`n. U, fxn rcsxvc dhbhnhr |edycl fcnx-C;ncl xk Ri nedagc h`hnv`y` l i phnxfcgcnvc ckshn`k xth ejvxdx di ;sc; l crhl ` ohj`nghjl `a, suknh ukghn`k Ri neda l i ph[xngcnxkc s`y`kh[hr menl csxkx mc zb l hg-vzmgcjgcnxkx ukghngh fzgi avi nl csxkx redv ejl xa, fwkvkh suknh âScrxtcß phvxscgcnxkx mwnywghdhnh vel xavxn...

وَقُلْتُمْ : حَرَامٌ نَصَبُ سَعْدٍ وَنَصَبُكُمْ	عَتِيقَ بْنِ عُثْمَانَ حَلَالٌ أَبَا بَكْرٍ
وَأَهْلُ أَبِي بَكْرٍ لَهَا خَيْرٌ قَائِمٌ	وَأَنَّ عَلِيًّا كَانَ أَخْلَقَ بِالْأَمْرِ
وَكَانَ هَوَانًا فِي عَلِيٍّ وَأَنَّهُ	لَأَهْلٌ لَهَا يَأْعَمُرُونَ مِنْ حَيْثُ لَا تَدْرِي
فَذَاكَ بَعُونَ اللَّهَ يَدْعُونَ إِلَى الْهُدَى	وَيَنْهَى عَنِ الْفَحْشَاءِ وَالْبَغْيِ وَالتَّكْرِ
وَصِيُّ النَّبِيِّ الْمُصْطَفَى وَابْنُ عَمِّهِ	وَقَاتِلُ فُرْسَانَ الضَّلَالَةِ وَالْكَفْرِ
وَهَذَا بِحَمْدِ اللَّهِ يَهْدِي مِنَ الْعَمَى	وَيَفْتَحُ آذَانًا تَقْلُنَ مِنَ الْوَقْرِ
نَجِي رَسُولِ اللَّهِ فِي الْغَارِ وَحَدَهُ	وَصَاحِبُهُ الصَّدِيقُ فِي سَالِفِ الدَّهْرِ

Vevxkxb...Sc/vxk fw l crhl h se]xgl csx phnhl v`n, fcs  
Cjxr xfkx Usl hk` – Cfw Fc;nx se]l cdxkxb ke[c phghg  
ugvw?!

" zncsck, Cfw Fc; n ukwk i ]i k l i khsxf mc dhoe` cmcbvex-  
[xvxn?!

Gh; xk Cgx fw xac phl `vhk ghdxr vxh.  
Fxb Cgxkx se]l c; xsjcdxnvx; ; x, u,  
Fwkh vh ghdxr vxh, ed Cl n! Scksc fwkw fxgl xnsck!  
U, Hgghp`k ; zl cdx xgc pxvhdcjc vuynw ]hy`nhn.  
Tcphvkh, bi gl vck, l i k; cnvck wbhrgvhvhn.  
U, L wsjthk`k cl xsx uygw, ukwk mcsxsxvxn.  
Bcghgcj, hby`kg`r \cpgcmhkghn`k` rcjgc dejxnckvxn.  
Fw, Hgghph pcl v ugswk ; x, xkshkghn` ; ungwrvhk vi bgi dc  
]`ohn`n!

: hn ugl wa, hy`nghal `a rwghrgghn` h]`n.  
Dhgk`b |edycl fcngc l hyhnh dugvha` ugl hr,  
: e]l xa bhl hkghnvh fxn mhoj ukwkgh dug dugvha` ugl hr...<sup>1</sup>  
Xfkx Cfvi g-Fxn vc fw rcsxvckx âXsjd/hfß ; xjhfkvh –  
Kz/l hk xfkx C[ghk`k jcn[i l edx-phg`kvh redv ejl xa, hl l h  
ukwk x; x l xsnhs`k` xojxshnh shgl `av`n...

فَذَاكَ بِعَوْنِ اللَّهِ يَدْعُو إِلَى الْهُدَى وَيُنْهَى عَنِ الْفَحْشَاءِ وَالْبَغْيِ وَالتَّكْوِيرِ  
وَصَبِي النَّبِيِّ الْمُصْطَفَى وَابْنُ عَمِّهِ وَقَاتِلُ فُرْسَانَ الضَّالَّةِ وَالْكَفْرِ

U, Hgghp`k ; zl cdx xgc pxvhdcjc vuynw ]hy`nhn.  
Tcphvkh, bi gl vck, l i k; cnvck wbhrgvhvhn.  
U, L wsjcthk`k cl xsx uygw, ukwk mcsxsxvxn.  
Bcghgcj, hby`kg`r \cpgcmhkghn`k` rcjgc dejxnckvxn.  
Xfkx Cfvi g-Fxn |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j -xk cl x  
uygwsx mc ukwk mcsxsx ughk Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -k jc/nxtxkvc; x fw x; x  
fedjx ae/nvck ]`ohnl `a, gh; xk Cfw Fc;nxk jc/nxtxkvc ughk x; x  
fedjx shoghl `av`n. Ukvhk suknh vh Xfkx Csxn âWsvwg-yhfcß  
; xjhfkvh Kz/l hk`k jcn[i l edx-phg`kvh fegc dhh`n... âUkwk  
dhbv`y` ae/ngcnvck fxnx vc |edycl fcnx-C; ncl vck suknh  
ckshn`k fha`kh 'cgck phvxscgcnx ohj`nghjv`y, oxghtcj l cscgcsxkc  
juowkvwyw fxn ae/nvxn.ß Suknh rcsxvckxk ckshn`k cpmhghjghn`kh

<sup>1</sup> Fw ae/nxk l ckfcgcnxkx mc ahxnxk jcn[i l edx-phg`k` pcl xk ; xjhfk`k  
â|edycl fcn jcnctxkvc mcsx gcrcfxkxk Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h menxgl csxkxk  
l capwngal hs`ß fhfkvh redv ejl xax; .

ahl xg ughk fxxk[x fedjxkx redv evxn, gh; xk ukghn`k oxghtcj l c-  
scgcsxkvc xojxgth vi avi ; gcnxkx 'zsjcnck shxn fedjgcnx, oi swsxc  
XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k |edycl fcn ; -xk mcsxsx ugl hs`k` 'zs-  
jcnck mc ukwk jc/nxtxkvc vedxgck fedjgcnx ae/nvck ]`ohnl `av`n.

Ukvhk suknh 'cgck Xfkx Pc[cn, Kz/l hk`k jcn[i l edx-  
phg`kvh dhn`n... âU pcl xk acosvxn ; x, fxn ke]c fedjvc zb  
rzml i xgc xtjxohn evxn.ß Suknh ckshn`k vzmnhk`kvh xtjxohn  
ejl c; gc cghrcvhn ukwk fedjgcnxkx 'cjxnl xa, hl l h oxghtcj  
l cscgcsxkc juowkhk fedjgcnx xojxshnh shgl `av`n.

Fegcgx; gc, bhl hk xncgxgcvx; [c, oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk hgxl gcnx  
ouaghl hv`rghn` ncmhdcjgcnx jcvnx[x ughnhr zb ; xjhfgnh`kvhk  
]`ohn`n, fwkwkgh vh suknh;` kcsxggcnx jhnxox 'en]c; gx; gcnx fhah  
vi al c; vck wbhrvh shoghl `aghn.

Fwkh cshsck, fcg; c vc vel c; ughn ; x, Bi fedn xfkx Fc; ; hn  
rctgcj evcnc; zbi ki k âL i mcttcrxddhjß ; xjhfkvh |edycl fcnx-  
C; ncl vck suknh oxghtcjgc cghrcvhn dhnkhk xojxghtghn`k  
phl `s`k`, fw fhncvc fha menck szpfcjgcnx mc vedxgck ae/ngcnx, u  
[i l gcvck Kz/l hk xfkx C[ghk`k rcsxvcsxkx mc XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -  
`k tcbxgcjxkx cphjc evck, oi swsxc ukwk |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk  
mcsxsx ugvywkw 'zsjcnck x; x fedjgc fxngx; vc redv ejl xavxn.  
Gh; xk Xfkx Cfvi g-Fxnn (463-[i xgvc mcthj evxf) l cscgckxk kc  
denvc ugvywkw fxgl xa mc pcl xk x; x fedjx xojxshnh shgl `av`n.

Ukvhk suknh 'cgck Xfkx Csx (638-[x xgvc mcthj evxf)  
oxghtcj l cscgcsx xgc cghrcvhn fha menck xojxghtghn`k rcgcl c  
hg`kl hs`k`k l csgcpcj ugl hv`y`k` 'znvi ; vc, fw rcsxvcvc  
pcl xk xojxghtghn` 'zsjcnck fedjgcnxk phl `s`k` xojxshnh shg`f  
dhgk`b fwkw vel xavxn... âFw ae/nvc oxghtcj ohj`nghkl `av`n.ß Fw  
vh XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k jc/nxtxkx cphjc evck fedjgcnxk xojxshnh  
shg`kl hs`kh cghmc ugwk l wavwn!

Fw x; xsxkvck suknh 'cgck Xfkx Pc[cn (852-[x xgvc mcthj  
evxf) pcn x; x l zmbwkw... pcl oxghtcj fhncsxkvc; x xojxght`, pcl  
vc Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k mcsx ugl hs` xgc cghrcvhn jc/nxtgckl csxkx ae/nvck  
]`ohnl `a, fw rcsxvckxk pcjjh oxghtcj l zmbwsw xgc cghrcvhn  
ugl hs`kh fegc xahnc ejl cl xavxn!

Fegcgx; gc, bhl hk kc rcvxn xncgxgcdxnsc, oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk  
hgxl gcnx bx; n ugwk l hs` zb l c; jcf mc crxvcgcnxkxk  
l csgcpcjxkc ugl hdhk pcrxrcjgcnx l ckfcgcncvck fxn u rcvxn  
]uo ]`ohn`nghn!

C'cn redv ugwkhhghnh fxn vphph l i nh[xcj evxf mcsx fcpssxkx, phrr`k mc mcsxddcj ocfngcnxkxk ke[c 'xbgcvxgcnc; znj-fhsv`n evxgl csxkc fxn vphph kcbcn shgshr, l c/gwl ugh[hrv`n ; x, oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk hnv`[`gghn` |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -xk Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -` zbi kc mcsx jc/dxk ejl csxkx 'zsjcnck ocfngcnvck ]uo axvvcjgc jc/sxngckl xagcn. Fwkh 'znc vc ncmhdcjxk mc rcsxvckxk fw pxsscsxkx xojxshnh shg`n, xojxshnh shgv`rghn`kh vh csgh xahnc ejl xngcn. Pcrxrcjxk fw [i n 'xbgcvxgl csx oi gcth l c; jcfxkvc ck ]uo dhd`ghk 'en]c; gx; vxn - xsjcn |edycl fcn pcvxsx xgc cghrcvhn ugsww, xsjcn ukwk sxncsx xgc, xsjcnc vc ukwk csphf`k`k hvcj-ck/ckcgcncx xgc. C'cn |edycl fcn si kcsxkxk mcsxddcjvck fharh l zmbwghnhv 'xbgcvxgl csxkxk kil wkcgcncxkx hojhnl hr xsjcsc;, fcpssl xb pcvvxkvck hnj`r wbhkhn.

5-XOJXSHNH SHG-KLHS-KH XAHNC EVXGL CVCK |EDYCLFCN  
SI KKCSXKXK NCMHDCJXKXK PHL-S-K-K XOJXSHNH SHG-KLHS-  
Xfkk Pxahl |edycl fcnxk sxncsxkxk ncmhdcjgcncxk  
Fc; ; hxxk dugw xgc âSxnedx Xfkk Xsphrßvhk cob ejl xa mc zb  
; xjhfk`k cmmcgkvc rcgcl c hgl h i sgwfwkw fegc fcdhk  
ejl xavxn... â... Xfkk Xsphr`k fw ; xjhfvh redv ejvx; gcncxk  
fc/bxgcncxk fuaghd`nhl ... Pcl ]xkxk redv ugwkl hs` ]xn; xk,  
fcdhk ugwkl hs` fw [hl hhj i ]i k ouah'cgl cb ughk aedgcnc vc  
(edkxgc xojxshnh shg`nhl )...ß¹  
Xfkk Pxahl `k, Xfkk Xsphr`k sxncsxkvck ]`ohnjv`y` mc

¹ Xfkk Pxahl - Cfw Lcpcl l cv Cfvi g-Lcgx; xfkk Pxahl Pxl dcnc.  
Xfkk Oi ggc; hk ukwk fhncsxkvck dhh`n... â |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk sxncsxkx, ukwk  
h`hnv`y` l i phnxfgcncx mc 'znvi di jcvfxngcnx Xfkk Xsphrvhk cob ejl xa mc  
ukw oi ghscgcavxnl xavxn...ß Si dwjx âFwydcjwg-twlvß ; xjhfk`k 315-[x  
scpxtcsxkvck fegc dhh`n... âU, |edycl fcn sxncsxkxk oi ghscsxvxn ; x, Bxdhv  
Fc; ; hx Kcvxl xfkk Xsphrvhk eajl xa mc ukw oi ghscgcavxnl xavxn...ß Ukghn`k  
âfw ; xjhfk`k oi ghscgcavxnl xavxnß vel c; vc l crscvgcncx uvwn ; x, Xfkk Xsphr`k  
sxncsxkvck ph; xl gcncx cl cg mc nctjhngghn`kh l i ohgxt ughk pcn fxn aedx  
; xjhfvhk ]`ohnj l `av`n. Xfkk Pxahl 213, dhowv 218-[x px[nx xgxkvck L xsxncv  
mcthj ejl xavxn. Fc; ; hx Bxdhv xfkk Cfvi ggph xfkk Ji tedg 183-[i xgvc mcthj  
ejl xavxn. Lcpcl l cv xfkk Xsphr xfkk Dcshn L i jcggxfx fw sxncxk Hffhsx  
ocgxtcsx Lckswnwk 'zsjcnxax xgc mc ukwk ugw Lepvx i ]i k dhbl `av`n.  
Cghmc l c/gwl hj i ]i k fhoh fxgcnsxkx... Pi sedk Ped; cgxk Xfkk Pxahl `k  
sxncsxkc dhhv`y` âL i rcvxl cß, Rhpxnc ]h`, 1356. Fxbxl l cjkvc redv  
ejvx; gcncx xb vc fw ]h`vhk cob evxgl xavxn.



xojxshnh shgv`y` hahy`vh;` phgghn` redv ejl c; ughn...âU aedgcn ;x, ukghn`k ohj`nghv`gl hs` [hl hhj`k ouawkh 'cgl xnß, ukghnvhk fxx vc |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk âmc ckbxn caxncjc;cg-crncfîk – zb rupwl - crncfhk` Xghpx cbhfvhk runowjß – hdcxkxk pz; l i kc 'znc zb rupwl - crncfhghn`k` – Cfvi g-L i jcgxf zmghvgghn`k` ]hy`nv`y` bhl hk fha menck phvxscvxn. Jcfcnx ukw zb jhnnoxkvc sckcvgcngc Xfkx Xsphrvhk ncmhdcj evcnc; vedxn... |edycl fcnx-C; ncl Cfvi g-L i jcgxf zmghvgghn`k` fxx denc d'y`f vevx...âSîbgcnvck phks` fxx fw xavc l ckc ;zl c; evcn ;x, l ckvck suknh rhnvha`l , mcsxl mc sîbxk hnhk`bv h ocgltcl ugswk?ß Xajxnh; ]`ghn`k pe] fxx fw vc/mcjc l i sfcj [hmhf menl cvx, hl l h Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf vevx...âEd Hgghp`k |edycl fcnx! Lck fw xavc sckc ;zl c; evc[cdcl.ß |edycl fcn ukw rupwl ghn`kh jcrvxl evcnc; fwdwnvw...âPcrxrcjck fw l ckxl rhnvha`l , mcsxl mc l ckvck suknh sîbxk hnhk`bv h;` ocgltcl vx. Ukwk szbgcnxkx eavxf xjhj evîk.ß

Nhmx vedxn... Lc[gxs xajxnh; ]`ghn` hdhyh rhgov`ghn. Ukghn 'i gc-'i gc Cfw Jhgxfc vedxnvxcn...âSckc cl n evxn ;x, zb uygwkwl cl n mc tcnl hkghn`kh xjhj evxf l i jx ughshk!ß<sup>1</sup>

Xfkx Pxahl pcl fw ocfcnx, pcl vc fxx juo fharh ocfcngcnx xojxshnh shgl `av`n. } i k;x ukwk kbcnxkc 'znc fw ;xl x ocfcngcnxk [hl hhjh ]hjv`n`gl hs` ph;xl ped/cjxk ouawkh 'cgl xnvx mc ukghn fw ;xl x xagcnvck khnhb` xvxcn.<sup>2</sup> Lcpb fwkh 'znc vc Xfkx Xsphr`k sxncsxxk jhl hl xgc wkwjl wavwn. } i k;x ukvh ughk fxx juo ncmhdcjgcnxk dhd`gl hs`kh juo vh l hnhr 'zsjcnl cl xavxn, kcphtcj ukwk ki socgcnx xjl xavxn.<sup>3</sup> Ukwk denxkc xsc âSxnedx xfkx Pxahl ß l capwngal `a mc ukghn`k kbcnxkvc ck l z/jcfcn sxnc shd`gl hyh fhaghl `av`!

Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k phrr`kv h ughk fw ha;hn fcdhk`k cpcl xddcjxkx vcn; evck Jcfcnx ukw zb jhnxo ;xjh`kv h redv ejl xavxn. Hl l h suknhghn zbi ki k jctsx ;xjh`k` dhhbn;ck âJhnxoßxkvc dug menvdx fw rctgcjx mc scpmx hkghl `av`n. U, fw ocfcnx âmc ckbxn caxncjc;cg-crncfîkß hdcxkxk jctsxnxkvc pcl xk sckcvgc redv evck bhl hk vedxn ;x, |edycl fcn fegc fwdwnvw...

<sup>1</sup> âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, L xsxn ]h`, 1-[x ]h`, 2-[x [xgv, scp.216-217. Fxb ukwk oi ghscsxkx redv ejvx; .

<sup>2</sup> L ck ukghn`k fc/bxgcnxkx âL xk jhnnoxg-pcvxsß ;xjh`kv h redv ejl xacl .

<sup>3</sup> Suk bhl hkghn (1396-[` xgvc) Xfkx Xsphr`k sxncsxxk fc/bx pxsscgcnx L cnh; eaxk Nxfhj acpcnxkvc ]h` ugwk l wavwn.

قَالَ: فَأَيُّكُمُ يُؤَاذِرُنِي عَلَى هَذَا الْأَمْرِ عَلَى أَنْ يَكُونَ أَخِي وَكَذًا وَكَذًا ثُمَّ قَالَ :  
 إِنَّ هَذَا أَخِي وَكَذًا وَكَذًا

âSxbgcnvck phks` fmxkxb fw xavc l ckc ;zl c; evcn ;x,  
 l ckl rhnvha`l mc shxnc l mc shxnc l ugswk.B Suknh fwdwnvw...  
 âPcrxrcjck fw, l ckl rhnvha`l v`n mc shxn mc xgho`n. Ukwk  
 szbgcnxkx eavvxf xjhj evxk.B Nhm x vedxn...âUnhvh;`ghn rhgov`ghn,  
 fxn-fmxkxc fho`f 'i gc-'i gc Cfw Jhgxfc vedxnvxgc...B<sup>1</sup>

Xfkx : csxn vc pcl zbi ki k âJhnxoß ;xjhfkvh<sup>2</sup>, pcl vc  
 jctsn ;xjhfkvh fegc redv ejl xavxn. Fw vh fxbxl âncmhdcjxk  
 fxn pxsscsxkxk xojxshnh shg`k`f l ctpwl vh l i cl l h  
 dnhj l hrß hvghkv`nv`y`l `b aedvxn.

Fwkvhk hnj`y`k` Lcpcl l cv Pi sedk Ped;cg ejl xa mc  
 zbi ki k âPcdhjw L i pcl l cvß hvg` ;xjhfk`k 1-[x ]h`k`k 104-  
 [i scpxtcsxkvc |edycl fcnxk vxgxkvck fw szbgcnx kcrj  
 ejl xavxn...âSxbgcnvck phks` fmxkxb fw xavc l ckc ;zl c; evcn ;x, l ckl  
 rhnvha`l, mcsxl mc sxbk hnhk`bv h ocgtcl ugswk?B Gh;xk pcl xk ;xjhfk  
 1354-[i xgvc;x 2-[x ]h`kv h (139-[w scpxtcsxkvc) pcl xk  
 [i l gcgcx xojxshnh shgl `av`n.<sup>3</sup>

Phrr`k fw [i n znj-fhsv`n evxgl csx, dc/kx ncmhdcjxk  
 'xbgcvxgl csx mc ukh pe] fxn xahnc evxgl cl csx oi gcth  
 l c;jcfxkxk hgxl gcxkxk dhk`kv h 'ekxa dhd`gl `a mc hvx fxn  
 l cscgcvx n.

6-|EDYCLFCN ; SI KKCSXKXK DHB-GLHS-K-K  
 RHNA-S-K-K HG-KLHS-

Oi gcth l c;jcfxkvc |edycl fcn si kcsxkxk znj-fhsv`n  
 evxgl csxkxk ck l i p i l kil wkgcnxkvck fxn ocgtcgcn  
 jcnctxkvck u pcbncjxk si kcsxkxk dhb`gl hs`k`k rhna`s`k`k  
 hg`kl hs`v`n. Ukghn |edycl fcnxk pcdhjvh ugvwyw vzmnvck  
 e/jxfhnck fw xax rhvhyhk ejl xavxgc n, pcjjh ri nedagxgc n  
 Cfvi gghp xfkx Cl n xfkx Hs` |edycl fcnxk szbgcnxkx  
 dhbl hrvhk ]c;xkvxn l xa mc ukh vel xavxgc n...â|edycl fcnvck  
 pcn kc eavvxnscksc dhb`nshk, phgfw;x u vh fxbxl ;xl x fxn

<sup>1</sup> âJctsnx Jcfcnß, 1-[x ]h`, Fwghr ]h`, 1323-1330-[w xggcn, 19-[w [xgv, scp.72-75.

<sup>2</sup> âCg-fxvhdcjw mck-kxphdcß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.40.

<sup>3</sup> âCg-rcvx nß, Cgghl c Cl xkx, Jephk, 1372-[x xg, 2-[x [xgv, scp.288-289.

fcacnvxnæ pcl nhb`g`r, pcl vc rcbcf phg`kvh vkh`a`n!ß Fw ri nedagxgc |edycl fcnxk scphfcgcnxkvck ughk l i ph[xngcn xv. Egc ukghn vh |edycl fcnxk pcdhj`k`k suk hkghn`kvh u pcbncjxk mcsxddcj dhbl hs`kh l hke ugvwghn mc |edycl fcnvck suknh ph;xl xddcj ]hjv`rghn` bhl hk u pcbncjxk pcvxsxkxk dhh`g`f dhd`gl hs`k` jhl hl xgc rhvhyhk ejvxgc. Fw rhvhyghn vh cl cmx ocgxtcsx Zl cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxbxk vzmni kc rcvcn vhmhl ejvx. U, fw rhvhyghn` 'zji nvi mc pcvsgcnxk dhh`gl hs`kh vxh tcnl hk menvx.<sup>1</sup>

Dhgk`b Hgghp fxgx ;x, wbwk csngcn fudw |edycl fcnxk pcl mcsxddcj, pcl vc vx`cn si kkcgcx fhncsxkv fwdwnvwyw pcvsgcnxk kc rcvcn dhh`gl hv`y`kh 'znc wkwvwgl wavwn!

X;x redv...

1-Ckshn`k Li hmxdc mc Cl n xfkx Hsgh ughk phvxsx...

Fxb âCyhkb ;xhf`k`k l i cgxtxkxk ncmhdcj ejvxdxkx oi ghscsxkx redv evxn; . U vedxn... Ckshnvkh ughk ki l hdcvck ped/cjx Li hmxdc xfkx Cfx Si tdk`k shnd`kh ]hjv` : eax; ]x Sc/v Cfw Vcnc ukghn` rhna`ghl hyh ]`ov`, ukh vevxgc... âCkshn i ]i k vhoxg ugl hr x[hbcx hg.ß : eax; ]x x]cnx 'ejvx. Cl n xfkx Hs Li hmxdcxk dhk`kvx xv, ; eax; ]x ukh vevx...âCkshn vhoxg ugl hr i ]i k x[hbc xsjcdx.ß Cl n Hs vevx...âDh Cl xncg-l z/l xkxk, fw kc gcrxfvx ;x, fwkghn zbgcnxk ukh l ckswf evxngcn? Fw rzml i zb kcscfgcnxkc rhdjhn!ß Li hmxdc vevx...âLck runownhl ;x, fw xa zb hnv`k[h fxn ]xn; xk phvxsckx 'cjxnsxk!ß Cl n Hs vevx...âSck dhgk`b fw ;cgl ckx veæ c`cn fha jwjvwsh, ukghn` pcrxn mc ohn evcnsck, c`cn fha jwjl hsh, fw hv` ukghn rhdjhnshk.ß Li hmxdc ; eax; ]xdc vevx...â}zgc ]`o`f ve ;x, fwnhvh ughk Cl n xfkx Hl xn zmghvghn` vhoxg ugswkghn.ß U fegc ejvx, fw bhl hk ckshn xsjxskh ugl hrgh Cl n xfkx Hl xn zmghvghn`k`k phl `s` vhoxg ugvwghn. Li hmxdc rcbcfgc Cl n Hsh fho`f vevx...âVuynwvhk vh, ocdhkcj ejvxk!ß Suknh rh`\`]`dh vevx...â" ej ve ;x,

<sup>1</sup> |edycl fcn i pcvxsxkxk dhh`g`f dhd`gl hs`k`k rhvhyhk ugwl hs`k` 'zsjcnck ncmhdcjgcxk cjhntg` xhbp` âx; x l c; jcfvc xsghl x acnxcj l ckfcgcnxß fzgl csxkv redv ugwl wavwn. |edycl fcnxk mcsxddcj dhbl hs`kh l hke]xgx; jzncvxl csx vc pcl xk fcpsxk âScrxtcß fzgl csxkv redv ugwkvw.

fwnhvh ughk umsgwghn mc ocbnc[gxgcñ vhoxg ugswkghn.ß U 'evxf  
pcl xk szbi vevx, gh;xk pe] ;cs vhoxg ugl hv`. L i hmxdc vevx...  
â"ej ve ;x, fwnhvh phb`n ughk ckshñ vhoxg ugswkghn.ß U 'evxf  
fw szbi vevx. Ckshñ, Kz/I hk xfkx Fcaxnxk fha]`g`y` xgc vhoxg  
ugvwghn. Kz/I hk vevx...

يَا سَعْدُ لَا تُعَدِّ الدُّعَاءَ فَمَا لَنَا  
نَسَبٌ نَجِيبٌ بِهِ سِوَى الْأَنْصَارِ  
نَسَبٌ تَخَيَّرَهُ الْإِلَهُ لِقَوْمِنَا  
أَثْقَلَ بِهِ نَسَبًا عَلَى الْكُفَّارِ  
إِنَّ الَّذِينَ تَوَوَّأُوا بِبَدْرٍ مِنْكُمْ  
يَوْمَ الْقَلِيبِ هُمْ وَقُودُ النَّارِ

Ed Sc/v, ; e]I xa xvvxhghn`k` jc; nhnghl h, ]i k; x  
Fxbxl [hmhf menc[cdxl xb kcscf ckshñvhk fharh vedxgvxn.  
U kcscf ; x, Hgghp fxbxl rzml i l i b i ]i k se]xf.  
Fw kcscf ; htxngcnc ke[c vc hy`nv`n.  
Sxbvck Fcvn l i phnxfcsxkvc l cpm ughkghn,  
Rwdwvh vctk ugwkhhkghn [cpckkcl xk dhkh[hrghn`v`n.

Fwkvhk suknh hdhyh rhgo`f rcbcfgx phgvh ]zgc ]`ov`.  
L i hmxdc ukwk hñv`k[h fñ hvhl 'zkvcnvx ; x, rhdjhñs`k. Sukñh  
ukwk ; zkgi ki hg`f semxkvxnvx, ukwk zbi ki k mc dugvhagñ`k`k  
ph[cjgcñxkx jc/I xk ejvx. Fwkvhk suknh L i hmxdc Cl n Hsh vevx...  
âFw phvxscdc epjxdh[`l `b duo xvxlß<sup>1</sup>

Fw phvxscvck hdv`k ugwn ; x, ph;xl gcñ |edycl fcn  
si kkcscxkx fñ pxsscsx ughk ckshñ gcrcfxkxk fegc, dhd`gl hs`k`k  
rhna`s`k` hg`nv`ghn. }i k; x fw gcrcfvc csgxkvc dcl ckgx ughk  
ckshñ`k l cvp mc jc/nxtx mhn vx mc ukghñ oxghtcj vcsjcsxkxk  
ri vncjgxgcñxkvck vedxgvxgcñ. Redv ugwkhhkghn`k l c[l wswkvhk  
l c/gwl ugwn ; x, ph;xl gcñ zb l i ohgxtgcñ xgc vi al ck]xgx;  
ejvx; gcñxkc 'znc |edycl fcn si kkcscxkxk dhd`gl hs`k`k rhna`s`k`  
hg`nv`ghn!

2-âCyhkxß ; xjh`f`k`k l i cggtx Xfkx Acph`f`k ncmhdcj ejvdx vx`cn fñ ocfcñ

U vedxn... Ohgxv xfkx Cfvi ggghp Rcsnx l ckc vevx... âL ckxl  
kcscfxl x dñb.ß L ck L i bcn rcfxgcscxkvck dhbl hyh fhaghv`l ,  
fñ l i vvcj tx;xngcavxl , suknh ukwk dhk`kh 'cgvxl . L ckc  
vevx... âKc ejvxk?ß Vevxl ... L i bcn kcscfxkvck fhaghv`l , pcgc vc  
ukw jhl hl ghdh fxgl cl xacl .ß Vevx... âEgc fwnhvh shogh. Hgghp  
ukghñ`k ; z; i ki ; cssxk! L ckxl i ]i k sxnc dñb.ß Ukh vevxl ...

<sup>1</sup> âCyhkxß, Shsx ]h`\\, 14-[i [xgv, scp 120 mc 122, Fednwj ]h`\\, 16-[` [xgv, scp  
13 mc 17.

âSxnc dhhbn; ck Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfkx sxncsxkc ]hjh[hyhl , ukw  
 vh dhh`l l `?ß Vevx... âOedn! Dhgk`b ukw [cpckkcl xk vcnxkgx; -  
 gcnxkvc 'zncnsck.ß (Dc/kx vcmckxk rwdnwyw denc vcdckvc fxbx  
 'zncnsck)<sup>1</sup>

"znvi di ki b ;xl x, ph;xl vcsjc Cgx ™ -`k hv`k`k  
 dhh`gl hs`kh fegc[c l hke ugwn, dhgk`b ukwk l cbcl l cjxkc  
 vhn eajvx; gcnxkx dhh`nv`ghn. Fw phgvh ke[c ugh fxgcnvx ;x,  
 |edycl fcn si kkcsxkxk dhh`gl hs`kh x[hbc mensxkgcn?! Egc fxn  
 si kkc ;x, â|edycl fcnxk zbi kvck suknh Cgxkx mcsx jc/dxk  
 ejvxdxkx ha; hn ac; xgvc vedxnß

Fcgx, ocgxtgcgn |edycl fcn si kkcsxkxk dhd`gl hs`kh l hke  
 ugwnvwghn. Fw acnxt si kkckx ncmhdcj evck mc ukghn`k  
 dhh`gl hs`kh pxl l cj 'zsjcnck l i ohgxtgcnx vc csngcn fudwk[h  
 pcl nwpv, pcl vc txbx; x [cpcjvck swx-rcsvgcnc vi ]hn ugwn,  
 acosxddcjcgnx jh`vhghk`nv`. Ukghn`k fc/bx ki l wkcgcnxkx  
 jebgx; gc redv evc[cdx; .

7-|EDYCLFCN SI KKCSXKX NCMHDCJ EVCKGCNXX MC  
 SI KKCKX "ZSJCNCCK NCMHDCJGCNXX BCXTGCVXGLCSX,  
 UKGHN-K LI OHGTX UGHK : XJHFGHN-K LCPM EVXGLCSX MC  
 XVEUGUQX LI OHGXTGCNXX RCJGC DEJXNXGLCSX...

Vuynsw, oi gcth l c;jcfx hgx l gcnxkxk |edycl fcn  
 si kkcsxkx ncmhdcj evck nhmxgcnx mc ukghn`k ph;xl xddcjxkc  
 bcnfc mwnhk ;xjhfgnh` bcxtgcjl c; i ]i k 'znvi di jcvfxngcnx pe]  
 fxn l i pcrxr shd`f rwnjnhn fxgl cb. Fegc ;x, ukghn`k kcbcnxkvc  
 ocgxtckxk l crhl `k`, mhgxkxk, swghk`k, cl xnxk l zmredxkx  
 hbhgv`f ocgcy 'cjxnck pcn fxn ncmhdcj bcxt shd`g`n. Fegc ;x,  
 fc/bck ukghn`k kcbcnxddcgcnx xgc l i ohgxt ughk fxn hgx l ,  
 i l wl ohgr ;ijcgcnx jcnctxkvck rcjgc dejxnxgl xavxn! Xkvx

<sup>1</sup> Dekc unhvh, 19-[w [xgv, scp.59, Fednwj ]h` , 22-[x [xgv, scp.23. Xfkx Acphf  
 L cpcl l cv xfkx L cs/wv Rincaxkxk pcvxsxkx fi ji k âSxphpß l i cggxtgcnx  
 ncmhdcj ejl xagn. U, dh 125, dh 126, dh vh 127-[x xgvc mcthj ejl xavxn.  
 âJcrnxfwj-jcpbxfß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.207. Ohgxv xfkx Cfviggph Rcsnx 89-[x xgvc  
 Mcgxvxk jcnctxkvck Lc;;ckxk ph;xl x ugvw. 105-[x xgvc xsc Pxahl `k  
 jcnctxkvck Fcsnc mc : wtcdc mhgx jc/dxk ugwkvw. 120-[x px[nx xgxkvc ukw  
 xavck 'zjinvign mc vph suknh Xnhr`k ph;xl x ukw rcjgc dejxnvx. Pcl  
 csxg-kcscfxkvc, pcl vc vxkxkvc l i jcpxl ugwkwn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg`  
 âCyhkbvc, âJcpbxfw Jhnnox Xfkx Csh;xnßvc (5-[x [xgv, scp.76-80) mc vx`cn  
 jhnxo ;xjhfgnh`kvh redv ugwk l wavwn.

xojxshnh nxhdcj ejl c; i]i k fw ;xl x pcrxrcjgcnxk  
'xbgcvxgl csxkc vnzv ki l wkc redv ejl c;gc ;xthdcjgckxnx; ...

1-Mcsxddcjx redv evckgcnxk l cbcl l cj ugwkl hs`

Xfkx : csxn dhn`n... âHl l h u aed ;x, axc khvhkghn`k` mc  
c/dhk-canhtghnh khy`g vedckgcnxk ]uowkw l cynwnghav`nl `av`n  
(dhowv ukghn`k mwnvwrghn` xtjxnhghn), fwvwn ;x, |edycl fcnx-  
C;ncl xk Cgxkx zb mcsxsx i kmhk` xgc oxghtcjc jc/dxk ejl csxvxn  
;x, fw vh fzdi ; dhghk, fzpjhk mc xtjxnhv`n, ukwk hnv`k[h vh  
fzdi ; ocjhghn, scphfcgcnxk ocdhkcjx, u pcbncjxk mcsxddcjxkxk  
x[nh evxgl csxkvc ukghn`k scpgck; hng`yh dug menl cgcnx ghb`l  
'cgxn... (Suknh vedxn.) U aed ;x, fc/bx khy`g vedck hmhl [hl hhj  
;i]c-fhbhnvh Cgxdc mcsxddcj ugwkl hs` xgc cghrcvhn cvcf mc  
coghrvhk vkh`a`ngnh... Fwkghn`k phl `s` sctep szbgcnvxn mc pe]  
fxnxkxk csgx duovwnæ c; sxkc ukghn fc/bx khvhk mc hg]hr  
txjncjgxcnxk vi bcgjvx; gcnx aedvxn ;x, ukghnh pe] fxn e/jxl hv  
duovwn, bcxt wahrvhk fharh pe] ;cs ukwkgh hgvhk`f l cynwn  
ugl hb.ß<sup>1</sup>

Xfkx : csxn fw rcvcn axvvcjgx rcbcf mc cscfxgx;gc fw  
l ia;ig l cscgckxk dnhjv`y` cbhf-cbxddcjvck szb h]`n. Fxb xsc  
Xfkx : csxnk jcnetxkvck âaxc [hpxggcnx mc c/dhk-canhtghnh khy`g  
vedckgcñ hvghkv`n ghk acosgcnxk hv`k` hahy`vh redv evxnx; ...

1-Scphfcgcnvck...

1-Xl hl Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgfx.

2-Shgl hk Thnsx L i pcl l cvx.

3-Cfw Cddwf Ckshnx.

4-Cfw Scxv Oxvnx.

5-Ckcs xfkx L hgx; Ckshnx.

6-Fi nedvc xfkx Pcsxf Csgcl x.

7-CI n xfkx Hs.

8-Cfwbcn Rxthnx.

9-Xl hl Pcsck L i [jcfh, |edycl fcnxk fzdi ; kcmcsx.

10-Acpvx Xl hl Pi sedk xfkx Cgx.

11-Pcsshk xfkx Shfxj Ckshnx.

12-Tcbg Xfkx Hffhs xfkx Cfvi g-L i jjcgxf.

---

<sup>1</sup> âCg-fxvhdcjw mck-kxphdcß, 7-[x [xgv, scp.224. Fxb ukwk oi ghscsxkx redv  
ejvx; .

13-Kz/I hk xfkx C[ghk Ckshnx.  
 14-Cfvi gghp xfkx Cfw Si tdhk Cg-Pcncs xfkx Cfvi g-  
 L i jjcgxf.  
 15-Cfwg-Pedscl xfkx Cjjcpddhk Ckshnx.  
 16-Scxv xfkx Reds Ckshnx.  
 17-Pi [n xfkx Cvx Cg-: xkvx.  
 18-Oi bedl c xfkx Shfxj Bwa-acphvcjedk.  
 19-CI n xfkx Pcl cr Oi bnx.  
 20-Cfvi gghp Xfkx Hffhs.  
 21-L i yednc xfkx Phnxs xfkx Cfvi g-L i jjcgxf.  
 22-Ca/cs xfkx Reds : xkvx (U, XI hl Cgx ™ -`k  
 vi al ckgcnxkvckvxn).  
 2-Jhfexkgenvck...  
 1-{ cnxn xfkx Cfvi gghp Fc[gx.  
 2-Ahxn Kc[hax Reds xfkx CI n.  
 3-L cpcl I cv xfkx Cfx Fc; n (fxnxk[x ocgxtckxk uygw).  
 4-L i kbcn xfkx Pi I edbc Mcvvvhx.  
 5-Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx { cxg.  
 6-Kcbn xfkx C[ghk  
 7-L hgx; Cajcn  
 8-ZI cn xfkx Phnxsc Ckshnx  
 9-Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Bi edf Csgcl x  
  
 3-Oigcth I c;jcfxkxk ph;xl gcnx mc ukghn`k I cbpcf xl hl ghn`kvhk...  
 1-CI xn Cgxddxfkx Cfvi gghp CI cmx – Hffhsx ocgxtcsx  
 Sccthp  
 2-Hffhsx ocgxtcsx Phnwk cn-Ncaxv  
 3-Hffhsx ocgxtcsx L c/I wk  
 4-Ahtexgcnxk xl hl ` L cpcl I cv xfkx Xvnxs Ahtex  
  
 4-Mcsyddcj pcvxsxkx |edycl fcnvck kerg evck I i cgytgc...  
 1-Pckfcgxcnxc xl hl ` Cpl cv xfkx Pckfcg (241-[x xgvc  
 mcthj evxf) âLckhrxfw Cgxß ; xjhfkvh.  
 2-Vxkcmcnx (282-[x xgvc mcthj evxf) âCofhnwj-Jxmhgß  
 ; xjhfkvh.  
 3-Fedpcrx (320-[x xgc rcvcn phgx-pcdhjvh ugl wavwn) âCg-  
 I cphsxxw mcg-l cshmxß ; xjhfkvh.  
 4-XI hl wg-l i pcvvxsxk Jcfcnhkx (36-[` xgc mcthj evxf)

âL z/[cl ß ; xjh<sup>f</sup> kvh.

5-Cfw Kcxl Xstphkx (430-[w xgvc mcthj evxf) âPxgdcji g-zmgxdhß ; xjh<sup>f</sup> kvh.

6-Xfkx Csh; xn Ahtex (571-vc mcthj evxf) âJhnnox Vcl carß ; xjh<sup>f</sup> kvh.

7-Xfkx Csx (630-[w xgvc mcthj evxf) âJhnxoß ; xjh<sup>f</sup> kvh.

8-Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv Ahtex (656-[` xgvc mcthj evxf) âKcp[i g-fcgchcßkx acnpkvc.

9-L i j j c r x P x k v x (975-[x xgvc mcthj evxf) â: ckbi g-i l l hgß ; xjh<sup>f</sup> kvh.

Xfkx : csxnk jc/fxnk[c, fi j i k fwkghn axc [hpxggcnx mc mhn<sup>g</sup>ghn<sup>k</sup> khy<sup>g</sup> vedckgcxvxn ; x, mcsxddcj ncmhdcjgcx xgc l cynwn ugl wa, ukw zb ; xjh<sup>f</sup>ghn<sup>k</sup> kvh rcgl c hgl <sup>g</sup>agn. Fwkghnvhk cghmc, dwohn<sup>v</sup>h redv ugwkhh scphfc mc jhfexkgcn ; xl xgcx vc mcsxddcj pcvxv xgc l cynwn ugl wa, ukghn<sup>g</sup> zb ae/ngcnxkvc 'cjxnl xa mc oi jfcgcxkvc ukghnh xsjxkhv ejl xagcn. Sxnc mc jhnxo shpcsxkvc ; xjh<sup>f</sup> dhhbk fzdi ; hgl gcx vc hahy<sup>v</sup>h; <sup>g</sup> hnv<sup>g</sup> [gg<sup>g</sup> rgh ukw pcl xk acosgcxk vxgxkvck ncmhdcj ejl xagcn...

Bi fedn xfkx Fc; ; hn âL i mctterxddhjß ; xjh<sup>f</sup> kvh, Jcfcx mc Xfkx Csx âJhnxoß ; xjh<sup>f</sup>ghn<sup>k</sup> kvh, Ocjxf Fhyvhv âJhnnox Fhyvhvß ; xjh<sup>f</sup> kvh, Lcs/wvx Ahtex âL wnw[wb-bcpcfßvc, XI hl L i rcvvc l âPcvxß ; xjh<sup>f</sup> kvh, Ph; xl x Kxah\wnx âL i sjcvnc; ß ; xjh<sup>f</sup> kvh, Bcpcf âJcb; xncjwg-pi tthbß ; xjh<sup>f</sup> kvh mc s.

Xfkx : csxn fxbxl redv ejvx; gcxl xbxk phl <sup>g</sup> s<sup>k</sup>, xahnc ejvx; gcxl xbxk c; scnxddcjxkx, u csnxk hgl gcxkxk xojxdhn<sup>k</sup> kvh ughk, gh; xk pcrxrcjgcx axvvcjgc 'xbgcvxz nj-fhsv<sup>n</sup> ejl cgcxkc 'znc fxbxl cgxl xbc ]hjl hdhkgghn<sup>k</sup> c; scnxddcjxkx fi j i kgi ; gc 'xbgcjl xa, ukghnvhk pe] fxnkx zbi ki k fzdi ; jhnxo l c[l wcsxkvc redv ejl cl xavxn.

I sjcgx; ukwk zbi pcl xk phvxscgcxk 'xbgcvxgl csxkc mc pcrxrcjgcxk nj-fhsv<sup>n</sup> evxgl csxkc fharh fxn i sgwfggh ]hg<sup>g</sup>al <sup>g</sup> a, nhmxgcx, ukghn<sup>k</sup> ncmhdcjgcxkx mc dhhv<sup>g</sup> rghn<sup>g</sup> ; xjh<sup>f</sup>ghn<sup>k</sup> bcxt shdl <sup>g</sup> a mc ukghnh xsjxkhv evckgcx scstep hvghkv<sup>n</sup>l <sup>g</sup> av<sup>n</sup> ; x, c'cn ukwk 'xbgcjvxdx pcrxrcjgcxvck pcn phks<sup>g</sup> fxn fharh fxn l i cggtxk ; xjh<sup>f</sup> kvh ugwf fxn ; csxk cgxk ; e]sc xsfhj evxgc fxgl csxk. Fwkx 'znc vc vedxnvx... âAxc [hpxggcnx mc mhn<sup>g</sup>ghn<sup>k</sup> khy<sup>g</sup> vedckgcx ukwkgh l cynwn ugl waghnlß Pcrxrcjxk fw [i n



znj-fhsv`n evxgl csx oi gcth l c;jcfxkxk hgxl gcnx hnhs`kvh  
pcvvxkvck hnj`r ]uovwn.

f) Pcvxs nhmxcnxx l cbcl l cj ejl c;...

Xfkx Cfvi g-Fxnn Ac/fxvck ncmhdcj evcnc; vedxn ; x, u, Phnxs  
Pcl vhxkxk fhncsxkv fegc vel xavxn... âPhnxs l ckc ncmhdcj  
ejvx mc u, ; cbbhfghnvkh (dhghk]`ghnvkh) fxnx xv.â Xfkx Cfvi g-  
Fxnn dhb`n... âPhnxs vck pe] fxn dhghk fha menl cl xavxæ ukh  
jwjwghk de`hkc xnhv Cgxdc l cpcffcj fcsycl c; vc xtnhjh  
mhn l hs` mc ukw fharhghn`kvkh i sji k peshf ejl csxvxn. Fwkh  
'znc vc Ac/fx ukw â; cbbhfß hvghkv`nl `av`n. Hgghp vphph dhov`  
fxgn! Ac/fx Cfw Fc;nx i sji k peshf evcnc; ukw xg; l i scgl hk  
shd`n!ß¹

m) Pcvxs xl hl ghn`k l cbcl l cj ugwl hs`...

Oi gcth l c;jcfxkvc fc/bck pcvxs ncpfcngcnxx mc  
xl hl ghn`k` shvc[c ukghn`k kcbcnxddcgcnx xgc l i ohgxt ughk fxn  
pcvxsx ncmhdcj ejvx; gcnxkc 'znc l cbcl l cj ejl xagcn. Fegc ; x,  
Ph;xl Ahtexdc rhna` fegc nctjhn ejl xavxgc. Bcpcfx ukwk  
jcn[l edx-phg`kvh dhb`n...âXfkx Gcxf hv` xgc l capwn ughk fzdi ;  
phtxb mc l i pcvvxsgcnx xl hl ` Cfw Cfvi gghp Lcpcl l cv  
xfkx Cfvi gghp xfkx Lcpcl l cv xfkx Pcl vcmedp Kxah`wnx 313-  
[i xgvc vi kdhdh 'cgxf, 405-[x xgvc mthj ejl xavxn. Wahrg`r  
]hyghn`kvkh pcvxsc l hnhr 'zsjcnl xa, suknh Xnhrh 'ejl xavxn.  
Pc[[ cl cggnxx denxkc dejxnv;vck suknh Ounhshkvh mc  
Lhmcnhwk-kcpnvc pcvxs hojhnl `a, x; x l xk (dhowv x; x l xkc  
dho`k) aedovck pcvxs eajl xavxn. Ukwk rcycl c hgv`y` ; xjhfgghn  
fea di b [i b/c ]hj`n ; x, cscngcnxkvck fxnx vc âTcbhxgw Ahtexßvxn.  
Kcrg ugwl wavwn ; x, ukwk vzmni kvc dhahdhk, pcvxs egl xkxk  
fzdi ; acosxddcgcnx ukw dhv evxn, ukwkgh l i hsn ughk pcvxs  
xl hl ghn` pcl xac zbgcnxkvck rhfhyh ; e]xn, ukwk i sji kgi ;  
phrr`kh nxhdcj evxn mc ukh vcnxk pzn l cj 'zsjcnxvxgc.ß

Bcpcfx dhb`n... âPh;xl vck âJednß pcvxsx fhncsxkv swhg  
ugwkvvrh, vevx... âScpxp vedxgvxnæ c'cn scpxp ugsh,  
|edycl fcncvck suknh pe] ; cs Cgxvck i sji k ugl hb.ß

Vedxn... âSuknh Ph;xl xk tx; nx vcdxagvx mc âJednß pcvxsxkx  
zbi ki k âL i sjcvnc; ß ; xjhfvkv dhbv`ß

¹ â{hl xw fcdhkg-egl ß, pz;l i g-i gcl hw fc/bwpwl tx fc/bxk fhf, 2-[x  
[xgv, scp.189.

Bcpcfx suknh Cgcl xk vxgxkvck kcrq evxn ;x, Ph;xl xk  
 âL i s jcvnc; ß ;xjh f fhncsxkvc fegc vel xagcn... âU fw ;xjhfvh  
 l i cddck pcvxsgcnx ju\ghl `av`n mc xkhk`n ;x, ukghn Fwohnx mc  
 L i sgi l i k acnjx xgc scpxpvxn. Ukghnvhk fxnx vc âJednß pcvxsx  
 mc âl ck ;wkjw l umghpw tc Cgxddwk l umghpwß pcvxsxvxn ;x,  
 pcvxs l i cggxtgcnx ukw xk; hn ejl xa mc ukwk szbgcnxkc vxrrcj  
 dejxnl cl xagcn.ß

Dekc vedxn... âJednß pcvxsxkc 'cgvx; vc xsc, fw pcvxs [xv vx  
 ac; xgvc mc ]uogw dugghngh ncmhdcj ugwkl wavwn. Lck ukwk  
 fhncsxkvc oi swsx fxn ;xjh f vh dhbl `ahl ;x, ukwk l c[ l wsw  
 fw pcvxsxk csxg pcvxs ugl hs`k` jcgcf evxn. Hl l h âl ck ;wkjw  
 l umghpw tc Cgxddwk l umghpwß pcvxsxkc 'cgvx; vc xsc, fw vh  
 ]uogw dhoe` dugghngh kcrq ugwkl wavwn. Lck ukwk vh  
 fhncsxkvc oi swsx fxn ;xjh f dhbl `ahl .ß¹

Licgxt vedxn... Fxb âl ck ;wkjw l umghpwß pcvxsxkx jebgx; gc  
 âXl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> fhncsxkvc |edycl fcn j -vck kcrq  
 ugwkxhk ncmhdcjgcnß fzgl csxkvc redv evc[cdx; .

âJednß pcvxsx Ckcs xfxk L hgx; xk mc |edycl fcnxk shxn  
 scphfcgcnxkxk kcrq ejvxdxkc 'znc fegcvxn... âR`bhnv`gl `a fxn  
 rwaw |edycl fcnc pcvxddc 'c jxnvxgcn. U pcbncj vwh evxf vevx...  
 â|cnmcnvx`hnh, |edycl fcnxkvck suknh ck semxl gx l cogwrwkx 'zkvcn, ukwkgh  
 fxngx; vc dedc; ß Fw bhl hk Cgx 'cgvx mc u pcbncjgc rwa cjxkvck  
 devxgcn.ß

Fw pcvxs Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k |edycl fcn j -vck suknh  
 [hl hhj x]cnxsxkvc ck di ;sc; tcbxgcjc l hgx; ugvwyywkh vcghgcj  
 ejvxdxkvck, Ph;xl Kxah\wnx mc ukw ncmhdcj evxf zb  
 ;xjh fghn`kvx redv evck vx`cn l i cggxtgcn l cbcl l cjc mc  
 xk; hnh l c/nwb rhgl `aghn. Fxb vc ukw âki swsß fhf`kvx redv  
 ejl cl xax; , ]i k; x fxb fw l crhl vh Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k  
 tcbxgcjgcnxkx shvhghl hr cbl xkvc vedxgx; , dhgk`b Cpgx-fedj  
 xl hl ghn`k`k ph; xl xddcjx phrr`kvx 'cgxf ]hjhk pcvxsgcnx redv  
 evxnx; ...

Bcpcfx, Ph;xl Ahtexkxk oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk pcvxs  
 egl xkvc; x i sji kgi ; mc tcbxgcjxkx ohj`nghv`f vedxn ;x, u,  
 âL i s jcvnc; ß ;xjh f`kvx Xl hl Cgxkxk tcbxgcjgcnxkx mc  
 L i hmxdcckxk xnhvghn`k` redv ejvxdxkc 'znc, l cbcl l cjc mc

¹ âJcb; xncjwg-pi tthbß, scp.1039–1045.

xk; hnh l c/nwb rhgl `av`n. Ukwk fhncsxkvc vel xagcn... Pcvxs kcrq ejl c; vc sxrc mc e/jxfhng` acos, (crxvcsxkvc xsc) nhtxbx mc ocfxsvxn. Si kki gi di (i ] ocgxtckx rhfhyy shgl hrvh) mc oxghtcix ha; hn evxn, L i hmxdc mc ukwk kcsxkvck – dc/kx Debxxvck – i b vzkvcnxn mc fw fhncvc i bnohpg`r vh ejl xn.ß

Bcpcfx dhh`n... âFxb vedxn; ... Ukwk Cgxkxk vi al ckgcnxkvck i b ]emxnl csxkc `cgvx; vc, fw l cscgc ha; hnv`n. Hl l h Aedoedkxk (Cfw Fc; ngc Zl cnxk) fhncsxkvc `cgvx; vc xsc, ukghn`k pcn x; xsxkx fzdi ; gi ; gc dhv evxn. Vel cgx, u, nhtxbx vedxg, axcvxn. : ha âL i sjcvnc; Bx dhbl hdhdv`æ ]i k; x, zbi ki k \xs se]xl xkc `znc (fw ; xjh` dhbl hrgh) ukh rhna` l epnxfhks`bg`r evxgl xavxn.<sup>1</sup>

L i cggxt vedxn... Dhoa` ughnv` ; x, oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk l i pcvvsxsgcnxkxk ncpfcnx, nhtxbxgx; gc l i jpcxl ugwxhk ahtex l cbpcfxkxk xl hl `k` – L cpcl l cv xfkx Xvnxsx (204-[i xgvc mthj evxf) zbi kc ki l wkc `zji nsi k. Fedpcrxkxk ncmhdcj ejvxdxkc `znc u, fegc vel xavxn...

فَالْوَيْلُ لِي يَوْمَ تَرَفُّضْتُ قُلْتُ كَلَّا	مَا الرِّفْضُ دِينِي وَلَا اِعْتِقَادِي
لَكِنْ تَوَلَّيْتُ غَيْرَ شَكٍّ	خَيْرَ اِمَامٍ وَخَيْرَ هَادِي
اِنْ كَانَ حُبُّ الْوَصِيِّ رَفْضًا	فَالْنِّي اَرْفُضُ الْعِبَادِ

Vevxgc... Nhtxbxsck, vevxl ; x, oedn!  
 Nctb kc l ckxl vxkxl vxn, kc vc crxvcl .  
 Hl l h, fxgxk ; x, ai fpcsbx, l ck vc  
 Ck dhoe` xl hl ` , phvxxk semxncl .  
 C`cn mcsixk seml c; nhtxbxgx; sc,  
 Ukvh fckvcgcnxk ck juo nhtxbxsx l ckcl p  
 Fharh denvc vedxgn...

اِنْ كَانَ رَفْضًا حُبُّ آلِ مُحَمَّدٍ	فَلْيَشْهَدْ الثَّقَلَانِ اَنِّي رَافِضِيٌّ
--	---

<sup>1</sup> Dekc unhvh.

<sup>2</sup> Fw ae/ngcn Ahtexkxk vxmhk`kvh (Fednwj ]h`, 1403-[i xg), egc[c vc L c-pcl l cv xfkx Dcpdh Cgcmxkxk (1350-[x xgvc mthj evxf) dhbv`y` âCkkcshdx-pwg;-htxdcjw gxl ck dcjcmcgcg-L i hmxdcß ; xjh`kvh redv ugwkl wavwn mc Xfkx Pc[cnxk âCsscmhxrwg-l wpxrcß ; xjh`k`k 131-[x scpxtcsxkvc âmcxsß ; cgl csxkxk denkc âmcgxß redv evxgl xavxn ; x, fxbxl kcbcnl xbc `znc âScmhxrß ; xjh`kvh fw ; cgl ckxk vcdxavxxgl csxkx vc oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk hnv`[`gghn` hnhs`kvh phrr`k `xbgcvxgl csxkx ki l wkcgcnxkvck peshf ejl c; ughn.

C'cn Hgx-L i pcl l cvx seml c; nctbvxnsc,  
 Ukvh fi ji k [xkki -xks ahpxv ugswk...l ck nhtxbxdcl !  
 Fegc kcbnc ]hn\`n ; x, fc/bck vc phrr` 'xbgcjl cdc l c[fwn  
 ughnhr vedxn...

مَا زَالَ كَتَمًا مِنْكَ حَتَّى كَانَنِي  
 بِرَدِّ جَوَابِ السَّائِلِينَ لَأَعْجَمُ  
 وَاکْتُمُودِي مَعَ صَفَاءِ مَوَدَّتِي  
 لَتَسْلَمَ مِنْ قَوْلِ الْوُشَاةِ وَأَسْلِمَ

Sckxk l cpcffcjxkx pcl xac 'xbgcjl xacl , ke[c ; x, vedxnsc...  
 Swhg evckgcnc [hmhf menl c; vck h[xbcl l ck.  
 Zb vusjgwywl w l cpcffcjvc scth mc xoghsgh 'xbgcjvxl  
 : x, sck dhmh vkh`ahkghn`k vxgxkvck, l ck vc ukghn`k  
 bcncnxkvck hl hkvh rhg`l !

Hl l h phrr`k fw [i n 'xbgcvxgl csx ukh thdvh menl cvx...  
 |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk si kkcscx mc u pcbncjxk scphfcgcnxkxk  
 sxncsx fhncsxkvc zb kcbncgcnxkx 'xbgcjl cdck shxn oi gcth  
 hgxl gcnx ; xl x nhtxbgx; gc l ijjcpxl evxgvx. Oi gcth  
 l c; jcfxkvc; x ahtex l cbpcfgh hgxl gcnxk c; scnxddcjx fw  
 l c; jcfxk shxn l cbpcfghcnxkxk hgxl gcnxkxk c; sxkc ughnhr, pcvxsx  
 'xbgcjl cvx; gcnx i ]i k, nhtxbgx; gc l ijjcpxl ugwkwnghn!

"znvi di ki b ; xl x, oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk hgxl gcnx [i nfc[i n  
 xk; hn]`g`rgh – nhmxgcnc mc ncmhdcjgcnc bcxtgcjl c; vck jwjl wa,  
 ukghn` l cbcl l cj evxf axcgxdc mc nhtxbgxdc kxsfcj menl cdc  
 rcvcn – zb kcbcnxddcgcnx xgc l i ohgxt ughk pcvxsgcnx e/jxfhnhvk  
 shg`nghn ; x, fw [i n xk; hngn vh phrr` xk; hn evckgcnc i ]i k ck  
 shvc l i khbxc mc epjx[h[ dugwvwn mc fegc fxn mcbxddcj  
 phrr`k xsfhj ugwk l hs`k` pcvvxkvck hnj`r ]cjxk mc rednx-  
 l i l ; i k evxn. } i k; x phrr` xk; hn evck acos egc dhnhrgkh`n ; x,  
 juo nhphjg`rgh âfw pcvxs bcxtvxn, fhjxgvxn, dhghkv`nß – vedc  
 fxgsxk, phrr shpxfx vc mhvh ugnw ; x, hnv`[`g ughnhr vcgxg-si fwj  
 'cjxnsxk, xk; hn]` acos dhgk`b xk; hn ejl cdx mc rcfwg ejl cl cdx  
 zbi kc dug se]xn. Fw vh zb kzmfcscxkvc pcvxs nhmxgcnc i ]i k  
 l c/kcmx xkjxphn mc ukghn`k acosxddcjgcnc rhna` swx-rcsv  
 shd`g`n. Fwkvhk cghmc, oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk l csgcpcjxkc l i ohgxt  
 ughk pcvxsgcnx ncmhdcj evckgcncvck fc/bxgcnc txbx; x fho`l vkh vh

<sup>1</sup> âCscmhxrwg-l wpnrcß, L xsxn ]h\`, 1375, scp.131. Fxb ukwk oi ghscsxkx  
 redv ejvx; . Xfkk Scffhy L hgx; x Lc; ; x (855-vc mcthj evxf) âCg-ti swgß  
 ; xjhfkvh L i pcvxs Rwl xkxk âCg; wkh mcg-cgrhfß ; xjhfkvh kcrgck,  
 Ahtexkx jcn[i l edx-phg`kvh.

swx-rcsvc l c/nwb rhgl`aghn ;x, hahy`vh ukghn`k fc/bx  
ki l wkcgcnxkx redv evxn; . Fegc ;x, fw oigcth l c;jcfxkxk  
e/jxl hv ejvxdx hgj` âSxphpß l i cggxtgcnxkvck fxnx i]i k fha  
menl xavxn...

r) Pcvxs xl hl ghn`kvhk fxnx ughk Kcshxkxk rcjgc dejxnagl csx...

Bcpcfx mc XfKx Oi ggc;hk Kcshxkxk jcn[i l edx-phg` mc  
ukwk ke[c rcjgc dejxnagl csx fhncsxkvc dhb`ngn... âPhtxb, XI hl ,  
Aedoi g-Xsghl Cpl cv xfkx Ai edf Kcshx zb csnxkvc pcvxs  
cpgxkxk xl hl` mc âSi kckß ;xjhfk`k l i cggxtxvn. U, pcvxs  
jhk`l hrvh, pcvxsgcnxk sckcvgnxkxk di ;sc; scmddcvc ugl hs`k`  
jhk`l hrvh de'hk acosddcjvxn. U, L xsxncv l cs; wkghal`av` mc  
fxn`i kvck-fxn unw[ jwjwn, 'e[cgcnx xfhvcl evxnvx. L xsnxk cl xnx  
xgc fxngx;vc [xphvh`ejvx, gh;xk ukwk l c[gxsgcnxkvc xajxnh;  
ejl c;vck mc ukwkgf fxn si tnc fha`kvh ujwnwf del c;  
del c;vck ]c;xkvx. Zl ni ki k ho`ngn`kvh pc[[c dugh vi avi mc  
Vcl carc ]hjv`rvh Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf mc Cpgx-fedjxk  
tcbxgcjxkvc âOcshxsß ;xjhfk` dnbv`. U, fw ;xjhfk` c;scn  
ncmhdcjgcnxkx Cpl cv xfkx Pckfcgvck kcrq ejl csxkc  
fhol hdnhr, [hl hhj ukwk fw xaxx ouah`cgl cb peshf ejvxgc.  
Ukwk zbi fegc vedxnI xa...âVcl carc vhoxg ugvwrvh`znvi l ;x,  
unhvh Cgxkxk l i ohgxtgcnx pcvvxkvck hnj`r ]uovwn. Fwkh`znc  
vc âOcshxsß ;xjhfk` dhbl hyh fhaghv`l . l l xvxl fw vxv ;x,  
Hggph fw ;xjhfk` mhsxjcsxgc ukghn`pxvhdcj ejxsk. Fxn kctcn  
l ckc vevx... âFcs L i hmxdkxk tcbxgcjgcnxkx fxn denc  
ju`ghl`nshk?ß Vevxl ...âPhks`k` ju`ghd`l ...â|cnmcnvx`nhh, ukwk  
rhk`k` vudvwnl hß pcvxsxkxl x?ß Fw bhl hk swhg evck acos  
sh;xjgcavx. L ckvck xsjcvxgc ;x, L i hmxdc mc ukwk tcbxgcjgcnx  
fhncsxkvc vkh`a`l , vevxl ...âScnfcsn (ji gcrhvhk) ugl hyh (mc zb  
phg`kh fwnho`gl hyh) nhb` ugl wn ;x, i sji kgi ; vc rhbhs`k?ß

Fw bhl hk ukwk i sji kc pi [wl ejvxgc mc hnohvhk  
;zjc;gcl cdc fhaghv`ghn, suknh l cs[xvvck ]`ohnv`f, Ncl gcdc  
'zkcvcnvxgc.<sup>1</sup>

Phtxb Cfw Kcxl vedxn... âKcrq ugwkI wavwn ;x, u,  
vzdi gl csx kcjx[csxkvc mcthj ejl xavxn.ß Vhnrvjkx dnb`n... âU,  
Vcl carvc`xntjhn ugvw mc 303-[i xgvc acphvcjc ]hjv`.ß

[edycl fcn si kkcxsxkxk dhg`gl hs` dugwkvh l i ojcgxt cbhf-

<sup>1</sup> âJcb; xncj i g-pi tthbß, scp.689æâMctcdhjwg-c/dhkß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.59.

cbxddcjcnc, hy`n xa;ck[cgcnc l c/nwb rhghkghn, zgvi ni gckgcnc  
Kcsxh xgc oi ghscgckl xn. Scphfc Cfwbcn vc pcl xk dugw  
;e]l xavx (ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` â|edycl fcnxk si kkcsxkxk  
'xbgcvxgl csxß fzgl csxkvc 'cgc[c;vx). Fw dugvh ]uogw hgx l gcn  
vc acphvcj l crhl `kh ]hjl `aghn. Lcnpwl Cgghl c Cl xkx  
âAi pcvhx tcbxgcjß ;xjh`kvh ukghnvkh fc/bxgcnxkx redv ejl xavxn.

Xkvx fegc xnjx[h]` fxn acnhxjvc ;xl [i n/cjgckcnc; kcxk;x  
Cpgx-fedjxk ph;xl xddcjx fhncsxkvc mhnv ughk pcvxsgcnx, pcjjh  
Cpgx-fedjxk tcbxgcjx fhncsxkvc |edycl fcnvck kcrq ugwkhk  
pcvxsgcnx fegc, ncmhdcj evc fxgcnvx?!

Fegc ughk phgvh Xfkx :csxnxk phrr` duovwnl w ;x,  
L i hmxdcckxk tcbxgcjxkx xsjcdckgcnc l i vnh ejl c; i ]i k ukwk  
l cbcl l cj ugwl hs`kh mc e/jxfhns`bg`y`kh vcghgcj evck  
ncmhdcjgcnc, ukwk vi kdh mc hoxncjvc;x tcbxgcjxkx cphjc evck  
fxn ncmhdcj ;xl x dubl hr l c[fwnxddcjxkvc rhgs`k?! Fegc fxn  
mcbxddcjvc |edycl fcn si kkcsxkxk dhh`gl hs` l i l ;i k ugh  
fxgcnvxl x?!

Oi gcth l c;jcfxkxk jwjvwyw duggl l i ohgxtcj evcnc;  
|edycl fcn si kkcsxkvc fw l c;jcfxk kcbcnxddcsx xgc l i ohgxt  
ughk ncmhdcjgcnc fxn rxsl xkx dhhbhkghn`k mc dh kcrq evckgcncxk  
fha`kh 'cgck th[xcgcncxk fc/bxgcnxkx redv ejvx; . Suknh;` fzgl cvc  
xsc oi gcth l c;jcfxkxk sxdhscjx xgc bxvvxddcj jca;xg evck  
|edycl fcn si kkcsxkxk dhh`gv`y` ;xjhfgnh rhna` jzncvxgck  
phvxsgcnx hnhav`n`n`r.

8-: xjhfgnh`k mc ;xjhfohkhghn`k dhkv`n`gl hs`...

Oi gcth l c;jcfxkvc phrr-pcrxrcjxk 'xbgcvxgl csxkxk vx`cn  
fxn kzmi |edycl fcn si kkcsxkx, sxnc mc pcvxsgcnxkx epjxmh  
evck ;xjhfgnh`k dhkv`n`gl hs` vx. }i k;x oi gcth l c;jcfx u  
si kkckxk dhd`gl hs`k` ouaghl `nv`. Fw xaxk cshs`k` ocgxtc Zl cn  
rudl wavw ;x, âoi gcth l c;jcfxkxk xsghl x acnxcj  
l ckfcgcncxkvc;x kcbcnxcnß fzgl csxkvc ukw redv evc[cdx; .  
Ukwk oi ghscsx Xfkx Sc/vxk âJcfcrhjß ;xjh`kvh fegc redv  
ugwkwn... âZl cnxk vzmni kvc pcvxsgcn ]uohgl hyh fhaghv`. U,  
[hl hhj` ]hy`n`f vevx ;x, pcvxsgcn l ckxl dhk`l h 'cjxnxk.  
Ukghn 'cjxnvx;vck sukn phl `s`k`k dhkv`n`gl hs`kh vhn  
tcnl hk menvxß

Bi fedn xfkx Fc;;hn fegc ncmhdcj evxn... Si gedl hk xfkx

Cfvi g-L cgx; zb mcgxcpvgx; vzmni kvc pc[[c dugh vi avi .  
 L cvxkcvck ;e]ckvc Cfhk xfkx Usl hkh tcnl hk menvx ;x,  
 |edycl fcnxk si kkcsxkx mc u pcbncjxk h\hmv'y` l i phnxfcgcnx  
 ukwk i]i k dhbs`k. Cfhk vevx... âU l ckxl dhk`l vlv`n, ukwk  
 scpxpxkx e/jxl hv ejvxdxl fxn acosvck hgl`ahl .ß Si gedl hk  
 'zsjcnxa menvx, uk kctcn dhb`]` ukwk i bi ki ;z]i njvi gcn mc  
 ukw fxn ;xjh f ac;gxkc shgv`ghn. Ukwk dhk`kh h\hmv`rvh, 'znvi  
 ;x, fxn xk[x mc x; xk[x Crcfcvc; x fed/cjvc mc Fcvn  
 l i phnxfcsxkvc ckshnvhk dhv ugwkfw. Si gedl hk vevx... âL ck  
 fw rzml i]i k fw rcvcl tcbxgcj mc i sji kgi ; 'znl i ncl !  
 Vel cgx, dh fxbxl ohkcvhk`l`b (cl cmx ocgxtcgcnx) ukghn`  
 'znl cl cbgxdc mwml waghv, dh vh fegc fxn aed ugl hd`f.ß Cfhk  
 xfkx Usl hk vevx... âEd Cl xn, ukghn`k l cbgwl acpxvc – ocgxtc  
 Usl hkh rhna` ejvx; gcnx cl cggn mc ukw jc; rudl hghn` fxbx  
 phrr` fcdhk ejl c; vck shoghl`n. Ukghn egc sxbxk i]i k fw  
 ;xjhfvh fcdhk ejvxdxl ;xl vxvn.ß Si gedl hk vevx... âPcgcgx;  
 ukwk i bi ki k ;z]i ni gl csxkc epjxdh[`l duovvn. Fw l csgckx  
 Cl xncg-l z/l xkxkc (dc/kx hjhl Cfvi g-L cgx; c) fcdhk evxl ,  
 fcg; c ukwkg h l i ohgxt ugvw.ß Fwkvhk suknh 'zsjcnxa menvx ;x, u  
 ;xjh f uvvh dhkv`ns`kghn. Rhd`vhkvhk suknh hjhs`k` fw xavck  
 h'hp ejvx, Cfvi g-L cgx; vevx... âFxbxl tcbxgcjgcxl xbx dhv  
 ejl cdck mc fxgl c; xsjcl cvx; gcnx fxn aedx Ahl cpgxkc h'hp  
 evck ;xjhfh kc epjxdh[`l`b mhn?ß Si gedl hk vevx... âL ck vc  
 fwkh 'znc 'zsjcnxa menvxl ;x, ukvhk ;z]i ni gck ki sockx  
 dhkv`ns`kghn, l ck Cl xncg-l z/l xkxkxk fw fhncvc kcbcnxkxk kc  
 ugvwyykw fxgcl .ß Cfvi g-L cgx; ukwk kcbcnxkx jcsvxrgcvx.<sup>1</sup>

\*\*\*

Fegcgx; gc, l i scgl hkghn`k ocgxtcgcnx mc ukghn`k [hkvaxkgcnx  
 'zsjcnxa menxngcn ;x, |edycl fcn si kkcsxkx epjxmh evck ;xjh fghn  
 dhkv`n`gs`k ;x, l i scgl hkghn ph;xl gcnxk sxdhscjgcxkc l i ohgxt  
 ughk aedgcnvck h'hp ugl hs`kghn. Egc fwkvhk zk[c vc pcl xk  
 xagcnx 'zni n, ukghn`k kcbcnxddcgcnx xgc l i ohgxt ughk |edycl fcn  
 si kkcsxkxk l zm[wv ugvwyyw ;xjh fghn` hahy`vh redv ugwkhhk  
 swncjvc dhkv`n`nv`ghn...

<sup>1</sup> âCg-l i mcttcrxddhjß, scp.332-333.

# FHYVHVH XSGHLX : XJHFOHKHK-K DHKV-N-GLHS-

XfKx : csxn 416-[` px[nx xgkvc fha menck phvxscgcnx redv evcn;ck Shfwn xfkx Cnvcaxnx jcn[i l edx-phg`kvh dhb`n... âU, dhoe` cl cg shpxfx mc shyghl nwpxddcgx fxn hvhl xv. L i cbbxkx (hbhk menckxk) scsxkx eavckvc pe] fxn aed ukw khl hbvhk shoghl hbv`. 381-[x xgvc fxn fxkhk` egl i]i k mcrt ejvx mc unhdh ]uogw ;xjhfgghn rudvw, pcl ]xkxk unhk`k ocn[gcnxkx jc/l xk evxgl csx i]i k vc ]uogw jho`g shpcgcnxkx unhdh mcrt ejvx. Fw ;xjhfohkh dejl xa xg tchgxddcj 'zsjcnvx, 450-[x xgvc Juynwgwk 'cgxax bhl hk` uvh ]c;xgvx. Fw ;xjhfohkh Fedkcs-swnek l cpcggcsxkvc dengcaxnvx.<sup>1</sup>

Dhrwj Pcl cmx âL z/[cl i g-fi gvkhß ;xjhfkvh Fedkcs-swnekx fegc jcrvxl evxn... âFedkcs-swnek : cnovc dengcack fzdi ; fxn l cpcggckxk hv`v`n ;x, Fcphwv-vzmgckxk mcbxnkxk mcrt ejvxdx ;xjhfohkh unhvh dengcaxnvx. Vi kdvh ukvhk dhoe` ;xjhfohkh jh`gl hbv`, unhvh;` ;xjhfgghn`k phl`s` l z/jcfcn ncpfcngcnxk cgdhbl hs` xgc mc ukghn`k dhb` i sgwfgghn`kvhk xfhncj xv. Fw ;xjhfohkh Juynwgfcd Scg[wrxkxk Fhyvhv di ni a ejvxdx bhl hk dhkv`n`ghnhr l cpm evxgvx.ß

Pcl ]xkxk, XfKx : csxn 460-[` xgk phvxscgcnxkx fcdhk evcn;ck l cnpwl Aedo Jwsxkxk jcn[i l edx-phg`kvh dhb`n... â448-[x xgvc ukwk : cnovc; x emx mc ;xjhfohkh` dhkv`n`gv`.ß<sup>2</sup>

Fw ;xl x ;cvcngx xagcn fwkvhk zk[c L xsxnc Thjxl x ocgxcgcnxkxk ;xjhfohkh`kh rhna` vh ncmh 'zni gl i avi . 848-[x xgvc mcthj evck L crnxbx Thjxl xgcnxk rcsnxkvc dengcack ocxkcgcnx bx;n evcn;ck ukvh l zm[wv ughk ;xjhf mc ;xjhfohkhghn fhncsxkvc fegc dhb`n... âUnhk`k ;xjhfohkh` vi kdhk`k xk[x ocxkcgcnxkvck fxnx xv. Vedxgl xavxn ;x, fi ji k Xsghl zg;gcnxkvc Rhpnc rcsnxkvc l zm[wv ughk ;xjhfohkhvkh fzdi ; fxn ;xjhfohkh duo xv.ß Pcl vc vedxgl xavxn ;x, âfw ;xjhfohkhvh hgj` di b fxn l xk ki soc ;xjhf mhn xv.ß Ukwk fhncsxkvc fegc vedxgl xavxn... âUkghn`k rwghl ghn` mc ;ckxbgcnx u ;xjhfgghn`k [xgvgcnxkx hdhrrhf` cmcbxkc xsjxthvc evxnvxgc. Ukghn`k mcncrgcnx swgjhk`k rcsnxkvck ]`ohn`gv`y`kh mc ukvh l cbpcfgcnxk c; sxkc ughk szbgcn ugvywvkh 'znc dhkv`n`gv`. Fw

<sup>1</sup> âCg-fxvhdcjjw mck-kxphdcß, 12-[x [xgv, scp.19.

<sup>2</sup> âOi jcjß (L crnxbx), 2-[x [xgv, scp.254-255.



redv ugwkhhkghn, swvh rcnr ugwkhhk mc fharh zg;cgnc  
h\hn`ghkghnvhk jhl hl xgc hdn`v`n. Denvc rhg`f  
dhkv`n`gl hdhkghn ;i]c-fhbhnvh jun\hr jc\csx ac;gxkc vi avi ,  
;i gcdxk 'c jxnvdxd jun\hrghn`k hgj`kvh rhgv`. Unh xkvx vc â; xjh f  
dhsj`rghn`ß hv` xgc jhk`k`n.<sup>1</sup>

Fcgx, : cno ;xjhfohkhs`k` Cpgx-fedj l c;jcfxkxk hnv`[`g`  
ughk Hgxfcmep jc/sxs ejl xa, oi gcth l c;jcfxkxk hnv`[`gg`hn`  
ughk scg[wrxcn xsc ukw dhkv`n`f l cpm ejl xavx. Ukghn Aedo  
Jwsxkxk Fhyvhv`k : cno l ckjcrsxxkvc jc/sxs ejvxdx  
;xjhfohkxk` vh dhkv`nv`ghn. Fwkvhk rhfhr pcl xk xagcnx  
L xsxnc Thjxl xgcnxk ;xjh f xk[x ocbxkcgcnxkc rhna` ncmh  
'znl i avi gcn ;x, fw vh Scghpcvxxk Cddwfwk L xsxn  
pz;l nhkg`y`kh xsjxgh jh\l hs`kvhk suknh fha menl xavx.

Sxbxk kcbcnxkxb[c, 'zncsck |edycl fcn si kkcxsxkxk phks`  
(fzdi;) l xrvhn` fxbxl i ]i k 'xbgx rhgl `av`n?! Phgfw;x, u si kkc  
oi gcth l c;jcfxkxk l i ohgxtgcx ughk ;xjh f l i cggtgcxkxk  
cscngcnxkvc redvc hg`kl `a mc fxn l i vvcj ;xjhfohkghnv  
shoghkv`rvhk suknh dhkv`n`gl `av`n. "zncsck, u ;xjhfgghnv  
|edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk Cpgx-fedjx fhncsxkvc kc rcvcn scpxp  
sckcvgx pcvxgc n mhn l `a?! Ukghnvhk fxn vc |edycl fcnxk  
mcsxddc fhncsxkvc fwdwnvwyw ;cghl `v`n ;x, phrr`k fw [i n  
'xbgcvxgl csxkc 'znc fxbxl cgl xbc 'cgxf ]hl hl `av`n.

|edycl fcn si kkcxsxkxk 'xbgcvxgl csx, znj-fhsv`n evxgl csx  
fhncsxkvc redv ugwkhhkghnvhk vh l i pil l cscgc |edycl fcn  
si kkcxsxkxk mc u pcbncjxk scphfcgcnxkxk sxncsxkxk jcpnxt  
evxgl csxvxn ;x, 'cgck x; x fcpsvc redv ugwkwn...

*9-SCPHFCGCNXX SXNCSXKX FCDHK EVCK OCFNGCNXX FXN  
RXSLXKXK : XJHFGHNVHK }-OHN-GLHS- MC JCPNXT EVXGL CSX...*

Oi gcth l c;jcfxkvc phrr`k 'xbgcvxgl csxkxk vx`cn fxn  
ki l wkcsx vc ncmhdcjgcxk fxn rxsl xkxk xojxshnh shg`kl hs` mc  
dh jcpnxt evxgl csxvxn. Fegc ;x, fw xax Xfkx : csxn zb jhnxxkvc  
Xl hl Pi sedk <sup>TM</sup> -`k oi jfcxkx kcrj evcn;ck 'znl i avi n. Fw  
oi jfcxk Jcfcnx mc Xfkx Csxz zb jhnxx ;xjhfgghn`kvh hahy`vh;`  
ac;gxvc redv evxngcn... Xl hl <sup>TM</sup> fegc fwdwnvw... âHl l h fc/v.  
L ckxl csxg-kcscfxl c fho`k mc 'zni k ;xl cl ! Suknh zb  
mx[vhk`k`bh l i nh[xcj evxk, ukw vkhghd`k ;x, l ckx zgvi nl c; ,

<sup>1</sup> âOi jcjß (L crnxbx), 2-[x [xgv, scp.254-255.

pznl cjxl x \ubl hr sxbxk i ]i k ncmhv`nl `?! Lc'cn l ck sxbxk  
|edycl fcnxkxbxk r`b`k`k uygw, ukwk mcsxkxk mc cl x uygwswkwk  
zmghv`, Hgghph xg; xl hk 'cjxnck, |edycl fcnx xg; jcsvxrgcdck  
mc ukh khbxg ughk mcpdx jcsvxrgcdck xg; acosxk uygw  
vedxgcl l x?! Seddxvxa-ai pcvh Pcl bc hjhl `k cl xsx vedxgvxnl x?  
Lc'cn {c/tcnx Jcddhn - x;x rhkhv shpxfx l ckxl cl xl  
vedxgvxnl x...?B<sup>1</sup>

Hl l h Xfkx : csxn fw oi jfckx zb jhnxo ; xjhfkvh jcpnxt  
evnc; Xl hl Pi sedk <sup>TM</sup> -`k Debxvxk unvwswkh fegc vevxdxkx  
kcrq ejl xavxn...âZb mx[vhk`k`bh rhd`v`k mc ukvhk peshf hg`k,  
'znik l ckxl ; xl xgcngc l i phnxfc ejl c; sxbxk  
l csgcpcjxkxbcvxnl x?! Phgfw;x, l ck sxbxk |edycl fcnxkxbxk  
r`b`k`k uygwdhl , l ckvck fharh den i bi kvc |edycl fcnxk  
r`b`k`k pe] fxn uygw duovwn. Cgx l ckxl hjhl , x;x rhkhv  
shpxfx {c/tcnx Jcddhn l ckxl cl xl , Pcl bc Seddxvi a-ai pcvh  
xsc hjhl `k cl xsxvxn.B<sup>2</sup>

Xfkx : csxn Xl hl Pi sedk <sup>TM</sup> -`k oi jfcsxkvc;x mcsxddcj  
l zmbwswkw ]`ohnl `a, suknh oi jfckx jcpnxt ejl xavxn. } i k;x  
cmmcgvc vc redv evxgvxdx ; xl x, ukwk ohj`nghkl hs` i l i l ohgr  
[hl hhj` Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k mc pcbncj |edycl fcnxk x;x  
kcmcsxkxk ph; xl xddcj phrr`kvhk h'hp evxnvx. Fwkwk vh  
dhd`gl hs` oi gcth ph; xl xddcjxkc ocgcg dejxnck fxn aed vxv.  
Oi gcth l c; jcfxkvc phrr`k jcpnxt evxgl csx rcfxgxkvck ughk fw  
; xl x phvxscgc ]uovwn. |edycl fcn si kkcscxkvc vc fegc xojxshnh  
shg`kl hghn 'zbc vcdxn ; x, 'cgck fcpsgcnvc ukw vh redv  
evc[cdx; .

#### *10-PCRXRX NCMHDCJGCNXK DENXKC SHOJH PCVXSGCNXK RUDWGLHS-*

Oi gcth l c; jcfxkvc phrr`k 'xbgcvxgl csxkxk vx'cn fxn  
rxsl x vc scpxp pcvxsgcnxk mc ncmhdcjgcnxk denxkc shojh  
pcvxsgcnxk rudwgl hs`v`n ; x, ukghn`k fxn ke]csxkx redv evxnx; ...

Jcfcnx zb jhnxo ; xjhfkvh Cfwbcn fhncsxkvc vedxn... âFw  
xgvc, dc/kx 30-[w xgvc Cfwbcngc L i hmxdcxk hnhs`kvh l i khrxac  
dhnkhv`... L i hmxdc ukw ; ufwvgwrgh Ahl vkh L cvxkcde

<sup>1</sup> âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, Hmnu`h ]h`, 2-[x [xgv, scp.329æ âJhnnox Xfkx Csxß,  
Hmnu`h ]h`, 2-[x [xgv, scp.52, 1-[x ]h`, L xsxn ]h`, 4-[i [xgv, scp.25.

<sup>2</sup> âJhnnox Xfkx : csxnßæ âCg-fxvhdcjw mck-kxphdcß, 7-[x [xgv, scp.179.

'zkcvcnx. Fwkwk scfcfx xgc cghrcvhn ]uo aedgcñ kcrq evxgl xavxn ;x, l ck ukwk ]uowkwk bx;n evxgl csxkx fcdckl cvxl . Hl l h fw fhncvc L i hmxdcdc fcnhcj rhbhkv`nhk fñ phvxscx redv evxngcn ;x, Scnx l ckxl i ]i k dhbl `a mc ukvh redv ejl xavxn ;x, Sedt, Ai edf i ]i k fegc ncmhdcj evxn ;x,...ß

Xfkx Csxñ vc ukh jhfe ughnhr 30-[w px[nx xgxkxk phvxscgcñ fhncsxkvc fegc dhbl `av`n...âFw xgvc Cfwbcngc L i hmxdc hnhs`kvh l i khrxac dhnhkv` mc L i hmxdc ukw L cvxkcdc 'zkcvcnx. Fwkwk scfcfx fhncsxkvc ]uo aedgcñ vedxgl xavxn. U [i l gcvc vedxgn ;x, L i hmxdc ukw szdvi , rcjg xgc jcpvxv ejvx mc ;ufwv nctjhngñ Ahl vñk L cvxkcdc 'zkcvcnx. L cvxkcvck vc fcdhk evxgl csx l csgcpcj ugl hdhk ]uo ni smhdj` mcbxddcjvc si n`i k evxgvx...ß

Hl l h 'zncsck Sedt ;xl vxñ ;x, Jcfcñx Cfwbcñk phvxscsxkx ukvhk ncmhdcj ejl xa mc L i hmxdcdc fcnhcj rhbhkv`nhkgññ ukh xsjxkhv ejl xagcn?!

U jcrñxfck 170-[x px[nx xgxkvc vi kdhvhk 'evck Sedt xfkx Zl cn Jcl xl vxñ ;x, ]uogw ncmhdcjgcñ... |edycl fcn csñxkvck jwj l wa, Scrxte mc Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj l cscgcgcñkx, Ncvvc l i - phñfcgcñkx mc tcjpgcñ, phfegc {cl cg l i phñfcscñkx ncmhdcj ejl xavxn. Nx[hg hgl gcñ ukwk fhncsxkvc fegc vel xagcn...âUkwk zbi bcxt, pcvsx l cñw;vñ (jcn; evxgckvxñ), rcfwg evxgcx ugl hdhk fñ scmddcvc vcdcsxbvxñ, u, zbi kvck pcvxsgcn vi bcgvñvx. Pcl ]xkxk, vxksxbg;gc vc l i jjcpxl ugwkwn.ß<sup>1</sup>

#### *SEDTXK NCMHDCJGCNXXKXK KZMI*

Sedt zb ncmhdcjgcñkvc |edycl fcn i ]i k di b cggxvck hñj`r scphfc vi bcgj l xavxn. Fxb ukghn`k vuoshk i ]i ki âDi b cggx shojh scphfcß ;xjh`k`k 1-2-[x [xgvgcñkvc 'ekxa xbhpgñ fcdhk ejl xax;. Sedt ukghnvñk xdxñl x i ] kctcnxkx zb rcfxgcscñkvck, dc/kx Jcl xl rcfxgcscñkvck rcñññ menl xavxn mc ukghñ i ]i k xsghl x zg;gcñkx tcjp ugwk l hs`kh vññ ncmhdcjgcñ vi bcgj l xa,

---

<sup>1</sup> Fwnhvñ redv ejvx;gcñl xbx Dcpdh xfkx L wxk (333-[i xgvc mthj evxf), Cfw Vhmww (275-[x xgvc mthj evxf), Kcshx (303-[i xgvc mthj evxf), Cfw Phjcl Nhbx (227-[x xgvc mthj evxf), Xfkx Pcfcñk (254-[i xgvc mthj evxf) mc Ph;xl (405-[x xgvc mthj evxf) ;xl x hgl gcñ mcst ejl xagcn. Sedtxk phrr`kvñ vedxgckgcñk cññtg` xbh`k` âCfvi ggñp xfkx Scfhß ;xjh`k`k 1-[x [xgvxkvc redv ejl xax;.

juogw l z/[i bcgcñ rukvhnł `a, juogw ae/ngcn mc pcvxsgcn rual wavwn. Phgfw;x, Hgghp-jhhgh kc ukghn`k zbgcnxkx, kc vc ukghn`k fhaghn`kh `cgck phvxscgcñx dhnghl `av`næ ukghn` ruawf vi bcgvck egc Sedtxk zbi vi n. U ukghngh vx`cn nhmx vi bcgjl xa mc zb fedkxkvck ;e]ck khy`gghn` ukghn`k vxgxkvck ncmhdcj ejl xavxn. Fxb ukghn`k vuoshkvhk juowkw âCfvi ggghp xfkx Scfhß mc âDi b cggx shojh scphfcß ;xjhfgghn`kvh hnhav`nl `a`r. Zb xl ;hk`l `b scmddcsxkvc h`hnv`y`l `b hnhav`nl hghnvhk hdv`k ugvw ;x, Sedt zb bepkkxk l cpswgw ughk mc L cpcl l cv xfkx Scmhv xfkx Ki mednc hvghkv`nv`y` fxn acosvck x;x di b uk hgj` pcvxs kcrgh ejl xa, fharhghn`kvhk xsc fwkvhk fxn rcvcñ hnj`r mc dh hb ncmhdcj szdgcł xavxn.

Pcl jxkxk, cncfgcn i ]i k zbi kvck juogw ahxngcn, Xnhkvh, Nul hvh, Xsghl zg;cgcnxkvc mc shxn ;xl x dengcnvc scñ;cnvcgcñ vi bcgjl xa, jhnnox phvxscgcñxk fha menvxdx xggcnx jcpnxt ejl xavxn. U, Xsghl jhnnoxkvc l zm[wv ughk acosddcjcgcñxk hvghn`k` vh vcdxavxnl xa, zbi ki k shojh pcvxsgcnx xgc l i scgl hkghn hnhskvh ownthj]` crxvcgcñx dhdl hyh fhaghl `a mc zb bepkkxkvc pe] fxnx fha menl cvxdx phgvh juogw l i phnxfc mc tcjpgcn x[hv ejl xavxn. Ukwk wsjhg`rgh rwnhav`nv`y` fw khy`gghnh `znc pcl xk al i phnxfcgcñßvc di b l xkgcngc hvhl l i scgl hkghn`k cgx xgc th[xcgc ac;xgvc rcjgc dejxnxgn, phgfw;x ukghnvhk pcjjh fxnxkxk fegc, ohnx[x hgcl vc mi [wvw ugl hl `av`n. Ukwk rukvhnv`y` fw ;xl x dhghk mc shojh pcvxsgcnxk l c[l wswkvhk fegc kcjx[c hg`k`n ;x, Xsghl r`g`k[ `i [i kc dh`gl `av`n. Fxb vc âCfvi ggghp xfkx Scfhß ;xjhfk`k x;xk[x pxsscsxkvc fwkghn`k fhjxg mc rukvhnł h ugvwykw ha;hn ac;xgvc fcdhk ejl xax;.

Sedtxk shojh ncmhdcjcgcñx oi gcth l c;jcfxkxk xsghl x jcprrhj l ckfcgcñxkvc;x dejl xavck hnj`r pcvxs, jhnxo, cvcfxddhj mc s. ;xl x l ckfc ;xjhfgghn`kh mhnv ugl wa mc dh`gl `av`n.<sup>1</sup> Fegc ;x, Sedtxk |edycl fcñxk vzmni kvck L i hmxdcckxk mhoj`kh rcvcñ vi bcgvvxdx mc ncmhdcj ejvxdx pcñ fxn aed fw ;xjhfgghn`k mhsxjcsxgc dh`gl `av`n. Phl `vhk vh hnj`r Jfcñx ukvhk pcvxs ncmhdcj ejl xavxn. U, zb âJhnxoßxkvc

<sup>1</sup> Ukghn`k hvghn`kvhk juowkw âDi b cggx shojh scphfcß hvghn`k ;xjhfk 1-[x [xgvxkvck redv ejl xax;.

hahy`vh;`ncmhdcjgcnxk uoahn`k`kcrgejl xavxn.<sup>1</sup>

h) Unvwkwk swdwk i bcnxkvc shpxgvck Vhnedkc rcvcn pcnc;cj ejl csxæ phgfw;x, fw l cshtc 'cl x xgc fxn 'e[c-'i kvi bgi ; dugvwn. U vedxn...âUnvwvh ughkgghn swdwk i bi kvc egc nhphj 'evxnvxgc n ; x, shk;x dwl ahr rwl ghn`k i sji kc hdhr rudwnvwghn, ukwk i sji kvc ughk sw dhgk`b vcmcgcnxk hdhrghn`k`k i sji ki znji nvi !ß

f) Rhvxsxddc l i phnxfcsxkvc xkc;gcnxk Hsxl xfkx Cl n Jcl xl x (u vh Sedtxk vi bcgjvxdx scphfcgcnvck fxnxvxn) tcshpcjgx cncf vxgxkvc vkh`al hs`! Egc[c vc redv ugwkwn ; x, Fi ; edn u 'i kvc fxn ]hdh ]hj`f unhvhk ; e]l c; xsjcvx;vc, zb hj` Cjghgh vedxn...âCjghg w]!ß Hj vkh`al hyh fhaghd`f âFcrnc swncsxkc hkv ugswk ; x, w]hnhl !ß vedxn, suknh xsc w]l hyh fhaghd`n.

m) Rhvxsxddckxk tcjpxkvc [xkgcn fxn ae/n uowl wa mc Jcl xl rcfxgcsxkvc ughkgghn`k l i phnxfvc 'zsjcnvx;gcnx l i rhmxl cj mc ncahvcjgcnx jc/nxtgcl xavxn!

r) Awa acpcnx Vc[[hg`k fxn bcnfcsx xgc tcjp ugwkl wavwn. U, acpcn vhnmbhs`kh fxn jc`x; mwnl wa mc âh]`g, ed...!ß vel xavxn.

y) Lcgc;gc n Fcpnx Sxnxk tcjpxkvc Csmcv xfkx Ri jfc Jcl xl xkxk vxgx xgc vkh`al `agh.

Jcfcnxkxk jhnxoxkvc l zm[wv ughk fw dhghk mc rukvnhl h ncmhdcjgc n ukvhk suknh fw 'i k; i 'i kc rcvcn dhb`ghk xsghl x jhnxo ; xjhfgghn`kh vh sxnhdcj ejl xavxn ; x, fxb ukghn`k fc/bxgcnxkx redv evxnx; ...

*SEDTXK NCMHDCJGCNXXKXK "JHNXOX JCFCNX"VCK SHXN JHNXO  
: XJHFGHN-KH SXNHDCJ EJL CSX MC UKWK SCFCFX*

Xfkx Csx n zb jhnxoxkxk l i rcvvl csxkvc dhb`n...âLck fw ; xjhfvh egc aedgcnx ju`ghl `ahl ; x, pe] fxn ; xjhfvh ju`ghkl hl `av`n. Cmmcg[c Cfw {c/tcn Jcfcnxkxk dhbv`y` fzdi ; jhnxo ; xjhfkvhk fhaghl `ahl . } i k; x phl ` u ; xjhfh l i nh[xcj evxn, mc u, xojxghtg` l cscgcgcnxk pcgg ugwkl hs` i ] i k fxn l cn[cvxn... Ukvhk suknh vx`cn l capwn jhnxogcnx l i jhgx evxf hnhav`nv`l , âJhnnox Jcfcnxßvc ugl hdhk pcn fxn aedx ukh cghmc

<sup>1</sup> Fho...âDi b cggx shojh scphfcß, 1-[x [xgv, âVhnedk, Rhvxsxddc, Awa, Fcpnx-Sxnxk tcjpgcnxß fzgl csxæ fw ncmhdcjgcnxk scpxp ncmhdcjgcngc pcl xk ; xjhfvh l i rhdxscsx. Ctxt xfkx L i kbcn, Hsxl xfkx Cl n mc Csmcv xfkx Ri jfcckxk jcn[i l edx-phg`. (Fwkghn` Sedt xfkx Zl cn Jcl xl x âJcl xl ß rcfxgcsx i ] i k vi bcgj l xavxn.)

ejvxl ... Dhgk`b |edycl fcn scphfcgcnx hnhs`kvh fha menck  
(ouah'cgl cb) phvxscgcnx dhhbn; ck Cfw {c/tnxk kcrj ejvxdxkc  
fxn aed cghmc ejl cvxl æ ukvh shvc[c cghmc xbhpgghn menvxl ,  
dhowv fxn hvhl `k hv`k, dhowv ukghnvkh pe] fxnxkxk  
l cbcl l cjc l c/nwb rhgl hs`kh scfcf ugl hdhk fxn aedx cghmc  
ejvxl . Lck redv ejvxdxl jhnxogcnvck, egc[c vc kcrj ejl c; vc  
vi b'i kgi ; mc ;xjh'f dhbl hrvh scvhrcjgxgx; gc jhk`khk  
; csgcnvck fharh pe] fxnxkvck fxn aed kcrj ejl cl xacl .<sup>1</sup>

Xfkx : csxn scphfcgcn fhncsxkvc ncmhdcjgcnx sukh  
]hjv`nv`rvhk suknh âncvvc, ti jwp mc txjckß fzgl csxkvc dhb`n...  
âFw, Xfkx {cnxn Jcfcnxkxk (ncpxl cpwgghp) fw l crhl `k  
xl hl ghn`k`k vxgxkvck redv ejvx; gcnxkxk oi ghscsxvn. Lck  
ukvh scphfcgcn l ckswf evxgck shojh pcvxsgcnvck, axc  
pcmh`cncsjgcnxkxk mc fharhghn`k`k xsjxkhv ejvxdx shojh  
pcvxsgcnvck pe] fxnxkx redv ejl cl xacl .<sup>2</sup>

Xfkx Ocgvkw dhb`n... âFw, xsghl x oxghtcj mc ukwk fhncsxkvc  
fha menck phvxscgcn – ncvvc, tcjpgcn mc l i phnxfcgcnvck xfhncj  
ughk l i jctxr tx; xngcnvn ; x, ukwk csgxkxk mc tcn/xkxk  
oi ghscsxkx Lcpcl l cv xfkx {cnxn Jcfcnxkxk dhb`s`kvkh, dc/kx  
ukwk âJhnnox : cfxnß ; xjh'f kvh cob ejl xacl ; x, u fw fhncvc  
'znvi di l ck l z/jcfc n. Egc fxn ; xjhfv`n ; x, i l l cjkx  
fzdi ; acosddcjgcnxkxk, shgcp xkshkghn`k, cvhgjgx scphfcgcnxk  
mc jhfexkgcnxk fhncsxkvc edf hojhnl hr, jckrxv ejl c; mc jc/kc  
mwnl hrgh ai fpc dhnhjl hrvhk jhl `h; -\h; xbcvxn.<sup>3</sup>

XSGHL -K CMMCGGCNXXKVC SEDTXK JCNCTXKVCK VI BCGVXGXF  
KCRG EVXGCK NCMHDCJGCNXXK L CAPWN HD-R VI ALCKGCN  
JCNCTXKVCK COB EVXGLCSX XGC CGHRCVHN UGHK  
L I GHPXBCGCN

Jcfcnx tcrxn Cfwbcnxk cl xn Li hmxdc xgc h`hvn`y`  
l i khrxac fhncsxkvc vedxn... âUkghn`k c; scnxddcjxkx ohj`nghjl hy`  
l csgcpcj 'znl cvxl . Hl l h Li hmxdc fcnhcj rhbhkv`nhkghn  
fw fhncvc Sedtxk vxgxkvck fxn l cscgckx redv ejl xagcn ; x...<sup>3</sup>

Xfkx Csx dhb`n... âLi hmxdc ukw szdvi , rcjg xgc jcpvzv  
ejvx, ; ufwv nctjhng h Ahl vkh Lcvxkcdc 'zkvcnvx, Lcvxkcvck

<sup>1</sup> âCg-; hl xgw txj-jhnxoß, L xsxn ]h`, 1348-[x xg, 1-[x [xgv, scp.5.

<sup>2</sup> âJhnnox Xfkx : csxnß, 7-[x [xgv, scp 246.

<sup>3</sup> âJhnnox Xfkx Ocgvkwß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.457.

vc kerg ugwl hs` l csgpcj 'zni gl cdck ]uo th[xcgx ac; xgvc  
sin`i k evxgvx.ß Suknh xsc Sedtxk mc Li hmxdcdc fcnhcj  
rhhbkv`nhkghn`k cpmhghj`k` fcdhk evxn!

Fw x;x fzdi ; hgxl Sedtvck fharhs`k`k ncmhdcjgcnxkc  
e/jxl hv ejl cvx; gcnxkc, (bhg`l ) ph; xl xk ph; xl xddcjxkc fcnhcj  
rhhbkv`nl hr i]i k fxn aed jh\l hv`rghn`kh 'znc ukghn`  
fwnhol `a, vxksxb Sedtxk ncmhdcjgcnxkvc mc ukwk zbi kvck  
wdvwnvwyw nhmxgcx sxgsxgcsxkvc xsc ocgxtc Usl hkh mc cl xn  
Li hmxdcdc fcnhcj rhhbkv`nl hr i]i k fxn cshs jh\`v`rghn`kh  
'znc fwkghn` cob evxf zb ; xjhfgghn`kvh rcgcl c hgl `agh. L cpb  
fw scfcf i bi kvck Jcfcnxkxk åJhnnox : cfxnß ; xjhf` Sedtxk  
ncmhdcjgcnx xgc vugwvwn. Xfkx Csx mc Xfkx : csxn vc Sedtxk  
ncmhdcjgcnxkx ukwk jhnnoxkvck 'zji nl i agcn. Ukghn 26-[-` px[nx  
xgxkxk phvxscgcnxkx dhhbn;ck (u, |edycl fcx-C; ncl xk  
mcthj`kvhk {cl cg l i phnxfcsxkc rcvcn Sedtxk kerg ejvxdx  
ncmhdcjgcnxk phl `s`k` redv ejl xavxn) {cl cg l i phnxfcsxkxk  
ho`n` fhncvc vedxn... åFw, Xfkx {cnxn Jcfcnxkxk (ncpxl cpwgghp)  
fw l crhl `k ncpfcngcnxkxk vxgxk[c redv ejvxdx aedgcxk  
r`shgv`gl `a` mc xojxshn`v`n.ß Ukwk åfw l crhl `k ncpfcngcnxß  
vevx;vc, l crscvx vxksxb Sedt mc ukwk rwnhav`nv`y` shojh  
nhmxgcnvxn ;x, Jcfcnx fw ncmhdcjgcnx l cpb ukghn`k vxgxkvck  
kerg ejl xavxn.

Cgghl c Xfkx Ocgvkw fw szbi vph ha;hn ac; xgvc fcdhk  
ejl xavxn. U, Sedtxk ncmhdcjgcnxkx – oi gcth xgc fed/cj,  
l i njcvgn, tcjpgcn mc x[jxl h, dc/kx Li hmxdc xgc fed/cj x[l h  
mc tx;xn fxngxdx mc s. ; xl x ncmhdcjgcnxkx åJhnnox Jcfcnxßvck  
se]l csxkxk scfcfx fhncsxkvc fegc vedxn... å}i k;x fw fhncvc  
'znvi di l ck l z/jcfcn ; xjhfv`n ; x, i l l cjxk fzdi ;  
acosddcjgcnxkxk fhncsxkvc edf hojhnl hr,  
ukghn` jckrxv ejl c; mc ukghn fhncsxkvc ac;; -ai fpc  
dnhhl hrvhk wbhrv`n.ß

Vel cgx, ukghn`k kbcnkvck Sedtxk åJhnnox Jcfcnxßvck kerg  
evxgck ncmhdcjgcnx ck l z/jcfcn ncmhdcjgcx shd`g`n. }i k;x  
i l l cjxk fzdi ; acosddcjgcnx – scphfcgn mc jhfexk (l crscv  
ocgxtcgn, ph; xl gcn mc ukghn`k hvhl ghn`v`n) fhncsxkvc ac;; -  
ai fpc mc edf hojhnl hrvhk wbhrv`n.

Sxhc jcrvxl evc[cdxl vx`cn fxn vcgxg vc fwvwn... ukghn`k  
redv ejvxdxkc 'znc fzdi ; acosddcjgcnxk jckrxv evxgl csxkc mc

ukghnh xnhv jwjwgl hš'kh scfcf ughk xagcnxk fcdhk evxgxf  
ohj'nghv'gl hš' ukghnh edf jwjwgl hr shd'g'n mc nhmxdc mh[xfvxn  
;x, l i l ; i k ughk pcn fxn mhsxjc xgc ukghnh xsjxrhl cjgckck  
edfgcnx hnhvhk rhgv'nl hr i ] i k ]hg'as'k. Fegc ;x, fwkw Sc/v  
xfkx Cfx Mcrrhs'k, Cfx Lzp[ckc menxgl cgx ughk acn/x-pcvvx  
([cbh jcvfxnxkxk) gcym ejl csxkvc 'znl i avi ;. Ukghn  
scn;cnvcgx; mcbxtcsxkvc ughk Sc/v i ] i k l i khsxf fxn fcphkc  
'c]xnl cdc ]hg'al `agh. Phvxsc fegc ugl wavw...

Cfw Lzp[ck Scrctx (ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âXsjxd/hfß mc  
âWsvwg-yhfcß ;xjhfgnh'kvh redv evxgl xavxn) vhl acnhf x]cnvx.  
Ocgxtc Zl cn vc ukh devvx vctc ahgghr mwnl wa, ho'n`k[ vctc  
vc Lcvxkcvck si n' i k ejl xavx. Rhvxsdde l i phnxfcsxkvc Sc/v  
xfkx Cfx Mcrrhs ruawgvw mc Sc/v vc ukw, acnhf x]vxdxkc 'znc  
jwjwf bxkvkh shgv`. Sc/vxk hnmhv` ukw fwnhov`nv`, u vh  
l i phnxfvcv ncahvcj mc l i rhmxl cj 'zsjcnvxdxkc 'znc Sc/v  
Mcrrhs ukvhk acnhf pcvvxkx ([cbhs'k`) 'zj i n i f vevx... âHgghph  
hkv ugswk, acnhf x]vxdxkc 'znc sckc pe] mhoj ahgghr  
mwnl hdh[hyhl ]ß

Cfw Lzp[ck vevx...âLck vc fwkvkh suknh pe] mhoj acnhf  
x]l cdc[cdcl ]ß

Xfkx Pc[cn fw phvxscxk Xfkx Tcjpwwk âXsjxd/hfß ;xjh'kh  
dhbv'y` phaxdcvck (Cfw Lzp[ckxk jcn[i l edx-phg'kvh) kcrg  
evcnc; vedxn... âXfkx Tcjpwwk Xfkx Cfvi g-Fxnnx Cfw Lzp[ckxk  
phvxscsxkx mc ukwk vhl acnhf x]vxdxkx redv ejvxdxkc 'znc  
l cbcl l cj ejl xavxn.ß Suknh dnb'n... Xfkx Tcjpwwk âSc/v Mcrrhs  
ukh – Cfw Lzp[ckc menxgc[c; xghpx [cbhvhk 'i bcajc  
'ejl xavxnß – vedckgcxk szbi ki xk;hn evnc; vedxn... âSc/v  
fhncsxkvc fegc 'i l hk ejl c; ncmh vedxgvxn.ß Suknh dnb'n...  
âGh;xk ukwk i ] i k dhwa` fxn fcphkcvxn.ß U fw fcphkckx  
'c]xnl cl xavxn, (fxbxl kcbcnx xbc 'znc) fcg;c vc Sc/vxk âacnhf  
x]vxdxkc 'znc sckc ahgghr mwnl hdh[hyhl ]ß vel c; vc l crscvx  
egc fxn acnjgc dhkha` ugl hš'v`n ;x, ukw fcdhk ejl cl xavxn. U  
vh fwkvkh xfhncjvx ;x... âC'cn acnhf x]l csx si fwjh dejl xa  
ughnsh (fw phgvh ukh ahgghr mwnl hnhl )ß, ] i k ; x Hgghp ukh  
juntxr menl xa mc u vh âkcswp jzmfcxß<sup>1</sup> xgc jzmfc ejl xa,

<sup>1</sup> Pcn phks` fxn \xs xax fxn vph 'znl cl c; fhncsxkvc evxgck jzmfc  
(nev.)



fwkvhk suknh fñ vñph acñhfñ vuynw rñd`jl hl `av`n.<sup>1</sup>

Oi gctñ l c;jcfxkxk hñv`[`gghñ` fw [i n duggñgh ]hg`a`ngñ  
;x, zb fzdi ;gcnxkc evxgck jckrxv mc xñhvghñ` l i l ;i k ughk  
pcñ fñ mñsxjc xgc hñhvñk rhgv`ns`kghñ. Ukghñ zb fzdi ;gcnxkx –  
ocgxtcgcnx, mhgxgcñ mc ukghñ`k rupwl -crñcfhghñ`k`, u [i l gcvck,  
L i hñxdc, L cñmhk, Debxv xfkx L i hñxdc mc ukghñ`k mhgxgcñ mc  
s. ;xl xgcñk phl `s`k` (ukghñ` scphfcgcnxk, dhowv jhfexkgcnxk  
fzdi ; acosxddcjgcñ, ;i fhñghñ` hvghkv`n`ngñ) i bi ñgi peshf  
evñ mc ukghñh fcnñcj rhbhkv`n`ngñ. Vksxb fñ hvñl ughk  
Sedt xfkx Zl cñ vc fw l cscgckx dhoa` ac;xgvc fhah vi avi di  
i ]i k [i ñfc[i n cñmhdcjgcñ vi bcgj l xavñ ;x, ukghñ oi gctñ  
l c;jcfxkxk fi ji k jcfcrçgcnxkx pcñ fñ vzmñvc;x xsjc;gcñ xgc  
l i mñtxr ugl wa, ãocgxtcgcnx mc ukghñ`k rupwl -crñcfhs`k`  
l i vñtxc ej l c;ß `cñvcñx hgj`kvñ edfgcnx mc xñhvghñ` ukghñvñk  
wbñrghav`ñl `a, ukghñ`k fhñcsxkv c tbcxgcj dñb`f dñdl hyh  
fhaghl `a, bñpxñvc ]uo `zbcg `zñi kck fegc `cñvcñc hgj`kvñ  
zbi ki k Xsghl h bxvv ughk jcnxfhj]` pcvctgcñkx `xbgcj l xa,  
xsghl x e/jxrhvghñvñ mc xkhk[ghñvñ mññhk]` mc vñy`v`[  
ownñthjghñ` l i scgl hkghñ`k hñhs`kvñ dñdl hyh fhaghl `a mc  
fegc ahdxc dñdl `av`n ;x, ãXsghl r`g`k[ `i [i xgc dñd`gl hg`v`ñlß

Fcgx, Sedt zbi ki k ocdhgx cñmhdcjgcñ xgc vxksxbgx;  
l crscvcgcnxkc ]hj l `av`n. Ukwk ownñthjghñ`k`k  
ki l wkcgcnxkvck fñx vc, hahy`vñ redv ugwkñ[hy` ;xl x, ãCsmcv  
Ckcsxß mc ã|edycl fcnxk Ousñumgh `]`gvñal hs`ß ctshkcsxvñ...

#### *1-SEDTXK NCMHDCJGCNXXVC CSMCV CKSXKXK CTSHKCSX*

Jcfcnx fw ctshk c fhñcsxkv fñ ke]c cñmhdcj redv  
ej l xavñ ;x, ukghñ`k oi ghscsx fegcvñ...

|edycl fcnx; xvñxs` evck Csmcv Ckcsx<sup>2</sup> Dcl ckc rhgxf  
`cgñc; unhk`k `hvahp` Acñ xfkx Fhbñk` zgvñ ñvi , suknh ukwk  
pcdhj dugvñ` xgc xbvñmh[ evxf unvw xagcnxkx Reds xfkx Cfñx  
Dcywñ, Dcl ckvc thñs zmghvghñ`k`k xagcnxkx xsc Txñwbñ mc  
Fñbwddc pcñhg c ejvx. Fw bñl hk |edycl fcnx-C;ñcl ukghñh  
dñbv` ;x, Csmcvgc ha;hñvñ, dhowv l cotx ac;xgvc l i fhñxbdc

<sup>1</sup> ãCg-xshfcß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.173-175.

<sup>2</sup> Ckcs xfkx L i bpc[ – Bedv xfkx : cpghk xfkx Scfhdh l ckswf ughk fñ  
ahocvñ. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` Xfkx Pcbl xk ãCkshfß ;xjh`k`k 381-[x  
scpxtcsxkv l zm[wvñvñ.

rhgos`kghn mc ukw jwjwf zgvi nsi kgc. Ukghn fegc nhb`g`yh  
 'cgvxgc; x, rctxgvck pi [wl evxf ukw rcjgc dejxnsxkgcn, hl l h  
 Csmcvxk aedjhk` ukw fw swx-rcsvvck h'hp ejvx. U, Redsxk  
 dhk`kh fxn hvhl 'zkvcnxf vevx... âReds! Fw l cgc; kc vedxn?ß  
 Reds vevx... âKc vedxn ;x?ß Vevx... âU l ckc vedxn ;x, sck Redsc  
 e/jxl hv evxf ukw cbxbgcvxk, u vh sckxk fi ji k xagcnxkc fha  
 ruavw, sckxk fi ji k pz;wl cj l crhl ghn`kh ki twb ejvx. Xkvx  
 xsc sckxk vi al ckxkc l edg ejl xavxn mc vhl ]hg`a`n ;x, sckxk  
 pz;wl cjxkx cgc ;e]xnsxk mc zb l c;nxkx 'xbgx ac; xgvc x[nh ejxk.  
 U l ckc vedxn... âEd Csmcv! Ed Csmcv! Ed fcvfcoj! Ed fcvfcoj!  
 Ukwk fudkwkw mwn, fha`k` fcvckxkvck hd`n, c;s phgvh sckx  
 ri vncjvck ;ckhngav`nhn, dhowv fudkwkw mwnhn.ß Reds  
 dhghkvhk ukwk [hk`kh hkv x]cnc; vevx... âHkv ugswk Bxg-  
 pxl hnh (fw, Csmcvxk gcrctx xv) ;x, sck l ckxl [hk`l vkh  
 i sjiksck, l ckxl kcbcnxl vc egc fzdi ; fxn acosxddcjsck ;x,  
 sckxk fhncvck fegc tx;xngcnc dug menl cncl .ß Csmcv vevx... âSck  
 kc rcvcn [cth;hnshk! Fw l cgc dx jc; bxf evxl l x?! Xkvx fxgvl  
 ;x, sckxk zb rcgfvxkv 'xbgcjvx;gcnxkvck, l ckxl xsc h'hp  
 ugvywyl aedgcnvck \eal hkshk.ß Dc/kx ukwk aedjhk`k`k (ukw  
 l cgc; hvghkv`n`nv`) h'hp ugvywyl aedgcnvck \eal hkshk.

Sedt vedxn... Reds fwkvhk suknh ]zgc ]`ov` mc zb vcsjcsxk  
 zbi xgc Csmcv hnhs`kv fha menck phvxscgcnvck ofcnvhn ejvx.  
 Fegc kcjx[cdc 'cgvxgc; x, nhb`ghav`rghn` aedx sukh ]hjv`n`f  
 Csmcvxk zgvi nsi kgc. Fw bhl hk Csmcv dekvck Redsx ]hy`nv`  
 mc ukh vevx... âLc`cn l ck phrr` sckc vel cvxl l x? Sck xsc  
 l ckc dhghkghn` jcpmxc menvxk! Fw (dc/kx ukwk l cgc;  
 hvghkv`nv`y` aedjhk) l ckc vedxn ;x, ed fcvfcoj! Ed fcvfcoj!  
 C`cn Redsxk fudkwkw mwnl hshk, sckxk fha`k` fcvckxkvck  
 hd`nh[hrv`n.ß Reds vevx... âHgghp`k \edycl fcnc ugvywyl phgvh  
 sckx zgvi nl c; l ckc ghdxr vedxgvxn, l ckxl fhnci vc ke[c  
 xsjcdxnscksc, egc vc tcnl hk menæ l ck runow mc kx'hnhkg`r  
 phg`kv dhahd`nhl ! Lckx zgvi n, ]i k; x fw l ckxl i ]i k `i kvc  
 fxn ke]c vctc zgl c; vck ]uo hshkv`n.ß Sedt vedxn... âCsmcvxk ukh  
 dhb`y` 'cgvx mc ukw ]zgc 'zkvcnvx. Suknh 'zsjcnxa menvx ;x,  
 rwnfhkg`r i ]i k di b xkc; mc vcmc phb`nghs`kghn. Vhph suknh  
 fxn ocjj ]c; vx mc ukghn` ocjj fudwk[h vi bvi , zbi xsc ukghn`k  
 hnohs`kv vdhkv`. Ukghnh pe] fxn cghl cj mwnl hvhk, dhowv  
 ukghn` dhj`njl hvhk fhaghn`k` fcvckgcnxkvck hd`nv`, zbi vc u

ocjvck ;cknhh j`ol hv`. Suknh ukghn` fwnhov` ;x, pcnc; cj evxf  
[hk mensxkgcn!ß Sedt fw phvxscx ncmhdcj evck acosxk vxgxkvck  
vedxn ;x, âu 'ikvc fha menck phvxsc ;xl x mcpacjgx mc  
h[`kh[hrg` fxn aed 'znl cl xavxl .ß

Sedt vedxn... Pcl xk 'e[c ukw rctxgvck zgvi nl c; i]i k  
pcdhj dugvha` xgc cgfxn ugvwghn. U, cnxkxk dhk`kh vhoxg ughk  
bhl hk Txnwb xncgx ;e]vx, hl l h aedjhk` ukw udhjv` mc Txnwbwk  
denxkx ukh 'zsjcnvx. U, dwowgw ugvwyw i]i k fxn hb  
dwfhkv`rvh, aedjhk Txnwbh fhohnhr ukwk vxgxkvck vevx...  
âTxnwb! L ckl sckxkgc kc xaxl mhn?ß Fw bhl hk Txnwb ukwk  
fudkwkh fxn bcncf mwnhnhr zgvi nvi .

Sedt vedxn... Suknh rhghk [hl hhj vh x]cnx vhoxg ugvwghn ;x,  
ukwk fha`k` fcvckxkvck hd`ns`kghn. Fw bhl hk aedjhk` ukw  
jcn\cjvx, u pcnc; cjc 'cgvx mc ukw zgvi nc fxgl cvxgc. Kcphdcj,  
x;x kctcn ukwk ;i ncdxkvc ujwnvw, hnmhv` ukwk sh]ghn`kvhk  
jwjvw, vhw-tcndhv ejvxdx fxn phgvh fharh fxn hvhl r`g`k[gh  
ukwk fha`k` fcvckxkvck hd`nv` mc u, xkc; gcnc l cosws ughk fxn  
kc/nc ]c; vx. : eax; ]xgc 'cgxf âkc ugl wavwn?ß – vedc ocfc  
hgv`rvh, ukwk hnmhv` vevx... â|edycl fcnc mcpd ugwkwñß  
Fwkvhk suknh u, [hk menvx.

Fw ncmhdcjx Jcfcnx mc Bcpcfx zb jhnxo ;xjhfgnh`kvh redv  
ejl xa, Xfkx Csx, Xfkx : csx mc Xfkx Ocgvwk vh ukw Jcfcnxvck  
cob ejl xagcn. Hl l h Xfkx Ocgvwk ukw oi ghsc ac; xgvc redv  
ejl xavxn.

#### *CSMCV CKCSXKXK CTSHKCSXKX HNHAV-N-N-R*

h) Fw ctshkckxk nhmxgcnx

Sedt fw ctshkckx uk fxn ncmhdcjvc mc zb ocdhg`kvh  
vi bcgjvxdx vznv nhmxkxk vxgxkvck kcrj evxn. Ukghn  
hahy`vh; `ghnv`n...

- 1-Scpg xfkx Dwsxt Ocbnc[x Scgl xæ
- 2-l fedv xfkx Scon Ocbnc[x Scgl xæ
- 3-L i sjckxn xfkx Debxv Kcocxæ
- 4-l nmcj xfkx Ycbxv Vcsxkx.

Vxksxb fxn hvhl ughk Sedt mhg`r hgcl xkvc pe] fxn ohnx[x  
mi [vww ugl hdhk fw nhmxgcnx zb ocdhg`kvh vi bcgj xa mc  
ncmhdcjgcnx ukghh kxsfcj menl xavxn.

f) Fw ctshkckxk l cbl wkw

Fxb Sedtxk Csmcv Ckcsx fhncsxkvc vi bcgvvxdx shojh  
ctshkcgcnx âCfvi ggph xfkx Scfhß ;xjhƒk`k 2-[x [xgvxkvc  
hnhav`nhnr vi b'ik ncmhdcjgcngc l i rhdxsc ejl xa, ukwk  
nhmxgcnxkxk mc ncmhdcjxkxk shojh ugvywkw fcdhk ejl xax; .

*2-OUSNUMWK HGGHP DHK-KVH /EDYCL FCNGC  
/-}-GHVHAL HS- CTSHKCSX*

Sedt Debvc'xnvxk ({cgwgh phvxscsxkvck suknh) Ounhshkh  
jcnet pcnc; cj ejl csxkx ncmhdcj evcnc; vedxn... Xnhk \hvahp`  
Ousnumwk uygw Debvc'xnv {cgwgh cphgxrx rh]v`y` bhl hk Nedc  
vuynw pcnc; cj ejvx. U, vcmcdc l xkl xa mc vcmckxk i sji kvc  
dhjl `av`. Ukghn si n/cjgc pcnc; cj evcnc; sw ughk fxn l ckjcrc-  
dc ]hjv`ghn. Ukw udhjv`ghn ;x, vcmckxk dhjl hs`kvhk kx'hnhk  
ugl hs`k. U xsc h[`rghk`f vevx... â}uo \xs fxn xa 'znvi ki b!  
Hggph hkx ugsww, c'cn l ckx dwowvhk udhjl hshdv`k`b, fw  
i l l cjxk kc rcvcn pz;wl cj evc[cdxkx fxgc[c;vxl . }ik;x  
dwowvh 'znvi l ;x, l ck mc L i pcl l cv Hggph`k dhk`kvh  
vhk`a`n`r. Hggph L i pcl l cvc vevx... âUkghn di b xg pz;wl cj  
ej.ß U vevx... âFxn hb vh hnj`n.ß Hggph vevx... âDi b uk xg.ß U vevx...  
âFxn hb vh hnj`n.ß Hggph vevx... âDi b xdxnl x xg.ß U vevx... âXojxdhn  
sxbxkgcvxn!ß

Fw bhl hk l ckx dwowvhk udhjv`k`b. C'cn l ckx  
vcdl cscdvxkxb, fw i l l cjxk pz;wl cjxkxk l i vvcjxkx  
fxgc[c;vxl .ß<sup>1</sup>

*OUSNUMWK /EDYCL FCNGC SZPFCJ EJL CSX CTSHKCSXKXK  
HNHAV-N-GL HS-*

h) Fw ctshkckx ncmhdcj evckgcxk mcbxdddjxkx duoghk`gl hs`

Sedt fw ctshkckx zbi ki k vi bcgvvxdx hahy`vh;` nhmxgcnxk  
hv`kvhk kcrv evxn...

1-L cpcl l cvæ u, zb ocdhg`kvh ukw L cpcl l cv xfkx  
Cfvi ggph xfkx Scmhv xfkx Kumfcnc hvghkv`nl `av`n.

2-L cpgcƒ zb ocdhg`kvh ukw L cpgcƒ xfkx l rfc Cscvx  
hvghkv`nl `av`n.

3-Cl næ Sedtxk bepkx ocdhgghn`kvh x;x kctcnvck xfhncjvxn...

---

<sup>1</sup> âDi b cggx shojh scphfcß, 1-[x [xgv, l i rcvvl hjx fcpsgcxk fxnxk[xsx.

Ukghnvhk fñx Cl n xfkx Ncddhk, vx'cnx xsc Cl n xfkx Nctxgvxn.  
 Fxb fwkghn`k vh shojh ugl hs`k` âCfvi ggghp xfkx Scfhß ; xjh`k`k  
 1-[x [xgvxkvc mc âDi b cggx shojh scphfcß ; xjh`k`kvh red ejl xax; .  
 f) Ctshkckxk l cbl wkwkwk hnhav`n`gl hs`

Fxb fw ctshkckxk l cjkkxk vc âDi b cggx shojh scphfcß  
 ; xjh`k`k 1-[x [xgvxkvc hnhav`n`l `a, ukwk fhjxg ugvwywkw xsfhj  
 ejl xax; . Fwnhvh ukwk fñx vphh jc; nhnghkl hs`kh gi bwl  
 `znl i ni ; .

*VXKSXB SEDTXK FW X: X CTSHKCKX RWNHAV-NL HRVH XBGCVDX  
 CSHS PCVCT*

Sedt vedxn... |edycl fcnx; xvvhx` evck Csmcv Redsxk  
 rcgfkxvck ; e]ckgcñx fñx vx'cnxkvck suknh vedxnvx. Suknh vh  
 vedxnvx ; x, âfwkw l cgc; l ckc vel xavxnß. Ukw fw xagcnvck  
 h'hp evck l cgc; csgxkvc ukwk aedjhk` vxv! Sedt ki fi mmcj  
 xvvhx` evck Csmcvvck fñx l z/[i bc vc 'zsjcnx... U fñx ocjj  
 ]c; xn, ocjjxk fudwkvh di b fha xkc; mc vcmckx shoghd`n, ukghn`  
 pe] fñx aedgc fhyghl hvhk ocjjxk hnoh jcnctxkvc vdhk`f  
 fhaghn`k` ; csxn mc zbi vc ocjvck u jcnctc ; e]l xn. Suknh xsc u  
 pedmhkghn` fwnho`n ; x, pcnc; cj evxf [hk mensxkgcn. Fw khy`g`  
 ncmhdcj evck acos fwkw juo cbcl cjgx fñx phvxsc peshf  
 ejl xavxn!

X; xk[x ncmhdcjvc xsc vedxn... âOusnum dwowvh `zni n ; x,  
 Hgghp mc Ukwk |edycl fcnx xgc fñx denvc ujwnl wavwnß

Fñxk[x phvxscxk l cybx mc l zpjcñhs` fw vedxgvxn l x ; x,  
 l i scgl hkghn`k |edycl fcnx ki fi mmcj xvvhx` ejvxdx bhl hk  
 l cgc; hvghkv`nv`y` fñx mhng`r ukw redf hgcl xkvck h'hp evxn,  
 u l z/[i bcgcñ vc egc ukvhk fha menxn?! } i k; x Csmcv Ckcsx vc  
 ki fi mmcj xvvhx` ejvxdx bhl hk l cgc; hvghkv`nv`y` fñx acos  
 ukw redfvck h'hp ejvx, u l z/[i bcgcñ vc ukvhk fha menvx?!  
 L c`cn fw vxksxb fegc fñx ctshkckx l i scgl hkghn`k rcgfkxvc  
 ac; ; -ai fpc dhnhjl hr l crscvxc vi bcgvxf dhdl hl `av`n! `?

X; xk[x ctshkcvc vc, 'zncsck fw vxksxb acos l i scgl hkghn`k  
 Hgghp`k` mc ukghn`k |edycl fcnxkx xsjepbh hjcaxkc  
 jwjl hl `av`n! `? Fegc ; x, ukghn` Debvc`xnvxk vi al ckgcñx xgc  
 fxngx; vc – ukwk zb dwowskwkvh – fñx l c[gxsc ju`ghl `av`n!!

Fcgx, oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk hgxl gcñx mc fzdi ; acosxddcjgcñx  
 Sedtvck fw [i n ownhthj]` ctshkcgcnx ncmhdcj evxf Xsghl jhnxo

;xjhfgghn`k` ukghngh vugvwnl waghñ mc fw ctshkcgcn vc jcvnx[x  
 ughnhr xsghl x l ckfcgcnxk csg jcprrhj l ckfcxkc ]emnxgl xavxn!  
 Pcl ]xkxk ukghñ vxksxb Sedtxk ahdx ughnhr dhdv`y` âXsghl  
 r`g`k[ 'i[i kc dhd`g`nß szbi ki vc zb jhnxo ;xjhfgghn`kvh  
 hahy`vh redv ugwkxhk ac; xgvc dhd l `aghñ...

“XSGHL RHK JZ: I GL CSX MC R-G-K{ "I {I XGC  
 DHD-G-N” JCSCMMI NI KI K DHD-GL HS-

Vxksxb Sedt zbi ki k bepka ocdhgghn`kvh xnjxvhv ([hl hhj`k  
 vxkvck ]`ol hs`) mc tijwp (Xsghl x zg; cgcxk tcjp evxgl csx)  
 fhncsxkvc egc l i phnxfcgcnx rcgcl c hg`f jcsmxnc ]c; xn ;x,  
 ukghñvhk Xsghl `k den i bi kvc l cpb r`g`k[ 'i[i kc mc rhk  
 ho`v`gl hs` shdcxkvc dhd`gl hs` fhah vi ai gi n. Fw ctshkcgcnvck  
 fxn vc âxnjxvhv l i phnxfcgcnxß hv` xgc vi bcgvxgck ncmhdcjgcñvñ  
 ; x, hahy`vh ukw redv evxñ; ...

Sedtxk xnjxvhv ncmhdcjgcñkv; x dhghkghñ mc phvxckx fzdi; [xgmcgcvñl csx

Sedt cmmcg[c zbi ki k kcbcnxkv jwjvwyw dhghkghñ mc  
 phvxscgcnx axaxñl c; i ]i k ghb`l x acnhxjgcñ dññhl `av`n. Jcfcnx  
 xnjxvhv ncmhdcjgcñkxk cmmcgxkv ukwk fegc vevxdxkx dñb`n...

âFi ji k zg; cgcxk cphgxsx ;htxñ ugvgghñ mc uv dhkv`nv`ghñ.  
 Ri neda mc Scrxtvck fharh fi ji k cncf rzml i ki k phl `s`  
 l i njcv ugvgghñß Sukñ Rcjthk rcfxgcxkxk fxn pxsscxsxk  
 l i njcv ugl hs`k`, Pcmhbxk rcfxgcxkxk bc;hj mc l hgxddhj  
 menl c;vck xl jxkh ejl csxkx, Jedd mc Cscv rcfxgcgcnxkv; x  
 hmhl ohgr ; i jgcgcnxkxk Ji gedpcdc phmhvñg`r ejl cgcxkx mc  
 Fckx-Scgxl xk oi swsx acosddcgcñkxk vxkvck ]`ol hs`k`  
 ohj`nghvññr vedxñ... âPcl ]xkxk shñ xkshkghñ vh pcñ fxñ  
 l c; hkvh (l i njcv ugvgghñ)ß Sukñ vedxñ... â|edycl fcñk  
 xa]xgcñkxk l i ojcgxt khpxdcgcnvck `cgck l c; jwfgghn`kvh  
 vedxgñvx ; x, fi ji k rcfxgcgcn – thñsgghñ mc i l wl [hl hhj –  
 phl `g`rgh cpv-`edl hk` s`kv`ñññr l i njcv ugl waghñlß

Fw ocfcñx Xfkx Csxñ mc Xfkx Ocgvkw vh zb jhnxo  
 ;xjhfgghn`kvh edkxgc fegc redv ejl xagñ. Xfkx : csxñ xsc zb  
 jhnxoxkv ukwk l cbl wkwkw kcrg evcñ; vel xavñ...  
 â|edycl fcñk methj`kvñ sukñ fi ji k cncf rzml i – Lc; ; c  
 mc Lcvxkc l cs[xvxkxk [hl hhj`kvñ fharh – l i njcv ugvgghñ.ß<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âCg-fxvhdcjw mck-kxphdcß, 6-[- [xgv, scp.312.

Vxksxb Sedt zb ocdhgx xojxnhghn`kvhk suknh l i njcvgcnxk  
 dekvxck Xsghl h rhd`jl hghn`k` h]`rghd`n mc zbi ki k  
 rukvhnv`y` ncmhdcjgcncv fegc rcgcl c menxn ;x, ukghn`k phl `s`  
 r`g`k[ 'i[i kc Xsghl h rhd`jv`ghn. Xnjxvhv l i phnxfcgcnx xgc  
 cghrcvhn ukwk vi bcgjvxdx ctshkcgcnvck fxnx vc hahy`vh redv  
 ugwkxhk âCohfxs l i phnxfcsxßvxn...

âC;;ß mc âCa/cnxkßxk l i njcv ugl hs', |edycl fcnxk z'ed uygw (ncfxfcxs)  
 Jhpxnxk phvxscsx

Sedt âCohfxs l i phnxfcsxß mc C;; rcfxgcxs fhncsxkvc fegc  
 dhib`n... âJcphl cvc cpv`edl hk` \ubhk xg; rcfxgc C;; mc  
 Ca/cnxk rcfxgcgcx xv. |edycl fcnxk mcthj ocfcnx ukghnh  
 ]hjkhv fxn denc d`y`av`ghn mc C/ghfvh (shpxg dugwkvh) vi acn`c  
 shgv`ghn. Jhpxn fwkw Cfw Fc;nc ocfcn menvx, suknh Lcsnwr  
 C;;x xgc fxngx;vc ukghnh jcnct `ejvx, ukghnh ]hj`f l i phnxfc  
 h`hnv`ghn. Hgghp ukghn` tcnhx ejvx mc h[`kh[hr`g` ac;xgvc  
 zgvi nvi. Ukghnvkh zgvi ni gckgcxk i twkcjgx xdcnx wbwk  
 l cshtcgcnvck pxss ugwkwnvw. Ukghn`k zgvi ni gl csx cbcl cjgx  
 fxn tcjp ugvw!ß

Cfw Fc;n vc Jhpxnxk x;xk[x l c;jwfwkw hgl hbvhk mc  
 ukwk rcgcfc ocfcnxkx eajl cbvck cmmcg ukh fegc fxn l c;jwf  
 dhibv`... âSckxk l c;jwfwkw hgv`l mc il wl x sctcnfcngx;  
 ;e]xncnc; C/ghfvh Cohfxsgcnc vuynw pcnc;cj ejl cdxkvck h'hp  
 ugvwl. Sck vi b xa `znl i sck, fw rxdhl `si n/cjgc dhj`nv`k,  
 ukghnh hl hk menl cdxk. Lckxl kzmfcjx `zsjcnxaxl `cgckc  
 rcvch C/ghfvh rhg`k.ß Fw x[jxl hk` mc fw `i k;i `i kc rcvch  
 ukghn`k dugwkw `evckgcx Cohfxs, ukghn`k dugwkw xsc Cohfxs  
 dugw hvghkv`n`n. Jhpxn xfkx Cfx Phgc fw fhncvc fegc fxn ae/n  
 uowl wavw...

لَمَّا فَضَّ بِالْأَجْرَاعِ جَمْعَ الْعَنَائِثِ	وَاللَّهُ لَوْلَا اللَّهُ لَا شَيْءَ غَيْرُهُ
بِجَنبِ صَحَارٍ فِي جُمُوعِ الْأَخَابِثِ	فَلَمْ تَرَ عَيْنِي مِثْلَ يَوْمِ رَأَيْتُهُ
إِلَى الْقَبِيعَةِ الْحَمْرَاءِ ذَاتِ النَّبَاثِ	فَقَتَلْنَاهُمْ مَا بَيْنَ قَتْنَةٍ خَامِرٍ
جَهَارًا وَلَمْ نَحْفَلْ بِتِلْكَ الْهَثَاثِ	وَفَتْنًا بِأَمْوَالِ الْأَخَابِثِ عَنُودَ

âHgghph hkv ugswk! Hgghp ugl hshdv`, Ukvhk fharh fxn aed rhgl hbv`.  
 Mc fw xghkghn C[nh/vh l cygwF ugl hbv`.  
 "zbgcnxl u `i kvc;x ;xl x fxn aed `znl cl xavx...

U bhl hk ; x, Cohfxs scpnhk`k ; ckhn`kvh fxn denc 'cgl xavx.  
 Ukghn` fha` 'zdc w[hghk fxn vhy`k thsxcgcsxkvc,  
 Ncl bgc, sxngc vugw R`nl `b` Thl scpnhs`kvh l cpm ejvx; .  
 Cohfxsxk l hg-vzmgcjxkx bunggh rckxl cj hgv`r.  
 Ukghn`k szb-szpfjcjgcnxkc pe] fxn cpcl xddcj menl cvx; .ß  
 U vedxn...âJhpxn vc Cohfxsxk dugw i bcnxkvc vi acn`c shgv`.  
 L csnwr C;; vc ukwkgh fxn`c xv x mc Cfw Fc; nxk tcnl hk`k`  
 'zbgcdxnvx.ß  
 Sedt C;; mc Ca/cnxkgcnxk vxkvck ]`ol hs` phvxscsxkx  
 zbi ki k ocdhgx ac; xgvv vi bcg]vxdx Jhpxn xfkx Cfx Phgckxk  
 l epmcnxkvc rcnln menl xavx. Xkvx 'znc; Sedtxk ncmhdcjgcnxkvc  
 redv ugwkhh fw Jhpxn ; xl vxv?

#### SED TXK NCMHDCJGCNXKVC: X JHPXN

Vxksxb Sedt, Jhpxn xfkx Cfx Phgc Jcl xl xkx l l l i g-  
 l z/l xkxk Ocvx[ckxk uygw mc ]edycl fcnc-C; ncl xk zb  
 shyg`y`kvh; ` xa]xgcnxkvck fxnx peshf evxn mc Cfw Fc; nxk  
 vzmn i kv ukwk fha`kh 'cgck cpmhghjghnvkh fc/bxgcnxkx C;; mc  
 Ca/cnxk l i njcvgcnxkx l cpm ejl c; gc shvhghd`n. Oi gcth  
 l c; jcfxkv c jcn[i l edx-phg dhhbk hgxl gcn mc âXsjxd/hfß,  
 âLz/[cl i s-scphfcß, âWsvwg-yhfcß, âJc[nxvw csl hxs-scphfcß mc  
 âXshfcß ; xjhfgghn`k`k l i cggtgcnx ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg`k` Sedtxk  
 pcvxs gcnxkvck ]`ohnl `a mc ukw scphfcgc n [cn`csxkvc rcnln  
 menl xagcn. Ukwk hv` âLz/[cl i a-ai cnhß mc âSxdcn i k-ki fcghß  
 ; xjhfgghn`kvh vh ]c; xgl xavxn.

Ukwk ruavwyw vhsjhkghn Jcfcnxkxk, Xfkx : csxnxk, Xfkx  
 Csxnkx, Xfkx Ocgvwkwk mc L xn Ohkv`k jhnxo ; xjhfgghn`kvh redv  
 ugwk l wavwn. L cnpwl Acnctwvvxk vc fw l ckfcgcnc e/jxl hv  
 evcnc; âCg-ti swggw-l wpxl l cß ; xjhfkvh ukw Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k  
 axcgcnx [cn`csxkvc redv ejl xavxn. Dhrwj Pcl cmx âLz/[cl i g-  
 fi gvkhß ; xjhfkvh mc Cfv i g-l z/l xk âLcnhsxvwg-xjjxgh/ß  
 ; xjhfkvh Sedtxk ncmhdcjgcnxkc e/jxl hv evcnc; âC/ghfß mc  
 âCohfxsß l c; hkghn`k` jcrvxl ejl xagcn.

#### FW NCMHDCJXK FHNC SXKVC JCKRXVGCN MC L I GHPXBCGCN

Sedt Jhpxnxk vhsjhk`k` fea ncmhdcjvc mc fea shojh  
 nhmxkxk mhsxjcsxgc hahy`vh; ` ; xl x kcr g evxn... âScpg zb hjhs`  
 Dwsxt Scgl xvck, u vh l fedd xfkx Scon xfkx Gumbhkvkh, u vh  
 {cnxn xfkx Debxv {u/txvck, u vh Jcgpckxk rwghl ` Cfw



Zl cnvck...ß Phgfw; x...

C;; mc Ca/cnxk cphgxsxkxk l i njcv ugl hs`k`k ohnx[x mi [vww duo xv, Hgghp-jhhgh vh C/ghf mc Cohfxs hvg` fxn zg; c ocgr ejl cl xavxn. Egc[c vc axc scphfcsx, |edycl fcnxk z'ed zmghv` mc l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Ocvx[ckxk vuyl h zmghv` ughk Jhpxn xfkx Cfx Phgc hvg` fxn hvhl vh vi kdhdh 'cgl cl xavxn. Pcl ]xkxk ohnx[x hgcl vc Sedtxk ocdhg`kvh vi bcgck C;; mc Ca/cnxk l i njcvgcxkx l cpm evck fxn l i phnxfc vc fha menl cl xavxn. l l wl xddcjc, Sedtxk Jhpxn fhncsxkvc, pcl ]xkxk C;;, Ca/cnxk mc Cohfxs l i njcvgcx xgc h\hn`ghk l i phnxfcgcx fhncsxkvc ncmhdcj ejvxdx nhmxgcx vi kdhdh 'cgl cl xagcn!

Sedt l i njcvgcx, ukghngh h\hn`ghk l i phnxfcgcx, fw l i phnxfcgcxk h\hn`gv`y` zg; cgcxk hvghn`k`, fw fhncvc vedxgck ae/ngcx, Cfw Fc;nxk l c;jwfwkw, scphfckx mc fw phvxscxk nhmxgcxkx zbi kvck vi bcgjl c;gc fw szbi vel c; xsjcdx... â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk mthj`kvhk suknh Ri neda mc Scrxtvck fharh fijik xkshkghn phl`g`rgh l i njcv ugvwghn! Fwkh 'znc vc l i scgl hkghn ukghngh l i phnxfc h\hn`f ukghn` l cpm ejvxcn!ß Fxb fijik fw ncmhdcjgcx mc ukghn`k sckvcgcxkx âDi b cggx shojh scphfcß ; xjh`k`k 1-[x [xgvxkvc, Sedtxk dhnjv`y` ocdhgx sxl hk`k – Jhpxn xfkx Cfx Phgckxk jcn[i l edx-phg`kvh hnhav`nl`a`r.

Fw, Sedtxk zbi kvck vi bcgvxf` dhbv`y` âl i njcvgcx l i phnxfcsxßvxn. Ukwk fw fhncvc wdvwnvwyw vx'cn ocdhgx scpkcgcn vc mhnv`n. U [i l gcvck... âJedd rcfxgcxkxk l i njcvgxdxß, âl l l i Bi l cn rcfxgcxkxk l i njcvgxdxß, âCl l hk mc Lzpnc cphgxsxkxk l i njcvgxdxß, âDcl ck cphgxsxkxk fxxk[x vctc l i njcv ugl hs`ß, âDcl ck cphgxsxkxk x; xk[x vctc l i njcv ugl hs`ß.

Sedt fw rcfxgcgcxk l i njcv ugl hs`, ukghn`k dhahv`y` dengcn, ukghngh h\hn`ghk l i phnxfcgcx mc vx'cn l i njcv l i phnxfcgcx fhncvc dhghk ncmhdcjgcx vi bcgvenc; phl`s`k` Cfw Fc;nxk vzmni kc kxsfcj menl xa, shds`b-peshfs`b jzpl cjgcx mwnl wa, zgvi ni gckgcxk hvghn`k` redv ejl xa mc pzmghk; ocdhgx scpkcgcn jcsmxnc ]c;l xa mc fwkwkgh vh Xsghl jhnnoxkxk kwnhkx sxl hs`k` rhnhgj l`av`n! Pcl ]xkxk zg; cgcxk tcjp ugwkl hs` xgc cghrcvhn ncmhdcjgcxvc vc zbi ki k

rwnhav`nv`y` ocdhgx phvxscgcnx mc vzdi a scpkcgcgnxkx, l xsxgsxb  
l i phnxfcgcnx mc rcgcfcgcnx Xsghl unvwswkh kxsfcj menxn ;x,  
ukghn`k pe] fxx ohnx[vc fha menl cl xavxn. U [i l gcvck...

CGDCSXK TCJP UGWKLHS- MC CLYXADHK-K VHY-V-GLHS-

Jcfcnx Xnhr khpxdcgcnxkc l ckswf evxgck ocdhgx Cgdcs mc  
Cl yxaxdh cnhbxcgnxkxk tcjp ugwk l hs`k` Sedtvck ncmhdcj evxn  
mc Cgdcs phvxscsx fhncsxkvc fegc vedxn... âUkghn ]uo axvvcjgx  
l i phnxfc h`hvn`ghn. Fcpl ck {hbcmedpxk l i phnxfc scpkcsxkc  
vhoxg ugh[hy`kh il xvmhn ughk l i anx; gcn vph [xvxxddcjgc  
l i rhmxl cj 'zsjcnvxgc. L i scgl hkghn vh Hgghp`k ukghn i ]i k  
l i rcvvcn ejvxdx aedgcnc ]hjl hr dugwkvh vzbi l gi gi ;  
'zsjcnvxgc mc ukghnh pi [wl ejvxgc. Fw bhl hk Ohgxv vevx..  
â|cnmcnvx' hnh! Sckxkgc cpv`ledl hk fhyghd`nhl ;x, ukghn` fxbc  
jcsxgl ejvxdx jcrvxnvc, ukghnvkh pe] fxxkx shy rudl hdhl ,  
ukghn`k ]hdghn`k` rhkghn` xgc vugvwnhl .ß L i jchg Hgghp ukghn`  
l i scgl hkghn`k xojxdhn`kh rudvw, fw bhl hk Ohgxv tcnl hk  
menvx ;x, [hn]` [hl hhj`k hnhs`kvh tcndhv evxf vesxk... âCsxngcnx  
jwjwk, csxngcnx jwjwk! Csngx; vck xl jxkh evckgcncvck fharh pe]  
;csx zgvi nl cdxk!ß Si mhnxcgn csxngcn vcsjcsx xgc dhkha`, fxx  
vx'cnxkvck suknh 'cgxnvxcn. Ohgxv fxx ke]c kctcnc cl n ejl xavx  
;x, hno`k i bcxkvck ;e]ck dugvh vdhk`f ukghn`k fudwkghn`k`  
mwswk. Fw xa fxx 'e[c-'i kvi b vhmhl ejvx, shfhp` 'i k vc  
ukghn` hojhnv`ghn mc kcpndcj Kcpnedkc ]hjv`ghn. Cgdcsxk pcn  
jcnctxkc vuynw pcl xk l xrvhn xncgxgcvcn mc ukghn` jwjwf  
fudwkghn`k` mwnvwghn. Rc/rh mc ukwk pcl tx; xngcnx Ohgxvc  
vevxgc... âC'cn sck den i bi kvc ughk fi j i k xkshkghn` vh  
zgvi nsck, ukghn`k rhkghn` sw ;xl x [cncdhk ejl cb. } i k ;x  
rhkghn`k den i bcxkvck [cncdhk ejl csx rhvhyhk ugwkvwrvh,  
den vc ukw wvl hrvhk rhvhyhk ugwkvw, fwkh 'znc vc rhk  
jun`hy`k i sji kvc dhgk`b fxx rcvcn xncgxgcdc fxgn. Fegc xsc, fw  
swdw ukghn`k i bcxkvck ho`j ;x, zb hkv`kh mcth ejl xa ughshk!ß  
Cmmcg[cvck swdwk rhfhy`k` fhyghl `a ughk Ohgxv ukw h]v`,  
rhk ]hd` hol hyh fhaghv`. Fwkh 'znc vc ukw fw 'i k ;i 'i k  
rcvcn âRhk ]hd`ß hvghkv`nl `aghn. Fharhghn` vh, u [i l gcvck  
Fcxn xfkx Ocshsddc vel xagcn... âFegc ofcn ]hjl `av`n ;x, den  
Hvcl xk uygwkwk rhk`k` wvwyw bhl hkvkh rhkghn` wvl hr  
ukh rhvhyhk evxgf, rhk`k` vh den i bi kvc hol hs` rhvhyhk

evxgl xavxn. U, den i bcnxkvc, dhgk`b sudwdwf ghøjghghkhkh  
rcvcn [cncdhk evc fxgn.ß

Pcl ]xkxk vedxn... âUkwk dugw i bcnxkvc dhoa` fxn  
vcdxnl hk dengcaxnvx ;x, vcdxnl hk vha`k` i ] `i k l i vvcjxkvc  
r`nl `b` sw xgc t`nghjv`ghn. Fw vcdxnl hk uk sc;;xb l xk, dhowv  
ukvhk hnj`r shdg` ruawk i ]i k wk i di vi nvi ...ß

Fw vhsjhk`k hnv`k[h Cl yxaxdh acpcnxkxk vhsjhk`k` redv  
evxf vedxn...âOhgxv Cgdcsc l i phnxfcsxkvc rwnjhv`rvhk suknh  
Cl yxaxdhdh vuynw `ejvx mc unh rctxgvck pi [wl evcnc;  
cphgxskx ;z]i njvi ;x, ]zggcnc vhy`g`a`f \cnh;ckvc mcbxddcjvc  
ugswkghn. Suknh vh `zsjcnxa menvx ;x, u acpcnx mc ukwk  
cjhnt`kvh dengcack pcn fxn hfhvgy` vhy`js`kghn! U, Pxdnc ;xl x  
fxn acpcn xvz mc Cgdcsc ukwk rcn`hn`hp` shd`g`nv`. Fw  
l i phnxfcv vi al ckgn pe] mhoj jcscmmi n evc fxgl cvx;gnx  
hy`n ocshncjc vi ]hn ugvwghn.ß

Sedt fw phvxscgcnxk phl `s`k`k cjhntg` xbhp mc acnpkxk vc  
zb bepkkvc vi bcgvvdx nhmxcnxc mhsxjcsxgc kcrq ejl xavxn.  
Xkvx fw x; x vhsjhkvh redv ugwkghkghn` hnhav`n`n`r...

*SEDTXK CGDCSC MC CL YXAXDH FHNC SXKVC KCRG EJVXDX  
NCMHDCJGCNVC L I GHPXBCGN...*

Sedt vedxn... Ohgxv Cgdcsc l i phnxfcsxkvc hkv x]l xavx ;x,  
ukghn`k ]hdghn`k` rhkgh ho`js`k. U, Xnhk unvwswkwk tcnhnxcnxc  
mc Cgdcsc cjhnt`kvh;` ]zg cncfgcnxkx x; x `i kgi ; dug l cshtcskxk  
rcvcn jc/rxf ejvx; vck suknh ukghn` csxn jwjvw, phl `s`k` ]hd`k  
dhk`kh `c]xnvx. Fxn `e[c-`i kvi b ukghn`k fudkwkw mwnl hrgh  
l caywg ugvwghn, rhkghn fxn rcvcn ho`f ghøjghghkv`. Ukwk  
cjhnt`kvh;` scphfcgcnvck ughk Rc/rh (fw vh Sedtxk vi bcgvvdx  
ocdhgx hvhl v`n) Ohgxvc vevx... âC`cn den i bcnxkvc; x fi ji k  
xkshkghn`k fudkwkw mwshk, dekc vc rhkghn` hol hdh[hrv`n.  
Fw swdw ukghn`k i sji kc fwnho ;x, hkv`kh mcth ejl xa ughshk!ß  
Ohgxv fegc ejvx mc rhk ]hd` hol hyh fhaghv` ;x, u ]hd` xkvxdc  
rcvcn âRhk ]hd`ß hvghkv`nl `aghcn.ß Suknh vedxn... âOhgxv Pxdnc  
;xl x fxn acpcn ughk Cl yxaxdhdh jcnc `ejvx mc tcnl hk menvx  
;x, u acpcnx mc ukwk cjhnt`kvh ughk pcn fxn hfhvgy`  
vhy`js`kghn. Unvh rcjgc dejxngck vi al ckgnxc shd` dejl xa  
l xk kctcnc ]hjv`.ß

Licgxt vedxn... Cl yxaxdh acpcnxkxk mc ukwk cjhnt`kvh

ughkghn`k mxnhk evxgl csx (ukghn`k zbi ;xl x) jhnxcvc pe] mhoj fha menl cl xavxn mc fwkghn`k phl`s` Sedtxk wdvwnvwyw ocdhgx aedgcnvxn. Pcgh;w ohk mc }xk'xb ohk ;xl x rcvvhx xkshkghn vh fwkh uoahn xa 'znl cl xagcn. Pcl ]xkxk csxngcnxk zgvi ni gl csx vc edkxgc. Hl l h Sedt Ohgxvc egc xagcnx kxsfcj menxn ;x, l i phnxfcgcn jhnxcvc ukghn`k l xsgx 'zni kl cl xavxn... u, ]hd` ukghn`k rhk` xgc [hnx ejvxnvnv ;x, fwkwkgh vh xkvx;x vzmnc rcvxn u ]hd`âR`nl`b` ]hdß hvghkv`n`gl`av`n.

Fcgx, Sedt fw phvxscgcnx zb bepkkvc rwnhav`nl`av`n. U, fharh l i phnxfcgcnx vc... Sckh, Lxbhn, Lcrn, Tcl x-Tcnhj, Fhvrx mc Lwsxo l i phnxfcgcnx mc fw l i phnxfcgcnvc ;htxngcnxk vcpacjgx ac;xgvc rcjgc dejxnagl csx, ukghn`k [ckhbcgcnxkxk h]`r tcbvhv fxn-fxnkxk i sji kc d'y`gl hs` ;xl x ctshkcgcnx zbi kvck vi bcgj l xa, Bcl xg mc Tcnhb l i phnxfcgcnxkvck szb h]l`a mc fw vzdi agcnvc nul hg`ghnvhk di b l xk kctcnxk zgvi ni gl csxkx vel xavxn. Suknh ukwk ocdhgx ctshkcgcn, l i phnxfcgcn mc s. ;xl x aedgc fhnscxkvc ughk ncmhdcjgcnx Jcfcnxkxk, Xfkx Csxnxk, Xfkx : csnxk, Xfkx Ocgvwkwk mc fharhghn`k`k jhnxo ;xjhfgghn`kh sxnhdcj evcnc; dhd`gl`av`n. Phgfw;x, ukghnvhk pe] fxnxkxk ohnx[x hgcl vc pcrxrcjx duovwn. Fxb fw vhsjhkghn` mc ukghn`k sckcvgcnxkx âCfvi ggghp xfkx Scfhß ;xjhfk`k 2-[x [xgvxkvc âSedtxk ncmhdcjgcnxkvc Xsghl`k r`g`k[gh dhd`gl hs`ß fcpsxkvc hnhav`nl`a`r. Xkvx fegc fxn hgwwc mc xyjahag` jhnxcgc dhkha`, Xsghl vi al ckgcnxkxk âXsghl r`g`k[ 'i [i kc dhd`g`fß – vel cdc l i cddck rcvxn phrghn` mhnv`n. Cmmcg[cvck l crscvx mc xsjxrh l cjx jc/dxk ugwl wa fw rcvxn dhghkghn`k dhd`gl hs` xgc fegc, fxn ;cs Sedtxk Xsghl vh jconxfhj]]`g`r kxddcjgcnxkvc dekc vc ac;; evc fxgcnl x? Sedtxk fw rcvxn shojh pcvxs rwnhav`nl`hs` mc zb l crscvcnxkx l cotx ac;xgvc pcdhjh ;e]xnl csxkx ukwk vxksxbgdxkvck fharh fxn sxtcjc xbh p ejl c; l i l ;i kvnl i? Phgfw;x, fw sxtcix ukh l cpb hgxl gc menl xagcn!

Fwnhvh fegc fxn swhg dhnhk`n ;x, 'zncsck fw rcvxn dhghk mc xtjxnh jhnxo]xgcnxk ncpfcnx ughk Jcfcnx, ukghn`k cgghl csx shd`ghk Xfkx Csx, ukghnvhk ck ]uo l cjgcf dhhbk Xfkx : csxn, ukghn`k txgusutw Xfkx Ocgvwk mc ukghngh fharh hgxl , u [i l gcvcck Xfkx Cfvi g-Fxnn, Xfkx Csh;xn, Bcpcf, Xfkx Pc[cn mc s. ;xl x acosgcnvck 'xbgx rhgl`av`nl`?

Oedn, csgh fegc vedxgvxn! }i k; x fwkghn`k zbgcnx vc Sedtx dhghk]` mc ;cbbhf peshf ejl xa, ukw vxksxbgx; vc l i j j c p c l ejl xagcn. Jcfcnx, Xfkx Csx n mc Xfkx Ocgvwk zb jhnxo ; xjhfgghn`kvh âBhjws-scghsxb phvxscsx fhncsxkvc vedxngcn... âSedtxk fw fhncvc vevx; gcnx sxnc dhhbhkghn`k rcfwg mc scpxp peshf ejvx; gcnxkxk jhl hl xgc c; sxkcvxn.ß

Fegc xsc, 'zncsck ukghn Sedtxk vxksxb mc dhghk]` fxn hvhl ugvwywkw fxgc-fxgc kc i ]i k ukwk ncmhdcjgcnxkc e/jxl hv ejl xa, hl l h fharh (scpxp) ncmhdcjgcnc e/jxl hv ejl cl xagcn? {hmhf fwvwn ; x, Sedt zbi ki k dhghk mc xtjxnhghn`k` âph; xl gcnxk mc scphfc fzdi ; gcnxkxk tcbxgcjxkx dhdl hrß rhgxfxkc jz; i f ukw bxkcjgckvxn xavxn, oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk hgxl gcnx vc dhghk ugvwywkw fxgc-fxgc ukghn`k dhdl`gl hs` i ]i k mhn-'i [gcnx xgc ]hg`al`aghnl Lcscgck, u zbi ki k Xnhr`k tcjp ugwk l hs`kvh;` dhghkghn`k` âOhgxv xfkx Mcgxvxb tcbxgcjxß ai hn` rhgxfxkc shgl`a mc Cfw Fc; nxk vxgxkvck vel xavxn ; x, u, Cgdcs l i phnxfcsxkvck, Cl yxaxdh acpcnxkx vhy`jv`rvhk suknh fegc vel xavxn... âEd Ri nedagxgcnl Sxbxk axnxkxb u axnc pcl gc ejvx, ukwk zbi kc mc l ckhtedxkc rhgxf`cgvx! Rhv`kghn Ohgxv ; xl xsxkx vuyl hrvh h[xbvxnngcn!ß

Xnjxvhv l i phnxfcgcnx vhsjhkghn`kvh vh zbi ki k bepka ocdhggghn`k` âCfw Fc; nxk tcbxgcjgcnxß hv`xgc bxkcjgckvxn xavxn. Pcl ]xkxk Zl cnxk oxghtcix vzmni kvc Ahl`k mc Xnhk`k tcjp ugwk l hs`, Usl hk`k oxghtcix vzmni kvc fha menck txjkgcn mc Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k csnxkvc; x {cl cg l i phnxfcsx xgc cghrcvhn rukvhnv`y` shojh ncmhdcjgcnc vc edkxgc. U fw phvxscgcnxk phl`s`kvh ph; xl vhxncgcnxk tcbxgcjxkx dhdl hr mc ukghnh xsjxrhl cjgckck jckrxvgcn rhna`s`kvh ukghn` l i vhtxc ejl c; gc zb dhghkghn`kh phrr vukw`edxkvxn xa, zbi ki k fw pxdgc`cngx; sxdhscjx xgc shojh ncmhdcjgcnc dhdl`av`. Ukwk dhghkghn``ekxa ac; xgvc dhdl`ghnhr scpxp ncmhdcjgcnxk wkwwvwl hs`kh scfcf ugl wavwn. Phgfw; x, Sedtxk vi bcgvvdx shojh pcvxsgcnxk c; scnxddcix |edycl fcn scphfcgcnc i ]i k tcbxgcj vedxg, pcrxrcjvc ukghn i ]i k l cbcl l cj shd`g`n.

Lck fw l zmbwkwk ukghnvhk`xbgx rhgl hs`k`k l i l ; i kgi di ki jcscmmi n evc fxgl xncl æ ]i k; x c`cn Ohgxv fcacn zmghvghn`kvhk uk l xk kctcnxk fxn denc ju`ghd`f ukghn`k fudkwkw mwshdv` mc fwkwkgh vh ]hd`rhkvhk ho`jl hr

xsjcsd vx, fw xa ukwk i ]i k fxn tcbxgcj shd`gl hbv`! Pcl ]xkxk Cl yxaxdh, C;; mc s. ;xl x acpcngcnxk vhy`v`gl hs` vh tcbxgcj vedxg. Fwkghn dhgk`b vxksxbgcxk crxvcsxkvc tcbxgcj shd`gh fxgn. }i k;x ukghn pcdhj` kwn bxkvhk` peshf evxn mc xkhk`nv`ghn ;x, âpcdhjh suk rudl hr i ]i k ]hg`al hg`d`r ;x, fw kwnw zb bxkvhk`kvhk hbhv evc; .<sup>1</sup>

Hl l h jccssi tgc n ugswk ;x, Sedtxk fzd i ;gcxk tcbxgcj x xgc bxkcjgckvxnxgck fw vcdcnxb l hjhp` ncmh[ jh`v`. Ph;xl vhxncgcxk tcbxgcjxkxk dhd`gl hs` mc zbgcnxkxk l i vhtxc ugwk l hs` dugwkvh `zsjcnvx;gcx pcxsgx;gcx kcjx[csxkvc xa u denc ]hjv` ;x, ukghn`k fhncsxkvc pcrxrcjvc tcbxgcj shd`gh fxgl cdck bhpnn tcbxgcjgcx dhd l hyh faghv`ghn!

Fwkghn`k phl `s`kvhk vh hnj`r xkshk mx[vhk`k` khnhphj evck aed fwvwn ;x, Sedt jc;[c bhpnnvc ph;xl vhxncgc i ]i k tcbxgcj, fhjxkvc xsc Xsghl vh jconxfhj]`g`r scfcfx shd`ghk ncmhdcjgcnc ;xthdcjgck l cl xa, c;sxkc |edycl fcx-C;ncl i ]i k vc egc scphfcgc vi bcgj l xavxn ;x, Hgghp ukghn` pcgc vc dhnjl hd`f! Pcl xk scphfcgc i ]i k xsjcvxdx mc fh[hnv`y` pcn fxn aedx – ;cnhl cj, tcjp, zg;c `ekxagckvxn l c;, ae/n mc tcbxgcj i kmhk` xgc – vi bcgj l xa mc dhd l `av`n. }i k;x u fwkghn`k ph;xl ped/cjvc l zm[wv ughk tcbxgcjgcnc pcn kc i kmhkvh ugwsh ugswk, xsjxkhv evc[c;gcxkx fxgnvx. U vh Xsghl ` l cpm ej l c; mc jconxfhj]`g`r h`hnl hr i ]i k thdvhg` ugvywkw vc; ejvxdx pcn fxn aedx – ukghnv l zm[wv ughk fw [i n ohsddcjcnc e/jxl hv ej l c;gc – dhb`f dhd l `a mc l i scgl hkghn` l csocnc ej l xavxn. Fwkghn vh Sedtx ukwk zb `i l hk`kvh i l xvsxb ej l cl xa, ukwk dhghkghn`k` uk i ] csn l i vvcjxkvc ]uo `zbcg ac; xgv dhd l `aghn!!

Fwnh rcvcn Sedtxk Xsghl h edf `cjxn l c; mc jc/kc mwnl hr i ]i k rwnhav`nv`y` pcvxsgcnx, egc[c vc fzd i ;scphfc mc jhfexkgcnc, fharh szbgc, ph;xl vhxncgcnc âtcxgcjß xgc bxkcjgckvxnvxdx ncmhdcjgcnc redv ejvx;. Suknh;` fcpsvc xsc ukwk vx`cn ki l wkcgcnxkx redv evc[cdx;. Fegc ;x, fw ncmhdcjgcnc oi gcth l c;jcfxkxk wbwk xggcn fudw rhna`ghav`y` ]cjxkgxdx pcgg ej l cdx zb zpvcsxkc hg`n.

<sup>1</sup> âDi b cggx shojh scphfcß, 1-[x ]xgv, l i rcvvl hjx fcpsgcncvck âBxkvxrß mc âBckhvxcß fcpsgcnc.

XLHL CGX™ --K MCSX GCRCFX XGC L CAPWNGHAL HS- MC  
OI GCTH LC: JCFXKXK WBWK CSNGCN FUDW RHNA-GHAV-Y-  
}CJXKGX:

: e]ck fcpsgcncv l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxackxk vzmni kvck  
fhaghl `a, XfKx : csnxk vzmni kc rcvcn devvx di b xggx; vzmncv  
x; x l c; jcfKx mcsx pcvxsx xgc cghrcvhn ughk ; cghl h vhn  
l i fhpxscgcncx hnhav`nv`r. Pcl xk l i fhpxscgcncx scfcfx fw  
vxv ; x, mcsxddcj fhncsxkvc ha; hn ac; xgvc fwdwnwghk pcvxs,  
|edycl fcnc-C; ncl xk fharh pcvxsgcncv fwdwnvwrghn`k` vh  
hdv`kghav`n`nv`. Fw pcvxsgcn Xl hl Cgx™ -vhk Xl hl Lcpvx  
™ -h rcvcn Hgwg-fedjxk pz; wl cj phrr`k` fcdhk evxn.  
Ukghnvhk fxn vc Rcvxn-owl pcvxsx, âCgx |edycl fcncvck sukn  
u pcbncjxk mcgxddc-cl nx mc mhnxsxvnß pcvxsx mc fharhghn`v`n.  
Phgfw; x, oi gcth l c; jcfx fw ha; hn pcvxsgcn ph; xl xddcj phrr`  
l c/khs`kh vedxg, shvc[c ughnhr âHgwg-fedjxk tcbxgcjxß  
l c/khs`kh dubwnghn.

Fw l c/khk` ha; hn evck ki l wkcgcnvck fxn vc uvwn ; x,  
; xjhf cpgxkxk hgx l gcnc pcn mhoj Ohjcl wg-ckfxdhk`k mcsxsx  
fhncsxkvc szpfcj h]`nv`ghnsh, ukvhk mcgx-cpvvck fharh fxn  
l c/khk` kcbcnv jwjl wnvwghn. Vx'cnx vc fwvwn ; x, Xl hl Cgx  
™ -k ; zl c; ]xgcnc zb ae/ngcncxkvc mc szbgcncxkvc pcn mhoj  
mcsxddcj szbi ki ohj`nghv`nv`ghnsh, ukw Cgx™ -k pz; wl cjc  
phl `vhk xncgx ugl hs`kh vhn fxn vcgxg i kmhk` xgc 'cjxnxvxgcnc.  
U [i l gcncvck, Cfwbcn Usl hk`k oxghtcjx vzmni kvck, L hgx; Cajcn  
Xl hl™ -gh fed/cj 'i ki kvck, Lcpcl l cv xfkx Cfx Fc; n  
L i hmxdcdc dnbv`y` l c; jwfvh, l i ph[xn mc ckshn zb  
ae/ngcncxkvc, {cl cg mc Sxttedk l i phnxfgcncxkvc, Xl hl Pcsck  
™ [hl hhjvhk fed/cj hgv`y` 'i kvck mc Xl hl Pi sedk™  
: cnfcghvh oxghtcj unvswvkh oxjhf ejvx dx bhl hk mcsxddcj  
xsjxkhv evxnvxgcnc. } i k; x mcsxddcj ukghn`k fhncsxkvc mhnv ughk  
vx'cn pcvxsgcnc vc xahnc evxn mc phl `s`kh ahl xg ugwnvw. Shk; x  
ukghn mcsxddcj xsjxkhv ejl c; gc, pcrxrcjvc u pcvxsgcncxk  
phl `s`kh xsjxkhv evxnvxgcnc.

Pcl ]xkxk, Cfw Jhgx f zmghvghn`kvhk ughk cgcmxgcncxk  
pz; wl cj i ]i k rxdhl ejl cgcnc vc Xl hl Pi sedk™ -k acpxv  
ugl hs` xgc sukh ]hjl hv`æ ukghn`k ocgxtgcncxk cgedpxkc  
rxdhl ghn` hffhsxgcncxk csxkc rcvcn vhmhl ejvx. U vzmngcncv; x  
sxdhsx ]c; xal cgcncv oi gcth l c; jcfxkx pcn aedvck hnj`r jcbdxrc

I c/nwb rudhk aed – XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k |edycl fcn ; -xk  
 mcsxsx gcrclfx xgc I capwnghal hs` xv. Ph;xl xddcjc ]hjl hr  
 xsjcdck cgcmxgcn ukh xsjxkhv evxn mc xkhk`nv`ghn ;x,  
 |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk fw mcsxddcjc XI hl Cgxkxk mc ukwk  
 zmghvghn`k`k pz; wl cjc ughk phrghn`kh vhn ha; hn fxn vcgxgvxn.

Lcpb fwkh `znc vc, Lc/l wk Hffhsx vc cgcmxgcnxk  
 rxdhl `k` dhj`njl hr rcnkn`kh `cgckvc, nxdh[h; hns`kh mcsxddcjc  
 xsjxkhv ejvx mc XI hl Nxbh <sup>TM</sup> -` zbi kvck suknh mcgx-cpv  
 se]vx. U fw xagc cgcmxgcnx kxsfcjck hnhl ghav`nv`, ukghn`k fzdi ;  
 acosxddcjcgnxkx \hdjhojh ]c; vx; vck suknh c; scnxddcjcjkx bcpcn  
 menxf acpxv ejvx mc fegcgx; gc vc, ukghnh rcgcfc ]hgh fxgvx.

Vel cgx, Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k |edycl fcn ; -xk mcsxsx hv` xgc  
 I capwn ugl hs` oi gcth I c; jcfxkxk vzmnhk`kvh ck fzdi ;  
 ]cjxkgx; xv ;x, hahy`vh redv ugwk[hhy` ;xl x, Sedt vc fw  
 ]cjxkgxdx pcgg ejl cdc ]hg`a`nv`...

*SEDT OI GCTH LC: JCFXKXK }CJXKGXDJKX PCGG EJLC: I}IK  
 }-O-A DUGW HOJHN-N...*

Dwohn`vh;` fcpsgcnvc oi gcth I c; jcfxkxk hgxl gcnxkxk  
 mcsxddcjc I zmbwswkw `xbgcjl c; vc `znvi ; gcnx jcvfxngcngc jhk`a  
 ugvwræ ncmhdcjgcnxk ke[c xojxshnh shg`kl hs`, ukghn`k  
 I ckfcgcnvck ]`ohn`gl hs` mc jcpnxt evxgl csx, nhmxgcnvck ukh  
 xsjxkhv evckgcnxk I cbcl I cj ugwkhnhr bcxt shd`gl hs`, egc[c vc  
 ukghn`k ha; hn fcdhk`k` fharh I c/khghnh dubl hr mc s. xgc  
 cghrcvhn xagcnxkx I i ghpxbc ejvx; . HI I h, ukghnvhk pe] fxnx fw  
 dugvh Sedtxk hdhy`k`k jubwkh fegc ]hj h fxgl cb. }i k; x u fw  
 I i cl I hg` mc I inc; ; cf ]cjxkgxdx ; z; i kvck pcgg ejl xavx...  
 zbi kvck ncmhdcjgcn rukvhn hrgh, pcrxrcjgcnx jcpnxt ejl c; gc  
 mc ukghn` I cphncj[csxkc dhdl hrgh (fwkwk vx`cn ki I wkcgcnx  
 hahy`vh redv ugwk[hhrv`n) ukghn` zbgcnxkxk bxvvxkc ]emxnvx...

h) Jcfcnx 35-[x px[nx xgxkxk ocfcngcnxkvc Sedtvck, u vh  
 Cjxddcvck, u vh Debvx Tcr/csxcvck ncmhdcj evxn ; x... Cfvi ggghp  
 xfkx Scfh Sck/h dcpwvxgcnxkvck mc ukwk hkhs` vh rhnhdk`b  
 fxn hnmhv xv. Cfvi ggghp Usl hk`k vzmni kvc Xsghl ` rcfwg  
 ejl xavx mc suknghn Xsghl zg; cgcnxkc sctcn ejl c; gc ]hg`a`nv` ;x,  
 cphgxkx dugvhk hbv`ns`k. U, xaxkx Px[hbvkh fhaghd`f Fcsncdc  
 `ejl xa, : wtcvc mc Ahl vh tchgxddcjc `zsjcnl xavxn. Gh; xk Ahl vh  
 pe] ; csx zb jcgcsxkc shgh fxgl cvx mc [hl hhj ukw rumvw. Suknh



L xsnc vhoxg ugvw mc [hl hhjgh rhd'khd'f-rhn'av', ukghnh vevx...  
 âXshk'k rhd'jl hy'kh xkhk'f, L i pcl l cvxk rhd'jl hs'k' jc; bxf  
 evckgcnxk xax ke[c vc rcnxfcvxn! Phgfw; x Hgghp-jhhgh fwdwnwn...  
 ﴿إِنَّ الَّذِي فَرَضَ عَلَيْكَ الْقُرْآنَ لَرَادُّكَ إِلَيَّ مَعَادٍ قُلْ رَبِّي أَعْلَمُ مَنْ جَاءَ بِالْهُدَىٰ وَمَنْ هُوَ فِي

ضَلَالٍ مُّبِينٍ﴾

âPcrrcjck, u ;cs ;x, Rwn/hk' sckc tcnb (mh[xf) ejl xavxn, sckx zb denxkc  
 (vuywgvwywk denc) rhdjnhh[hrv'n.ß<sup>1</sup> L i pcl l cv fw vi kdhdh  
 rhd'jl hyh Xshvhk vphh hnj'r ghdxrvxn.ß Nhm x vedxn... Fw szbgcn  
 ukvhk kcr g ugwkvw, u, nc[/cjc ughk e/jxrhv'k cshs'k' rudvw mc  
 ukghn fw fhncvc fxn-fxnxcnx xgc l i fhp xscdc fhaghv'ghn. Suknh  
 ukghnh vevx... âL xk \edycl fcn mc pcn fxn xkx vc fxn mcsxsx mhn  
 vx. Cgx vc L i pcl l cvxk mcsxsxvxn.ß Suknh vedxn... âL i pcl l cv  
 \edycl fcngcnxk, Cgx vc mcsxgcnxk sukwk[wswwvn.ß Suknh vevx...  
 â|edycl fcnxk mcsxddcjxkx denxkc dejxn cdck, ukwk  
 mcsxsxkvck rhfhyh ;e]ck mc fw i l l cjxk xaxkx zb xojxdhn'kh  
 hghk acosvck vc bhg'l fxn hvhl mhn! `?ß Suknh ukghnh vevx...  
 âUsl hk oxghtcjx khphr denc cgc ;e]xnjvx mc fw, |edycl fcnxk  
 mcsxsxvxn. Fegc xsc, hdhyh rhgo'k mc ukw pcnc;cjc 'cjxn xk,  
 cmmcg[c zb cl xngcnxkxbx vkhghd'f l cbcl l cj evxk, ha; hn  
 ac; xgvc ukghn` dhoa` xagcnc vc/mcj evxf, \xsgx; gcnvck ]c; xkvxnk  
 mc fwkwkgh vh [hl hhj` zbi ki bc rhna` ncyfcjgx evxk, ukghn` fw  
 dugh ]hy'n'k.ß

Fwkvhk suknh zb hnv`[`gghn'k` ]uohgv`, acpcngcnxk tcshv  
 cpgxkc l c;jwfgghn dhbl hyh fhaghv`. Ukghn vh l i sfcj [hmhf  
 menvx;vc, zb fhjxkxkvc;x crxvcsxkx dhdl hyh fhaghv`, dhoa`  
 xagcnc vc/mcj mc \xsgx; gcnvck ]c; xkvxn l c; xaxkx ha; hnvh pcdhjh  
 ;e]xnjvx... acpcngcnc ]uogw l c;jwf dhbhnhr ukghn'k cl xngcnxkxk  
 kZRshkghn'k` mc edfgcnxkx shvhghv`, ukghn'k vh pcl tx; xngcnx  
 uoahn [hmhfghn menvxgc. Xa unh ]hjv` ;x, ukghn'k phmhvvhghn`  
 pcn fxn acpcnvc edkx rhdvvh cl cg evxnvxgc, pcn fxn zb  
 acpcnxkvc fharhs'k'k l c;jwfwkw uowdwnvw. Kcphdcj xax  
 L cvxkcdc ]hjv`nv'ghn mc zb l crscvgnxkx den i bi ki k pcn  
 denxkc dhdv'ghn. Phgfw;x, 'xbgxkvc jhl fharh fxn xa 'zn l c;  
 xsjcdxn, rcgfgcnxkvc ughkghn` ha; hn ejl xnvxgc, pcn fxn acpcnxk  
 cphgx x vedxnvx... âFxb fharh acpcngcnxk (zb mhgxgcnx jcnctxkvck)

<sup>1</sup> âRcscsß swncsx, hdc.85

vi ]hn ugvrghn` aedvck hl hkvhd`r.ß Dhgk`b L cvxkc cphgxsk  
 fwkvhk xsjxskh vxæ fw ocfcñ fi ji k acpcngcnvck unhdh ]hj`n  
 mc vedxnvxgcñ... âFxb shxñ acpcngcnxk vi ]hn ugvrghn` aedgcnvck  
 hl hkvhd`r.ß L cpcl l cv mc Jcgpc vc l cpb fwnhvhk ukh  
 ruawgvwghñ. Vedxfgcñ... Ukghñ Usl hk`k dhk`kh 'cgxf vevxgcñ...  
 âEd l z/l xkgcnxk cl xñ! Fxbc ]hjkh ocfcngcn sxbc vc  
 ]hjl `av`nl `?ß Vevx... âDuo, Hgghph hkv ugswk ;x, hñhl g`r mc  
 hshdxavck fharh fxñ ocfcñ duovwn!ß Vevxgcñ... âGh; xk fxbc  
 ]hj`fv`n!ß Sukñh zb fxgvx; gcñkx ukh vh vevxgcñ. U vevx... âSxb  
 l ckxl acñx; gcñxl mc l z/l xkgcnxk ahpxvgcnxsxkxb, zb  
 kcbngcnxkxb l ckc vedxk.ß Vevxgcñ... âFxbxl kcbcnxl xb fwvwn  
 ;x, ejxl hv ejvxdxk hvhl gñ` acpcngcñ 'zkvcñ, unhk`k  
 mcbddcjxkx sckc ocfcñ mensxkgcñ.ß Usl hk L cpcl l cv xfkx  
 L csgcl ckx : wtdc, l shl c xfkx Bedvx Fcsncdc, Cl l hn Dhsñx  
 L xsnc, Cfvi ggph xfkx Zl cnx Ahl h 'zkvcñvx. Fwkghnvkh fharh  
 shxñ acosgcñ vc se]vx, phl `s` Cl l hñvhk rhfhr rhd`v`f  
 vevxgcñ... âEd [hl hhj! Fxb pe] fxñ ouah`cgl cb xa 'zñl cvx; .  
 L i scgl hkghn`k fzdñ ; gcñ mc hmhl acosgcñ vc ouah`cgl cb fxñ  
 xa 'zñl cdxfgcñ.ß Sukñh phl `g`rgh vevxgcñ... âFw, l i scgl hkghn`k  
 xaxvñ! Dhgk`b cl xngcnx ukghn`k hñhs`kvh cvhgjcjc nctjñ evñ mc  
 ukghn`k xagcnxkx rhdvhs`kh shg`n.ß

Cl l hn u rcvcñ dwfhkv` ;x, [hl hhj ukwk  
 zgvi ni gvi di ki 'i l hk ejvxcñ. Gh; xk fxnvck Cfvi ggph xfkx  
 Sc/v xfkx Cfx Scncpxk l c; jwfw xgc rhna`ghav`ghñ ;x, unhvh fegc  
 dhb`gl `av`... âL xsngxcñvck fxñ rnw`w Cl l hn` zbgcnxkc jcñt  
 ]c; l xagcñ. Ukghnvkh Cfvi ggph xfkx Sumvh, Ohgxv xfkx  
 L i g[cl , Sumvhk xfkx Pcl nhk, : ckhkc xfkx Fxñx redv ejl c;  
 ughñ.ß<sup>1</sup>

f) Bcpcfx zbi ki k jñnxo ;xjh`kvh 35-[x px[nx xgxkx  
 ocfcngcnxkx hahy`vh; `ac; xgv fcdhk ejl xavñ...

Cmmcg[c vedxñ... Sedt xfkx Zl cn Cjxddcvck, u vh Debvx  
 Tcr/csxvck ncmhdcj evñ ;x, u fegc vedxñl xa... âXfkx Sumvh L xsnc  
 'ejvxdx bhl hk fxñ vctc : ckhkc xfkx Fxñxk, fxñ vctc vc Sumvh  
 xfkx Pcl nhk`k dhk`kh 'cgvx, vph sukñh Yhtxrxkxk dhk`kh  
 'ejvx. Yhtxrx fxñ rcvcñ vkh`a`f ukw ai [hcjgckvxñvx mc sukñh  
 ukw Ohgxv xfkx L i g[cl mc Cfvi ggph xfkx Ncbxkxk dhk`kh  
 'zkvcñvx. Fw fhncvc ukghñgh vh l i bh; xñc ejvx, gh; xk mcsxddcj

<sup>1</sup> âJhñxox Jcfcñxß, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.2941-1944

xaxkvc ukghn`k zbi xgc pcl tx; xn ugvrgrhn`k` 'znl cvx.B

X; xk[ xsx... Fxn xk[ x ncmhdcjvck suknh Cl I hn`k L xsxnv; x  
phvxscsxkx ncmhdcj ejl cdc fhaghd`n mc vedxn... âSedt  
L i fcaaxnvck mc Scpg xfkx Dwsxtvck, ukghn vh L cpcl I cv xfkx  
Sc/v xfkx Cfx Mccrhsvhk ncmhdcj evxngcn ; x, u fegc vedxnl xa...  
Cl I hn 'cgvx, hjhl ukwk fhncsxkvc; x ocfngcnx xbgcvvdx phgvh,  
I ckx ukwk dhk`kh 'zkvcnvx mc vevx ; x, ukw ]hy`n`l . U,  
fha`kh ]xn; gx fxn cl I hl c rudl wa mc vcnxvck ughk fxn \hgjhn  
'edl xa phgvh I ckxl gc 'cgvx. Vhoxg ugvrwrh, Sc/v ukh vevx...  
âMhd ugswk sckc, ed Cf h Dcrbkh! Sck fxbxl hnhl `bv h dhoe`  
hvh l ghnvhk peshf evxgxnvxk. Xkvx kc ugwf ; x, I i scgl hkghn`k  
hnhs`kv h tcshv jzncvxn, ukghn` Cl xncg-l z/l xkxk Usl hk`k  
cgedpxkc rxdhl h jcpnx; evxnsck? Hyg`k xagcdxn, dh duo?!ß Fw  
bhl hk Cl I hn rcbcfgckxf cl I hl csxkx cgxkc hgv` mc vevx...  
âFw cl I hl ckx fha`l vkh 'zjinvi di l ; xl x, Usl hk` vh  
xavck 'zjinvi l !ß Sc/v vevx... âXkxh gxgghpx mc xkxh xgcdpx  
nh[xwk! Mhd ugswk sckc! Dha`k`k ; e]vxdx, si l i ; gcnxkxk  
bcxtgc vdx mc zl ni ki k sukh ]hjv`y` xkvx; x bhl hkvh Xsghl  
; cl ckvxkx zb fudkwkvkh 'zjinvi k mc cgxfua phgvh vxkvck  
]`ov`k?!ß Cl I hn rcbcfgc denxkvck rhgov`, 'evc-'evc vevx...  
âSc/vxk txjksxkvck Hgghph \ckhp h\hn`nhl !ß Sc/v vevx... âH`hp  
ugwk ; x, sxb zbi ki b txjkc dc vi al i asi ki b! |cnmcnvx`hnh! Ctm  
evck mc scfxngx ugl hs`kh 'znc Usl hk`k vcnc[csxkx hn`n!ß  
Kcphdcj, Cl I hn rh\`vkh ]zgc ]`ov` mc Sc/v hyghdh-hyghdh  
I ck c i b ]emxnf vevx... â: xl txjkc vck hl hkvhv`n?! Uygwl !  
Ukvkh eajvx; gcnxkx fxn ; csc vel c, fw sckxk dhk`kvh fxn  
cl hkcjvx. Lck xsjcl xnc l ; x, [hl hhj`k ukwk cgedpxkc fxn  
fcphkcsx ugswk. } i k ; x | edycl fcx-C; ncl fwdwnl wavwn...  
âRu[hg`r Cl I hnh rcgcfc ]hg v`y` mhojh rcvch phrr pcl xac  
ukwkghv`n.ß Xkvx u ru[hg`f cgvck vial i avin!ß Usl hk`k  
cgedpxkc rxdhl evckgc nvck fxn vc Cfw Fc; n Sxvvr xk uygw  
L cpcl I cv vx. Shgl xfkx Cfvi gghpvkh ukwk (kc i ] i k  
rxdhl ejl csx) fhncsxkvc sunwavwrh, vevx... âRcbcf mc jhl hp!  
Ukwk Xsghl vh di ; sc; I zmredx mhn vx. L i cddck xtjohngnh  
I hgx; ughk, zbi i ] i k oiswsx fxn phrr fxgck fxn acos vx.  
Usl hk ukw ]xdkxkvck 'zjinvi di bhl hk fxn rnw\ ukw

hgvhjv`β<sup>1</sup>

m) Jcfcnx 30-[w xgxk phvxscgcnxkx kcrq evcn;ck Cfwbcnx fegc mcst evxn...âSedt xfkx Zl cn Cjxddcvck, u vh Debxv xfkx Tcr/csxvck ncmhdcj evcnc; vedxn...Xfkx Sumvh Ahl h vhoxg ughk bhl hk Cfwbcngc 'zni avi mc vevx...âEd Cfhbcn! L i hmxdc fhncsxkvc jcc[[i fgckl xnsckl x?! U vedxn ;x, fw l hg-vzmgcjxk phl `s` Hgghp`k l hg`v`n! Fcgx, pcn fxn aed Hgghp`k l hg`v`n, gh;xk u, bhpnxvc fwkw vel c; xsjcdxnvx ;x, pcn fxn aedx zbi kc l cosws ejl xa mc l i scgl hkghn`k hv`k` ukvkh (fedji g-l hgvhk) 'zji nl i avi n.β Cfwbcn L i hmxdcckxk dhk`kh 'cgxf vevx...âSckx kc mhvh n ejl xavxn ;x, l i scgl hkghn`k fedji g-l hg`k` Hgghp l hg` hvghkv`nhshk?β L i hmxdc vevx...âHgghp sckc ncpl cj egcsxk, ed Cfhbcn! L c'cn fxb Hgghp`k fckvcgcnx vedxgx;l x?! Fw l hg Hgghp`k l hg`, fw l cogwr Hgghp`k l cogwrw, fw cl n (pz;wl cj) vc Hgghp`k cl nx vedxgvxn l x?β Cfwbcn vevx...âFwkw vel clβ L i hmxdc vevx...âL ck vel xncl ;x, u, Hgghp`k vedxgvxnæ gh;xk jebgx;gc vedc[cdcl ;x, u, l i scgl hkghn`k l hg`v`n.β

Xfkx Sumvh fwkvkh suknh Cfw Vcnvhk`k dhk`kh 'ejvx mc ukh fegc vevx...âSck ;xl sck?! Hgghp hk v ugswk ;x, sckx dcpwvx fxn acos 'zni ncl !β Suknh l fhvcj xfkx Shl xjxk dhk`kh 'ejvx, l fhvc ukw jwjwf L i hmxdcckxk dhk`kh 'cjxnvx mc vevx...âHgghp hk v ugswk ;x, Cfwbcnx sckxk cgedpxkc jcpnx; evck fvwvn!β Cfwbcn Ahl vh hdhyh rhgo`f vedxnvx...âEd mhng`ghn, tcrxngcngc fcnhfcn ugwk, ukghngh pcl vcnvgx; evxk!

﴿وَالَّذِينَ يَكْنِزُونَ الذَّهَبَ وَالْفِضَّةَ وَلَا يَفْقَهُونَهَا فِي سَبِيلِ اللَّهِ﴾

âR`b`g mc 'i l i agcnx d`yhnhr ukw Hgghp dugwkvh xkthr ejl cdckgcnc, tcrxntircnhdh ocn[gc l cdckgcnc l i qvc men ;x, ukghn`k i bgcnxkc, dhkghn`kh mc hnohghn`kh uvgw hjca (l zpini) mwnwgh[hrv`n.β U, fw hdckx pcl xac jc;nghghd`nv`, kcp hdcj tcrxngcn ukwk szbgcnx xgc jcpnx; ugwkvwghn, xkthr ejl cdx mhng`ghnh mh[xf fxgvxgc n. Xa u denc ]hjv` ;x, mhng`ghn [hl hj`k l hke]xgx; jzncjl csxkvck L i hmxdc dc ax; hdcj ejvxgc n, L i hmxdc vc Usl hkh fegc dhbv`...âCfwbcn l ckx jck`c 'cjxnl xa, txghk-txghk xagcnx 'znl i avi n.β Usl hk xsc ukh dhbv`...âTxjkckxk [i [cnl xa ;ugghn`xk; xaht evxf rcnhnghal hr i bncvxn. Sck fw dhnhdh cg mwnl h mc pcgcgx; Cfwbcngc l i vnh ej. Suknh ukh dug hbwrscx menxf fxn fcgcv]x

<sup>1</sup> âJhnnox Xsghl β (Bcpcf x), 2-[x [xgv, scp.122-128.

xgc l ckxl dhk`l h 'zkvcn, [hl hj` mc zbi ki fh[hnv`y`k  
rcvcn shogh. } i k; x dhgk`b shoghv`y`k aedgcncvck  
thdvghghkh[hrshk!ß L i hmxdc vc Cfwbcnc fxn fcgcx]x ruawf  
L cvxkcdc 'zkvcnvx. U, L cvxkcdc ]hjv`rvh, fha` 'zdgnc  
w[hghk rcsngcnx 'zni f vevx... âL cvxkc cpgxkc vhl x rhncj mc  
l i phnxfcgcn l i qvc ugswk!ß Usl hk`k dhk`kh 'cgvx; vc, Usl hk  
ukh vevx... âCfwbcn! Kc ugl wavwn ; x, Ahl cpgx sckxk xjx r`g`k[  
; xl x ughk vxgxkvck ax; hdcj evxngcn?!ß Cfwbcn ukh vevx... â(Fwkh  
'znc e/jxnhb evxnc l ; x,) Fedji g-l hgh âl hgwgghpß (Hggghp`k l hg`)  
vedxgl csxk mc mhngghn l hg-vzmgcjx d`y`f ju`ghl hs`kghn.ß  
Usl hk vevx... âCfwbcn! L ckxl mcbxtcl fwvwn ; x, zpvcl c  
hgvrghn`l` zvccl , ncxddcjxk zpvcsxkvc ughkghn` ukghnvhk  
hghl mc ukghn` bhpvgxgc mhvhn ejl cdcl . Egc[c vc ukghn` unjh  
mcbxddcjvc dhah hyh mc xa`i bhn tchgxddcjgcnc vc/mcj evcl .ß  
Cfwbcn vevx... âFegc xsc, l ckc x[hbc men, 'evxl . } i k; x L cvxkc  
hij`r l ckxl emxl vedxgvxn!ß Usl hk vevx... âUkvhk \xsxkvck  
fharh fxn aedc nhb`g`r menl cbsck?ß Vevx... âNcswgx-C; ncl l ckc  
tcnl hk menl xavxn ; x, pcn mhoj L cvxkcckxk fxkhghn`k`k  
pi kvi ngi di vhy`k cjcdxkc ]hjsh, unhvhk ohnx[ ughl !ß Usl hk  
vevx... â|edycl fcnc sckc fwdwnvwykw denxkc dejxn!ß Nhm  
vedxn... Cfwbcn unhvhk ]o`f Ncfcbcdc 'ejvx mc unhvh vi acn`c  
shgv`. Suknh unhvh fxn l cs[xv jx; vx, Usl hk vh fxn vcnc  
xgo`s`k` x; x kctcn rwghl gh fxngx; vc ukh fhy`aghv` mc ocfc  
'zkvcnvx ; x, L cvxkcdc 'ej-'cg ejxk, ; x, c/nhfx ugl hs`k. U vh  
fw jzmsxdcgcnc cl cg ejvx.<sup>1</sup>

#### FW NCMHDCJGCNXX HNHAV-N-GL HS-

Sedt fw ctshkcmx ncmhdcjgcnc mc ukghn`k uoahngn`k` Fckx-  
l l cddcvck ughk Usl hk, L i hmxdc, L cnmhk ; xl x ocgxtcgcnx,  
egc[c vc ukghn`k fzdi ; gcnxkvck ughk Mcgxv, Cfvi ggghp xfkx Sc/v  
xfkx Cfx Scncp mc fharh mhgxgcnc l i vhtxc ejl c; i ] i k  
vi bcgvxf dhdl `av`n. Ukwk fw txjkgcn fhncsxkvc rwnhav`nv`y`  
shojh ncmhdcjgcnc mc ctshkcgcn 'ekxa ac; xgvc dhd`gl `a, xsghl x  
jcprxrhj l ckfcgcncxkvc – o`nl hkh vi ai f si n/cjgc dhd`ghk uv  
; xl x – dhd`gl `av`n. Fxb âCfvi ggghp xfkx Scfhß ; xjh`k`k 1-[x  
[xgvxkvc fw pcvxsxk shojh ugl hs`k` fcdhk ejl xa, âHdxackxk  
Xsghl vh;` nugwß ; xjh`kvh fw txjkc fhncsxkvc vi b`i k

<sup>1</sup> âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.2858-2859.

ncmhdcjgcnx redvc hgl `a`r. Xkvv xsc Sedtxk dwohn`vh redv  
ugwkhk ncmhdcjgcnxkvc pcrxrcjxk jcpnxt ugwkl hs`k`k  
ki l wkcgcnxkc xahnc evxnx; ...

DWOHN-VH: ~ NCMHDCJGCNVC SEDTXK JCPNXTGCNX MC  
RUKVHNL HGHN-

1-: e]ck ncmhdcjgcnvpc pcvxs vi bcgvxgl csxkxk ki l wkcsx...

h) Sedt fw ncmhdcjgcnvpc Cjxddc, L i fcaacn, Sedt xfkx Dwsxt,  
Debxv Tcr/csx ;xl x nhmxgcnx Hgghp`k dnhhl hv`y` fxn phgvh  
zbi kvck xojxnh ejl xa, fw shojh pcvxsjcnx vc ukghn`k vxgxkvck  
ncmhdcj ejl xavxn. Ukwk fcdhk` hahy`vh;` ;xl xvxn...

Hi l h Cjxddcdc `cgvx; vc xsc, Sedt ukw Cjxddc xfkx Fxghg  
xfkx Cfx Fxghg – Pxghg Bcfx ;xl x jcscmmi n ejl xa, ukwk i ]i k  
Sc/v hvg` fxn uyghk dnhhl `a mc zbi ki k shojh ncmhdcjgcnxkxk  
fc/bxgcnxkx ukh xsjxkhv menl xavxn. Fegc ;x, fc/bck uywg hjhvhk,  
u vh hvghn` redv evxgckgcnvck ncmhdcj evxn, fc/bck ukwk zbi  
fxnfah fharhghn`kvhk kcrj evxn. Fxb fwkghn`k phl `s`k` âShojh  
nhmxgcnb ;xjh`kvh hnhav`nl `a mc Sedtxk ukghnh kxsfcj menvxdx  
ncmhdcjgcnx shvhghl `a`r. âDi b cggx shojh scphfcß ;xjh`kvh vh  
Rc/rh hvg` shojh nhmxkx jcrvxl evcn; ck Sedtxk ukghnh kxsfcj  
menvxdx ncmhdcjgcnxk fc/bxgcnxkx, egc[c vc âCfvi ggghp xfkx Scfhß  
;xjh`kvh Cgh Pcbncl xkxk ncmhdcjxkx fxn-fxnxgc l i rhdxsc  
ejl xax; .

Scpg xfkx Dwsxtc `cgvx; vc xsc, Sedt ukw Scpg xfkx Dwsxt  
xfkx Scpg xfkx L hgx; Ckshnx ;xl x ocdhg ejl xavxn. Fxb âShojh  
nhmxgcnb ;xjh`kvh ukw jcrvxl evcn; ck Sedtxk ukvhk kcrj  
ejvxdx ncmhdcjgcnx fxn denc ju`ghl `a`r. âDi b cggx shojh scphfcß  
;xjh`kvh vh Rc/rhk`k pcdhj`k` rcgcl c hghn; ck Sedtxk ukvhk  
kcrj ejvxdx ncmhdcjgcnx hnhav`nl `a`r.

Hi l h Sedtxk kcbcnxkvc L i fcaacn xfkx Ti bedg peshf  
ugwkhk L i fcaacnc `cgvx; vc xsc, fxb ukw mc Sedtxk ukvhk kcrj  
ejvxdx ncmhdcjgcnx âCfvi ghp xfkx Scfhß ;xjh`k`k âScrxtc  
phvxscsxß fzgl csxkvc hnhav`nl `a`r.

Debxv xfkx Tcr/cxsc `cgvx; vc xsc, fxb ukw pcvxs, sxnc,  
jhnxo, cvcfxddhj, ckshf, jcfcrhj mc nx[hg acosddcjgcnxkx jcrvxl  
evck ;xjhfgnhvh kc rcvcn hojhnhv`rsh, ukghnhv fw hvvh fxn  
hvhl vkh cscn-cghl cj `znl cvx; ... ukwk hv` dhgk`b Sedtxk fea

ncmhdcjxkvc 'cgl xavxn. Fwkghn vh âJhnnox Jcfcnxßvc redv ugwkl wa, fxn ncmhdcj vc Bcpcfxxk âJhnnox Xsghl ß ;xjhfkvh 'cgl xavxn. Shk;x, Hgghp ukw dhgk`b Sedtxk ncmhdcj kcrq ejl csx i]i k ocgr ejl xavxn! Fwkh 'znc vc ukw Sedtxk zbi kvck vi bcgjavdx nhmxgcncvck peshf ejvx;.

f) Sedt dwohn`vh redv ugwkxk ncmhdcjgcncv Yhtxrx mc fharhghn`k` vh zb ocdhg`kvh dnhhl `av`n ;x, fxb fcpsxk wbhkl hl hs` i]i k ukghn`k hvghn`k` shvhghl hr, ukghn`k shojh ugl hs`kh vhn vcgxg 'cjxnl c; tx;nxkvck ;e]xnx;.

Sedt ;e]ck ncmhdcjgcncxk l cjxkvc hahy`vh;` shojh vhsjhkghn` vh 'cjxnl xavxn...

1-Fw txjkcgcncv Cfvi ggghp xfkx Scfhk`k vhsjhk`æ fegc ;x, fwkwk shojh ugl hs`k` fxgl c; i]i k ukw, âHdxackxk Xsghl vh;` nugwß ;xjhfkvh – âUsl hk mc Cgxkxk vzmngcncxkvcb, egc[c vc âLi hmxdcxk vzmni kvcb hvgh` psscgcnv redv ejvxdxl xb scpxp ncmhdcjgcnc l i rhdxsc ejl cdxl xb ;xthdcjvx.

2-Fw shojh vhsjhkghnvhk fxnx vc Cl l hnggh Cfwbcn ;xl x x;x fzdi ; scphfckxk (Sedtxk ocdhg`kvh) Dcl ck dcpwvxcncxkvck ughk Cfvi ggghp xfkx Scfhdh jhfe ugl hs`v`n. Suknh vx`cn scphfc mc jhfexkgcncxk vc ukh jhfe ugl hs`k` cghmc ejl xa mc ukghn`k phl `s`k` âScfhxddcb hvghkv`nl `av`n.

3-Usl hk`k 'zkvcnvdx ki l hdckvcgcncxk, cdhgjgcncvck ]hjhk ax;hdcjgcnc fhncsxkvc jcprrhj h`hnl hr l crscvxc acpcngcnc 'ejl csx phvxscsx. Sedt ukw zb ocdhg`kvh dnhvnhnr vedxn... Lcpcl l cv xfkx Lcsgcl c : wtcdc, l shl c xfkx Bedv Fcsncdc, Cl l hn Dhsxn Lxsn, Cfvi ggghp xfkx Zl cn Ahl h 'evxf rhd`jv`ghn mc [hl hhj`k zb mhgxgcncxkvck nhb` ugvwrghn`k` fxgvxnvxcnc. Dhgk`b Cl l hn Dhsxn dwfhkv` ;x, u vh dcpwvx Cfvi ggghp xfkx Scfhdh jhfe ughnhr Lxsnvc rhgv` mc txjkc-tcshv jzncjl cdc fhaghv`!

Sedt ukwk zbi kvck fharh pe] fxn jhnxo]xkxk kcrq ejl cvvdx fw wbwk-wbhv` vhsjhkghn` zb ocdhg`kvh rwnhav`nhnr dhdl `av`n. Fxb fw fhncvc vi b`i k ncmhdcjx Fxghbcnxkxk âCkshfwg-canhtß ;xjhfkvhk kcrqck âHdxackxk nugwß ;xjhfkvh redv ejl xax;.

4-Sedt Cfwbcnxk Li hmxdc xgc h`hnv`y` szpfcjgcncx xsjcvvdx ;xl x rwnhav`nl `a, ukwk csg l hpxddcjxkx vcdxavxn! xa mc jcpnxt ejl xavxn. Fxb ukwk vh vi b`i k ncmhdcjxkx âHdxackxk nugwß

;xjhfkvh redv ejl xax; .

5-Sedt Usl hkgh ukwk cdhgcjgcncv; x xa]xgcnx hnhs`kvh (ocdhgx ac; xgvc) l c; jwfghal hk`k fha menl csxkx dhh`f dhdl `av`n.

## 2-: E}CK NCMHDCJGCNVC JCPNXTXK KI L WKCGCNX

h) Hvghn`k jcpnxt evxgl csx

Sedt pcbncj Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k rhjxgx Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Li g-[cl xk mc Kcpncmhk l i phnxfcsxkvc Ocmhn[xk ncxsgecnxkvck ughk Cfvi ggghp xfkx Mcpcf Scfhxkxk hv`k` vcdxavxncnc; fxnxk-[xkx Ohgxv xfkx Li g[cl , x; xk[xkx xsc Cfvi ggghp xfkx Scfh hvghkv`nl `av`n. Fxb vc âCfvi ggghp xfkx Scfhß ; xjhfk`k x; xk[x [xgvxkvc fw jcpnxtgcnc ha; hn ac; xgvc redv ejl xax; .

f) Ncmhdcjgcncx jcpnxt evxgl csx, u [il gcvcck...

1-l fhvc xfkx Shl xj mc Li hmxdcckxk ocfcncxkxk jcpnxt ugwkli hs`. Fxb fw ocfcncxk ck vi b`i ki ki âHdxackxk nugwß ; xjhfk`k âLi hmxdcckxk vzmnhk`ß fzgl csxkvc redv ejl xax; .

2-Nc[/cjc crxvc ocfcncxkxk jcpnxt ugwkli hs`, egc[c vc ukwk fw fhncvc vevxdx âCfvi ggghp xfkx Scfh ukw xojxnh ejl xavxnß szbi . Ukwk ; xjhfk mc si kkcvc; x vcgxggcnxkx fcdhk ejl c; fxbx hnhav`nl hr xsjcvxdxl xb aedgcncvck shoghv`y`kvhk ukwk fhncsxkvc dhgk`b fxn ocfcncx kerg ejl c; gc ; xthdcjgcncx; ...

â|edycl fcnc-C; ncl mthj evck bhl hk Cfw Fc; n zbi ki k Sckcpvc; x l ckbxgkvc xv. Fw bhl hk Zl cn fw szbgcnx vel cdc fhaghv`... âLi khtxrgcnvck fc/bxgcnc fegc jcscmmi n evxngcn ; x, |edycl fcnc mthj ejl xavxn, phgfww; x u, mthj ejl cl xavxn, c; sxkc |cnmcnvx`hn`k`k vcn`hp`kh `ejl xavxn. Ke[c ; x, L wsh xfkx Xl nhk Hgghp`k vcn`hp`kh `ejl xa, zb rzml i kvck r`no `i k rhxf ugl wa mc âu hnj`r mthj ejl xavxnß vedxgckvck suknh dekvck rhd`jl `av`. Hgghp hkx ugswk, |edycl fcnc-C; ncl vc pz; l ck rhd`vh[hrv`n!ß<sup>1</sup>

3-Mcsxddcjc crxvc ocfcncx mc ukwk dcpwvx Cfvi ggghp xfkx Scfhdh xsfcj menxgl csxvxn ; x, ukwk fcpsx dwohn`vh redv ugwkvw.

<sup>1</sup> Fw ncmhdcjgcncx cjhntg`xbhp`k` âCfvi ggghp xfkx Scfhß ; xjhfk`k 2-[x [xgvxkvc â|edycl fcncx mthj`ß fzgl csxkvc redv ejl xax; .



4-|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -xk CI I hn fhncsxkvc  
fwdwnvwyw pcvxsx jcpnxt evenc; âCI I hnh ru[hg`r pedncjx  
(scn'cnv'hkg'y') 'cgck mhojh rcvcn, pcl xac phrghv`nß ac; gxkc  
shgl hs`, Sc/vxk vc âCI I hnh ru[hg`r pedncjx rcgcfç ]hgl `av`nß  
vel csxæ phgfw; x u pcbncjxk CI I hn fhncsxkvc fwdwnvwyw, Xfkx  
L cs/wvwx kcrq ejvxdxkc 'znc fegcvxn...

إِذَا اِخْتَلَفَ النَّاسُ كَانَ ابْنُ سُمَيَّةَ مَعَ الْحَقِّ

âPcn mhoj [hl hjj xojxht ejsc, Si I cddckxk uygw phrr jcnctvc ugh[hrv`n.ß¹  
XI hl Cgx TM vh CI I hn`k I cvpxkvc fegc  
fwdwnl wavwn...

إِنَّ عَمَّارًا مَعَ الْحَقِّ وَالْحَقُّ مَعَهُ يَدُورُ عَمَّارٌ مَعَ الْحَقِّ أَيْنَمَا دَارَ

âCI I hn phrr xgc, phrr vh CI I hn xgcvxnxæ phrr pcn denvc ugsh, CI I hn  
vh unhvhv`n.ß²

Fcgx, Sedt xfkx ZI cn CI I hn`k phrr`kvh kcrq ugwkl wa  
fw pcvxsx jcpnxt ejl xa mc âru[hg`r pedncjx ukh rcgcfç ]hghkh  
rcvcnß [i I gcsxkx cghmc ejl xavxn.

|edycl fcnxk CI I hn fhncsxkvc fwdwnvwyw vx'cn fxn szb  
Xfkx Pxahl `k â|edycl fcn I cs[xvxkxk jx; xgxaxß i kmhkg`  
ocfcnxkvc redv ejvxdxvn. Fegc ;x, fxn kctcn CI I hnh  
rcbcfgckvx, fw bhl hk |edycl fcn fwdwnvw...

مَا لَهُمْ وَلِعَمَّارٍ يَدْعُوهُمْ إِلَى الْجَنَّةِ وَيَدْعُوْنَهُ إِلَى النَّارِ إِنَّ عَمَّارًا جُلْدَةٌ مَا بَيْنَ عَيْنِي وَأَنْفِي

فَإِذَا بَلَغَ ذَلِكَ مِنَ الرَّجُلِ فَلَمْ يَسْتَبِقْ فَاجْتَنَبُوهُ

âUkghn`k CI I hngk kc xax mhn?! CI I hn ukghn` fepxajc ]hy`n`n, ukghn xsc  
ukw [cpckkcl c shn` ]c;xngcn! Pcrxrcjck, CI I hn I ckxI 'zbi I gc fwkwl wk  
hnhs`kvh ughk vcnx ;xl xvxn. C'cn fw I cscgc (CI I hnh rcbcfgckck) u ;xaxdc ]hjsh  
mc (zbi ki vi bcgjI c; i ]i k) rhfhyh vial csc, ukvhk wbrgha`k.ß

Xfkx Pxahl fw ncmhdcjx kcrq ejl xa, hl I h CI I hn`k  
i sji kc ]`y`nhk hvhl `k ;xl ugvywykw redv ejl cl xavxn. Xfkx  
Pxahl `k sxncsxkx acnp evck Cfwbcn Kcoacfx xsc u acosxk  
Usl hk xfkx Ctmhk ugvywykw redv ejl xavxn .³

¹ âJhnxowg-Xsghl ß (Bcpçfx), 2-[x [xgv, scp.179æ âJhnxox Xfkx : csxnß, 7-[x [xgv,  
scp.270.

² âJcfcrrhjß (xfkx Sc/v), Fednwj ]h`, 3-[i [xgv, scp.262.

³ âXfkx Pxahl `k sxncsxkx acnp, Cfwbcn Kcoacfx, 604-[i px[nx xgxkvc  
mcthj ejl xavxn. Ukw Xfkx Xsphr`k sxncsxkvc xrxjxfs ejl xavxn. âCrvi g-  
tcnxvß ;xjh`k`k I i cggtx ukwk phl `s`k` zb ;xjh`k`k 4-[i [xgvxkxk 342-343-

HI I h Cfwbcnc 'cgvx; vc xsc, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i  
ukwk fhncsxkvc fegc fwdwnl wavwn...

مَا أَظَلَّتِ الْخَضِرَاءُ وَمَا أَقَلَّتِ الْعَبْرَاءُ مِنْ رَجُلٍ أَصْدَقَ لَهْجَةً مِنْ أَبِي ذَرٍّ

âLhm̃ hxl hk zb hġkvh, rhnh jun\hr zb isjikvc Cfwbcnvck vc vib  
vhk`ahk fxn acos 'zñ cl xavxn.ß¹

SEDYK KCRG EJVDX NCMHDCJGCNXX FHARH NCMHDCJGCNGC  
L I RHDXSXSX

Bcpcfx Usl hk`k vzmni kvc fha menck txjkcgcngc cghrcvhn  
vedxn...âBi pcnxvck ncmhdcj ugwkwn ;x, u fegc vel xavxn...Usl hk  
oxghtcjc ]hjv` mc [hl hhj jcnctxkvck pe] fxn xnhvgh  
rhna`ghal hvhk hġj` xg oxghtcjcvc ugvw. U, [hl hhj`k kcbcnxkvc  
ZI cnvck vc semxl gx vx. }i k;x ZI cn ukghnh rhna` ]uo  
jcgcf;hn vx, Usl hk xsc pz;wl cjc ]hjv`rvhk suknh ukghngh  
]uo l i ghdxl mc dhoa` nctjhn ejl cdc fhaghv`. Suknh ukghn`k  
xaxkvc pcvvxkvck hnġ`r si sjgi ; ejvx. X;xk[x hġj` xgvc zb  
rupwl -crncfhs`k` mc hxgc i bmgcnxkx mcbxtcdc se]vx, L xsnxk  
(dhowv Htnx;hk`k) owl swkw fxn denvc L cnmhkh fhy`aghv`. Zb  
rupwl -crncfhs`k` shxn l i scgl hkghnvhk rhfhyh shghnhr  
ukghnh ]uogw l hg-vzmgcj epshk ejl cdc fhaghv` mc ukh Hgghp-  
jhhghk`k cl n ejvxdx âsxgedx-ncpxl ß vukw 'edxkvxnvx. U, cl mhġ`  
hg`f, fedji g-l hg` fun[h 'zji ncnc; vedxnvx...âCfw Fc;ngc ZI cn  
zb phrghn`kh 'zb dwl l waghñ, l ck xsc ukw hg`f zb rupwl -  
crncfhl hnhs`kvh fzgi avi ni ncl .ß {hl hhj ukwk fw xaxkx  
xk;hn ejvx.²

U vedxn...{hl hhj`k ukh jwjvwyw xnhvghnvhk fxnx vc bhpvx  
mc shgep acos ughk l l edn xfkx Sc/vx Pcl sxk mhgxgdxkvck  
]`ohnhnh L i hmxdkxk ph;xl xddcj vhnscsxk ;e]xnl csx vx.  
Usl hk pcl vc Cl n xfkx Hs` L xsnxk mhgxgdxkvck 'zji ni f  
Xfkx Cfx Scncpx ukwk denxkc rudvw, Cfw L wsh Ca/cnxkx  
Fcsncvck 'zji ni f Cfvi ggghp xfkx HI xnx ukwk denxkc jc/dxk

---

[i scpxtcgcnxkvc redv ejl xavxn. Fxb vc ukwk cjhntg`xbhp`k` âHdxackxk  
nugwß ;xjh`f`k`k 1-[x ]xgvxkvc redv ejl xax;.

¹ âSi kckx Xfkx L h[cß (;xjh`f`k l i rcvxl csx), 11-[x fhf, pcvxs-156æ  
âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, l ckhrxf ;xjh`f, l ckhrxfw-Cfwbcn fhf`æ âL i skcvx  
Cpl cvß, 2-[x ]xgv, scp.163, 175, 223, 5-[x ]xgv, scp.351, 356, 6-[x ]xgv, scp.444æ  
âJcfcrhjß (xfkx Sc/v), Hmnu`h ]h`, 4-[i ]xgv, 1-[x pxssc, scp.168.

² âJhnxowg-Xsghl ß (Bcpcfx), 2-[x ]xgv, scp.122.

ejvx, L i yednc xfkx Az/fckx<sup>1</sup> : wtcvck 'zji ncnc; Scxv xfkx Hs`  
ukwk denxkc jc/dxk ejvx.

U vedxn... Usl hk hnhghn`kvh Cl I hn vh ugl hrgh  
scphfcgcnvck fxn rnw\wkw ]hy`n`f vevx... âSxbvck sunwawn mc  
xsjcdxncl ;x, l ckx jcsvvr evcsxkxb. Sxbx Hgghph hkv menxncl ,  
fxgxnsxkxbl x ;x, |edycl fcnx-C;ncl Ri nedax fharh [hl hhjvhk,  
Fckx-Phaxl x vc shxn ri nedagxgcnvck i sji k jwjwnvw?ß Ukghn  
si ;wj ejvxgcn, u vevx... âC'cn fepxajxk h]hngghn` l ckxl cgxl vc  
ugshdv`, ukw Fckx-l l cddcdc mencnvl ;x, fepxajc vhoxg  
ugswkgghn.ß<sup>2</sup>

Fxb Usl hk`k ph;xl xddcjxkxk x;xk[x hgj` xgxkvc Fckx-  
l l cddc cl xngcnxkxk mc mhgxgcnxkxk xagcnxkx jctjxa ejl c; mc  
'znvi ;gcnx cl cggnx shvhghl hr cbl xkvc vedxgx; . Pcl xk hgj` xg  
;x, jhnxo]xgcn L xsxn, Ahl , Fcsnc, : wtc mc L cvxkckxk  
phvxscgcnxkvc redv ejl xagcn. Pcl ]xkxk, scphfcvck ughk  
ukghngh cl cgx shgep acosxddcjgcn mc jhfexkgcnxk jhk`kl`a  
acosxddcjgcnx hnhs`kvh fha menck phvxscgcnx vc redv ejl c;  
xsjcl xnx; . Fwnhvh dhgk`b Cfwbcnc rhna` ncmh 'zni gck xagcnvck  
fxn pxsscsxkx redv ejl c; gc ;xthdcjgckxnx; .

#### CFWBCN PC{ { L ZMSI L I KVC – L XKHVH

Cfw : csxn zb hjhs`kvhk ncmhdcj evcnc; vedxn... Cfwbcn  
â{cl cnedx-mwsjhßvh ujwnvwyw bhl hk ukwk dhk`kh 'ejvxl .  
"znvi l ;x, [hl hhj ukwk cjnht`k` jwjwf mc ukvhk tcjmh  
xsjcdxnghcn. Fw bhl hk fxn kctcn 'cgxf ukwk fha` i sji kvc  
vhdhkv` mc vevx... âL c'cn tcjmh menl c; sckc rhvhyhk  
ugwkl hd`fl`?ß Cfwbcn fha`k` rhgv`n`f vevx... âSck l ckc  
kcbhncj]xsckl x?! (Suknh fudkwkwk hnv`k` 'zsjcnvx mc vevx.)  
C'cn r`g`k[`k` fwnh rudshk mc l ck fxgscl ;x, [hk  
menl cl xavck rhfhr |edycl fcnx-C;ncl vck eajvxdxl fxn  
;cgl ckx vedc fxgc[cdcl , ukvh fw xax 'zncncl mc u ;cgl ckx  
pz;l ck vedcncl .ß<sup>3</sup>

Fwohnx zb âScpxpßxkvc fw ncmhdcjxk fc/bx dengcnxkx

<sup>1</sup> Csg ki socvc fegc redv ugwkwn, gh;xk vi b'i k fwvwn ;x, Sc/v xfkx Cfx  
Mcrrhsv`n.

<sup>2</sup> L i cgxt vedxn... Gh;xk l i scgl hkghn`k fedji g-l hg`k`k h]hngghn` ukwk  
cgxkvc vxv!

<sup>3</sup> âSi kckx Vhncl xß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.137æ âJcfcrhjß (xfkx Sc/v), 2-[x [xgv,  
scp.354.

xojxshnh shghnhr vedxn... Cfwbcn vevx... âC'cn r`g`k[` fwnhdh  
rudshk`b vh – zb fudkwkw 'zsjcnvx – fxgscl ;x, zgl cl xavck  
rhfhr |edycl fcnvck eajvxdxl fxn ;cgl ckx sxbc ]hjv`nh  
fxgc[cdcl , ukw ]hjv`nhnhl .ß¹

Xfkx Pc[cn ukwk acnpxkvc dhb`n... âFw szbgcnx Cfwbcn  
vedck Ri nedavck ughk fxn acos, ukwk tcjmh menl csxkx  
rhvhyhk evck xsc Usl hk xv.ß

U vedxn... Cfwbcn â; cgl cß szbi ki kc; cnc (rednx-l i cddck)  
ac; xgv 'cjaxnvx ;x, pcl hbh, pcl vc ]uoh ahl xg ugswk.  
L crscvx vc fw vxv ;x, âl ck |edycl fcnxk szbgcnxkx pcn fxn  
phgvh jcfgyx evc[c; mc fwkvhk pe] mhoj cg ]c; l cdc[cdcl ,  
pcjjh l ckxl rcjgc dejxnagl cdxl c scfcf ugsh fegc.ß²

Bcpcfx dhb`n... Ri nedavck ughk fxn [hmk ukwk fha`  
i sji kvc vwnl wavw mc ukh vedxnvx... âL c'cn Cl xncg-l z/l xkxk  
(Usl hk) tcjmh menl cdx sckc rhvhyhk ejl cdxfl x?...ß³

#### CFWBCN FEDJI GGHPXG-PCNHL VH

Ph; xl âL i sjcvnc; ß ;xjh`kvh Pckca : ckhkxvck ncmhdcl  
evxn ;x, u fegc vedxn l xa... Cfwbcn : c/fckxk rh`s`kvhk jwjnhhr  
vedxnvx... Ed [hl hhj! Pcn ;cs l ckx jhk`d`nsh, egc jhk`v`y`  
hvhl hl æ duo c'cn jhk`l`nsh, (fxgsxk ;x,) l ck Cfwbcncl . L ck  
|edycl fcnxk fegc fwdwnvwykw eajl xacl ...

مَثَلُ أَهْلِ بَيْتِي كَسَفِينَةِ نُوحٍ مَنْ رَكِبَهَا نَجَا وَمَنْ تَخَلَّفَ عَنْهَا غَرِقَ

âLckxl Cpgx-fedjxl xk l cscgx Kwpwk 'cl xsxkxl l cscgx ;xl xvxn... pcn ;cs  
ukh l xksc, kx[hj jh`hn, pcn ;cs ukvhk hdn`gsh, rcnr ughn.ß

Ph; xl vedxn... âFw pcvxs L i sgi l i k acnjx xgc scpxp  
pcvxsgcnvckvx.ß⁴

#### CFWBCN |EDYCL FCN ; L CS{XVXKVC

Dc/rwfx zb jhnnoxkvc Cfwbcnxc ofcngcnx mc ukwk ph; xl  
i swg-xvhncsx xgc h`hvn`y` l i khrxacgnx redv evcnc; dhb`n...  
Usl hkh ofcn menvxgn ;x, Cfwbcn |edycl fcn l cs[xvxkvc  
ujwnl wavwn mc [hl hhj`k ukwk cjnht`kh d`y`al`a ugvywyw

¹ âScpxpx Fwohnxß, egl ;xjh`f, cg-egl w rcfgcg-rumgw mcg-cl cg fhf, 1-[x  
[xgv, scp.16.

² âTcjpi g-fhnxß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.170-171.

³ âJcb; xncj i g-pi tthbß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.18.

⁴ âL i sjcvnc; x Ph; xl ß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.343.

phgvh, ocgxtckxk l cbcl l cj ugwkl hs`kh vcghgcj evck fc/bx  
pcvxsxcn szdgcdxn. U, l cs[xv`k rh`s`kvh vhdhkhnhv vedxn...Ed  
[hl hhj! Pcn ;cs l ckx jhk`d`nsh, jhk`l`av`n, pcn ;cs vc  
jhk`l`nsh, (fxgsxk ;x,) l ck Cfwbcn Rxthnxdcl . L ck Ncfcbcgx  
{ i kvcf xfkx { i khvcdcl ! (Suknh fw hdckx jxghmcj ejvx.)

﴿إِنَّ اللَّهَ اصْطَفَىٰ آدَمَ وَنُوحًا وَآلَ إِبْرَاهِيمَ وَآلَ عِمْرَانَ عَلَى الْعَالَمِينَ ذُرِّيَّةً بَعْضُهَا مِن

بَعْضٍ وَاللَّهُ سَمِيعٌ عَلِيمٌ﴾

âHghp Hvcl x, Kwpw, Hgx-Xfnhpxl x mc Hgx-Xl nhk` se]xf ukghn` fijik  
hgcl gcnvck isjik ejl xavxn. Ukghn egc si ghgc xvxcn ;x, fc/bxgcnx fc/bx  
vx`cn`cnukvckvxn. Hghp eavvck mc fxgckvxn.<sup>1</sup> Pcbncj L i pcl l cv Kwpwk  
ohgxsgcavvxnagl xavvxn, âHgß Xfnhpxl vck, âsi ghgcß Xsl hxgvck mc  
âpxvhdcj evck xjncjß L i pcl l cvvckvxn ;x, acnxt acosgcnxk  
acnhtcjx ukghn`k peshf`khv`n. Ukghn tcbxgcj mc i sji kgi dc ghdxr  
ughk fxn rzml , fxbxl hnhl`bv`h vhdhk`rg` hsl hk mc : c/fc  
;xl xvxcn, dhowv jc/dxk ugwkl wa rxfgc, kwn menck `i kca,  
dhowv `evck hd, pxvhdcj evck wgvwbghn, dhowv kwn menck mc  
;ctx l i fhnc; ughk Bedjwk hyh[` ;xl xvxn! L i pcl l cv  
Hvcl xk egl xkxk mc fijik `edycl fcngcnxk tcbxgcjxkxk  
mhnxsxvxn. Cgddxfkx Cfx Jhgx` vc L i pcl l cvxk mcsxsx, ukwk  
egl xkxk mhnxsxvxn. Ed |edycl fcncvck sukn pednhk mc  
scn`cnvhk ughk i l l cj! H`hp ugwk, c`cn Hgghp`k rhfhyh  
shgv`y` acosx rhfhyh ;e]xnjscdvxkxb, Ukwk hnohv shoghv`y`  
acosx hnohv shoghshdv`k`b, mxghdcj mc mcnhscjx |edycl fcn  
Cpgx-fedjxkvc jcsfxj ejscdvxkxb, ukvh pz;l ck fha`k`b`k  
i sji kvck mc hdnrgn`k`b`k hgj`kv`h (dc/kx pcn fxn jcnctvck)  
nwbx dedcnvckxb. Fw phgvh Hgghp`k mcgxss epjxdh[g` ugl hb,  
xghpx tcnxbcgcnvck pe] fxn scpl pcvcnc `ejl cb, Hgghp`k  
pz;l i kvc pcjjh x;x kctcn fegc, xojxght ejl cbvx mc (xojxght  
ejvx;gcnx phgvh xsc pcl xk aedxk) egl xkx ukghn`k dhk`kv`h  
Hgghp`k : xjh`f` mc |edycl fcncxk si kksxkvc jh`hnv`ghn. Hl l h  
xkvx ;x, fegc ejvxkxb, zb (dnhl hb) cl cggcnxkxbk kcjx[csxkx  
vhv`k! Bhj l ghn jebgx;gc, phks` denc rhdjhn`gh[hrghn`k` fxgc[c;gcn!ß

Dc/rwfx sukn dnb`n... Pcl ]xkxk, Usl hkh ocfcn menvxcn  
;x, Cfwbcn ukw l cbcl l cj evxn, ukwk |edycl fcn si kksx,  
Cfw Fc;nk mc Zl cnxk sxncsxkvc ejvxdx vcdxax;gx; mc

<sup>1</sup> âHgx-Xl nhkß swncsx, hdc.33.

jcpnxtgcnx shvhghd`n. Usl hk ukw Ahl h, Li hmxdcckxk dhk`kh  
'zkvcnvx. U vh l cs[xvvc ujwnhnhf egc pcl xk szbgcnx [hl hhj  
]hjv`n`n, [hl hhj vh ukwk cjhnt`kh d`y`a`nv`ghn. Kcphdcj, ukwk  
cjhnt`kh d`y`ahnhr szbgcnxkx vxkgcdckgcnxk shd` pcvvxkvck  
hnj`r ]uohgv` mc...ß

Dc/rwfx ukvkh suknh fc/bx szbgcnx vc redv ejl xavxn ;x,  
ukwk oi ghscsx fegcvxn... Li hmxdc Usl hkh fegc dhbv`... Sck  
Cfwbcnx fwnhdh (Ahl h) 'zkvcnl c;gc Ahl ` zb cgedpxkc ughnhf  
ohnhf ejvxk.ß Usl hk vh [hmhf`kvh dhbv`... ãUkw `hghks`b fxn  
l xkx;vc fwnhdh 'zkvcn.ß Cfwbcn Lcvxkcdc ]hjkhv,  
fwwghn`k`k cjx 'ejl xavx. Ukwk Usl hkgh ughk l i khrxacsx  
;cs;xkgcavx;vc, Usl hk ukw Ncfcbcdc si n`i k ejvx. :wtckxk  
mhgxsc Mcgxvxk Xfkx Lcs/wvh rhna` nctjhn` vh edkxgc fegc  
ugl wavw... Ocgxtc ukw Lcvxkcdc ]hy`nv` mc 'zsjcnxa menvx ;x,  
ukw axvvcjgc denc ]`n`s`kghn. U vh fw bcncfc kcjx[csxkvc methj  
ejvx. Fwkwk uoahn`k` Cl l hngv vh ejl xavx.ß¹

# USLHK-K OXGHTCJXKXK HO-NGHN-KVH FHA MENCK TXJKCGCNXK OI GHSCSX

Ocgxtc Usl hk cl cmx mhgxgcxkx l i scgl hkghn`k l hg`kh mc  
[hk`kh jc[hmi b ejl c;vc jhl scnfcsj fwnhol `av`.  
Li scgl hkghn pcn mhoj ukghn`k bi gl i kvck ocgxtcdc ax;hdcj  
evxnvxgcncs, ukghn`k szbgcnxkc hbh[`r fegc, cpcl xddcj  
menxgl xnvx. Fwkh 'znc vc [hl hhj ukwk cgedpxkc rxdhl  
ejvxgc. Fegc fxn phgvh Fckx Jedd rcfxgcsx (Cfw Fc;nxk rcfxgcsx)  
Usl hk`k cgedpxkc rxdhl ejvxgc mc ukghn oxghtcjx Jcgpc i ]i k,  
Bi fednxk rupwl -crncfhs` vh Bi fedn i ]i k kcbcnvc jwvjvghn.  
Shxn l i scgl hkghn vh, dc/kx ckshn`k c;scnxddcjx mc |edycl fcn  
i scphfcgcnxkxk denvc rhghkghn` [hl hhj` Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h  
vuywv ]hy`nv`ghn. Fw phvxscgcnxk kcjx[csxkvc Usl hk  
rxdhl ]`ghn`k mhsxjcsxgc zgvi ni gvi, ckshn mc fharhghn` ukh  
;zl c; ejl cvxgc. Suknh fi ji k l i ph[xn mc ckshn Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k  
cjhnt`k` jwjnhhr ukwkgh fed/cj ejvxgc. Jcgpc mc Bi fedn vc  
phl `k`k kcbcnxkc jcsxgl ughnhf scphfcgcnxk zki kvc Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -  
gh fed/cj ejvxgc. Gh;xk u pcbncj fedji g-l hg` [hl hhj hnhs`kvh  
fcnhfcn scmxdccvc fzgl cdc fhaghdhkvh fhavh Jcgpc mc Bi fedn  
ugl hrgh [cl xddcjxk se]xgl xa jcfrcgcnx u pcbncjxk cgedpxkc

¹ Fw phvxscxkx 'ekxa xbh`k` ãHdxackxk nugwß ;xjh`kvh redv ejl xax;.

rxdhl ejvxgc. Ukghn Lc;;cvc l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxackxk  
 cjhnt`kh d`y`av`ghn, Fckx-l l l cdckx vc zb jcnctgcxkc [cgf  
 ejvxgc mc `Usl hk`k xkjrhl `k` hgl hrß ai hn`k` mencnc;  
 Fcsncdc 'ejvxgc. Unhk` cgc ;e]xnvx; vck suknh Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -gh  
 h`hn`gh[hr l i phnxfc i ]i k unvw jca; xg ejvxgc mc ghb`l ughk  
 aedgcx jcvhni ; 'znl cdc faghv`ghn. Xl hl <sup>TM</sup> vh L cvxkcvck  
 ]`ov` mc Fcsnc acpcnxkxk ;ckhn`kvh ukghngh rhna`ghav`.  
 l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxac vcmcdc l xkcnc; unvwkwk  
 scn;cnvcgdxkx zpvcsxkc hgv`. Kcphdcj Xl hl gh mwnwavw mc  
 ukghnvhk ]uow zgvi ni gvi , denvc rhghkghn vh jcsxgl ugvwghn,  
 Xl hl vh ukghn`ctm ejvx. Fw, Usl hk`k vzmni kvc dhnkhkhk  
 txjkcgc, Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -gh fed/cj mc Fcsncvc fha menck {cl cg  
 l i phnxfcsxkx oi ghscsx xv. Ukwk cjhntg`xbhp`k`, l ckfcgcx  
 xgc `Hdxackxk nugwß ;xjh`kvh redv ejl xax; .

SEDTXK SHOJH NCMHDCJGCNXXKXK SCPXP NCMHDCJGCNGC  
 L I RHDXC UGWKLHS- MC UKWK KCJX{CSX

Sedt fegc ncmhdcj evxn... Usl hk`k oxghtcjx vzmni kvc  
 Cfvi gghp xfkx Scfh hvg`fxn dcpwvx Xsghl h jcbhpi n evxnvx  
 (zbi ki l i scgl hk ;xl x rcgl c menxnvx). U, Dcl ckxk `hdjhoj`  
 Sck/h acpcnxkvck Xsghl zg;csxkx l cn;cbx acpcngcnxkc, u  
 [i l gcvck L cvxkc, Ahl , : wtc mc L xsnc sctengcn ejvx mc unhvh  
 nc[/cj crxvcsxkx jcfgy ejl cdc faghv`. U vevx ;x, |edycl fcnx-  
 C;ncl mcthj ejvx;vck suknh dekxvck rhd`vh[hr. Cgx ukwk  
 mcsxsvxn, Usl hk`k vh fw mcsxkx phrr`k` rcsf ejl xavxn. Ukwk  
 cgedpxkc rxdhl ejl c; ghb`l v`n ;x, phrr` zb cpgxkc rhdjhnhr.  
 |edycl fcn scphfcgcxkvck jhk`kl `a acosddcjgc, u [i l gcvck  
 Cfwbcn, Cl l hn, Pi [n xfkx Cv x mc ukghngh vx`cn acos (Sedt  
 ukghn` Scfhxddc hvghkv`n`n) ukh xl hk`'c]xnvxgc. Dcpwvx  
 Cfvi gghp xfkx Scfh ukghnh zdncjvx ;x, [hl hhj`ACL n fe  
 l c/nwtß mc `akcpd cb l ik;cnß xagcnxkc vc/mcj ejsxkgcn,  
 mhgxgcxk xagcnxkvc;x edfgcn fhncsxkvc l c;jwfgghn dhbs`kghn mc  
 [hl hhj` ukghn`k cgedpxkc rxdhl h jcpnx; ejsxkgcn. Ukghn vh  
 fegc ejvxgc. Cl l hn |edycl fcnxk fwdwnvwyw ;xl x ugvw,  
 Cfwbcn vc egc edkxgc. Scfhxgc – scphfc mc jhfexk xfkx  
 Scfhk`k jc/gxl gcxkx rcfwg ejvxgc mc [hl hhj` jcpnx; evcnc;  
 L cvxkcdc vuynw ]c; vxgc. Suknh Usl hk`k emxkvc zgvi ncnc; Cgx  
 xgc fed/cj ejvxgc. Jcgpc, Bi fedn mc Hdxac Usl hk`k xkjrhl `k`

hgl hr i ] i k Fcsncdc 'ejvxcn. Xl hl Cgx vc ukghn` jc/rxf ejvx  
mc Fcsncvck ohnx[vc rhna`ghav`ghn. Si gp fhncsxkvc l i bh;xnc  
h\hn`gv` mc si gp fhyghl hyh vxhn rcnhnh 'cgvxcn. Scfhxcn zb  
ho`n-hrxfcjgcnxkxk \xs kcjx[cgc[cdxkvck runownvwghn. Ukghn  
zbgcnxkx x;x unvwkwk hnhs`kh dejxnvxcn, pcn x;x jcnctvck uo  
hjhnhrl i phnxfc uvwkw az/gcgckvxnvxcn mc ukw vhmhl g`  
shoghv`ghn. X;x unvwvhk pe] fxnx ukghn`k pxdgcsxkvck h'hp ugh  
fxgl cvxæ dc/kx ukghn`k unvswkvh ughkghn mc scn;cnvcgn  
;xl xk uo hjv`y`k` fhah vi al cvxcn! Phgfw;x, uo hjhkgghn  
ukghn`k [cn'cgcnxkvc xvxlß

Sedt vedxn... å{cl cg l i phnxfcsx fegc fha menvx mc Xl hl  
Cgxkxk rcgfcscx xgc sukh ]hjv`.ß

Sedt fw ocfcngcnx zbi kvck vi bcgvvdx di bgcngc vx'cn  
ocfcngcnxk hnhs`kvh ncmhdcj evxn ;x, ;e]ck fcpsgcnvc ukghn`k  
fc/bxgcnxkc xahnc ugwkvw. Fxb fw fcpsgcnvc ukghn`k scpxp  
ncmhdcjgcnxkc xahnc ejvx;. Hdv`kv`n ;x, Jcfcnx, Xfkx Csx, Xfkx  
: csx, Xfkx Csh;x, Xfkx Ocgvwk mc s. ;xl x shmhvg` hgl gc  
Sedt xfkx Zl cnxk vxksxbgx;vc l i jjcpxl ugwkvwvkw, nx[hg  
hgl gcxkxk ukwk dhghk]`g`y` fhncsxkvc l i jctxr tx;xnvc  
ugl hghn`k` mc ukghnvkh pe] fxnxkxk ukw l z/jcfcn hvhl  
fxgl cvdxkx dhoo`ac;xgvc vcn; evxnvxcn! Pcjjh ukghn`k zbgcnx  
vc, dwohn`vh redv ugwkvwvwyw mc åCfvi gghp xfkx Scfhß  
;xjhfkvh vh redv ejvxdx xb ;xl x, ukwk pcvxsgcnxkx bcxt  
fxgl xagcn!

Pcl ]xkxk, fw phvxsgcnxk vi b'i k ncmhdcjgcnx vc ukghnh  
l cotx rhgl hl `av`n. Hl l h, ukghn fw vi b'i k ocfcnvc 'cgck  
l cscgcgnx fcdckl xn mc fwkw vh h]`r ac;xgvc e/jxhnt evcnc;  
vedxngcn... åFxb fw ocfcngcnx, i l wl ohgr ;i jgcgnxkxk jhf`c]xnc  
fxgl cvx;gcnx i ] i k 'xbgcvxnx;ß : ha ukghn fw fhncvc scpxp  
ncmhdcjgcnx 'xbgcj l c;gc ;xthdcjgckcdvxcn (ke[c ;x, cghmc ]uogw  
scpxp ncmhdcjgcnvc vc fegc ejl xagcn) mc scpxp pcvxsgcnxk  
denxkc dhghk pcvxsgcnx ncmhdcj ejl cdcdvxcn, dhghk ugvwvkw  
fxgc-fxgc ukghn` [hl hhj`k xojxdh`kh menl cdcdvxcn! } i k;x  
ukghn ]uo dhoo` fxgxnvcn ;x, Sedtxk Cl l hn, Cfwbcn, Xfkx  
L cs/wv, Pi [n xfkx Cv x mc ukghngh vx'cn scphfc mc jhfexkc  
l ckswf ejvdx aedgc ha;hn dhghk mc xtjxnhv`n mc ukghn pe]  
mhoj l i scgl hkghn`k hnhs`kvh txjkc-tcshv jzncj l cdx cl n evck  
fxn dcpwvxkxk szbi kc rwghr hsl hbv`ghn ;x, kcjx[cvc fxn-fxnxkx



zgvi nsi kgc n mc kc ejvx; gcnxkx vc fxgl csxkgcn! Gc/kcj ugswk fw  
 [i n ownthjghnh xkhkhk âhy`gg`ghnh! Ukghn ke[c xkhkh fxgngcn  
 ;x, ocgxtc Usl hk (Sedtxk jcscmmi n ejvxdx ;xl x) fw dcpwvxkx  
 jhk`l hl `a mc ukwk txjkgcnxkx vcn; evc fxgl cl xavxn?! Ke[c  
 ugh fxgcn ;x, Cl l hn mc Cfwbcn fw dcpwvxkxk vc/mcj evcnc;  
 âCgx |edycl fcnxk mcsxsxvxnß szbgcnx fhncsxkvc Xl hl Cgxvck  
 fxn szb sunwal hs`kghn? Ke[c ugh fxgcn ;x, Xl hl `k z'ed uygw  
 Lcpcl l cv Cfx Fc;n fw dcpwvxkxk zdi v-kcsxpcjgcnxkxk  
 vi bgi di fhncvc u pcbncjvck fxn aed sunwal hl `a ugswk?!

Fxgl xncl , 'zncsck ukghn fw dhghkghn` ke[c jcsvxrgcdxngcn?!  
 Fcgx, pe] mhoj xkhkh fxgl cncl ;x, fw hgxl gcn Sedtxk  
 pcvxsgcnxkc xkhkl `a ugswkghn! Oedn! Ukghn ukwk dhghk, xtjxn  
 mc shojh; hng`y`kvkh ]uo dhoa` h'hpv`nghn. Lck dhgk`b  
 i l wl ohgr ; i jgcgcnxkvck jcc[[i fvccl ... ukghn ownthjgh vugw  
 ughk fw ctshkcgcn ke[c xkhk`nghn! } i k; x Sedtxk ncmhdcjgcnxkx  
 dhdk hgxl gcn ukghn`k dhghk ugl hs`k` fxgxnvgcn, hl l h ukw  
 dhgk`b fwkh 'znc rcfwg evxnvxcn ;x, fw vxksxb acos u  
 ncmhdcjgcnx âph; xl vhxncgcnx, ukghnh jwjwghk xnhvghn  
 l i rhfxgxkvc l i vhtxc ejl c; ß ; xl x fxn mhsxjc xgc fcbcl xavxn.  
 Fegc ;x, Sedtxk Ohgxv xfkx Mcgxvxk Lhg; xfkx Ki mednckx rcjgc  
 dejxl csx mc egc pcl xk 'e[c ukwk pcdhj dugvha` xgc bxkh  
 ejl csx l i rhfxgxkvc jwjwghk jckrxv hjcagcn rhfhy`kvh ukw  
 l i vhtxc ejl csxkx l xshg 'zsjcnl c; ughn. Dhowv, L i yednc xfkx  
 Az/fckxk Fcsncdc mhgx jc/dxk ugwkvyw bhl hk ukh jwjwghk  
 xnhvghn`k rhna`s`kvh pcvxs vi bcgvxn, Cfw Lzp[ckxk acnhf  
 x]vxdx bhl hk ukh xghpx [cbh menxgl cl csx xgc cghrcvhn Sc/v  
 xfkx Cfx Mcrrhsh fcnhcj rhbhkv`n`n, dhowv Mcgxvxk acnhf  
 x]vxdxkc 'znc ukh [cbh menxgl csx mc s. ; xl x xagcn l i rhfxgxkvc  
 ukghn` l i vhtxc evxn.

Fcgx, Sedt xfkx Zl cn oxghtcj mc pz;wl cj h\hnhj`k`k  
 l capwn hvhl ghn`kh, ukghn`k dho`k hvhl ghn`kh mc rupwl -  
 crncfhghn`kh jwjwghk xnhvghn rhna`s`kvh ]hnc dugw  
 tx; xngcavxdxkc 'znc fw ; xl x hgxl gcn vc l cpb fw oxvl cjgcnxk  
 cmcbx ughnhr ukwk (dwohn`vh redv ugwkxk fxnxk[x rnw\w  
 l i vhtxc ejl c; l crscvxc) tcrxn mc shgep scphfcgcnc, u  
 [i l gcvcck Xfkx Lcs/vvvh, Cfwbcnc, Cl l hnh mwnvwyw jzpl cj  
 mc dhghkghn` rcfwg ejl c; vck pe] fxn runowghn` ugl hl `av`n!  
 } i k; x ukghn i ] i k l i pil ughk de'hkc fxn aed ocgxtcgcnxk,

mhgxgcnxk mc ukghn`k rupwl -crncfhghn`k`k kzrshk mc edfgcnxkxk i l wl ohgr [hl hhjvhk 'xbgcvxgl csx xv x; x, Sedtxk dhghk pcvxsgcnxkxk dhd`gl hs` xgc zb pcvctgcnxkc ]hjv`ghn. Sedt vc zb pcvctxkc ]hjv`... |edycl fcnxk cl cgx shgcp scphfcgcnxkx scstep mc khvhk ;xl x jcrvxl ejvx, fwkwx l irhfxgxkvc vc zbi ki k ; i tn mc vxksxbgx; l crscvgcnxkx pcdhjh ;e]xnl c; i ]i k fegc [ctck'xddhjghn` jhnxoc vxoxg evcnc; dhdv`!

Usl hk`k rcjgc dejxnxgl csxkxk scfcfgcnx fhncsxkvc Jcfcnxkxk vevxdx âfw scfcfgcnxk fxn ]uowkw redv ejl cvx; , ]i k; x ukghn`k ]uowkw redv ejl c; ncmh vedxgvxn<sup>1</sup> szbi kvck hdv`k ugwn ; x, ukwk scpxp ncmhdcjgcnx 'xbgcjl csxkc fhxs ughk aed ph;xl h\hnhj`k edfgcnxkc vcghgcj evck ncmhdcjgcnxk [hl hhjh ]hjv`n`gl hl hs` fhncvc ughk l hnhrgghn` xv x, ]i k; x ukghn`k vevxdx ;xl x, âi l wl ohgr ; i jgcgcnxkxk ukw eaxjl cdc jhf` ]hjl hbv`.ß

Fxn szbgc, ukghn phrr` fw [i n 'xbgcjl c;gc |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j -xk si kkcscxkx, Cpgx-fedjxk sxncsxkx, egc[c vc u pcbncjxk scphfcgcnxkxk sxncsxkx mc ukghn`k vi b`i k ncmhdcjgcnxkx jcpnxt ejl xa, shojh ncmhdcjgcnx ukghn`k denxkc rudl wagh. Sedt vc fw xax Xsghl vxkxkvc jconxfhj]`g`r dhnhjl hr mc zbi ki k vxksxbgx; l crscvgcnxkc khxg ugl hr i ]i k denxkc dejxnl xavxn. Fw hgxl gcn kc ejvx; gcnxkx dhoc` fxgc-fxgc scpxp ncmhdcjgcnxk denxkc pcl xk shojh ncmhdcjgcnx dhd l `agh. Fw ncmhdcjgcnvc ph;xl ped/cjxk xsjxsl hn]`g`r sxdhscjgcnxkc fcnhcj rhbhkv`n`gl `a, ocgxtgcnc fhyg` ughk hvhl ghn, mhgxgc mc cl xngcn l i vhtx ugwkl wavwn!!!! Phrr`k fw [i n 'xbgcvxgl csx oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk hgxl gcnx hnhs`kvh ugvrw[h ]uovwn...

"OI GCTH LC: JCFXKVC PHRR-K "XBGCVXGL CSX KZMGCNX"  
FCPSXKXK OI GHSCSX

Hdv`k ugvrw ; x, oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk hgxl gcnx Xsghl `k cmmcgcnxkvc; x ph;xl rnw`h xnhv jwjwgl hs`kh scfcf ughk pcn fxn ncmhdcjxk 'xbgcvxgl csxkxk mh[xfgxdxkc vxhn tx; xn fxngxdxkvc ugl wagh. Ukghn`k vcgxggcnx vc fw xv x; x, â|edycl fcn scphfcgcnx ugvrgrghn` i ]i k ukghn`k jckrxv ugwkl hs`kh 'cjxnx f ]`ohnhk aedgcnxk ohj`nghv`gl hs` scpxp vedxgvxn.ß Phgfw; x, ukghn`k egc zbgcnx |edycl cnxk fc/bx tcrxn scphfcgcnxkxk, u

<sup>1</sup> âJhnxox Jcfcnxß, Hmnu`h ]h`, 1-[x [xgv, scp.2980.

[i l gcvck Cl l hn, Cfwbcn mc Xfkx L cs/wv ;xl xgcnxk jckrxv  
evxgl csxkc mc l cbcl l cjc vi ]hn ugl hs`kh 'cjxnx'f ]`ohnhk  
dhghk ncmhdcjgcnx kcrq evxf dhd`nv`ghn!

Pcl ]xkxk, hdv`k ugvw ;x, ph;xl gcnx l i vhtx ejl c;  
dugwkvh fc/bck fxn ncmhdcjx jhl hl xgc 'xbgcvx, fc/bck  
ncmhdcjgcnxk xnhv mc jckrxvc ahl xg ughk fc/bx pxsscgcnxkx  
]`ohn`n, fc/bck vc ph;xl ped/cjxk jckrxv ugwkl hs`kh 'cjxnx'f  
]`ohnhk ncmhdcjgcnv c l i cddck szbgcnx (pe] kc fhah  
vi ai gl cdc[c; ac; xgvc) khl c/gwl mc l i cl l hg`fxn ;cgl c xgc  
vcdxan, fc/bck vc ukghn`k fxn rxsl xkx egc jcpnxt evxnvxgc n ;x,  
dhoa`, cl cgx shgcp mc scfxngx hvhl bhg`l hvhl ;xl x, [hffhn  
mc bhg`l ghn xsc cl cgx shgcp xkshkghn ;xl x jcscmmi n ugwkwnvwl  
Dc/kx fw pcvxsgcnx ukghn`k jhl bxvvxkc ]emxnxnvxgc n, fharhghn`  
vh fw shojh mc jcpnxt ugwkl wa ncmhdcjgcnx kcan evxf ukghn  
e/jxl hv ejl c; i ]ik fxn-fxnx xgc shk;x dhn`a`n, Xsghl  
[cl xddcjxkvc csg ki sockxk denxkc l cpb ukw dhd`nv`ghn.  
Fwkwk vh l i rhfxgxkvc ph;xl ped/cjc jwjwghk xnhvghn`  
epjxmh evck ncmhdcjgcnx bcxtgcvx, ncmhdcjxk kcrq ugwkvwyyw  
;xjh'f mc ukwk l i cggtxkx avvcjgc jckrxv hjcaxkc jwjwn,  
hy`gs`b peshf evxnvxgc n. C`cn fw xagcnxk phl `s`k` pcdhjh ;e]xnc  
fxgl cscdvxgc n vc, u ncmhdcjx mc ocfcnx egc l c/khdh  
dubwnvghn ;x, ph;xl ped/cjxk oednxkc jhl hl ugwnvw, ukghn  
jwjwghk xnhvghn mc jckrxvgc n vc jhl hl xgc ukghn`k jc/nxtxkc mc  
l cvpxkc ]emnxgxnvx!

Fw duggh `evck pcn ;cs cbxbgckxf pzn l cjc ghdxr `zni gi n,  
ukh xgxbhl g` rhgh[hy` l xrvhnhv (fegc ugh[hy` jcrvxnv c)  
jc/nxtgckxnvx. Fw isgwfh jhfe ughk nhmxkx e/jxfhng`, ukwk  
ncmhdcjgcnxkx xsc scpxp peshf evxnvxgc n, ukh xgxbhl g` ughk  
l i cggtxk ;xjh'fghn`k` pcl xk isgwfh xgxbhl g` ugvwyyw  
l xrvhnhv mc xsjxskhs`b ughnhr l z/jcfc n mc scpxp rcgl c  
menxn, ukghn suk vcnc[c epjxnhl `zsjcnxn, ohjxncgcnxkx  
cbxbgcdxn mc ;xjh'fghn`k` jcfgy evxf l capwnghav`n`nv`ghn. L cpb  
fwkh `znc vc oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk hnv`[`gghn` hnhs`kvh aSxnedx  
xfkx Pxahl B ;xjh'f zbi ki k e/jxfhng`g`y` xgc azpncj jh\l `av`.  
}i k;x ukghn`k l i jjctxr ugvwrgn` aedc xgxbhl g` xv. Fwkwk  
l i rhfxgxkvc vc Xfkx Xsphr`k dhbv`y` sxnc ;xjh'fkh e/jxkh  
ejl cvxgc n, ]i k;x u, pcl xk acosgcnxk l crfwg shdv`y` i sgwfh  
xgxbhl g` ugl hl `av`, ukghn vh pcl xk ;xjh'f k jcvnxs

ugwkl hs`kh, hnhav`n`gl hs`kh mc i bi kvck ;z]i ni gl csxkc  
 l cpcg rudl hv`ghn ;x, fw vh ukwk l cpm ugl hs` xgc  
 kc]x[cgckvx! Phgfw;x Xfkx Pxahl zbi ki k sxnc ;xjhfkvh  
 rcgcl c hgv`rghn`k`k phl `s`k` Xfkx Xsphr`k sxncsxkvck  
 'zji ni i a, hl l h zb szbgcnx xgc vsc; , â[hl hhj`k ouaghl hv`y`  
 aedgcxß unhvhk ]`ohnj l `av`n.

Egc[c vc, l cpb redv ugwkxhk scfcfgcnc 'znc âJhnnox  
 Jcfcxß Xsghl hgcl xkxk ck l z/jcfc n jhnnox l ckfcgcxkvck  
 shd`ghnhr azpncj mc e/jxfhng`g`y`k ck di ;sc; bxnmcxkc ]hjl `a  
 mc oi gcth l c;jcfxkvc ukwk l i cgxtx âjhnxo]xgcxk xl hl `B  
 gcrxfxkx hgl `av`n. }i k;x u, dwohn`vh redv ugwkxhk i sgwfh  
 xgjxbhl g` ugl hrgh dhkha`, Sedtxk ncmhdcjgcxkxk dhd`gl hs`kh  
 ]hg`al `av`n. Phgfw;x, fw ncmhdcjgcxk dhghk mc shojh  
 ugl hs`kvhk jhl hl xgc h'hp vxv mc fxgxvnx ;x, scphfcgcxk  
 csxkvck;x mc cmmcg;x ocgxtgcxk vzmn i kvck;x jhnnox pcrxrcj mc  
 'en]c;gx;gc pe] fxn wdywkgyw duovwn. Ukvhk suknh 'cgck  
 shxn hgx l gcn vc fxnx vx`cnxkvck suknh zbgcnxkx uvh-sw dh  
 mwnhnr âJhnnox-Jcfcxßvc kcr g ugwkxhkghn` dhd l `a, xsghl x  
 jcprxrhj l ckfcgcxkx ukghngh vugvwnl wa mc fwkwk vh  
 l i rhfxgxkvc vi b'i k mc scpxp ncmhdcjgcx fuaghl `aghn ;x,  
 wkvwvghnhr jhnxo scpxtcgcxkvck l cpm ugswk!

Pcl ]xkxk, Xl hl Fwohnx vc oi gcth l c;jcfxkvc;x  
 âl i pcvxsgcnxk xl hl `B gcrxfxkx hgl `a, ukwk âScpxpß Hgghp`k  
 : xjhfkvhk suknh ck vi b'i k ;xjhfk peshf evxgl xa, pcl ]xkxk  
 ukwk, dhowv L i sgi l i k âScpxpß ;xjhfkvh redv ugwkl hdhk  
 vi b'i k pcvxsgcn xsc e/jxfhns`b mc vi b'i k ugl hdhk ncmhdcjgc  
 ;xl x rcgcl c menxgl xavxn!

XSGHLX LCKFCVC: X NCMHDCJGCNVC XOJXGHT-K LCKACDX

Dwohn`vh;` fcpsgcnc, egc[c vc i ]i k[i [xgvxk âocgxtgcxk  
 x[jxphv`ß fzgl csxkvck redv evxgc[c; l cjgcfgcnc vcnxkvck  
 vxrrcj dejxnvx;vc, xsghl x l ckfcgcnc l zm[wv ughk  
 ncmhdcjgcnc;x xojxght`k l ckacdxkx vcn; ejl c; ughn. }i k;x  
 ukghn ph;xl ped/cjxk sxdhscjxkc wdywk pcnc;cj ejvx;gcxkvck  
 zbgcnxkvck [i nfc[i n ncmhdcjgc n rwnhav`nl `a, fw sxdhscjc  
 l i ohgxt ughk ncmhdcjgcx xsc l ckfcgcncvck ]`ohnl `aghn. Egc  
 fwnhvhk vh bcxt pcvxsgc 'i [gi pcvxsx jhk`d`f hd`nv ejl cdxk  
 l e/dhn`k` vh cgvc ejl c; ughn. Fegc ;x, l xshg i ]i k, âScpxpx

Fwohnxßvc zgi dc hyghl hr fhncsxkvc kcrq evxgck bxvvxddcjgx  
pcvxsqcn hnhs`kvh pcrxrx l c/kvh bcxt pcvxs ph;xl ped/cjxk  
sxdhscjgcnx xgc l i mhtxr ughk pcvxsxvxnæ egc fxn sxdhscj ;x, zgi dc  
hyghl hy` rhvhyhk evxn mc fw rhvhyhk` vh |edycl fcnc kxsfcj  
menxn! "i [gi pcvxs xsc ukwgh l i ohgxt ughk pcvxsxvxn. U  
[i l gcvck, l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxacvck mc fharhghn`kvhk  
l eddxjc hyghl hy`k [hxb ugl hs` fhncvc kcrq ugwkxhk pcvxsqcnx  
redv ejl c; ughn ;x, ukw |edycl fcnc si kkcscxkxk fxn pxsscscx  
peshf evxngcn. Pcl ]xkxk, l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxackxk fxn-  
fxnxkc bxvv ughk x;x ncmhdcjxkvck ck bcxtx |edycl fcnc-  
C;ncl xk zl ni ki k suk hkghn`, egc[c vc ukwk dhk`kvh ugwf  
vhk`ahk acos fhncsxkvc ughk ncmhdcjxvxn ;x, u vedxn...  
å|edycl fcnc kc mhoj ukh (Cgxdc) mcsxddcj ejvx, phgfw;x u,  
l ckxl sxkcl xk i sji kvck [hk menvx?ß "i [gi pcvxs vc ukwk  
vx`cn fxn pcvxsxvxn ;x, vedxn... å|edycl fcncxk pcdhj`k`k suk  
hkghn`kvh Cgx ukwk ;ckhn`kvh xvß Fxnk[x pcvxs ph;xl  
vcsjckxk xsjc;gcnx xgc l i mhtxr, x; xk[xsx xsc ukghn`k sxdhscjgcnx  
xgc l i ohgxtvxn!

Fw, |edycl fcnc-C;ncl xk acnxt si kkcscxkvc, u pcbncjxk  
scphfc mc jhfexkgcnxkxk, egc[c vc cmmcg;x \edycl fcngcnxk  
sxncsxkvc ughk pcvxsqcnvc mc ocgxtcgcnxk x[jxphvx pz;l gcnxkvc  
'i [gi pcvxsx bcxt pcvxsck se]l cdxk l zp;cl mc vcrxr  
l e/dhn`v`n.

#### FW FCPSCGNXK KCJX{CSX MC LCSCGCKXK PCRXRCJX

Pcn fxn jcprrhj]` acos vcn; evxn ;x, oi gcth l c;jcfxkvc  
phrr`k fhjxgvck se]xgxf hd`nv evxgl csxkvc ughk shfxj l e/dhn  
dhgk`b ph;xl jcfcrckxk l csgcpcjxkc nxhdcj ejl c;vx. Ukghn`  
jckrxv hjcaxkc jwjhk, dhowv l cbcl l cj evck pcn fxn ncmhdcj  
bcxt shd`ghnhr ncvv evxgn, fw rcfxgvck ughk pcn phks` fxn  
ocfcnx ncmhdcj evck ;xjhfc, nhmx mc l i cggxt vc bcxt mc  
e/jxfhns`b shd`g`n, [i nfc[i n aedgcnc l i jcpxl ugwkwn. C`cn  
pcn phks` fxn pcvxs mc ocfcnc zbi ki mc dh ;xjhfc`k` ncvv evc  
fxgl cvx;gcnx fxn nhmxvck kcrq ugwksh, fegc fxn phgvh pcvxsx  
xsjcvx;gcnx l c/khdh dubh[hrghn.

Vx`cn jcnctvck, ph;xl vcsjckxk tcbxgcjgcnxkx ohj`nghvhk,  
ukghnh vuynw xsjxrhl cjgckck jckrxvgcnc l cpcg rudl hdhk pcn  
fxn ncmhdcj]x mc l i cggxt e/jxfhng` mc ]uo vi bvhk`ahk shd`g`n,

zb ncmhdcjgcnxkvc mc ;xjhfgghn`kvh ukghn` l i vhtxc ejvxdxkc  
'znc l z/jcfcn, cl hkcjvhn mc jcsvvr ugwkhhk peshf evxgx, ukwk  
ncmhdcjgcnx fi j i k ;xjhfgghnv dhb`g`f dhd`g`n. Sedt vc fw  
ti nscjvck xsjxthvc evcnc; zbi ki k vxksxbgx; l cnhl ghn` xgc  
wdywk 'cgck pcn fxn aedx |edycl fcn pcvxsxkc, sxnc mc  
si kkcsxkc vhoxx ejl xavxn. Fwkh 'znc vc ukwk ncmhdcjgcnx uk  
i ] csn l i vvcjxkvc dejl xavck hnj`r xsghl x l ckfcvc kcan  
evxgxf dhd`gl `av`n.

Fcgx, Sedt xfkx Zl cn zbi ki k vi bi f ruavwyw mc  
rukvhnv`y` pcn fxn aedx |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk si kkc, sxnc mc  
pcvxsxgcxkc vhoxx ejl xavxn. Fxb ukghn` âShojh nhmxgcñß  
;xjhfk`kvh, pcl jxkxk âDi b cggx shojh scphfcß ;xjhfk`k  
â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk 'zkvcnvxdx hvhl ghnß, â|edycl fcnx-  
C; ncl xk xa]xgcxß, â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk dhk`kh 'cgck  
ki l hdckvc ped/cjgcxß, â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk uywggwywß  
fhfgghn`kvh hnhav`nl `a`r. : e]ck fcpsgcncvck vc hdv`k ugvw ;x,  
u, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk Cl l hn fhncsxkvc fwdwnvwyw pcvxsx  
jcpnxt evcnc; ukwk jhl c; sxkc jemxnl xavxn.

Fw fxbxl Sedt mc ukwk ;xl xgcn fhncsxkvc ughk kcbcnxl xb  
vx. âCg-ckmhñß ;xjhfk`k l i cggxtx Cfwg-Pcsck Fc; nx vc fw  
;xl x ownhthj]` mc shojh pcvxsxgcx âSxncjwk-Kcfxddxg-l wojhñß  
;xjhfk`kvh mc shxn ;xjhfgghn`kvh xsghl x l ckfcgcnc vhoxx  
ejl xavxn ;x, fxb ukghn`k ocfengcnxkx mc cscngcnxkx âVxkxk  
vx]cgvxgl csxkvc xl hl ghn`k nugwß hvg` sxgsxgc fcpsgcncv  
hnhav`nl `a`r. Ukghn`k fxbxl kcbcnxl xbvc ughk l crhl ghn` vh  
egc fwkvhk xfhncjvx.

Hl l h Fwohnx mc ukwk âScpxpß ;xjhfk, Xfkx Pxahl mc  
ukwk âSxncßsx, Jcfcnx mc ukwk âJhnxoß ;xjhfk` mc shxn ;xl x  
hgxl gcnc 'cgvx; vc xsc, (fxb ukghn`k jwjvwyw duggghn` zb denxkvc  
hnhav`n`f jckrxv ejl xax;) fxbxl kcbcnxl xbvc ukghn jhl fharh  
l crhl mc ac/kc l hgx; vxngcn. } i k; x ukghn fc/bx phgghnv  
jckrxvc l c/nwb rhgl hghn`kh fhol hdhnh, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl  
j  
-xk vi b`i k si kkcsxkxk juowkw zb sxnc mc pcvxs  
;xjhfgghn`kvh bx; n ejl xagcn ;x, fxb vc ukghn` rcfwg evxn mc  
ukghnvhk vh ncmhdcj kcrg evxnx; . Fw, Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfxkxk  
hgxl gcnxkxk, egl gcnxkvc scpm mc dhkg`ag`r 'znvi ;gcnx acosgcnc  
rhna` jwjvwrghn` i sgwfvwn ;x, ukghn`k egl x i sgwfgghn`k`  
axvvcjgc jckrxv hjcaxkc jwjl hrgh dhkha`, ukghn`k zbgcnxkx

l zpjcncl mc hgx[ckhf xkshkghn shd'n, jckrxvc l c/nwb  
 rhgl hdhk vi b'ik l c/jgcfgcnx ukghn`k zbgcnxkvck mc  
 ;xjhfgghn`kvhk cob evxngcn. Fw vh ;e]l xa hgx l gcnc jergxv  
 ejl cl cdxk l c/khs`v`n ;x, kc txrpx pz;l gcnc mc kc vc  
 pcvxsai khsg`r egl xkvc jhfe ugwngghn.

Cpgx-fedj l c;jcfxkxk hgx l gcnc pcl al swgx-;htxß, pcl vc  
 âScpxpx Fwohnxß ;xjhfgghn`kvh l zm[wv ughk bcxt pcvxsgcnc edkx  
 vcnc[cvc kbcn shg`n mc scpxp pcvxsgcnx pcn x;x ;xjhfvhk cob  
 evxngcn. Fegc ;x, 1111-[x xgvc mcthj evck Lc[gsxde-: cfxn zbi ki k  
 âLxn/hjwg-i rwgß ;xjhfkvh (fw, al swgx-;htxßkxk acnpxvxn)  
 l zm[wv ughk di bgcnc bcxt pcvxsc vxrrcj dejxnxn, phgfw;x,  
 al swgx-:htxß Cpgx-fedj l c;jcfxkxk ck l capwn pcvxs  
 ;xjhfgghn`kvhkv`n. Cpgx-fedj l c;jcfxkvc ughk fw xa oi gcth  
 l c;jcfxkxk hnv`[`gghn`k`k jwjvwyw dugggh jhl hl xgc l i ohgxtvxn,  
 phgfw;x ukghn âScpxpx Fwohnxßdc Hgghp`k : xjhfk Rwn/hk rcvcn  
 cpcl xddcj menxn mc xkhk`ngghn ;x, ukvh vi b'ik ugl hdhk pe]  
 fxn pcvxs duovwn. Pcjjh ukghn`k crxvcgcnc fwvwn ;x, âScpxpx  
 Fwohnxß mc âScpxpx L i sgi l ßvc |edycl fcn si kkcsx fhncsxkvc  
 'cgck mc Hgghp`k : xjhfkvh redv ugwkl hdhk pcn fxn aed  
 xsjxskhs`b ughnhr scpxpvxn. Phgfw;x, |edycl fcnc-C;nc l xk  
 si kkcsxkxk âScpxpx Fwohnxß, âScpxpx L i sgi l ß mc âSxphpx-  
 sxjjcßkxk rhghk vznv ;xjhfkvhk fharh l ckfcgcncvc kerg  
 ugwkxhk ncmhdcjgcncxk scpxpgxdxkx rcfwg ejl c; ukghn i ]i k ]uo  
 ]cxkvxn. Fwkw vh kbcnc hghr ;x, oi gcth l c;jcfxkvc hvghn`  
 redv ugwkxhkgghnvkh fharh, shxn pcvxs phtxbgcnc vc pcvxs  
 egl xkvc âscpxpß, al i skcvß, âsi kckß, al i sckkctß, âbcmhxvß mc  
 s. ;xl x hvghnh l hgx; ughk ]uogw ;xjhfgghn dhbl `agghn ;x, hahy`vh  
 ukghn`k fc/bxgcnc redv ugwkwn...

Xfkx Oi bedl ckxk âScpxpß ;xjhfk (311-[x xgvc mcthj evxf)æ  
 Xfkx Pcfffhk`k âScpxpß ;xjhfk (354-[i xgvc mcthj evxf)æ  
 Phtxb Cfw Cgx xfkx Sc;ckxk âCssxphpwg-l c/swncjw ck  
 Ncswgxgghpß ;xjhfk (353-[i xgvc mcthj evxf)æ  
 Jcdhgxsxkxk âL i skcvß ;xjhfk (204-[i xgvc mcthj evxf)æ  
 Cpl cv xfkx Pckfcgkxk âL i skcvß ;xjhfk (241-[x xgvc mcthj  
 evxf)æ  
 Fedpcrxkxk âSi kckß ;xjhfk (458-[x xgvc mcthj evxf)æ  
 Cfw Fc;n Ahtexkxk âSi kckß ;xjhfk (347-[x xgvc mcthj evxf)æ  
 Jcfcnhkxkxk i ] âL z/[cl ß ;xjhfk (360-[` xgvc mcthj evxf)æ

Cfvi n-Ncbbhr Sck/hkxkxk âL i sckkctß ; xjhƒ (211-[x xgvc mthj evxf)æ

Xfkx Cfx Aedfckxk âL i sckkctß ; xjhƒ (235-[x xgvc mthj evxf)æ

Pedscl xkxk âL c[ l ci b-bcmhxvß ; xjhƒ (807-[x xgvc mthj evxf)æ

Ph; xl Kxah\wnxkxk âL i sjcvnc; ß ; xjhƒ (405-[x xgvc mthj evxf).

Redv ugwkhhghnvhk cghmc, vx'cn l i pcvvsxgcnvck vc ukghn[h ; xjhƒ k hv`k` redv ejl c; ughn.

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -xk mc scphfcgcnxk sxncsx, egc[c vc tcjpgcn fhncsxkvc hahy`vh; ` ; xjhƒghn`k hv`k` ]c; l c; ughn...

Ocgxtc xfkx Ocddhj`k âCjjcfcrhjw mcj-jhnxoß ; xjhƒ (240-[x xgvc mthj evxf)æ

Fxghbcnxkxk âTi jwpwg-fi gvkhß mc âCkshfwg-canhtß ; xjhƒghn` (279-[w xgvc mthj evxf)æ

Lcs/wvxkxk âCj-jckfxpw mcg-xanhtß mc âL wnw[wb-bcpcfß ; xjhƒghn` (345-[x xgvc mthj evxf)æ

Mhrxvxkxk âCg-l cyhbß ; xjhƒ (207-[x xgvc mthj evxf)æ

Xfkx Sc/vxk âCj-jcfcrhjß ; xjhƒ (231-[x xgvc mthj evxf).

Fwkvhk cghmc, fharh l i cgxtgcnvck vc ukghngh l z/jcfcn ; xjhƒghn`k hv`k` redv ejl c; ughn.

Hi l h 'zncsck, scfcf kc ugl wavwn ; x, ukghn pcvxs egl xkvc âSxphpx-sxjjcßkx fw rcvsn vxrrcj l cn; cbxkvc shoghdnhrr vx'cn pcvxs ; xjhƒghn`kh cpcl xddcj menl cl xagcn, |edycl fcnxk sxncsx, jhnxo mc rcbmcgcnx xgc cghrcvhn dhgk`b Xfkx Pxahl `k sxncsxkx mc Jcfcnxkxk jhnxoxx l epmcn rcnhn menl xa, rhghkghn`k` xsc jcn; ejl xagcn?!

Fxn szbgc, oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk hgxl gcnx zb egl x xagcnxkvc x; x dzkvck jckrxvc l c/nwb rhg`ngn...

1-Ukghn, ph; xl ped/cjxk sxdhscjgcnx xgc vi b 'cgl cdck |edycl fcn si kkcsx mc sxncsxkxk fzdi ; fxn rxsl xkx znj-fhsv`n ejl xagcn. Pcl ]kxk, cmmcg; x \edycl fcngcnxk, Cpgx-fedjxk, |edycl fcnxk scphfcgcnxkxk sxncsxkx, phfegc Xsghl crxvcgcnxkx mc Rwn/hk jctsxngcnxkx vc 'xbgcjl xagcn. âMc ckbxn camcjc; cg-crncfxkß hdcxkxk jctsnx xgc cghrcvhn Jcfcnxkxk mc Xfkx Csxnxk cl cggnxkvc l i ahpxvc ejvxdxl xb ; xl x, ukghn ncmhdcjvc; x âmc mcsyddx mc ocgctjß ; cgl cgcnxkx 'xbgcjl xa mc ukghn`k denxkc âmc



;cbh mc ;cbhß (dc/kx, mc shxnc mc xgho`n) szbgcnxkx rudl waghñ.  
Pcl ]xkxk, Xsghl pz; l gcnxkvc oi gcthghn`k acosx x[jxphvghn` xgc  
l i ohgxt ughk |edycl fcn si kkcsxkx vc edkx rhdvh xgc  
'xbgcjl xagcn (ukghn` ãoi gcth l c;jcfxkvc Xsghl acnxcj  
l ckfcgcnxß fzgl csxkvc redv evc[cdx;).

X;xk[xxs vc fwvwn ;x, phg-phb`nvh xsghl x fxn pcnc;hj  
cnctcsxkvc rcnhnghahk l i scgl hkghn i]i k ghdxr vedxgvxn ;x,  
txrpx pz;l gcnvc vzñv xl hl h jcrxvvc rhgs`kghn mc fwkh xsñhn  
ejsxkgcn, pcvxsxk vi b'i k mc dh bcxt ugl hs`kvh ãSxphpx-sxjicß  
l i cggxtgcnxkc jcrxv ejsexkgcn mc dhgk`b Fwohnx xgc L i sgi l i k  
l epmcnxxkvc vzmn ejsexkgcn, Xsghl pz;l gcnxkvc ocgxtgcnxk  
|edycl fcn si kkcsx xgc bxvv ughk l csgcpcjgx x[jxphvghn`kh  
cl cg ejl cdc xsñhn ejsexkgcn. C;sxc, dhóa` ughn ;x, vcñxk  
jcxrxrhj mc 'ekxa scmddcgx jcvrxrhjgh |edycl fcñx-C;ñcl xk  
vi b'i k si kkcsxkx hojhn`f cgvc ejsexkgcn, ukwk l cotx rhgl `a  
fi j i k dzkgcnxkc mhrxt ugswwkghn (ukghn di b xggcn fudw  
ocgxtgcnxk sxdhscjxkxk jcgcfxkc wdywk ughñhr 'xbgcvxgl xavxn),  
sukñh l i scgl hkghn` jzmpxv ;cgl csxkc vc/mcj ejl cdc, Hgghp`k  
:xjh`f kh mc |edycl fcñxk vi b'i k si kkcsxkc cl cg ejl cdc  
]hg`as`kghn. } i k;x l i scgl hkghn`k pcrxrx mcpvcjx dhgk`b  
Hgghp`k :xjh`f mc fi j i k i l l cjxk x[l h mc xjxthr` ughk  
si kkc l epmcnxxkvc l i dcscñ ugh fxgn mc Hgghp`k fw gi jt mc  
l cnpcl cjx vc l i scgl hkghnvñk wñhr ugl hb!

#### MCSXDDCJ FCPSXKXK CMMCGXKC RHD-V-A

|edycl fcñx-C;ñcl j -xk mthj`kvñk sukñh xl hl  
Cgx <sup>TM</sup> mc u pcbñcjxk zmghvghn`k`k pz;wl cj mc ph;xl xddcjc  
cghrcvñh phrgñh`kh vcghgcj evck ha;ñn pcvxsñcn ph;xl  
ri mmcgcñc mc ocgxtgcnx fcñfhah xñhv 'cjxñck ck l i pi l  
aedgcñvck fxñx xvñ ;x, oi gcth l c;jcfxkxk hgxl gcñx fw ;xl x  
pcvxs mc ncmhdcjgcñxk 'xbgcvxgl csxkvc pe] kcdx  
csñx'cl cl xagcn. L i pi l jññox pcrxrcjgcñvck fxñx vc ã: xjh`f  
cpgxß hgxl gcñxkxk |edycl fcñx-C;ñcl xk mthj`kvñk sukñh u  
pcbñcjxk mcsxsx fhñcsxkvc hojhn`a h`hñl hghn` ugl wavwn. Fw  
fhñcvc x;x nhpxfxk menvdx ocfcñx redv ejl c; ughñ ;x, fw  
phvxsc xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> Sxttedk l i phñxfcsxkvc ukghn`k  
dhk`kvñk ;e]vxdx bñl hk fha menl xavx. Phgfw;x, Cpgx-fedj  
l c;jcfxkxk hgxl gcñx zb ;xjh`fghn`kvñk fw ;xl x ocfcñgcñx redv

ejl xagcn.<sup>1</sup> Pcl ]xkxk, Cfw Fc; nxk oxghtc]x vzmni kvc x; x kctcn dcpwvxkxk |edycl fcnxk mcsxsxkx hojhnhr ukwk dhk`kh 'cgvx; gcnxkx 'zsjcnl c; ughn. Fegc ;x, [hl hhj ukghn` cmmcg[c Cfw Fc; nxk dhk`kh h`hnv`, Cfw Fc; n ukghn`k swggghn`kh [hmhf menc fxgl cvxdx i ]i k Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -` ]hy`nv`ghn. Pcbncj ukghn`k swggghn`kh [hmhf menvx; vck suknh ukghn asck sukwk[w |edycl fcnxk mcsxsxckß vevxgc mc fwkvhk suknh Xsghl `rcfwg ejvxgc. Cpgx-; xjhfvhk ughk shxn acosgcnxk vc menvxdx ocfngcnx redv ejl c; ughn. Ukghn Zl cnxk oxghtc]x vzmni kvc Lcvxkcdc 'cgvxgc mc Cfw Fc; nxk vzmni kvc fha menckgc Zl cn mc Cgx xgc vc jc; nhn ugwkvw.

: e]ck fcpsgcnc vc : c/fwg-Cpfhn`k Zl cnvck sunwavwyw swgh` redv ejl xavx;. U, Zl cnvck |edycl fcnxk fc/bx oi swsddcjgcnx fhncvc sunwavwrvh, Zl cn vel xavx... åCgxvck sunwalß : xjhfvk cpgxkxk fw [i n l cscgcgcncv Xl hl <sup>TM</sup> -h l i nh[xcj evxf Xsghl `rcfwg ejl cgcnx suknh;` vzmngcncv vc vhmhl ejl xavxn. Fegc ;x, Xfkx : csxn zb jhnxo ; xjhfvk Jumnhjvhk åHggghp Xfnhpxl c Xsl hxgx (ukwk jcmcggi vi ki) mc ukwk xk; xaht ejl csxkx, egc[c vc ukwk si ghgcsxkvc uk x; x fzdi ; acosddcj rcnhr menxgl csxkx l i qvc menvxß [i l gcgcnxkx kcrgejvx; vck suknh Xfkx Jedl xddckxk fegc vevdxkx kcrgejvx... åUkghn { hfxn xfkx Si l nckxk pcvxsxkvc 'cgxaxkc l i qvc menxgck pcl xk ; csgcncvxn. Ukghn 'cgl cdxk[c rxdhl cj fcnrcnhr ugl hdh[hrv`n.ß Xfkx : csxn suknh vedxn... åXsghl vxkxkx rcfwg evck dcpwvxgcncvck ]uow scpmck fegc jcscmmi n ejl xagcn ; x, ukghn pcl xk ; csgcncvxn ; x, nhtxbx txnrcsx (axcgc) ukghnh vuynw ]hy`n`næ fwkh 'znc vc ukghnh jhfe ugl wavwn.ß<sup>2</sup>

Xghpx, kcgcn eavxnci ?! åXsghl `rcfwg evcnc; axcgcnc jhfe ughk dcpwvxgcncvck eavxgckß ]uogw ocfngcn kcvxn mc ke[c ugl wavwn?! { hmhf fwvwn ; x, fw hgxl gcnc vc Jcfcnxkxk dugwkxw 'ejl xa, Xsghl `rcfwg evxf axcgcnc jhfe ughk åCpgx-; xjhfvk fhncvc; x ocfngcnxk [i b/i ki mc ; i ggi ki zb jhnxo scpxtcgcnxkvck ]`ohnl `agh. } i k; x Jcfcnxkxk vevdx ; xl x... ål l wl ohgr ; i jgcgcnc ukghn` eajl cdc jhf 'cjxnc fxgl cbgcn!ß

<sup>1</sup> åFxpnhwg-ckmhnb, deks ]h`, 10-[w [xgv, scp.10-50.

<sup>2</sup> åJhnnox Xfkx : csxnß, 6-[` [xgv, scp.250.

JHNXO : XJHFGHN-KVHK XOJXSHNH SHG-KHK OCFCNGCNXK,  
NCMHDCJGCNXX MC KCSSGCNXX SHD~

C'cn XfKx : csxnxk ocmhnx[ fhncsxkvc |edycl fcnx-C; ncl  
i -vck kcrG ejvxdx pcvxsgcnx (fw pcvxsgcn ukwk ; xjhF`k`k  
uk devvx scpxtcsxkc ahl xgvxn) u pcbncjvck {cl cg mc Sxttedk  
l i phnxfcgcnx, pcl ]xkxk XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k tcbxgcjgcnx fhncsxkvc  
kcrG ugwkhhk pcvxsgcngc l i rhdxsc ejsc;; ukvh |edycl fcn  
pcvxsgcnxkxk 'xbgcvxgl csx xgc cghrcvhn fw i l l cjc vcdck  
ocshncjxk l xrvhn`kvhk h'hp ughn`r. Fcgx, ukghn ocmhnx[ fhnc-  
sxkvc mhnv ughk pcvxsgcnx zb ; xjhfgnh`kvh l cpb fwkh 'znc  
shoghl `agh n ; x, ukghn dhgk`b XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k ph; xl xddcjx  
vzmni kvc ukwk cgedpxkc rxdhl ejl c;gc ; xthdcjgckl cl xa, u  
pcbncjvck suknh;` pz; wl cjgcnxk vc cgedpxkc rxdhl ejl xagcn.  
Fw ; xl x pcvxsgcnxk dhd`gl hs`k`k XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -vhk suknh  
'cgck ph; xl ri mmcgcnxk oednxkc ugvywykh 'znc ukghn` fw  
'i k; i 'i kc ; xl x fi ji k pcvxs ; xjhfgnh`kvh kcrG evxngcn.

Oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk sxdhscjgcnxkc bxvv ugvywyw i ]i k  
'xbgcvxgck vx'cn pcvxsgcnvck fxnx vc |edycl fcnxk XI hl Cgx  
mc ukwk mcsxgdx fhncsxkvc fwdwnvwyw pcvxsvxn. Fwkvhk  
cghmc, ukghn scphfcgcnxk fw fhncvc dhbv`rghn` ae/ngcnx, vevx; -  
gcnx szbgcnx mc rcgcl c hgv`rghn` dhb`ghn` vh 'xbgcjl xagcn. Dwoh-  
n`vh 'znvi di l i b ; xl x, l l l i g-l z/l xkxk Hdxac, i l wl xd-  
dcjgc mcsxddcjx xk; hn evxnvx ; x, fxb ukwk ncmhdcjxkx dwohn`vh  
hnhav`n`f l i ghpxbcgcnx szdgcvx; . Pcl ]xkxk hdv`k ugvw ; x...

h) Ukghn`k fc/bxgcnx |edycl fcnxk szbgcnxkxk fxn rxsl xkx  
(xojxshnh shg`kl hs`k`k xk; hn ejl cvck) xojxshnh shgl `agh n. Fwkw  
Kz/l hk xfkx C[ghk Ckshnxkxk rcsxvcsxkvc 'znvi ; .

f) Fc/bxgcnx xsc ocfcnxk fxn rxsl xkx, szbi l i cl l hg`  
ac; xgv shoghl hrgh xojxshnh shgl `agh n. Fegc ; x, Jcfcnx mc XfKx  
Csxnxk zb jctsxngcnxkvc |edycl fcnxk szbi kvck amc mcsyddx mc  
ocgtcjxß ; cgl cgcnxkx ]`ohnl hghn` fwkh l xshgv`n.

m) Ukghn`k fc/bxgcnx vc mcsxddcj szbi ki ncmhdcjvck  
]`ohnjl `a mc ncmhdcjx jcpnxt ejl xagcn. Fwkw XfKx : csxnxk  
XI hl Pi sedk <sup>TM</sup> -`k oi jfcsxkx kcrG ejvxdx bhl hk 'znvi ; .

r) Ukghn`k fc/bxgcnx mcsxddcj ahl xg ughk ocfcnxk  
phl `s`k` xojxshnh shgl `a mc fwkh dhgk`b xahnc ejl xagcn. Jcfcnx,  
XfKx Csx n mc XfKx : csxn Lcpcl l cv xfkx Cfx Fc; nxk  
l c; jwfwkw kcrG ejvx; gcnx bhl hk fwkw 'znl c; ughn.

y) Ukghn`k fc/bxgcnx mcsxddcjxk bx;n ugwkvwyyw ocfcnxk phl`s`k` xojxshnh shgl`a mc xojxshn`kh vh pe] fxn xahnc ejl cl xagcn. Fegc ;x, fwkw |edycl fcnxk Fckx-Phaxl x vc/mcj ejl csx fhncvc Xfkx Pxahl`k kcrq ejvxdx pcvxsvc`znvi;. }i k;x unhhv`h amc mcsxddx mc ocgxcjx tx;wlß szbgcnx Cgx™`k fhncsxkvc xv.

v) Ukghn`k fc/bxgcnx mcsxddcjx fharh l c/khdh dubl wagh. Fegc ;x, Jcfcnhcx |edycl fcnxk pcvxskvc, Xfkx Cfxg-Pcvxv xsc Xl hl Cgx™`k ;cghl`kvh fw xax`znl i agcn.

e) Ukghn`k fc/bxgcnx vc fw l cscgcvcck rctgcj evcnc; ukw zb ;xjhfgghn`k`k fxxkvc`cjxnl xa, fharh ;xjhfkvh xsc xojxshnh shgl`a mc u szbi k denxkc fharh fxn l i cl l hg` szb rudl wavwn. Fegc ;x, fw xax Jcfcnx zb jhnxoxkvc mc jctsxnxkvc`znl i avi n.

c) Ukghn`k fc/bxgcnx ;xjhfk`k fxxk[x ]h`kvh ukw redv ejl xa, sukh;` ]h`ghnvh xsc xojxshnh shgl`av`n. Fegc ;x, Lcpcl l cv Pi sedk Ped;cg âPcdhjw L i pcl l cvß ;xjhfkvh fw xax`znl i avi n.

CPGX-FEDJ MC UKGHN-K PH: XLXDDCJ PHRR- FHNC SXKVC  
|EDYCLFCNX-C: NCL ; -VCK KCRG UGWKLWA  
NCMHDCJGCN

Fxb xl hl ghn`k mc Cpgx-fedjxk phrr` fhncsxkvc |edycl fcnx-C;ncl ; -xk fwdwnvwyyw ncmhdcjgcnx nhhav`nl hr l crhl`kvh ugvwyl wlvhk cmmcgvc;x fcpsgcnx fcdhk ejl c; bcwnx xv. }i k;x ukghn`k fhncsxkvc |edycl fcnx-C;ncl vck kcrq ugwkxk pcvxsgcn, dwohn`vh redv ugwkvwyyw ;xl x, l i ojcgxt duggghgh znj-fhsv`n evxgcnc; jcpnxt ugwkl wavwn. Scfcfx vc fw xv ;x, ukghn wlvk csngcn fudw ocgxcgcnxk sxdhscjx xgc l i ohgxt xv mc [i b/x l xrvhn xsjxskh ugl hrgh ukghnvhk pe] kc rhgl hl`av`n. Pcl xk [i b/x l xrvhn`vh oi gcth l c;jcfxkxk hgxl gcnx rctgcj i bi kvck zb ;xjhfgghn`kvh redv ejl xagcn. Hgghp fxbc l i mcttcxddcj cjh ejl xavxn ;x, ukghnvhk h`hp ughr. Xkvx Hgghp-jhhghvkh ;zl c; xsjcl c;gc, cmmcg;x ncmhdcjgcncvck cghmc ughnhr ukghn`hahy`vh redv evxnx;...

MCSXKXK L I OJCGXT XFHNCGCNGC JC/DXK UGWKLHS-

âXsjxghpgghnß fzgl csxkvc, mcsx mc mcsxddcjxk jc/nxtxkvc redv ejvx; ;x, mcsx fc/bck amcsxddcjß mc ukvhk hg`khk fharh

szbgcngc jc/dxk ugwkwn. Lcscgck, mcsxddcj evck acos zb mcsxsxkc vedxn... âSckc mcsxddcj evxncl ;x, txghk-txghk xagcnx 'zncsck.ß Fc/bck vc mcsxddcjxk l c/khs`k` dejxnck fxn ;cgl c xgc ugwn. Lcscgck, mcsxddcj evck acos zb mcsxsxkc fegc vedxn... âSckvck xsjcdxncl ;x, txghk xagcnx 'zncsck.ß Fc/bck xsc u, l xshg i]i k, fxn ;csc ocfcn mencnc; vedxn... âTxghk;csc mcsxddcj ejl xacl ß, dhowv âtxghk xax, dhowv txghk aedx ukh pcmhgc ejl xacl .ß Pcl xk fcpsvc vevx; ;x, fi ji k fw ;cgl cgcnc mc ukghn`k uoahn` ughk shxn ;cgl cgcnc fwkw 'zsjcnxn ;x, mcsxddcj evck acos mcsxkx zbi kvck suknh kx'hnhk ugvwyw xagcnc jc/dxk evxn. |edycl fcnc-C;ncl xk zbi kvck suknh;` xagcnc mcsx jc/dxk ejl csxkvc vc mcbxddcj edkxgc fegcvxn. Fw ;cgl cgcncvck fxnx vc |edycl fcncxk zb cl x uygwswkw ukwk mhsxjcsxgc âmcbxnß jc/dxk ejvxdx ;cgl cvxn...

#### |EDYCLFCNXK MCBXNX

h) Rwn/hkx-: cnxl vc mc ukwk jctsnx ughk |edycl fcnc si kksxkvc

|edycl fcnc-C;ncl i XI hl Cgx™ -h fwdwnvw...

أَمَّا تَرَضَىٰ أَنْ تَكُونَ مِنِّي بِمَنْزِلَةِ هَارُونَ مِنْ مُوسَىٰ إِلَّا أَنَّهُ لَا نَبِيَّ بَعْدِي

âSck nhb` ugl hbshkl` ;x, l ckxl gc sckxk l i khsxfcjxk Lwsh xgc Phnwkww l i khsxfcjx ;xl x ugswk?! Fw tcnrgc ;x, l ckvck suknh pe] fin |edycl fcnc ugl hdh[hrv`n.ß

Hgghp-jhhgh Rwn/hkx-: cnxl vc Lwshk`k xsjcdxkx, Phnwkww l crhl mc l ckbxgcjxkx ohj`nghvnhnr fwdwnwn... Lwsh Hgghph fegc cnb ejvx...

﴿وَأَجْعَلْ لِّي وَزِيرًا مِّنْ أَهْلِي هَارُونَ أَخِي اشْدُدْ بِهِ أَزْرِي﴾

âMc l ckxl i]i k zb ohkcvhk`l vkh ughk fin mcbxn rcnhn men – rhnvha`l Phnwkww l ckxl hnohl` ukwgh l zp;cl gcj.ß<sup>1</sup>

Lwshk`k xsjcdxkxk rcfwg evxgl csx xgc cghrcvhn fegc fwdwnwgvn...

﴿وَلَقَدْ آتَيْنَا مُوسَى الْكِتَابَ وَجَعَلْنَا مَعَهُ أَخَاهُ هَارُونَ وَزِيرًا﴾

âFxb Lwshdh ;xjhf menvx; , rhnvha` Phnkw ukwk mcbxn se]vx; .ß<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âJhphß swncsx, hdc.29-31.

<sup>2</sup> âTwnrhkß swncsx, hdc.35.

f) |edycl fcn j Cgx ™ -' kc mhoj zbi kc mcbxn jc/dxk ejvx?

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl Cfvi g-L i j jcgxf zmghvghn`k` ]hy`n`f ukghnh ásbjcnvck phks` fñxkxb fw xavc l ckc ;z l c; evcnsxkb?...ß vevx; vc, ukghn`k hnhs`kvh dhgk`b Cgx ukh l i sfcj [hmhf menvx, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl vc l cpb pcl xk 'i k ukw zb mcbxn j c/dxk ejvx.

Pcl ]xkxk Csl h fñkjx l l eds ncmhdcj evcnc; vedxn... |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk fegc vwh ejvxdxkx eajvxl ... â |cnmcnvx'hnh! Lckc zb ohkcvhk`l vkh ughk fñ mcbxn men.ß (Fw, egc fñ mhojvh ugi wavw ;x,) |edycl fcnx-C; ncl Hgghp vcn'hp`kh vwh evcnc; vevx...

اللَّهُمَّ إِنِّي أَقُولُ كَمَا قَالَ أَخِي مُوسَى: اللَّهُمَّ اجْعَلْ لِي وَزِيرًا مِنْ أَهْلِي أَخِي عَلِيًّا أَشَدُّ بِهِ

أَزْرِي

â |cnmcnvx'hnh! Lck Sckc, rhnvha`l Lwshk`k vevxdxkx vedxncl ... |cnmcnvx'hnh! Lckxl i]ik zb ohkcvhk`l vkh fñ mcbxn rcnñn men – rhnvha`l Cgkx. Hnohl` ukwkgh l zp;cl gcj.ß<sup>1</sup>

Si dwjxkxk jctsn ;xjh`kvh âmc[/cg gx mcbxnck l xk cpgxß hdxsxxk jctsnxkvc vedxgn...âFw hdc khbxg ughk bhl hk |edycl - fcn Hgghp vcn'hp`kvh vwh evcnc; vevx... â |cnmcnvx'hnh! Hnohl` ukwkgh – rhnvha`l Cgx xgc l zp;cl gcj.ß Hgghp-jhhgh ukwk xsjcdxkx ncmh ejvx.ß

Xfkx Zl cnvck ncmhdcj ugwkwn ;x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl Cgx-dc fwdwnvw...

أَنْتَ أَخِي وَوَزِيرِي تَقْضِي دِينِي وَتُنْجِزُ مَوْعِدِي

âSck l ckxl rhnvha`l mc mcbxncl sck, fun[ghn`l` rhdjnhh[hr mc mc/vcl c meth evc[c;sck.ß<sup>2</sup>

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl zbi ki k Cgx ™ -h fwdwnvwyw âsck l ckxl i]ik Phnwkwk Lwshdh ughk l ckbxgcjxkvcscck, fw tcnrgc ;x, l ckvck suknh pe] fñ \edycl fcn 'cgl cdc[c;vñß szbi xgc Phnwkwk Lwsh xgc cghrcvhn l hgx; ugvyw pcn fñ aedx – ki fi mmcjvck fharh – Xl hl Cgx ™ i]ik vc xsfhj evxn ;x, fw l crhl ghn`k vh

<sup>1</sup> âNxdhbwk-ki bñcjß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.163æ Cpl cv xfkx Pckfcgk âLckhrxß ;xjh`kvkh kcrgek.

<sup>2</sup> âLc[l ci b-bcmhvxß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.121æ â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 1-[x ]h\, 6-[` [xgv, scp.155, Jcfcnhkvck kcrgek.

fxnxk[xsx Phnwkww mcbxngx; l crhl `kvh ugl hs` vxv.

åKcp[i g-fcghycßvc redv ugwkwn ;x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl  
Cgxdc fwdwnvw...å... Gh;rk sck mcbxnsck.ß¹

Xl hl Cgx™ -`k l c;jwfwkh [hmhf ughnhr Ca/csxx vxgxk-  
vck uowkhk fxn ae/nvc vc fegc vedxgx...å|edycl fcnxk mcbxnx mc ukwk  
;inc;ckx...ß

|edycl fcnxk zb cl x uygwswkh fwdwnvwyw åsck l ckxl rhn-  
vha`l mc mcbxnxl sck, fun[ghn`l `cvh, mc/vcl c mcth evcksckß szbi kvck hd-  
v`k ugwn ;x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl ukw zbi kvck suknh mcsx rcnhr  
menl xavxn. Pcl ]xkxk, fw u pcbncjxk fwdwnvwyw åsck l ckxl  
ocgxtcl sckß szbi kvck vc hdv`k ugwn...

|EDYCLFCN j -XK OCGXTCSX

å|edycl fcnxk Lcvxkvc; x ocgxtcsxß fzgl csxkxk Jcfw;  
rcbmcsx pxsscsxkvc åScpxpx Fwohnxßvck fegc fxn pcvxx kcrg  
ejvx; ... |edycl fcnx-C; ncl Jcfw; h vuynw dugh vi ack bhl hk  
Cgxkx zb [hxxaxkx rhnhn menvx, Cgx vevx... åLckx rhv`kghn mc  
wahrghngh fxn`cl x rudwnshk?ß |edycl fcn fwdwnvw... åNhb`  
ugl hbshkl `; x, sckxkgc l ckxl l ikhsxfcjxl Lwsh xgc Phnwkww l ikhsxfcjx ;xl x  
ugswk?! Fw tcnrgc ;x, l ckvck suknh pe] fxn \edycl fcn `cgl cdc[c; vxv.ß

Hgghp-jhhgh vh Phnwkww Lwsh jcnctxkvck [hxxaxkx ugl hs`  
xgc cghrcvhn fwdwnwn...

﴿وَقَالَ مُوسَى لِأَخِيهِ هَارُونَ اخْلُفْنِي فِي قَوْمِي وَأَصْلِحْ...﴾

åLwsh zb rhnvha` Phnwkx vevx... Rzml il hnhs`kvh l ckxl [hxxaxkxl ug  
mc ukghn` xsghp ej.ß²

åL i skcvx Cpl cvßvc |edycl fcnxk Cfvi g-L i jxcgxf zm-  
ghvghn`k` vc/mcj ejl csx xgc cghrcvhn redv ugwkxk x; x ncmhdcj-  
vck fxnxkvc u pcbncjxk Cgx™ -`k phrr`kvh fwdwnvwyw szb  
åmc ocgxtcjxß, dc/kx ål ckxl [hxxaxkxl sckß tunl hs`kvh `cgl xa-  
vxv.³

|EDYCLFCN j -VCK SUKNH L I SCGL HKGHN-K MCGXSX  
(NCPFCNX)

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl ]uogw phgghnvh ha; hn ac; xgvc

¹ åKcp[i g-fcghycß, 190-[` oi j fc.

² åC/nhtß swncsx, hdc.143.

³ åL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.111.

fwdwnl wavwn ; x, xl hl Cgx l i scgl hkghn`k mcgxddx-cl nxvxn. U  
[i l gcvcck...

1-Ac;mh pcvxsx...

Cpl cv xfkx Pckfcgxk âL i skcvß ; xjh`kvh, Kcshxkxk  
âOcshxsß ; xjh`kvh, Ph; xl xk âL i sjcvnc; ß ; xjh`kvh mc fharh  
; xjhfgnhv redv ugwkwn ; x, Fi nedvc vedxn... | edycl fcnx-C; ncl  
x; x rnw\w Dcl ckc 'zkvcnvx, ukghnvkh fxxkx fha]`g`r ejl c;  
Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfkx, vx'cnx xsc Ohgxv xfkx Mcgxvxxk zpvcsxkvc  
xvx. Pcbncj | edycl fcn fwdwnvw... âPcn mhoj fxx-fxxkxkbc  
]hjsk`b, Cgx phl `k`b`k fha]`s` ugh[hr. C'cn hdn`gshk`b,  
sxbgcncvck pcn fxx zb ri mmcgcnxkxk scn; cnvcsx ugswk.ß Fi nedvc  
vedxn... Dcl ck cphgxskvck ughk Fckx-Bedv rcfxgcsxkc ]hjv`r mc  
mwnwavwr, l i scgl hkghn l i anx; gcnc rhgxf 'cgvxgc. Ukghn`k  
[ck'hmcngcnxkx zgvi nvi ; , shy rhghkghn`k` xsc csxn jwjvwr. Cgx  
csxn viack rhv`kghnvkh fxxkx zbi i ]i k se]vx. Ohgxv xfkx  
Mcgxv fw l cscgckx l c; jwfvh dhb`f l ckc menvx ; x,  
| edycl fcnc ]hjv`n`l . | edycl fcnxk dhk`kh 'cgxf l c; jwfw  
jcpmxg menvxl . L c; jwfw | edycl fcn i ]i k uowvwghn, rcbcfvck  
u pcbncjxk nck`x vcdxavx. Vevxl ... âDh Ncswgcgghp! Fw phgvhk  
Hgghph `ckhp h`hn`nhl ! Lckx fxx ; xax xgc 'zkvcnvxk mc  
tcnl hk menvxk ; x, ukh xjhcy evxl . Lck vc ukwk tcnl hkghn`kh  
xjhcy ejvxl .ß | edycl fcn fwdwnvw...

لَا تَقْعُ فِي عَلِيٍّ فَإِنَّهُ مِنِّي وَأَنَا مِنْهُ وَهُوَ وَلِيُّكُمْ بَعْدِي

âCgvc edf hojhnl h, ]ik;x u l ckvckvxn, l ck vc ukvhkæ u l ckvck suknh  
sxbxk mcgxkxbvxn.ß<sup>1</sup>

Vx'cn fxx ncmhdcjvc xsc Finedvckxk fegc vevxdx kcrg  
ugwkwn... âLck vevxl ; x, Dh Ncswgcgghp! Sckxkgc dugvha  
ugl hy`l `k phrr`kh hkv menxncl ; x, cgxkx h] mc l ckxl gc  
Xsghl cshs`kvh dekxvck fed/cj ej.ß Xsghl cshs`kvh ukwkgh  
fed/cj ejl cdxk[c, ukvhk hdn`gl hv`l .ß<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.356æ âOcshxsw Kcshxß, scp.24, xfhncjvc  
hbh[`r tcnrgæ âL i sjcvnc; x Ph; xl ß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.110, hbh[`r xojxghtghæ  
âL c[l ci b-bcmhxvß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.127æ â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 12-[x [xgv, scp.207,  
Xfkx Cfx Aedfcvck, xojxshngh, 12-[x [xgv, scp.210, Vedgcl xvckæ â: i kwbwg-  
pcrhrß (Lckhmx), scp.186.

<sup>2</sup> âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.350, 358 mc 161æ âL c[l ci b-bcmhxvß, 9-  
[xgv, scp.128, Jcfcnhkxkxk âCg-umscjß ; xjh`kvh kcrg ugwkghkghnh cshsck



âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, âL i skcvx Jcdhgxsxß  
 mc shxn ; xjhfgnhvhl XI nhk xfkx Pcsxkxk fegc vevxdx ncmhdcj  
 ugwkwn... U l i phnxfvc |edycl fcn scphfcgcnxkvck vznv kctcn  
 fxn-fxnx xgc \edl hk fhyghv`ghn ; x, pcn mhoj |edycl fcnx  
 'znscgcn, Cgxvck ukh ax; hdcj ejssxkgcn. |edycl fcnxk dhk`kh  
 'cgvx; gcnx bhl hk ukghnvhl fxnx vevx... âDh Ncswgcgghp!  
 Fxgxnsxkxbl x ; x, Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf txghk-txghk xagcnx 'znvi ?!ß  
 |edycl fcn ukvhk i b vzkvcnvx. X; xk[x, i] i k[i, vznvi k[i  
 kctcn vc pcl xk xax 'znvi gcn mc pcn vctc vc |edycl fcn  
 ax; hdcj evckgcnvck i b vzkvcnvx. |edycl fcn fwkvhl suknh,  
 rcbcf cghl cjx i bi kvc bhpvn ughk fxn phgvh, unvhv;`ghnh i b  
 Jemxnx fwdwnvw...

مَا تُرِيدُونَ مِنْ عَلِيٍّ؟ عَلِيٌّ مِنِّي وَأَنَا مِنْهُ وَهُوَ وَلِيُّ كُلِّ مُؤْمِنٍ بَعْدِي

âCgxvck kc xsjcdxnsxkxß?! Cgxvck kc xsjcdxnsxkxß?! Cgxvck kc xsjcdxnsxkxß?! Cgx  
 l ckvckvxn, l ck vc ukvhkhl , Cgx l ckvckvxn, l ck vc ukvhkhl . U, l ckvck  
 suknh pcn fxn l z/l xkxk mcgxsk ugh[hrv`n.B<sup>1</sup>

X: XK{X AX: HDCJ

âWsvwg-yhfcb, âL c[l cwb-bcmhxvß mc fharh ; xjhfgnhvhl  
 Mcpcf xfkx Pcl bckxk fegc vevxdx ncmhdcj evxgn... âL cvxkcvck  
 L c; ; cdc rcvcn Cgx xgc fxngx; vc xvxl . Ouaghl hv`y`l fc/bx  
 aedgcnx ukvh l i ahpxvc ejvx; vc vevxl ... âC'cn |edycl fcnxk  
 dhk`kh rhd`jshl , sckvck ukh ax; hdcj evc[cdcl !ß L cvxkcdc  
 'cgvx; vc |edycl fcngc 'zni ai f vevxl ... âCgx txghk-txghk xagcnx  
 'znvi ...!ß Pcbncj fwdwnvw... âFegc szbgcn vhl`al h! U l ckvck suknh sxbc  
 ncpfcng; i] i k [hl hhj hnhs`kvhl ck ghdxr acosvxn.B<sup>2</sup>

AX: HDCJ BHL HK~

Jhnxo]xgcn mc sxnc dhhbkghn redv ejl xagcn ; x, XI hl Cgx  
 T<sup>M</sup> Dcl ckc x; x vctc 'ejl xavxn. Hl l h fxbxl kcbcnxl xb[c i ]

Fi nedvc |edycl fcnxk fegc vevxdxkx kcrv evxn... âL ck pcn ; csik mcgxscldcl sc, Cgx vc  
 ukwk mcgxsvxn.B

<sup>1</sup> âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, 13-[i [xgv, scp.165, Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf T<sup>M</sup> -`k tcbxgcjx  
 fhf`. âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.437â âL i skcvx Jcdhgxsxß, 3-[i [xgv,  
 scp.111, pcvxs 829â âL i sjcvnc; x Ph; xl ß , 3-[i [xgv, scp.110. âOcshxsw Kcshxß,  
 scp.16 mc 19. âPxgdcjwg-zmgxdhß (Cfx Kcxl ), 6-[` [xgv, scp.294â âNxdhbwk-  
 kwbncjß, 2- [x [xgv, scp.171. â: ckbwg-i l l hgß, 12-[x [xgv, scp.207 mc 15-[x [xgv,  
 scp.125.

<sup>2</sup> âWsvwg-yhfcb, 5-[x [xgv, scp.94â âL c[l cwb-bcmhxvß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.109.

vctc 'ejl xavxn mc fw, âx[jxphvghnß fzgl csxkvc redv  
 evxgc[c; vxn. Pcn phgvh ukwk ho`n`k[`s` px[ncjxk ukwk[w xgxkvc  
 fha menl xavx ;x, XI hl Cgx pc[[cjwg-mxvhvh, âjcnmxdcß  
 'i ki kvck rhfhr 'cgxf |edycl fcnc ruawgl wavw. Redv ugwkhh  
 ax; hdcj c'cn |edycl fcnc x; x vctc jcrvxl evxgl xasc vc, dekc  
 vc ukwk fxnxk[xsx L cvxkvc, px[ncjxk ukwk[w xgxkvc rhfhr,  
 x; xk[xsx xsc L c; ;cvc mc XI hl `k dugvhaghñ`k`k âjcnmxdcß  
 'i ki kvck rhfhr 'cgxf |edycl fcnc ]hjl hghñkvhk suknh  
 ugl wavwn. } i k; x ukghn pc[[ 'i kgcñxkvck suknh L c; ;cdc  
 ]hjl `av`ghn. Fwkh cshsck, fc/bx hgxl gcñxk âRcvxn-Owl phvxscsx  
 fw ax; hdcjc 'znc ugl wavwnß - vedc jcscmmi n ejl cgcñx  
 dhkg`av`n. } i k; x Rcvxn-Owl phvxscsx pc[[ cl cggcñxkxk denxkc  
 dejxngl csxkvck suknh {zptc l ckjcrscsxkvc mc f i j i k  
 l i scgl hkghñ`k pi bwnwkvh fha menl xavx. Fwnhvh xsc  
 |edycl fcñxk szbi dhgk`b ax; hdcj evckgcnc dzkcgxnæ egc ax; hdcj  
 l c[gsxkvc mc ax; hdcjxk ukghñ`k zbi jcnctxkvck fxnfah  
 jcrvxl evxgl csx bhl hk`!

HI l h x; xk[x ax; hdcjc 'cgvx; vc xsc, pcvxs ukwk L cvxkcdc  
 rhd`jv`rvhk suknh fcdhk evxgvdxkx 'zsjcnxn.

## 2- FHARH HDV-K "ZSJCNXAGCN

Xfkx Hffhs`k fegc vevxdx kcrg ugwkwn... â|edycl fcñx-  
 C; ncl j Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h fwdwnvw...

إِنَّ النَّبِيَّ قَالَ لِعَلِيٍّ : أَنْتَ وَلِيُّ كُلِّ مُؤْمِنٍ بَعْدِي

âSck l ckvcksck mc l z/l xkgcñxk pcñ fxnxkxk mcgxsxck.B<sup>1</sup>

XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k fegc vevxdx kcrg ugwkwn... |edycl fcñx-  
 C; ncl j l ck fwdwnvw...âSck l ckvcksck mc f i j i k l z/l xkgcñxk  
 mcgxsxck.B<sup>2</sup>

CGX <sup>TM</sup> --K MCGX-CPVGDXKC MC MCSXGDXKC VHYN

I L WL X }HY-N-A

Ph; xl Pcs; hkx Xfkx Hffhsvhk mc {hfxnvck fegc ncmhdcj  
 evxn... âHgghp pcbncj L i pcl l cvc tcnl hk menvx ;x, Cgxkx  
 [hl hhjh mxghdcj (ncpfcngx;) i ] i k jcrvxl ejsxk. |edycl fcñ vc

<sup>1</sup> âL i skcvx Jcdhgxsxß, 11-[x [xgv, scp.360, pcvxs 2752æ âNxdhbwk-kwbncjß, 2-  
 [x [xgv, scp.203.

<sup>2</sup> âJhnxox Fhyvhvß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.239, â: ckbwg-i l l hgß, 15-[x [xgv, scp.114  
 mc 12-[x [xgv, scp.221

[hl hhj`k ázb cl x uygwswkw se]vxß vedc[c; gcnxkvck runown mc  
fw l cscgcckx l cbcl l cj mhsxjcsxkc ]emxnc[c; gcnxkvck epjxdhj  
evxnvx. Kcphdcj Hgghp-jhhgh ukh fegc fxn mcpd ejvx...

﴿يَا أَيُّهَا الرَّسُولُ بَلِّغْ مَا أُنْزِلَ إِلَيْكَ مِنْ رَبِّكَ وَإِنْ لَمْ تَفْعَلْ فَمَا بَلَّغْتَ رِسَالَتَهُ وَاللَّهُ يَعْصِمُكَ

مِنَ النَّاسِ إِنَّ اللَّهَ لَا يَهْدِي الْقَوْمَ الْكَافِرِينَ﴾

âEd |edycl fcn! |cnmcnvx'hnik jcnctxkvck sckc khbxg ughkghn' [hl hhjh  
]hvjv'n! C'cn ]hvjv'n! hshk, nxshgcjx jcfgy ejl cl xsck. (Fxx ;x,) Hgghp sckx [hl hhj`k  
acnxkvck runwdh[hrv'n!ß<sup>1</sup>

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl vc Rcvxn-Owl vh Cgxkxk mxghdcjxkx  
[hl hhjh ]hvjv'nv'.<sup>2</sup>

Bxdhv xfkx L i kbcnxk vc fegc vevxdx ncmhdcj ugwkwn... Cfw  
{c/tcn L cpcl l cv xfkx Cgxkxk pi bwnwkvh xvxl , u, [hl hhj  
i ]i k szpfcj evxnvx. Pcsck Fcsnxvck ncmhdcj kcrq evck fcsncgx  
fxn ;xax hdhyh rhgo`f vevx... âEd |edycl fcn zmghv`! Sckc tcvh  
ugwl ! Pcsck fxbc ocfcn menxf vel xavxn ;x, ádh cddwpcn-Ncswgw  
fcggy l h wkbxgc xgcd;c...ß hdcx fxn ;xax fhncsxkvc khbxg ugl wavwn.  
Gh; xk u, pcl xk ;xaxkxk hv`k` fxbc vel cvx.ß

Xl hl <sup>TM</sup> fwdwnvw... âC'cn (ukwk ;xl ugvywkw) vel c;  
xsjcscdvx, vedcnvx, gh; xk runownvw! {cfnhxg <sup>TM</sup> |edycl fcnx-  
C; ncl i -xk dhk`kh 'cgvx... Suknh vevx... âHgghp sckc  
tcnl hk menxn ;x, i l l cjxkx khl hb, bc; hj, unw[, pc[[ (pz; l gcnx)  
xgc jhk`a ejvxdxk ;xl x, ukghn`k mcgxsg xgc vc jhk`a evcsck ;x, fw  
l cscgcgcnxk pcn fxnxkvc pz[[cj ukghnh jhl hl ugswk.ß  
|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i vevx...

يَا رَبِّ إِنَّ قَوْمِي فَرِئُوهُ عَهْدٍ بِالْجَاهِلِيَّةِ وَفِيهِمْ تَنَافُسٌ وَفَخْرٌ وَمَا مِنْهُمْ رَجُلٌ إِلَّا وَقَدْ وَتَرَهُ

وَلِيَهُمْ وَإِنِّي أَخَافُ أَيَّ مِنْ تَكْذِيبِهِمْ

â|cnmcnvx'hnh! Lckxl rzml il [hpxgddcj vzmnikvck pcgc vc  
wbhrghal hl `av'n, fxn-fxnkc zdikif tcon ejl c; pssx ukghnvh pcgc vc rhg'n.  
Ukghn`k pcn fxn zb mcgxcnxkvck (Cgvck) l i cddck rcvsn bcnfc 'znl i agcn. Lck

<sup>1</sup> âL hxvcß swncsx, hdc.67

<sup>2</sup> âAcmhpxvwj-jckbxgß, Lcpcl l cv Fhrxn Lcpl wvwkwk jcprxr, Fednwj  
]h\, px[nx 1393-[i xg, 1-[x [xgv, scp.192, pcvxs 249. Cfvi ggghp xfkx Cfvi ggghp  
xfkx Cpl cv, Ph;xl Pcs; hxx Kxah\wnx hv` xgc l capwnvwn mc 5-[x px[nx  
xgxkxk fzdi ; hgx l gcnxkvckvxn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg` âJcb; xncjwg-pi tthbßvh  
(Pxkvxsjhk ]h\, 4-[i [xgv, scp.390æ Lxsxn ]h\, 3-[i [xgv, scp.1200, 14-[i  
jcfcrckxk ho`n`kvh) redv ugwk l wavwn.

(ukghn`k jc; bxf ejl csxkvck) runownhl .B Fw bhl hk Hgghp adh cddwpcn-Ncswgw fcggy... mcgghpw dc/sxl w;c l xkckkhsß hdcxkx khbxg ejvx. Fwnhvh Hgghp ukwk ([hl hhj`k acnxkvck hl hkvh mc) shghl hj rhgh[hy`kh bcl hkcj menvx, jcfgy ejl cvxdx swncjvc xsc jcpvxx ejvx. |edycl fcn vc Cgxkxk cgxkvck jwjwf rhgv`nv`...<sup>1</sup>

âL e/nh[ß pcvxsxkvc XfKx Hffhs`k fegc vevxdx ncmhdcj ugwkwn... âL i jchg Hgghp`k Zb |edycl fcnxkc fwdwnvwyw aedgcnvck fxnx vc fw vxv...

وَأَنِّي لَمْ أَبْعَثْ نَبِيًّا إِلَّا وَجَعَلْتُ لَهُ وَزِيرًا وَآتَاكَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ (ص) وَإِنَّ عَلِيًّا وَزِيرُكَ

âLck egc fxn \edycl fcn 'zkvcnl cl xacl ;x, ukwk ijik mcbxn rcnln menl cdxl ...sck Hgghp`k Ncswgwshk, Cgx vc sckxk mcbxnkvxn.B

XfKx Hffhs vedxn...â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl j l e/nh[vhk rhd`jv`y` bhl hk [hl hhjgh fw fhncvc vkh`al hr xsjcl xnvx. } i k; x ukghn [hpxgddcj vzmni kvck ]uo vh hnhghkl hl `av`ghn... Kcphdcj bxg-pc[[ckxk 18-x 'cgxf ]hjv` mc L i jchg Hgghp fegc fxn hdc xgc ukh mcpd ejvx... âDh cddwpcn-Ncswg fcggy...ß |edycl fcn [hl hhjh fwdwnvw... âEd xkshkghn! Hgghp l ckx egc fxn (hy`n) mcbxtc xgc sxbc jcnct 'zkvcnl xavxn ; x, sxkcl ukvhk vnhghl `av`n mc runownhl ; x, l ckx l ijicpxl mc jc; bxf evcsxkxb. Hl l h xkvx |cnmcnvx`hn`l l ckx jcpvxx evcnc; runowjl wavwn...<sup>2</sup>

Pcl ]xkxk Pcs; hkx mc XfKx Csh; xn, Cfw Pinedncvck ncmhdcj evxngcn ; x, u fegc vel xavxn... Hgghp jhhgh adh cddwpcn-Ncswg... hdcxkx CgxddxfKx Cfx JhgxfKx (mxghdcjx) fhncsxkvc khbxg evcnc; fwdwnl wavw...âC`cn fw xax 'znl csck, nxshgcjx sukh ]hjv`nl hl `shk.B

Pcl ]xkxk Cfvi gghp xfkx Umtxvck fegc ncmhdcj ugwkwn... â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl j Rcvxn-Owl vh ]`o`a ejvx, adh cddwpcn-Ncswg fcggy...ß hdcxkx jxghmcj ejvx. Suknh Cgxkxk cggcnxkvck jwjwf u rcvcn dwohn` rhgv`nv` ; x, rugjwywkww hjj`kvh; `hyg`r 'zni kl cdc fhaghv`. Suknh fwdwnvw... âH`hp ugwk! Lck pcn ;cskx l zmghs`dhl sh...<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.191æ âCsfhfwwk-ki bwgß, Mhpvxæ âKwbwggw-Rwn/hkß (Cfx Kcxl ), pcl xk hdckxk jctsnxkvck.

<sup>2</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.192-193

<sup>3</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.190. Cfvi gghp xfkx Umtx – Cgrcl c xfkx Ohgxv Csgcl x Pi vedfxddc si gpi kvv xajxnh; ejl xa scphfcvxn mc |edycl fcnx C; ncl j -vck suknh wbwk zl i n si nl i a, 86, dhowv 87-[x px[nx xgxkvck mcthj ejl xavxn. U : wtcvc mcthj evck ho`n`k[ scphfc vxv. Ukwk pcvxsxkx fi ji k

Mhpvxv âCsfhfwk-ki bwgvh, Si dwjx âVwnnwg-l ckswnß-vh  
Cfw Scxv Oxvnxvck fegc ncmhdcj evxn... âDh cddwpcn-Ncswg feggy...  
hdcsx Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfk fhncsxkvc khbxg ugl wavwn.ß¹

âJctsnx-Si dwjxßvc xfkx Lcs/wvvhk fegc kcrj ugwkwn...  
â|edycl fcnxk vzmni kvc fw hdckx fegc jxghmcj (jctsn) evxnvx; ...

âEd |edycl fcn, Cgxkxk l z/l xkgcnxk l zmghs` ugl hs` xgc  
cghrcvhn Ncfffkxk jcnctxkvck sckc khbxg ughkghn` jcfgy ejæ  
c'cn fwkw ]hjv`nl hshk, nxshgcjx jhl hl ghl hl `shk.ß²

Xfkx Lcs/wvwx l crscvx fwvwn ;x, ukghn |edycl fcnx-  
C; ncl j -xk vzmni kvc fw hdckx fegc jctsn evxnvxgc.

RCVXN " I KI KVC: X L CNHSXL OCFCNX

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl j bxg-pc[[ckxk 18-[x 'i ki kvc  
pc[[cjwg-mxvhvhk rhd`vhk bhl hk fw hdc khbxg ugvw.³

﴿يَا أَيُّهَا الرُّسُولُ بَلِّغْ مَا أُنْزِلَ إِلَيْكَ مِنْ رَبِّكَ...﴾

U pcbncj {zptc l ckjcrsxkvc dengcack Rcvx-Owl  
]zgi kvc (Lcvxkc, Lxsn mc Ahl dugwkwx fxn-fxnxkvck  
hdn'gv`y` denvx) vi acn'c shgv`. " zsjcnxa menvx ;x, hnohvh; `ghn  
'cgxf ]hjs`k, rhfhrvh 'evckgc v'cnx rhd`js`k. U pcbncj  
scphfcgcxk u ]zgv; x hyh[ghn`k hgj`kvh ujwnl hs`k`k rhna`s`k`  
hgv` mc fwdwnvw ;x, unhvh; `jx; hkghn` jcl xbgcsxkvc.

Suknh âcscghjw [hl xcjcklß (dc/kx... [hl hhj khl hb`l)  
kxvhs`k` menvx, vph suknh ukghnh jcnct 'evxf bzpn khl hb`k`  
axvvcjgx xsjxvc r`gv` mc oi jfc uowl hr i ]i k hdhyh rhgov`.  
Hgghph pcl v-sckh ejvx; vck mc ukghnh zdi v-kcsxpcj  
menvx; vck suknh fwdwnvw...

اني اوشك ان ادعى فاجيب واني مسؤول وانتم مسؤولون فماذا انتم قائلون ؟

âDho`k bhl hkghnvh Hgghp l ckx (Zb vcn'hp`kh) ]hy`nh[hr mc l ck vc Ukh  
(l isfcj) [hmhf menc[cdcl ! Lck vc l cs/wgddcj vha`d`nhl , sxb vc l cs/wgddcj  
vha`d`ns`k`b. Xkvx (vedyk 'zn l ) sxbk kbcnxkxb kcvxn?ß

Vevxgc... âAcphvcj menxnx; ;x, sck nxshgcjx ]hjv`nv`k, fxbc

âScpxpß l i cgxtgcx ncmhdcj ejl xagcn. Jcn[i l edx-phg` âJcrnxfwj jcpbxfßvc  
(1-[x [xgv, scp.402) mc âWsvwg-yhfcbvc (3-[i [xgv, scp.121) redv ugwk l wavwn.

¹ âCsfhfwk-ki bwgß, scp.135, âVwnnwg-L ckswnß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.298, âTcjpwg-  
rcvxnß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.57, âJctsnx-Kxah`wnxß, 6-[` [xgv, scp.194

² âVwnnwg-L ckswnß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.298

³ âL c[l cwv-bcmhvxß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.105, 163-164. Fw pcvxsxk hnv`k` vh  
jebgx; gc redv evc[cdx; .

rhna` oedxnohpg`r ejvxx. Hgghp sckc oedxngx l i ; hthj mensxklß  
 |edycl fcn i fwdwnvw...âAcphvcj menl xnsxkxbl x ; x,  
 Hgghpvhk fharh pe] fxn l c/fwv duovwn, L i pcl l cv Ukwk  
 ncswgwvwn, [ckkcj-[cpckkcl phrv`n?ß  
 Vevxgcñ...âCgfcjjc ; x, fwkghnh acphvcj menxnx; ß  
 |edycl fcn i Hgghp vcn'hp`kh cnb ejvx...  
 â|cnmcnvx'hnh, ahpxv uglß Suknh fwdwnvw... âL c'cn  
 eaxjl xnsxkxbl x?ß  
 Vevxgcñ...âCgfcjjc ; x, eavxnx; ß  
 Fwdwnvw...âEd xkshkghn! L ck sxbxk hnhk`bvkh 'evxncl . Sxb  
 ekx Ahl`k Fwsnh l ckjcrsxxkvck Dcl ckxk Sck/h l ckjcrsxxkc  
 rcvcn ughk fxn pumwbvhl ckxl dhk`l h 'cgc[c; sxkxb, unvh  
 wgvwbghn`k shd` rcvcn 'i l i a [hl ghn mhnv`n. L ck sxbvck  
 âScrcgedkß fhncsxkvc sunwah[hyhl . Fho`k 'zni k, l ckvck  
 suknh ukghngh ke[c nctjhn evc[c; sxkxblß  
 Fxn kctcn kvxh evxf vevx...âDh Ncswgcgghp! Scrcgedk kvxn?ß  
 Fwdwnvw... âFxn Hgghp`k : xjhfv`n ; x, ukwk fxn jcnctx  
 Hgghp`k cgxkvvcvxn, vx'cn jcnctx xsc sxbxk cgxkxbvcvxn. Ukh fcn; -  
 fcn; shn`g`k ; x, pe] mhoj dugwkwbw xjxnf hby`k ugl hdhs`k`b!  
 X; xk[xsx xsc l ckxl xjncjxl – Cpgx-fedjxl vxn. Gcjxt mc Ocfxn  
 (pcn aedvck ocfcvhn) ughk Hgghp l ckc ocfcñ menl xavxn ; x, fw  
 x; xsx pumwbwk dhk`kvhl ckcl ]hjhkh rcvcn fxn-fxnkvck  
 hdn`gl hdh[hrgghn. L ck vc fwkw Hgghpvhk xsjcl xacl ! Fegc xsc,  
 fw x; xsxkvck rhfhgh ; e]l cdxk, c; s phgvh pcgh; ughns`k`bæ  
 ukghn`k fhncsxkvc scpgck; hng`r vh ejl cdxk ; x, dekc vc pcgh;  
 ughns`k`b. Ukghnh (Cpgx-fedjc) fxn aed zdcjcl cdc ]hg`al hd`k,  
 ]i k; x ukghn sxbvck ]uo fxgx; gvxvn.B¹  
 Suknh fwdwnvw... âFvgl xnsxkxbl x ; x, l ck fi ji k  
 l z/l xkgcnc, ukghn`k zbgcnxkvck vc hnj`r xojxdhn shpxfxdcl ?ß  
 Vevxgcñ...âCgfcjjc! Dh Ncswgcgghp!ß  
 X; xk[x vctc ughnhr fwdwnvw... âFvgl xnsxkxb (dhowv acphvcj  
 menl xnsxkxb) ; x, l ck pcn fxn l z/l xkc, ukwk zbi kvck hnj`r

¹ Dekc unvh, scp.162-164. Ukwk xfhnccgnxkvck fc/bxgcñxkx Ph; xl zb  
 âL i sjcvnc; ßxkv (3-[i [xgv, scp.109-110), xfkx : csxn zb âJhnxoßxkv (5-[x [xgv,  
 scp.209 mc 213) redv ejl xagcn. Pcl ]xkxk âAcmhpxvwj-jckbxgß, 1-[x [xgv,  
 scp.192-193, âLz/[cl wg-fwgvhkß, {zptc l hvvcsxæ âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 4-[i  
 [xgv, scp.281 mc 372, âSi kckx xfkx L h[cß, tcbgw Cgx fhf`. Fwnvh l i ojcgxt  
 xfhnccgcnc ncmhdcj evxgl xavxn.

xojxdhn shpɤfxdcl ?β

Vevxgcñ...âCgfcjic ; x, dh Ncswgcgghp, fxgxnx; .<sup>1</sup>

Suknh Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf<sup>TM</sup> -`k cgxkvck jwjvw, u rcvcñ  
rhgv`nv` ; x, [hl hjj pcñ x; xsxkxk rugjwywkwx hgi`kvh; `hyg`y`  
'znvi gcñ.

Suknh fwdwnvw...

âEd xkshkghñ! Hgghp l ckxl l zmghl v`n, l ck vc sɤbxk l zmghk`bhl . Lck  
pcñ ;csxk l zmghs`dhl sh, fw Cgx vc ukwk l zmghs`v`n. (Suknh fegc vwh  
ejvx.) |cnmcñvñ`hnh, ukw semckgcñx sem, ukwk vial ckgcñkx vial ck fxg. Ukh  
;zl c; evckgcñc ;zl c; ej, ohñ evckgcñx ohñ ej. Ukw semckgcñx sem, vial ck  
ughkghñh vial ck ugβ<sup>2</sup> Suknh vevx...â|cnmcñvñ`hnh, Zbik ahpxv ugβ!

Unhvñ phb`ñ ughkghñ pcgc fxñ-fxñxkvck hdn`gl hl `av`ghñ ; x,  
fw hdc khbxg ugvw...

﴿الْيَوْمَ أَكْمَلْتُ لَكُمْ دِينَكُمْ وَأَتِمَمْتُ عَلَيْكُمْ نِعْمَتِي وَرَضِيتُ لَكُمُ الْإِسْلَامَ دِينًا﴾

âFw `ik Lck vxkxkxbx sɤbxk i]ik ;hl xg ejvxl , ke/l cjxl x sɤbc jhl hl ghv`l  
mc Xsgl `k sɤbxk i]ik fxñ vxk ugi hs`kh nhb` ugvwl .β<sup>3</sup>

|edycl fcñx-C; ncl i fwdwnvw... âHgghpw C; fcñ!  
Vxkxk ;hl xggxdx, ke/l cjxk jhl hl ghkl hs`, l ckxl nxshgcjxl  
mc Cgxkxk mxghdcjx Hgghp` nhb` ejl xavxn.β<sup>4</sup>

âJhnnox Dc/rwfxβkxk âLcvxkvc Rwn/hk khbxg ugi hs`β  
fhf`kvñ vedxgxñ... â|edycl fcñ i -c khbxg ughk ho`n`k[`  
hdc âcg-duml w c;l cgjw gc;wl ...β hdcx xvñ. Fw, scpxp mc shfxj fxñ  
ncmhdcjvxñ. Fw hdckxk pcl xk `i kvc – Rcvñ-Owl `i ki kvc  
khbxg ugi hs` Cl xncg-l z/l xkxk Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfkx  
mxghdcjxkc ha; hn fxñ vcgxg xvñ.<sup>5</sup>

âLi skcvx Cpl cvβ mc âJhnnox xfkx : csxñβ ;xjhfgñh`kvñ  
vedxgxñ... âFwkvhk suknh Zl cn xfkx Ocjjhf ukw jcfñx; ejl cdc  
'cgxf vevx... âEd Cfw Jhgxfkx uygw! Li fhñc; ugswk ; x, l ckxl

<sup>1</sup> âLi skcvx Cpl cvβ 1-[x [xgv, scp.118-119, 4-[i [xgv, scp.281, 368, 370, 372â  
âJhnnox xfkx : csxñβ, 5-[x [xgv, scp.209, 212, âAcmhpxvwj-jckbxgβ, 1-[x [xgv, scp.190,  
l i ojcgxt xfhncgcñgc.

<sup>2</sup> Dekc unhvñ pcl ]xkxk âJhnnox xfkx : csxñβ 5-[x [xgv, scp.209

<sup>3</sup>âL hxvcβ swncsx, hdc.3

<sup>4</sup> Dekc unhvñ, xfhncgcñvc hñh[`r tcnrgc.

<sup>5</sup> âJhnnox Dc/rwfxβ, 2-[x [xgv, scp.43

mc pcn fñn l z/l xkxk l zmghs` ugvwk!B<sup>1</sup>

Fharh fñn ncmhdcjvc vedxgn ; x, Zl cn fegc vevx...âFcp-fcp,  
l i fhnc; ugswk sckc, ed Cfw Jhgxfxk ugw!B<sup>2</sup>

*XLHL CGX™ HCLLHLC RUDLH LCNHSXLX*

|edycl fcnx-C;ncl i -xk âScphfß hvg` rhnh  
cl l hl csx mhn xvx. Ukw oi swsx 'ikgcncv, u [il gcvck  
Lc;;ckxk tcjp ugwkl hs` 'iki ;xl x cghl cjvhn phvxscgcncv  
fha`kh rudhnv`.<sup>3</sup> Fw 'ikvc ukw Cgx™ -k fha`kh rudvw.  
Cfvi g-c/gh Fcpnhkx Rcvxn-Owl 'iki kvc u pcbncjc cl l hl c  
rudl h l cnhsxl xkx fegc ncmhdcj evxn... â|edycl fcnx-C;ncl  
i Rcvxn-Owl 'iki kvc Cgxkx ]hy`nv`, fha`kh fñn  
cl l hl c rudvw mc cl l hl ckxk w[wkw ukwk ; i ncdxkc hjv`.B<sup>4</sup>

Xl hl Cgx™ -k fegc fwdwnvwyw kcrg ugwkw...  
â|edycl fcnx-C;ncl i Rcvxn-Owl 'iki kvc rhnh fñn cl l hl ckx  
l ckxl fha`l h rudvw ; x, ukwk fñn w[w ]xdkxl vc xvx.B<sup>5</sup>

âL i skcvx Jcdhgxsxß mc âSi kckx Fedpcrxß ; xjhfgnh`kvh Cgx  
™ -k vxgxkvck vedxgn... â|edycl fcnx-C;ncl i Rcvxn-  
Owl 'iki kvc l ckxl fha`l h fñn cl l hl c rudvw mc ukwk  
fñn w[wkw ]xdkxl c hjv`, suknh fwdwnvw... âHghp-jhgh Fcvn mc  
Pikedk vzdiaçcnxkvc fegc fñn cl l hl cdc l hgx; ughk l cgc;gcñx l ckxl  
;zl cdxl c 'zkvcnl xavx...ß Suknh fwdwnvw... âFw cl l hl c l isçgl hkghn`k  
l i anx;gcncvck se]xgl c mhsxjcsxvxn.B<sup>6</sup>

Pcl ]xkxk Cgx™ -vhk ncmhdcj evxn ; x, |edycl fcnx-  
C;ncl i fw cl l hl ckx zb cgx xgc ukwk fha`kh fhyghv`,  
x; x jcnctxkx ]xdkxkc hjv` mc suknh fwdwnvw...âRhd`j!ß U rhd`jv`.  
Suknh fwdwnvw...âLckc jcnct 'cglß U, i bi ki |edycl fcnc jcnct  
Jemxnvx. Fwkvhk suknh u pcbncj i bi ki scphfcgcnc jwjwfw

<sup>1</sup> âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.281, âJhnnox xfkx : csxnß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.210 âfwkvhk suknhß ; cgl csx xfkx : csxnvckvxn.

<sup>2</sup> âAcmhpxvwj-jckbxgß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.157 mc 158.

<sup>3</sup> âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, pc[[ ; xjhF, pcvxs 451-452â âSi kckx Cfw Vhmwvß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.54 mc âAcnpwg-l cmhpxfß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.10, Cfw Kcxl xk âLc/nxtc]ws-scphfcß ; xjhF kvhk kcrgck.

<sup>4</sup> âNxdhbwk-ki bncjß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.289 mc âWsvwg-yhfçß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.114

<sup>5</sup> âXshfçß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.274, Cfvi ggghp xfkx Fxanxk jcn[i l edx-phg`.

<sup>6</sup> â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 20-[x [xgv, scp.45â âL i skcvx Jcdhgxsxß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.23 mc âSi kckx Fedpcrxß, 10-[w [xgv, scp.14.



fwdwnvw...âLcgc;gcnxk jh[ghn', fho fegcvxn!B<sup>1</sup>

Xfkx Hffhs vedxn... â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl j zbi ki k  
âScphfB hvġ` cl l hl csxkx Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h fhy'aghv'y` bhl hk ukh  
fwdwnvw...âEd Cq! Fw cl l hl c cncfġcnxk jh[v'n.B<sup>2</sup>

Cfvi gghp xfkx Fxan vedxn... â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl j  
Rcvxn-Owl 'i ki kvc Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -` ]hy'nv` mc ukwk fha'kh fxn  
cl l hl c fhyghv`, ukwk fxn jcnctxkx x;x ]xdxkġcnx hnhs'kh  
fwnhohnhr fwdwnvw...âLckxl |cnmcnvx'hn'l Pikedk l i phnx'fcsxkvc fegc  
cl l hl cdc l hġ; ughk l cgc;ġcġc l ckc ;zl c; ejvx. Fw, l i scġl hkġhn'k  
l i anx;ġcnvck se]xġl c mhsxjcsxvxn.B<sup>3</sup>

### HKV X}VXNXGL C LCNHSXLX

Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> [hl hhj` : wtc l cs[xvxxkx pcdcxkx d'yv`  
mc ukġnh fwdwnvw... âSxbx hkv menxncl Hgghph... |edycl fcnx-  
C; ncl j -xk Rcvxn-Owl 'i ki kvc vevxdx szbgcnx eavvck  
pcn fxn l i scġl hk hdhyh rhġos'k mc fwkh ahpxv ughkġhnvhk  
fharh pe] ;cs hdhyh rhġol hs'k.B

Fw bhl hk [hl hhjvhk 30 kctcn hdhyh rhġov`. Fharh  
ncmhdcjġcnvc vedxġn ;x, [hl hhj`k ]uow hdhyh rhġov`.<sup>4</sup>

Cfvi n-Ncpl hk vedxn... âFw bhl hk Fcvn cġġkvck uk x;x  
kctcn hdhyh rhġov` – shk;x, ukġhnvhk fxnxkx xkvx vc  
ohj`nġhd`nhl – suknh acphvcj menvxġcn ;x, u 'i kvc  
|edycl fcnx-C; ncl j ukwk cġkvck jwjhnhr [hl hhjh  
fwdwnvw... âFxġl xnsxkxbl x ;x, l ck l z/l xkġcnc ukġhn'k  
zbgcnxkvck vc hnj`r xojxdhn shpxfxdcl ?B

Vevxġcn...âFcġx, dh NcswġcġghplB

Fwdwnvw... âLck pcn ;csxk l zmġhs'dhl sh, Cq vc ukwk l zmġhs'v'n.  
|cnmcnvx'hnh, ukw semckġcnx sem, vial ckġcnx xġc vial ck uġe ukh ;zl c; evckġcnc  
;zl c; ej, ukw ohn evckġcnx ohn ej.B

Cfvi n-Ncpl hk vedxn... âl ] kctcnvck fharh phl ` hdhyh

<sup>1</sup> Dekc unvhv, Aedo xfkx Fhbhkvkh kcrġck.

<sup>2</sup> Dekc unvhv, Vedġcl xvck kcrġck.

<sup>3</sup> Xfkx Jhmwswk âCl hkwġ-cojhnB ;xjh'kvh;` ncmhdcjx fegcvxn. Hl l h  
Cfvi gghp xfkx Fxanxk âXshfcBvc;x jc[i l edx-phġ'kvh (2-[x [xġv, scp.274,  
kzl nc 4566) âRcvxn 'i ki B szbi duovwn.

<sup>4</sup> âL i skcvx Cpl cvB, 4-[i [xġv, scp.370 mc âJhnnox xfkx : csxnB, scp.211-212.

rhgov`. Cgx vc ukghn` rhny`aghv` mc rhny`a` vh ukghn` jwjvw.ß<sup>1</sup>

Cfw Ji tedg vedxn... âLck ac;; mc jcncvvi v x]xkvc ]zgc ]`ov`I . Bedv xfkx Cnrcl x 'zni f sunwavwl ...âEaxjvxl ;x, Cgx fegc-fegc szbgcn vedxn?ß

Bedv vevx... âFwkwx kcdxkx xk; hn evxnsck? |edycl fcn i -xk Cgxdc vevxdx u szbgcnx l ck zbi l eaxj l xavxl .ß<sup>2</sup>

Fharh fxn ncmhdcjvc vedxgn... âNcpfcvc fxn vcsjc hvhl Cgxkxk dhk`kh 'cgxf vevxgn... âShghl ugswk sckc, ed fxbxl l zmghl `biß xl hl <sup>TM</sup> fwdwnvw... âLck ke[c sxbxk l zmghk`bhl , phgfww; x sxb cncfgcnvck fxn rnw\swkwß Vevxgn... âEaxj l xax; ;x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i Rcvxn-Owl 'i ki kvc fegc fwdwnl wavwn...âLck pcn ;csxk l zmghs`dhl sh, fw Cgx vc ukwk l zmghs`v`n.ß

Nhmz vedxn... Ukghn 'ejvx; vck suknh hnohghn`d[h vi ai f sunwavwl ... âFwkghn ;xl vxngcn?ß Vevxgn... âCkshnvhk fxn vcsjcvxn ;x, Cfw Cddwf vh ukghnvhk fxnxvxn.ß

Vx`cn fxn ncmhdcjvc redv ugwkwn ;x, xl hl <sup>TM</sup> ukghnh fwdwnvw...âSxb ;xl sxkxb?ß Vevxgn...âSckx semckgcnx; , ed Cl xncg- l z/l xkxk!ß<sup>3</sup>

FW I L L C J V C M C S X K X K J C / D X K U G W K L H S - L W S H <sup>TM</sup> --K

I L L C J X K V C M C S X K X K J C / D X K U G W K L H S - X G C E D K X V X N

Cmmcg; x fcpsgcnvc redv ugwkvw ;x, Jzmnjhvh fegc dhhb`gl `av`n...âHgghp-jhhgh Lwsh <sup>TM</sup> -h fwdwnvw...âDwac xfkx Kkw se], ukw fijik vcsjcgcnxk rhna`s'kvh rcnln men, zb cgykx ukwk cgykc rud, phl `k`k 'zbi zkikvc ukh mcsxddcj ej, zbikik l crhl , pedfcj mc cbcl cjxkx fxn rxsl xkx ukh fhy`agh ;x, fijik Fckx-Xsnhxg rzml i ukw eajxsxkgn, zbgcnxkx vhoxg ugwf-]`ol hghn`k` ukwk tcnl hk` xgc denxkc dejxsxkgn.ß Lwsh <sup>TM</sup> Hgghp`k tcnl hk`kh xjhcj evcnc; Dwackx fijik vcsjcgcnxk zki kvc rcnln menvx, Hgghp`k fwdwnvwyw ;xl x zb cgykx ukwk cgykc rudvw. Fwkwkgh vh ukh mcsxddcj ejvx.

Pcl ]xkxk, Hgghp-jhhghk`k Rwn/hkvh pcbncj Ohjcl wg-ckfxdh i -c fwdwnvwyw hdcgcnxk l cbl wkw xgc vc h'hp

<sup>1</sup> âL i skcvx Cpl cvß 1-[x [xgv, scp.118-119 mc 4-[i [xgv, scp.370æ âL c[l cwb-bcmhxvß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.105æ âJhnnox xfkx : csxnß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.210-212.

<sup>2</sup> Dekc unhvh.

<sup>3</sup> Dekc unhvh.

ugvwr...

﴿يَا أَيُّهَا الرَّسُولُ بَلِّغْ مَا أُنْزِلَ إِلَيْكَ مِنْ رَبِّكَ وَإِنْ لَمْ تَفْعَلْ فَمَا بَلَّغْتَ رِسَالَتَهُ وَاللَّهُ يَعْصِمُكَ

مِنَ النَّاسِ﴾

âEd |edycl fcn, |cnmcnvx'hñ'k'k jcnctxkvck sckc khbxg ughkgghn` [hl hhjh  
]hvj'n, c'cn ]hvj'n l hshk, zb nxshgcjxk denxkc dejnl cl xsck mc (fag ;x,) Hgghp  
sckx [hl hhj'k acnxkvck runwdh[hrv'n.ß

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i vc Rcvxn-Owl 'i ki kvc  
ph[`ghn` fñn denc ju`ghv`, ukghn`k phl `s` – hnohvh rhghkgghn mc  
rhfhrvh 'evckgcñ fñn denc d'y'av`ghn. Suknh [hl hhj'k 'zbgcñx  
zki kvc (ukghn`k shd` jcrnxfck dejl xa l xk kctcn xv) Xl hl  
Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k cgxkvck jwjwf rhgv`nv` mc ukghnh vevx... âAcphvcj  
menl xnsxkxbl x ;x, l ck l z/l xkgcnc, ukghn`k zbgcnxkvck hñj'r xojxdhn shpñfxdcl ?ß

Phl `g`rgh â|cnmcnvx'hñh, cgfcjzc ;x, ahpxvgx; evxnx;ß -  
vedc [hmhf menvx;vc u pcbncj zbi ki k l crhl , pedfcj mc  
cbcl cjxkxk fñn pxsscsxkx Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h fhy'aghd`f fwdwnvw... âLck  
pcñ ;csxk l zmghs`dhl sh, fw Cgx vc ukwk l zmghs`v'n. |cnmcnvx'hñh, ukw  
semckgcñx sem, ukh vial ck ughkgghn vial ck ug...ß

Fwnhvh redv ugwkghkgghn |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -vck  
suknh i l l cjxk Xl hl ` mc ukghn`k mcgxddx-cl nxkxk jc/dxk  
ugwkl hs`kh vcghgcj evck acnxt kcfcmx si kkcscxkxk fñn rxsl x  
xvx. Suknh;` fzgl cvc Hgghp`k :xjh`f kvh fw fhncvc khbxg  
ughkgghn` redv evc[cdx; .

RWN/HKX : CNXL VC MXGHDCJ MC WGWG-CLN

h) Rwn/hkx : cnxl vc Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k mxghdcjx.

Cmmcg; x pcvxsgcnvc ha; hn ac; xgvc redv ugwkwnvw ;x, Xl hl  
Cgx <sup>TM</sup> |edycl fcn i -vck suknh l z/l xkgcñxk mcgxddx-  
cl nx mc ncpfcñxvxn. Fw vh l cpb hahy`vh;` Rwn/hk hdcscxkxk  
fcdhk ejvxdx l cscgcvxñ...

﴿إِنَّمَا وَلِيُّكُمُ اللَّهُ وَرَسُولُهُ وَالَّذِينَ آمَنُوا الَّذِينَ يُقِيمُونَ الصَّلَاةَ وَيُؤْتُونَ الزَّكَاةَ وَهُمْ رَاكِعُونَ﴾

âSxbxk l zmghk`b (ncpfcñ mc mcgkxb) dhgk`b Hgghp, Ukwk |edycl fcnx mc  
xl hk 'cjñck, khl hb r`g`f, ni ;w phgkvh bc;hj menckgcñvñ.ß

Fw l c/khk` hahy`vh;` ncmhdcjgcñ vc jcsvxrgcdxn...

Jcfcñxkxk âJcñsñbñkvc, Mhpxvxkxk âCsñhfwk-kwbwgßwkvh,  
Ph; xl Pcs; hkxkxk âAcmhpxvwj-jckbxgßxkvc, Fxghbcñxkxk

âCkshfwg-canhtb̂ kvh mc fharh ; xjhfgnhvh Xfkx Hffhsvhk, Ckcs xfkx L hgx; vck, XI hl Cgxvck mc fharhghn̂ kvhk ncmhdcjgc n kcrg ugwk l wavwn ; x, ukghn̂ k oi ghscsx fegcvxn...

âFxn tcrxn l i scgl hk |edycl fcn l cs[xvxc vhoxg ugvw mc [hl hhjvhk ; zl c; xsjcvx. Ni ; w phĝ kvh ughk Cgxvck fharh pe] ; csxk rcgfx ukwk khgcsxkvck dhkl hv̂. U pcbncj shy cgxkx hnohdh jcnct wbjhv̂ mc tcrxnc xahnc ejvx ; x, cgxkvc ughk r̂ nl̂ `b̂ dcl ck crxrgx i bi di ]`ohnjŝ k. Tcrxn fw xax 'znvi mc ukh vwh ejvx, suknh ]`o`f̂ 'ejvx. Pcgf fcn ; cs l cs[xvvck ]`ol hl̂ `av̂ ; x, {cfnhxg <sup>TM</sup> âXkkcl h mcgddw;wl wghpw mc...β hdcxkx 'cjxnvx. Pcsshk xfkx Shfxj ukwk fhncsxkvck fcn ae/n ruavw ; x, ukwk fc/bx pxsscgcnx fegcvxn...

أَبَا حَسَنٍ تُفَدِّيكَ نَفْسِي وَمَهْجَتِي  
فَأَنْتَ الَّذِي أُعْطِيتَ إِذْ أَنْتَ رَاكِعٌ  
وَكُلُّ بَطِيءٍ فِي الْهَدْيِ وَمُسَارِعٍ  
فَدَتْكَ نَفُوسُ الْقَوْمِ يَا خَيْرَ رَاكِعٍ  
فَأَنْزَلَ فِيكَ اللَّهُ خَيْرَ وَلَايَةٍ  
فَأَنْبَتَهَا فِي مُحْكَمَاتِ الشَّرَائِعِ

âEd Cfcg-Pcsck! {xsl xl vc, [hk̂ l vh sckc tcvh ugswk.  
Pcn si n/cjgc mc dhmha 'evckxk [xsl x, [hk̂ sckc tcvh ugswk!  
Sck u ; cssck ; x, ni ; w phĝ kvh epshk ejvxk.  
Fw rzml i k [hk̂ sckc tcvh ugswk, ed ck dhoo` ni ; w evck!  
Hggghp ck dhoo` mxghdcjx sckxk fhnckvck khbxg ejvx.  
Ukw acnxcjxk l zp; cl̂ hdcgcnxkvck redvc hgvd̂.β

FW HDCKXK VCGHGCJXKC JWJWGHK XNHV

Oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk hgx l gcnxkvck fc/bxgcnx dwohn̂ vh redv ugwkxhk ncmhdcjxk l cbl wkwxh xnhv jwjnhnr vel xagcn ; x, hdcvc; x âcggcbxkc hl ckwb̂, âcggcbxkc dwrxl wkcb̂ mc âmc pwl nh;wxkb̂ ; cgl cgcnx [cl̂ tunl hŝ kvh 'cgl xavxn. {cl̂ ; cgl csxkvck vc mhpvx fcn acosxk – XI hl Cgxkxk fhah vi ai gl̂ csx [hxb vedxgvxn.

Licggt vedxn... Fw, bckk-'i l hkvhk fharh fcn aed vedxgvxn. } i k; x [hxb ugl hdhk aed jc; phgvh xagckck ; cgl cvck [cl̂ xk

<sup>1</sup> âJctsnx Jcfcnxβ, 6-[̂ [xgv, scp.186æ âCsfhfwk-ki bwgβ, scp.133-134æ âAcmhpxvwj-jckbxgβ, 1-[x [xgv, scp.161-169æ âCkshfwg canhtb̂, 1-[x [xgv, scp.225, pcvxs 151æ âYcnhxfwg-Rwn/hkβ, âJctsnx Jcfcnxβkxk phaxdcx (Kxahfwnx), 6-[̂ [xgv, scp.167-168æ âVwnnwg-Lckswñβ, 2-[x [xgv, scp.293-294, âckki rwgw tx csfhfxk-ki bwgβ fhf̂ kvh;̂ (scp.90-91-vc) ncmhdcjvck suknh vedxgvxn... âFwkghn pcl̂ xk ahpvxgcnvxn ; x, fc/bxgcnx fc/bxgcnxkx jcsvxrgcdxn.β âJhnnox xfkx : csxnβ, 7-[x [xgv, scp.357.

kcbcnvc jwjwgl hs`v`n. Hl l h fwkwk c;sx pcn fxn phgvh  
[hxbvxn mc ]uo dengcnvc xagckl xavxn. Fwkwk l xshg`k` Rwn/hk`k  
]uo denxkvc jh`l hr ughn. Fegc ;x, âL i khtxrwkß swncsxkvc; x  
jc/fxngcnx l xshg `cjxnl c; ughn...

﴿إِذَا جَاءَكَ الْمُنَافِقُونَ قَالُوا...﴾

Jcfcnx fw swnckxk jctsnxkvc dnb`n... âFw hdcgcnxk  
phl `s`kvh l crscv ([il gcgcnxk [cl tunl hs`kvh `cgl csxkc  
fhol hdnhr, l i j.) Cfvi ggph xfkx l fedd Scgwgawn... Hgghp-  
jhhgh fw swnckx cmmcgvc ho`nh ;xl x ukwk fhncsxkvc khbxg  
ejl xavxn. Fegc ;x, fxbxl vevxdxl xb ;xl x, âcpgx jc/mxgß vc fegc  
vel xagcn, ncmhdcjgc mc ofcngcn vc ukw jcsvxrgcdxn.ß<sup>1</sup>

Si dwjx pcl xk hdcgcnxk jctsnxkvc Xfkx Hffhsvhk fegc  
ncmhdcj evxn... âHgghp-jhhgh fw swncvc l i khtxrgcnxk fhncsxkvc  
khbxg ejvxdx pcn fxn aedvc dhgk`b Cfvi ggph xfkx l feddx  
kcbcnvc jwjl wavwn.ß<sup>2</sup>

Sxnc dnbhkghn`k mc jctsn]xgcnxk kerg ejvxdxkc cshsck  
phvxsc fegc ugl wavw... âFckx-L i sjcgr rcbmcsxkvck suknh  
Zl cn xfkx Ocjjhf`k oxvl cj]xsx {cp[hp Yctthnx ocbnc[gcgcnxk  
pcl `edl hk` ughk Sckhk {i pckx xgc fxn rwdw i sji kvc  
vhghav`, ukghn shmhal hyh fhaghv`ghn. Sckhk âDh l c/acncg-  
ckshnß ai hn`k` menvx, {cp[hp xsc âDh l c/acncg-l i ph]xnxkß  
vedc ]`y`nv`. Zb dugvhaghn` xgc unhvh phb`n ughk Cfvi ggph xfkx  
l fedd (Bedv xfkx Cnrcl vc unhvh xv) rcbcfgcckxf vevx...  
âVuynvvhkl ` fegc ejvxgc?! Xkvx fxbxl zb zg;cl xbv xtxohn  
evxf zdi ki n mc ]uo aedgc xsjcdxngcn! Hgghph hkv ugswk,  
fxbxl gc Ri neda ;z];i kgcnxkxk l cscgx âxjxkx ;z;cgj ;x, sckx  
rh`s`k!ß vedck ;csxk l cscgx ;xl xvxn. H`hp ugwk! Hgghph hkv  
ugswk, c`cn fxb Lcvxkcdc rhd`jshr, cbxbgc bcgxggcnx unhvhk  
]`ohnvh[hrghn.ß

Suknh zb rzml i kc l i nh]xcjgc vevx... âFwkw sxb zbi ki b  
zbi ki bc ejvxkxb! Ukghnh zb denxkxbvc den menvxkxb, l hg-  
vzmgcjxkxb ukghngh fzgi avi nvi ki b. Hgghph hkv ugswk, c`cn  
cgxkxbvc ughkghn` ukghnh menl cscdvxkxb, sxbxk zg;ckxbvck ]`o`f  
`evcnvxgcnlß

Bedv xfkx Cnrcl fw szbgcnx eaxjvx, ukghn` fxnfhah

<sup>1</sup> âJctsnx Jcfcnxß, 28-[x [xgv, scp.280.

<sup>2</sup> âJctsnx Si dwjxß, 6-[` [xgv, scp.223.

|edycl fcn i -c ]hjv`nv`. ZI cn vc unhvh xv. U vevx...  
 âDh Ncswgcgghp! X[hbc men, ukwk fudkwkw mwnwl lß Pcbncj  
 fwdwnvw... âC'cn fegc ejsc, Dcsnxfvc ukwk oednxkc ]uogw scs  
 w[hghnlß

ZI cn vevx... âC'cn xsjcl xnsxkxbsc, l i ph[xngcnvck ughk fñ  
 kctcn ukw zgvi nsi k. X[hbc menxk, Sc/v xfkx L chb mc  
 L cpcl l cv xfkx L csgcl c ukw rcjgc dejxnsxk!ß

|edycl fcn i fwdwnvw... âL ck xsjcl xncl ; x, [hl hhj  
 âL cpcl l cv zb csphf`k` zgvi ni flß vesxkgn.ß

Fwkvhk suknh Cfvi gghp xfkx l fedd |edycl fcnxk dhk`kh  
 'evxf vevx ; x, fegc fñ aed csgu ugi hl `av`n. Ckshn fw  
 szbgcnxkc 'znc Bedvx l cbcl l cj ejvxgn mc Cfvi gghp vevxgn...  
 â: ha, |edycl fcnvck sckxk i ]i k xsjxythn ejl csxkx xsjcdcdvxk.ß

U, fha`k` deggcdxf vevx... âVevxkxb ; x, xl hk 'cjxn, l ck vc  
 xl hk 'cjxnxl . "zsjcnxa menvxkxb ; x, l hg`k`k bc; hj` men, l ck  
 vc bc; hj`k` menxl . Xkvx dhgk`b fw rhg`f ; x, âL cpcl l cvc  
 sc[vc ejlß vedc cl n evcsxkxb!ß

Fw swnc vc ukwk fhncsxkvc khbxg ugvw, hahy`vh;` hdc ukw  
 kcbcnvc jwjhnhr fwdwnvw...

﴿هُمُ الَّذِينَ يَقُولُونَ لَا تُنْفِقُوا عَلَىٰ مَنْ عِنْدَ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ حَتَّىٰ يَنْفُسُوا﴾

âUkghn pcl xk ; csgcnvx ; x, â|edycl fcnxk dhk`kvh ughkghnh xkthr ejl cdix,  
 rudwk vhy`g`a`f 'ejsxkgnß - vedxngcn.ß

Pcl ]xkxk fw hdc...

﴿وَإِذَا قِيلَ لَهُمْ تَعَالَوْا يَسْتَغْفِرْ لَكُمْ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ لَوَّا رُؤُوسَهُمْ﴾

âUkghnh â'cgxk, |edycl fcn Hgghpvhk sxkxk i]ik xsjxythn vxgcsxkß -  
 vedxgvx; vc, fhaghn`k` deggcdxnvxgn.ß<sup>1</sup>

Hgghp-jhhgh fw swncvc jc; [c fñ kctcn ughk Cfvi gghp xfkx  
 l fedd fhncsxkvc âcggcbxkcb (u ; csgcn ; x), âdcrgwkwcb (vedcngcn),  
 âpwl ß (ukghn), âjchgumß ('cgxk) mc s. ; xl x oxjhfgnhvhk xsjxthvc  
 ejl xa, dc/kx jc; fñ acosc [cl ; cgl cgcx xgc l i nh[xcj ejl xavxn.  
 Fi ji k l i tcssxngcn fwkw l i jjctxr kcbngc vel xagn, ncmhdcjgc  
 vc ukwk l epmcnxkvc [cncdhk evxn. Rwn/hkvh fegc phgghn  
 ugvr[h ]uovwn. L xshg i ]i k, âJzmfcß swncsxkxk 61-[x hcdsx...

<sup>1</sup> âJctsnx Jcfcnß, 28-[x [xgv, scp.71-vck suknhâJctsnx Si dwjxß, 6-[` [xgv,  
 scp.226-vhk suknh. Fxb ukghn`k kcrj ejvxdx ncmhdcjgcx mc fharh ; xjhfgnhvhk  
 ughk ncmhdcjgcx r`sh ac; xgv redv ejvx; .

﴿وَمِنْهُمْ الَّذِينَ يُؤْذُونَ النَّبِيَّ وَيَقُولُونَ هُوَ أُذُنٌ﴾

âUkghnvhk fc/bxgcnx |edycl fcnc cbhf-cbxddcj menxf vedxnvxgcn ;x, u, rwghr  
mc jeb xkhkhkv'n.ß

âHgx-Xl nhkß swncsxkxk 172-[x hdcxsx...

﴿الَّذِينَ قَالَ لَهُمُ النَّاسُ إِنَّ النَّاسَ قَدْ جَمَعُوا لَكُمْ فَاخْشَوْهُمْ...﴾

âU ;csgcn ;x, [hl hhj ukghnh â[hl hhj sxbxk cgedpxkxhc cgfxn ugl waghnß  
vedcngcn...ß

Pcl xk swncxk 154-[i hdcsxkvc xsc vedxgxn...

﴿يَقُولُونَ هَلْ لَنَا مِنَ الْأَمْرِ مِنْ شَيْءٍ﴾

âUkghn âfixbc rcgfcvck fxn aed kcsxf ugh[hr] `ß vedcngcn.ß

Fw mc fharh hdcgcnvc oxjhfk [cl tunl hs`kvh 'cgl csxkc  
fhol hdnhr, dhgk`b fxn acos kbcnvc jwjwgwn mc Rwn/hkvh  
fegc aedgcn ]uovwn.

F) WGWG-CLN CGX™ MC UKVHK SUKNH: ~ XLHLGHNV-N

Dwohn`vh redv ugwkxk l i jcmhjxn mc l i jcbhtxn ncmhdcjgcn  
xsfhj evxn ;x, Cgx™ |edycl fcnc-C; ncl i -vck suknh  
l z/l xkgcnxk mcgxddx-cl nx, l zmghs` mc ncpfcnxvxn. "cgc[c;  
ncmhdcjgcn xsc fw hdcvc; x âwggw-cl nßxk ohnx[x ki l wkcgcnxkxk  
;xl ugl hs`k` hdv`kghav`n`n. L i jchg Hgghp âKxshß swncsxkxk 59-  
[w hdcsxkvc fwdwnwn...

﴿يَا أَيُّهَا الَّذِينَ آمَنُوا أَطِيعُوا اللَّهَ وَأَطِيعُوا الرَّسُولَ وَأُولِي الْأَمْرِ مِنْكُمْ﴾

âHghph, Ukwk Ncswgwkh mc sxbvck ughk cl n shpxfgcnxkc xjhcy evxk.ß

âAcmhpxvwj-jckbxgß ;xjhfk`k l i cggxtx Cgx™ -vhk ncmhdcj  
evxn ;x, u, |edycl fcnc-C; ncl i -vck sunwavw... âDh  
Kcfxddcgghp, ukghn ;xl gcnvxn?ß Fwdwnvw... âSck ukghn`k  
fxnxk[xsxsck.ß

L i [hpxvvck vc ncmhdcj evxn ;x, u vedxnl xa... âSxbxk wggw-  
cl nxkxb Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfvxn ;x, Hgghp-jhhgh Lcpcl l cv  
i -xk mcthj`kvk suknh;` mxghdcj phrr`k` egc ukwk  
shyg`y`kvk ukh fhy`aghv` mc fw xa pcbncj Lcpcl l cvxk ukw  
Lcvxkcvc zb denxkc rudvwyw mhoj fha menl xavx. Hgghp Zb  
fckvcgcnxkc tcnl hk menvx ;x, ukh xjhcy ejsxkgcn mc ukwk cl nx  
xgc l i ohgxtcj ejl csxkgcn.ß

Cfw Fcsxnvck ncmhdcj ugwkwn ;x, l ck Xl hl Fhrxn™ -  
vhk âcjwghpc mc cjxwn-Ncswgc mc wggw-cl nß hdcsxkxk ac/kx-ki bwgw

fhnscsxkvc sunwavwrvh fwdwnvw... âFw hdc Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf<sup>TM</sup> fhnscsxkvc khbxg ugl wavwn.ß Lck sunwavwl ... â{hl hj vedxn ;x, fcs kc i ]i k Hgghp-jhhgh Cgxkxk mc Cpgx-fedjxk hv`k` Zb ;xjhfkvh redv ejl cl xavxn?ß Cfw {c/tcn<sup>TM</sup> fwdwnvw... âUkgghn fegc ve... âHgghp Rwn/hkvh khl hb` vh Zb |edycl fcnxkc khbxg ejvx, gh;xk ukwk i ], dhowv vnzv nc;cj ugl hs`k` redv ejl cvx ;x, pcbncj ukghn i ]i k jctsn mc fcdhk ejxk. Pc[[x khbxg ejvx, gh;xk devvx jcmht pz;l i ki redv ejl cvx ;x, u pcbncj fwkw ukghn i ]i k jctsn ejxk. Egc[c vc âwggw-cl nß hdxs Cgx mc Pcsc, Pi sedk Φ fhnscsxkvc khbxg ugl wa, |edycl fcn i vc fwdwnl wavwn ;x,

âHgghp`k : xjhfkx mc Cpgx-fedjxl xk pirwrghn`kh nxhdcj ejl cdx sxbc jzmsxc evxncl . Lck Hgghpvkh xsjcl xacl ;x, ukghn`k hnhs`kvh, : zmscn pumwbwkvh l ckl dhk`l h `cxf ]hjhkh rcvcl hdn`gr shgl hs`k. Hgghp vh l ckl xsjcdxl x rcfwg ejl xavxn.B<sup>1</sup>

M) "SCTXKCJW KWP" MC "PXJJCJW FCKX-XSNHXG" PCVXSX |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -xk scphfcgcnxkvck xl hl Cgx<sup>TM</sup> , Cfwbcn, Cfw Scxv Oxvnx, Xfkx Hffhs mc Ckcs xfkx L hgx; u pcbncjxk fegc fwdwnvwykw ncmhdcj evxngcn...

مَثَلُ أَهْلِ بَيْتِي كَسَفِينَةِ نُوحٍ مَنْ رَكِبَهَا نَجَا وَمَنْ تَخَلَّفَ عَنْهَا غَرِقَ

âLckxl Cpgx-fedjxl xk l cscgx Kwpwk `cl xsxkxk l cscgx ;xl xvxn... pcn ;cs ukh l xksc, kx[hj jh`hn, pcn ;cs ukvhk hdn`gsh, rcnr ughn.ß

âMc Fckx-Xsnhxgvc pxjjc rh`s` ;xl xvxn.B<sup>2</sup>

Si dwjxkxk âJhnxox Oi gcthß ;xjhfkvh (scp.270) Hffhsx ocgxtcsx Lckswnwkw jcn[i l edx-phg`kvh L c/l wk zb hjhs` Phnwkvhk, u vh Lcpvxvck, u vh Lckswnvkh, u vh hjhs`kvhk, u vh fhfhs`kvhk, u vh Xfkx Hffhsvhk ncmhdcj evxn ;x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i fwdwnvw... âLckxl Cpgx-fedjxl xk l cscgx Kwpwk `cl xsxkxk l cscgx ;xl xvxn... pcn ;cs ukh l xksc, kx[hj jh`hn, pcn ;cs ukvhk

<sup>1</sup> âAcmhpxvwj-jckbxgß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.148-150.

<sup>2</sup> âBcohxnwg-i rfhß (L wpxf Jcfcnx), scp.20â âL i sjcvnc; ß (Ph; xl ), 2-[x [xgv, scp.343 mc 3-[i [xgv, scp.150. âPxgdcjwg-zmgxdhß (Cfw Kcxl Xsthphkx), 4-[i [xgv, scp.306â âJhnxox Fhyvhvß, 12-[x [xgv, scp.19â âL c[l cwbc-bcmhxvß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.168â âJctsnx Si dwjxß, âFrcncß swncsxkxk 58-[x hdxsxkxk jctsnxkvc.



hdn`gsh, pcgh; ughn.B<sup>1</sup>

Fwnh rcvcn redv ejvxdxl xb pcvxsgcnxk phl `s` âwggw-  
cl nßxk Hgghp jcnctxkvck mc |edycl fcn j mhsxjcsxgc  
jc/dxk evxgl csxkc vcghgcj evck si kkc mc Rwn/hk`k ha; hn  
fwdwnvwrghn` vx. Suknh;` fzgl cvc xsc fharh xfhncgcngc ughk  
vx`cn ncmhdcjgcnx redv evc[cdx; .

CPGX-FEDJ XLHLGHN- (CGX MC UKWK ZMGHVGHN- ☩ )  
|EDYCLFCNX C: NCL j -XK SZBGCNXKX }HJV-NHKGHNV-N  
Rwn/hkx-: cnxl fxn ]uo hdcgcncv \edycl fcngcnxk  
mcbxtcgcnxkxk dhgk`b xghpx \edyhl ` jcfgy evxf ]hvj`nl hrvhk  
xfhncj ugvywkw fegc fwdwnwf...

﴿مَا عَلَى الرَّسُولِ إِلَّا الْبَلَاغُ﴾

â|edycl fcnxk mcbxtcsx xghpx \edyhl ` ]hvj`nl hrvhk fharh fxn aed  
vedxgvxn.B<sup>2</sup>

﴿وَمَا عَلَى الرَّسُولِ إِلَّا الْبَلَاغُ الْمُبِينُ﴾

â|edycl fcnxk mcbxtcsx ha; hn fcdhk ejl c; vck fharh fxn aed vedxgvxn.B<sup>3</sup>

﴿...فَإِنَّمَا عَلَى رَسُولِنَا الْبَلَاغُ الْمُبِينُ﴾

âFxbxl |edycl fcnxl xbxk mcbxtcsx ha; hn jcfgy ejl c; vck xfhncjvxn.B<sup>4</sup>

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl j -c oi jfck fwdwnwgvn...

﴿فَإِنَّمَا عَلَيْكَ الْبَلَاغُ﴾

âSckxk mcbxtck dhgk`b Hgghp`k szbi ki ]hvj`nl hrv`n.B<sup>5</sup>

﴿إِنْ عَلَيْكَ إِلَّا الْبَلَاغُ﴾

âSck xghpx ocfcnx ]hvj`nl hrvhk fharh fxn aedc mcbxtcgv vedxgsc.B<sup>6</sup>

Jcfgy x; x rxsl vxn... Fxnfah ughk jcfgy mc l i cddck  
mhsxjcgngc ughk jcfgy. Egc[c vc denxkc dejxnxgl csxkxk mhoj`  
]hjhk jcfgy mc pcgc mhoj` ]hjl hl `a jcfgy. L cscgck, fxn-fxnxgc

<sup>1</sup> â: ckbwg-ll l hgß, 1-[x ]h\, 6-[` [xgv, scp.153 mc 216æ âCs-scmhxrwg-  
l wpnxrcß (xfkx Pc[cn), scp.75. Ukw Vhn-Rwjxvck, Jcfcnhkxvck, Xfkx  
{cnxnvck, Cpl cv xfkx Pckfcgvck mc fharhghn`kvhk ncmhdcj ejl xavxn.

<sup>2</sup> âL hxvcß swncsx, hdc.99

<sup>3</sup> âKwnß swncsx, hdc.54 mc âCk; cfwjß swncsx, hdc.18.

<sup>4</sup> âL hxvcß swncsx, hdc.92 mc âJcyhfwkß swncsx, hdc.12.

<sup>5</sup> âHgx XI nhkß swncsx, hdc.20, âKcpgß swncsx, hdc.35 mc âNc/vßß swncsx,  
hdc.13.

<sup>6</sup> âAwnhß swncsx, hdc.48

l i phnxfvcv ughk x; x l z/l xk rnw\wk pz; l i , l i scgl hkghn`k  
bhg`l ph; xl rhna`s`kvh; `mh[xf mcbxtcgcnx ; xl x.

|edycl fcn i -xk jcfgy ejvxdx aedgcn vc x; x  
rxsxl vxn...

h) |edycl fcnc mcpd ugwkhhk aedgcnxk, szbgcnxk mc ukghn`k  
l c/khs`k`k ]hjv`n`gl hs`æ fw, Hgghp`k : xjh`kvhk xfhncjvxn mc  
fw i l l cjvc Rwn/hkx-: cnxl hvghkv`n`g`n. Hgghp-jhhgh ukwk  
fhncsxkvc fegc fwdwnwn...

﴿وَأَوْحِي إِلَيَّ هَذَا الْقُرْآنُ لَأُنذِرَكُمْ بِهِ وَمَنْ بَلَغَ﴾

âVe... mc fw Rwn/hk lckc mcpd ugwkfwvn ; x, sxbx mc fw ocfcnxk  
( 'cgc[c;vc) ]hjv`y` acoscnx runowvhl .B<sup>1</sup>

f) |edycl fcn i -c mcpd ugwkhhk l c/khghn` oi swsx  
; cgl cgc n ugl hvhk ]hjv`nl hr. |edycl fcn ukw zb acnxt fcdhk`  
mc vxgx xgc jcfgy evxnvx. Fwkh l xshg ughnhr acnxcj pz; l gcnxkxk  
'ekxa xbhpk` redv ejl c; ughn ; x, Hgghp ukwk fhncsxkvc fegc  
fwdwnwn...

﴿شَرَعَ لَكُمْ مِنَ الدِّينِ مَا وَصَّى بِهِ نُوحًا وَالَّذِي أَوْحَيْنَا إِلَيْكَ وَمَا وَصَّيْنَا بِهِ إِبْرَاهِيمَ وَمُوسَى

وَعِيسَى أَنْ أَقِيمُوا الدِّينَ وَلَا تَتَفَرَّقُوا فِيهِ ...﴾

âHgghp sxbxk i]ik egc fxn vxkx acnxcj phg`kh shgl `av`n ; x, ukw Kwph  
mcsxddcj ejl xavxæ sckc mcpd ejvx;gc nxl xb, egc[c vc Xfnhpxl c, Lwshdh, Xshdh  
jzmsxdc ejvx;gc nxl xb... Fw vxkx fcnrcnhr evk mc ukvh \cnh;ckvcgdc dug  
menl cdxk.B<sup>2</sup>

|edycl fcnc-C; ncl i khl hb`k nc; cjgc nxxk shd`k`  
mc ukwk bx;ngcnxkxk kzmi ki , egc[c vc shx n acnxcj pz; l gcnxkx,  
dhowv ; e]l xa \edycl fcngcnxk ocfcngcnxkx, fw vi kdhvhk rhfhr  
mc suknh fha menc[c; phvxscgc n mc s. ukh Rwn/hkvhk fharh  
dugghngh mcpd evxgcckgcnc cshsck fcdhk evxnvx. Egc fxn mcpd ; x,  
Hgghp-jhhgh ukwk fhncsxkvc fegc fwdwnwn...

﴿وَمَا يَنْطِقُ عَنِ الْهَوَىٰ إِنْ هُوَ إِلَّا وَحْيٌ يُوحَىٰ﴾

âU pe] mhoj pcmhdx-kcts i bi kvck szb vel xn! Vevx;gc nxl ukh khbxg ughk  
mcpdvck fharh fxn aed vedxgvxn.B<sup>3</sup>.

Xsghl i l l cjxkvc; x fw [i n jcfgy âacnxt Kcfcmx pcvxsgcnxß

<sup>1</sup> âCk/hl ß swncsx, hdc.19.

<sup>2</sup> âAwnhß swncsx, hdc.13.

<sup>3</sup> âKc[l ß swncsx, hdc.3-4

hvgkhkv`n`g`n.

\*\*\*

Dwohn`vh redv ugwkhhk hdcgcn |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -  
xk mcbxtcsxkx xghpx mcpdxk jcfgyx ugwkl hs`kvh oi ghscgckvxnzn.  
Vel cgx, u pcbncjxk ck i l vc mcbxtcsx xghpx mcpdxk jcfgyx  
ugwkl hs`v`n mc pcn mhoj u, fxn ; csxk fhncsxkvc au l ckvckvxnß  
vesc, l c/khs` fw ugwn ; x, u acos, |edycl fcn i -xk xagcnxkx  
jcfgyx ejl c; vc ukwk ; xl xvzn. Fxb fw l i vvchk` vcgxgsxb ughnhr  
vel xnx; æ c; sxkc |edycl fcn i -xk zbi pcvxsgcnxk fxn  
rxsl xkvc fwkw ha; hn ac; xgvc fwdwnl wavwn. Fegc ; x, âFcnhcjß  
(âJzmfcß) swncsxkxk xg; hdcgcnxkxk jcfgyx ugwkl hs` phvxscsxkvc  
'znc fxgcnx; ...

"FCNHcj" HDCGCNXXKXK JCFGXY UGWKLH PHVXSCSX

Fw phvxsc âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, âJctsnx Jcfcnxß, âOcshxsw  
Kcshxß, âL i sjcvnc; x Ph; xl ß mc vx'cn ; xjhfgnhvh Ckcsvck, Xfkx  
Hffhsvhk, Sc/v xfkx Cfx Mcrrhsvhk, Cfxi gghp xfkx ZI cnvck,  
Cfw Scxv Oxvnxvck, ZI cn xfkx Ledl wkvhk, Cgxddxfkx Cfx  
Jhgx<sup>f™</sup> -vhk mc Cfw Fc;nvck kcrq evxgl xavzn ; x, fxb fwnhvh  
xl hl Cgx<sup>™</sup> -`k âL i skcvx Cpl cvßvc redv ugwkhhk ncmhdcjxkx  
r`sh ac; xgvc redv evxnx; ...

â|edycl fcn i Cfw Fc;nx ]hy`nv` mc âFcnhcjß  
swncsxkx ukh menxf l c; ; cgxgcnc jcnct 'zkcncvx mc fwdwnvw ; x,  
ukghnh fw szbgcnx ]hjv`ns`k... âFw xgvck e/jxfhnc pe] fzn l i anx; pc[[  
cl cgkx denxkc dejxnl cdc[c; , pe] fzn ]g`hr acos Hgghp emxkx jcmht ejl cdc[c; mc  
l iscgk hkgnhvhk fharh pe] ; cs fepxajc vhoq ugl hdh[hrv`n. |edycl fcngc pcn  
;csk hnhs`kvh l i vvcjx l icddck ugwkl wa cpv-`edl hk mhnv`nsh, fw l i vvcj  
sukh ]hjv`y mhojh rcvzn ukwk l zpgcjx mhnv`n mc Hgghp mc Ukwk Ncswgw  
l i anx; gcnvck febhv`n (ukghnh kxtncj evzn).ß

U vedxn... âCfw Fc;n fw hdcgcnx 'zji ni f Lc; ; cdc dugh  
vi avi. |edycl fcn i ] 'i kvck suknh Cgxdc fwdwnvw... âZbi ki  
Cfw Fc;nc ]hjv`n`f, ukw l ckxl dhk`l h rhdjhn, hdcgcnx xsc  
zbi k h`hn`f uowß Cgx fw 'zsjcnx ac cl cg ejvx mc Cfw Fc;n  
|edycl fcnxk dhk`kh rhd`jv`, hyghd`f vevx... âDh Ncswgcgghp!  
L ckxl fhnc l vc fzn phvxsc fha menxfvxn l x?ß Pcbncj fwdwnvw...  
âSckxk fhnckv oedxnvck fharh fzn aed fha menl cdxfa gh; xk  
l ckcl cl n ugkwkf ; x, fw ocfcnx zbi l vck, dhowv zbi l vck

ughk fñn ; csvck fharhs` jcfgy ejl csxk.B<sup>1</sup>

Cfvi gghp xfkx Zl cnxk ncmhdcjxkvc vedxgxñ... âGh;xk l ckc vedxgl xavx ; x, pe] ; cs sckxk jcnctxkvck jcfgy evc fxgl cbæ dhgk`b zbi k, dhowv sckvck ughk fñn ; xax (fwkw jcfgy evc fxgn).B<sup>2</sup>

Cfw Scxv Oxvnxkxk ncmhdcjxkvc xsc fegc vedxgxñ... âPe] ; cs l ckl jcnctxl vck jcfgy evc fxgl cb, dhgk`b zbil mc zbil vck ughk fñn ; xavck fharh.B<sup>3</sup>

Fw szbgc cghrcvhn l zm[wv cghl cjgn 'zsjcnxñ ; x, fw ncmhdcjgn mc ukghn`k uoahn` ughk vx`cn ncmhdcjgcnvc âjcfgyxß vevx;vc l crscv Hgghp`k xg; vctc ughnhr Zb |edycl fcnxkc mcpd ejvxdx pz;l gcnxk ]hjv`n`gl hs`v`n. Fw vh egc fñn l cscgcvxñ ; x, |edycl fcnx-C;ncl xk zbi kvck, dhowv ukwk zbi shd`ghk fñn ; xavck fharhs` ukw jcfgy evc fxgl cb. Fw rxsl jcfgy l i rhfxgxkvc xsc pz;l gcnxk l i ;cggtgcnc jcfgy ugwk l hs` i kmhg` jcfgy vwnwn ; x, |edycl fcnx-C;ncl i -vck, dhowv ukvhk ughk fñn ; xavck cob evxgl csxkvck suknh ukwk jcfgyxkc x[hbc menxgn, pz;l i hghk acos vc ukw fharhghn`kh ]hjv`n`n. Fw [i n jcfgyxgnxk [hxbgxdx i l wl x mc 'ekxa scmddcgx ugwf vi kdhk`k sukwkh rcvñ fw pz;l gcnxk ]hjv`y` pcn fñn acosc hxv ugh fxgn. Hdv`kv`n ; x, |edycl fcnx-C;ncl i -xk fwdwnvwyw âLckxl jcnctxl vck pe] ; cs jcfgy ejl xñ, dhgk`b zbil vck mc zbil vck ughk fñn ; xavck fharhß vevx;vc l crscvx fñnxk[x kzmvcck ughk jcfgyvxn.

Pcl ]xkxk âl ckbxgcjß pcvxsxkvc; x âl xkxß (l ckvckvxñ) ; cgl csx vc fegcvxn. Fw szb |edycl fcn i -xk pcvsgcnxkvc 'cgl xavñ mc fegc jctsn ugwkwn... âCgx xgc |edycl fcnxk l i khsxfcjx Phnwkwl Lwsh xgc ughk l i khsxfcjx ; xl xvñ.B

âScpxpx Fwohnxß, âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, âL i skcvx Jcdhgxsxß, âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, âSi kckx xfkx L h[cß mc vx`cn ; xjhfgnhv ncmhdcj ugwkwn ; x, |edycl fcnx-C;ncl

<sup>1</sup> âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.3, pcvxs 4, Cfw Fc; nxk âL i skcvßxkvck kcrgek, scp.150-151 mc 3-[i [xgv, scp.283æ fegc ; x, Cpl cv Ah; xñ vedñ... âUkwk sckcvgnx scpxpvñßæ âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, 13-[i [xgv, scp.164-165æ âOcsxsw Kcsxß, scp.28-29æ âJctsnx Jcfcnxß, 10-[w [xgv, scp.46æ âL i sjcvnc; ß (Ph; xl ), 3-[i [xgv, scp.51-52æ âL c[l cw b-bcmhxvß, 7-[x [xgv, scp.29 mc 9-[w [xgv, scp.119.

<sup>2</sup> âL i sjcvnc; ß (Ph; xl ), 3-[i [xgv, scp.51.

<sup>3</sup> âVwnnwg-l ckswnß, âFchnhjß hdsxkxk jctsnxkvc.

i Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf<sup>TM</sup> -h fwdwnvw... âSckxkc I ckl  
 I ikhsxfcjxl Lwsh xgc Phnwkwk I ikhsxfcjx ;xl vxvn, fw tcnrgc ;x, I ckvck suknh  
 pe] fxn \edycl fcn 'cgl cdc[c;B<sup>1</sup>

Xfkx Sc/vxk âJcfcrhjß ;xjh<sup>f</sup>kvh kcrq ejvxdx ncmhdcejvc  
 Fcnnh xfkx Hbxf mc Bedv xfkx Cnrcl vedxngcn... â|edycl fcn  
 i â{edawg-i sncjß I i phnxfcsxkc (I crscv Jcfw;  
 I i phnxfcsxvn) 'evck bhl hk Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfc fwdwnvw...  
 âPe] fxn ]hnc duovvn... (L cvxkcv) dh I ck rhgl hg<sup>d</sup>dhl , dh vh  
 sck!ß

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i Jcfw; I i phnxfcsxkc 'ejl c;  
 i ]i k ukvhk hdn<sup>g</sup>hk bhl hk [hl hhjvhk fc/bxgcnx vevx...  
 â|edycl fcn Cgxkx zbi xgc h\hnl hr xsjcl cvxdxkc 'znc ukw zb  
 denxkc rudl wavwn!ß

Fw szb Cgxkxk rwghy<sup>h</sup>kh ]hjv<sup>r</sup>rvh |edycl fcnxk vhg<sup>k</sup>k[h  
 'ejvx, ukh ]hjkhvh |edycl fcn fwdwnvw... âDh Cgx! Kc ugl wavwn  
 ;x, fwnh 'cgl xsck?ß

Vevx... âDh Ncswgcgghp! Pe] fxn aed ugl hd<sup>f</sup>, hl I h [hl hhj  
 fegc jcscmmi n evxn ;x, sxb I ckx zbi ki bgc h\hnl hr  
 xsjcl cvxdxkxhc 'znc I ckx fwnhvh rudl wswkwbb!ß |edycl fcnx-  
 C; ncl i jcfcssi I evcnc; fwdwnvw...

âDh Cgl Nhb<sup>h</sup> ugl hbshkl<sup>h</sup> ;x, I ckl gc sckxk I ikhsxfcjxk Lwsh xgc  
 Phnwkwk I ikhsxfcjx ;xl x ugswk, fw tcnrgc ;x, sck \edycl fcn vedxgsc?<sup>1</sup>ß

Cgx [hmhf menvx... âCgfcjcc ;x, dh Ncswgcgghp!ß

Fwdwnvw... âFw ukh 'zncvx<sup>n</sup>.B<sup>2</sup>

Fw pcvxsxk fc/bx rxsl gcnx fwkvhk zk[c âl i phnxfc  
 mhojghn<sup>h</sup> |edycl fcnxk L cvxkcv zb denxkc rudvwyw ;csgcnß  
 fhf<sup>k</sup>kvh redv ugwkl wavwn.

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.200, I ckhrxfw Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf fhf<sup>æ</sup>  
 âScpxpx L i sgi I ß, 7-[x [xgv, scp.120, tcbxgw Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf fhf<sup>æ</sup>  
 âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, 13-[i [xgv, scp.171, I ckhrxfw Cgx fhf<sup>æ</sup> âSi kckx Jcdhgxsxß,  
 1-[x [xgv, scp.28-29, pcvxs 205, 209, 213æ âSi kckx xfkx L h[cß, tcbxgw Cgxddxfkx  
 Cfx Jhgxf fhf<sup>h</sup>, pcvxs 115æ âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.170, 173-175, 179, 182,  
 184, 185, 330, 3-[i [xgv, scp.32, 338, 6-[<sup>h</sup> [xgv, scp.369 mc 338æ âL i sjcvnc; ß  
 (Ph; xl ), 2-[x [xgv, scp.337æ âJcfcrhjß (xfkx Sc/v), 3-[i [xgv, 1-[x pxssc, scp.14  
 mc 15æ âL c[I ci b-bcmhvxß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.109-111 mc vx'cn ]uogw I ckfcgcnx  
 redv ejl c; ughn.

<sup>2</sup> âJcfcrhjß (xfkx Sc/v), 3-[i [xgv, fxnxk[x pxssc, scp.15æ âL c[I cwb-bcmhvxß,  
 9-[w [xgv, scp.111, hbh[<sup>h</sup>r tcnrgc.

|EDYCLFCN ; -XK PCVXSGCNXKVC UGHK "LXKKX"  
: CGLCSXKVCK LCRSCV

âCkjc l xkx fx l ckbxcjx Phnwkc l xk Lwshß pcvxsxkvc âl xkxß  
;cgl csxkvck l crscvxk kc ugvywv fharh fxn duggv vh hdv`k  
ugwn. U vh fwkvhk xfhncjvxn ; x, Phnwkc ki fi mmcjvc Lwsh xgc  
acnx; mc jcfgyvc ukwk mcbxn xvx, Cgx vc Ohjcl wg-Ckfxdh  
pcbcnj Lipcl l cv ; i]ik Phnwkwk Lwshdh ughk  
l i khsxfcjxkx xth evxnvæ dhgk`b ki fi mmcjvck fharh. } i k; x u,  
xghpx mcpdxk jcfgy ugwkl hs`kvh mcbxngx; xaxkx zpvcxk  
hgl `av`.

Pcl ]xkx |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i âl xkxß  
;cgl csxkvck l crscvxk kc ugvywkw Pc[[cjwg-mxvhv -  
Cnctc 'i ki kvc fcdhk ejvdx pcvsvc hdv`kghav`n. Unhvh  
fwdwnl wavw...âCgx l ckvcvxn, l ck vc Cgvckcl . Lckxl mcbxtcl x zbi l vck  
mc dh Cgvck fharh pe] ; cs denkc dejnc fxgl cb.<sup>1</sup>

Vel cgx, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i fw pcvsvc âl xkxß  
;cgl csxkx ha; hn ac; xgvc jctsn ejl xa mc fwdwnl wavwn ; x, u  
pcbcnjxk l crscvx xl hl Cgxkx xghpx pz; l gcnxk l i ; cggctgcnc  
fxnfah ac; xgvc jcfgy ugwkl hs`kvh |edycl fcn ; xl x ugl hs`v`n.  
Fw jc/fxnvck hdv`k ugwn ; x, fharh pcvsgcnvc âl xkxß ; cgl csx  
jctsnxsb ughnhr xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h hxvvn. Fegc ; x, Fi nedvckxk  
ncmhdcjxkvc |edycl fcn i fwdwnl wavw... âCgvck edf  
hojhnl h, ] i k; x u, l ckvcvxn...<sup>2</sup>

xl nhk xfkx Pi sedkxk ncmhdcjxkvc |edycl fcn ;  
ukh fwdwnl wavw...âCgx l ckvcvxn.<sup>3</sup>

Fi ji k fw ncmhdcjgcnc |edycl fcn ; -xk l crscvx  
fwvwn ; x, Cgx <sup>TM</sup> mc shxn xl hl ghn |edycl fcnvckvxn, ukghn  
xghpx pz; l gcnxk fxnfah mc mhsxjcsxb jcfgy evcgl csxkvck  
xfhncj ughk hy`n mcbxtckx zpvcgcnxkc hgl `agh mc fw vh  
|edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk zb mcbxtcgnx rcfxgkvckvxn. Vel cgx,  
ukghn |edycl fcnvckvxn, |edycl fcn vc ukghnvkhv`n, ukghn

<sup>1</sup> âSi kckx xfkx L h[cß, ; xjh`k l i rcvxl csx, scp.92â âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß,  
l ckhrxf ; xjh`, 13-[i [xgv, scp.169, pcl xk pcvxs â: ckbi g-i l l hgßvh vh  
(scp.153, 2531 kzl ncgx pcvsvc) redv ugwkl wavwn. âLi skcvx Cpl cvß, 4-[i  
[xgv, scp.164-165 l i ojcgxt duggnhg.

<sup>2</sup> Fw x; x ncmhdcjxk sckvx âLi scgl hkghn`k mcgddx-cl nßx fzgl csxkvc  
; e]vx.

<sup>3</sup> Dekc unhvh.

jcfgy xaxkvc l i ajcnc; vxngcn, hl l h cp; hl `k cob evxgl csxkvc ukvhk tcnrgckxngcn. Fcgy, |edycl fcnc-C; ncl Hgghp jcnctxkvck [hl hhjh ]hjv`n`f jcfgy ejvdx pz; l gcnx mcpd dugw xgc cob evxn, ukghn xsc |edycl fcncx dugw xgc cob evxf, ukwk jcnctxkvck i l l cjc ]hjv`n`nghn, Hgghp mc Ukwk Ncswgw vh fw hy`n mcbxtckxk denxkc dejxngl csxkvc ukghnh ; z l c; gx; 'zsjcnxngcn. Fegc ; x, Hgghp-jhhgh âJcjpxnß hdcxkvc vc ocfcn menvdx ; x l x, ukghn` pcn kzm bhpnnx mc fhjxkx hgwwcgx; gcnvck, l c/kcmx ]xn; xkgx; gcnvck, ncbxg oxsgjgcnvck \h; -\h; xbc ej l xavxn. |edycl fcnc-C; ncl i vc Hgghp`k ukh mcpd ejvx; gcnxkx Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h oi swsx ac; xgvc kcrj ejvxn l xa, xl hl ghn vh fxn vx'cnxkvck suknh ukghn` zb hjhghn`kvhk xns h\hnl `agh. "cgck ncmhdcjgcnvc fw l cscgc cghmc xbhpg h redv ugwk h[hrv`n.

CGX <sup>TM</sup> |EDYCLFCN i -XK MHNXSXVXN  
 âJctsnw Nhbxb mc â: ckbi g-i l l hgß ; xjhfg h`kv h Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -  
 `k fegc fwdwnvwyw ncmhdcj ugwkwn... â|edycl fcnc-C; ncl i  
 l ckc l xk egl fhf zdnjvx ; x, pcn fhfvhk vh i bi l c l xk fhf (rh\` ) h]`g`nvß<sup>1</sup>  
 âJctsnx Jcfcnxß, âJcfc rhjx xfkx Sc/vß, âJcpbxfwj-jcpbxß,  
 â: ckbi g-i l l hgß mc âTcjpwg-fhnxß ; xjhfg h`kv h Cfw Jwtedgxk  
 fegc vevdx ncmhdcj ugwkwn... L ck zbi l ahpxv xvxl ; x, Cgx  
 vkh`a`n mc vedxnvx...

سَلُونِي فَوَاللَّهِ لَا تَسْأَلُونِي عَنْ شَيْءٍ يَكُونُ إِلَى يَوْمِ الْقِيَامَةِ إِلَّا حَدَّثْتُكُمْ بِهِ وَسَلُونِي عَنْ  
 كِتَابِ اللَّهِ فَوَاللَّهِ مَا مِنْ آيَةٍ إِلَّا وَأَنَا أَعْلَمُ أَبْلِيْلٍ نَزَلَتْ أَمْ بِنَهَارٍ أَمْ فِي سَهْلٍ أَمْ فِي جَبَلٍ

âLckvck (xsjcvdxkxb pcn aedx) sunawwk! Hgghp hkv ugswk, c'cn rxdhl cj  
 'ikikc rcvcn fha menc[c; phvxscgc fhncvc sunwashk`b, sxbx ukghnvkh h`hp  
 evcncl !. Hgghp`k : xjhfvkh sunawwk! Hgghp hkv ugswk, egc fxn hdc duovwn ; x,  
 'e[cvc, duosh 'ikvibvc, scpnvh, duosh vhyvh khbxg ugwwykw fxgl cdxl ... B<sup>2</sup>  
 L cpb fw oi swsxdccjgcnc 'znc { hfxn xfkx Cfvi ggph`k kcrj  
 ejvdxkc cshsck, |edycl fcnc-C; ncl i , pcbncj Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -  
 `k fhncsxkvc fegc fwdwnl wavwn...

<sup>1</sup> âJctsnw Tcon Nhbxb, âxkkcgghpcsjcth Hvcl cß hdcxkxk jctsnxkvck  
 â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 6-[- [xgv, scp.392 mc 305.

<sup>2</sup> âJctsnx Jcfcnxß, 26-[- [xgv, scp.116â âJcfc rhjß (xfkx Sc/v), 2-[x [xgv, 2-[x  
 pxssc, scp.101â âJcpbxfwj-jcpbxß, 7-[x [xgv, scp.337â âTcjpwg-fhnxß, 10-[w [xgv,  
 scp.221. âPxgdcjwg-zmgx dhß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.67-68â â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 1-[x [xgv,  
 scp.228.

## أَنَا مَدِينَةُ الْعِلْمِ وَعَلَيَّ بِأُيُهَا فَمَنْ أَرَادَ الْمَدِينَةَ فَلْيَأْتِ الْبَابَ

âLck egl xk acpcnxdcl , Cgx xsc ukwk vhnmbbhs'v'n! Pcn ;cs fw acpcnc vhoxg ugl hr xsjcdxnc, u vhnmbbhvhk vhoxg ugl hg'v'n.β<sup>1</sup>

Fharh fxn ncmhdcjvc xsc fegc fwdwnl wavwn... âPcn ;cs egl xsjcdxnc, u vhnmbbhvhk vhoxg ugl hg'v'n.β<sup>2</sup>

Vx'cn fxn ncmhdcjvc xsc vedxgx... |edycl fcnc-C; ncl i Pi vedfxddcvc Cgxkxk cgxkvck jwjl wa phgvh fwdwnvw...

هَذَا أَمِيرُ الْبَرَّةِ وَقَاتِلُ الْفَجَرَةِ مَنْصُورٌ مَنْ نَصَرَهُ مَخْذُولٌ مَنْ خَذَلَهُ - يَمُدُّ بِهَا صَوْتَهُ - أَنَا

## مَدِينَةُ الْعِلْمِ وَعَلَيَّ بِأُيُهَا فَمَنْ أَرَادَ الْمَدِينَةَ فَلْيَأْتِ الْبَابَ

âFw, dhoa' cl cg shpxfgcnxkx cl xnx, fcv cl cg shpxfgcnxkx rcjgc dejxnckvxn. Pcn ;cs ukh ;zl c; ejsc, u rhgxfvxn, pcn ;cs ukh ;zl c; ejl csc, (zbi) ohn ughn.β Suknh fwkw w[h scsgc fwdwnvw...

## أَنَا مَدِينَةُ الْعِلْمِ وَعَلَيَّ بِأُيُهَا فَمَنْ أَرَادَ الْمَدِينَةَ فَلْيَأْتِهَا مِنْ بَابِهَا

âLck egl xk acpcnxdcl , Cgx xsc ukwk vhnmbbhs'v'n! Pcn ;cs fw emc vhoxg ugl hr xsjcdxnc, 'cnc; u vhnmbbhvhk 'cgsxk.β<sup>3</sup>

Xfkx Hffhs`k ncmhdcjxkvc xsc fegc vedxgx... âLck egl xk acpcnxdcl , Cgx xsc ukwk vhnmbbhs'v'n! Pcn ;cs fw acpcnc vhoxg ugl hr xsjcdxnc, ukwk vhnmbbhs'kvk vhoxg ugl hg'v'n.β<sup>4</sup>

Xl hl Cgx ™ -`k zb ncmhdcjxkvc xsc fegc redv ugwkwn... Ncswgx C; ncl i fwdwnvw... âLck egl xk emxdcl , Cgx vc ukwk rh`s'v'n.β<sup>5</sup>

Xfkx Hffhs`k ncmhdcjxkvc Cgx ™ -`k fhncsxkvc fegc fwdwnl wavwn...âLck px;l cj acpcnxdcl , Cgx xsc ukwk vhnmbbhs'v'n! Pcn ;cs

<sup>1</sup> âL i sjcvnc; β (Ph; xl ), 3-[i [xgv, scp.126-127; âJhnxox Fhyvhvβ, 4-[i [xgv, scp.348, 7-[x [xgv, scp.172, 11-[x [xgv, scp.48 mc scp.49-vh vedxgx... âDcpdh xfkx L wxk ukw scpxp peshf ejl xavxn.β âWsvwg-yhfcβ, 4-[i [xgv, scp.22; âL c[l cwbbcmhvxβ, 9-[w [xgv, scp.114; âJcpbxfwj-jcpbxfβ, 6-[` [xgv, scp.320, 7-[x [xgv, scp.427; âTedbwg-Rcvxnβ, 3-[i [xgv, scp.46; â: ckbi g-i l l hgβ, 2-[x ]h\, 12-[x [xgv, scp.201; âScmhxrwg-l wpxnrcβ, scp.72.

<sup>2</sup> âL i sjcvnc; β (Ph; xl ), 3-[i [xgv, scp.127-129.

<sup>3</sup> âJhnxox Fhyvhvβ, 2-[x [xgv, scp.377.

<sup>4</sup> â: ckbi g-i l l hgβ, 2-[x ]h\, 12-[x [xgv, scp.212, pcvxs 1219; â: i kwbwg-pcrhxrβ (L ckhm), scp.188.

<sup>5</sup> âNxdhbwk-ki bncβ, 2-[x [xgv, scp.193.



px; l cj xsjcdxnc, fw vhnmbbhvk vhoxg ugl hg'v'n.<sup>1</sup>

Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k zb ncmhdcjxkvc redv ugwkwn ; x,  
| edycl fcnx-C; ncl i fegc fwdwnvw... âLck px; l cjxk emxdcl ,  
Cgx vc ukwk rh`s'v'n.<sup>2</sup>

Cfwbcn ncmhdcj evxn ; x, | edycl fcn Cgxkxk phrr`kvh fegc  
fwdwnvw... âCgx l ckl egl xl xk vhnmbhs'v'næ u, l ckvck suknh nxshgcjxl xk  
l zpjcmhs`k i l l cjxl i]ik fcdhk evc[c; vxn.<sup>3</sup>

Ckcs xfkx L hgx; xk ncmhdcjxkvc xsc vedxgx... â| edycl fcnx-  
C; ncl Cgxdc fwdwnvw... âSck l ckvck suknh i l l cjxl xk xojxht ejvxdx pcn  
fxn aedx fcdhk evc[c; sck.ß

Ph; xl dhhb`n... âFw pcvxs Aedoedkxk (Fwohnx mc L i sgi l i k)  
acnjx xgc scpxpxn.<sup>4</sup>

Fharh fxn ncmhdcjvc xsc ukh fwdwnvw...

أَنْتَ تُبَيِّنُ لَأَمَّتِي مَا اخْتَلَفُوا فِيهِ بَعْدِي

âSck l ckvck suknh szbgcnxl x ukghnh ]hjv`nh[hrshk, scsxl x ukghnh eajjvnc-  
[c; sck, xojxghth vi ]hn ugvrghn` pcn fxn aedx ukghn i]ik hdv`kghav`nh[hrshk.<sup>5</sup>

Fcgx, L i jchg Hgghp Ohjcl wg-Ckfxdh i i]i k ghb`l  
ughk acnhxjx dhnjhv` mc ukwkgh cl xuygwsx Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -` fxn emvc  
rcnhn menvx ; x, Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -` wahrg`r ]hyghn`kvhk l cpb u pcbncj  
fzdi vi f fudh-fhah ]hjv`ns`k, ukw ki fi mmcj egl xkxk \h; mc  
bi ghg ]eal csxkvck fcpncgkvxnsxk. Fegc ; x, Ph; xl zbi ki k  
âL i sjcvnc; ß ; xjh`kvh kcrg evxn... âHgghp`k Cgxdc cjh ejvxdx ohs  
ke/ l cjgcnvck fxn vc fw vx... Ri neda rcfxgcsx ; cs; xk rcpjgxdc  
vi ]hn ugl wavw. Cfw Jhgxfxk cpgx-cdhg` ]uo ugvywkh 'znc  
| edycl fcnx-C; ncl i zb cl xsx Hffhsh (u, Fckx-Phaxl xk  
mhng`ghn`kvhk vx) fwdwnvw... âEd Cfhh Tcbg! {hl hhj ]uo  
]cjxkgxdc vi al i agcn, rhnvha`k Cfw Jhgxfxk vc hxgcsx fzdi ; vi n.  
Fbx ukwk emxkc h\hn ; x, ukwk di ; i kvck fxn rcvnc hbhgvhr...

<sup>1</sup> âJhnxox Fhyvhvß, 11-[x [xgv, scp.204æ âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfxk tcbxgcjx fhf`.

<sup>2</sup> âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, 13-[i [xgv, scp.171, Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfxk tcbxgcjx fhf`æ âPxgdcjwg-zmgxdhß (Cfw Kcxl ), 1-[x [xgv, scp.64æ â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 1-[x ]h\, 6-[- [xgv, scp.156.

<sup>3</sup> â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 1-[x ]h\, 6-[- [xgv, scp.156.

<sup>4</sup> âL i sjcvnc; ß (Ph; xl ), 3-[i [xgv, scp.122æ â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 1-[x ]h\, 6-[- [xgv, scp.156æ â: i kwbwg-pcrhxrß (L ckhm), scp.188.

<sup>5</sup> âPxgdcjwg-zmgxdhß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.63.

uyghkghn`kvhk fxxkx l ck, fxxkx vc sck zb pxl hdcl xbc  
'zji nc; .ß

Hffhs fw jc; gxtx rcfwg ejvx mc fxngx; vc 'evxf Cfw Jhgxfc  
vevxcgn... âFxb xsjcdxnx; ; x, [hl hhj`k ]cjxkgx; vck rwnjhvn`y`  
mhojh rcvcn sckxk l cxacj ocn[gcxkx hbgvhr.ß

Cfw Jhgxfc vevx... âCrngx l ckxl dhk`l vh rudwk mc ukvhk  
fharh ; xl x xsjcdxnsxkxbsc, h`hn`k.ß

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl Cgxkx, Hffhs vh {c/tcnx 'zji ni f  
emgcxkc h`hnv`ghn. U pcbncj Hgghp jcnctxkvck nxshgcjc l cf/ws  
ugwkhk mhojh rcvcn Cgx pcl xac ukwkgh fxngx; vc xv x mc nxshgcjc  
se]xgvx; vc vc ukw jcsvrgcvx. {c/tcn vc pcl xac Hffhsgh fxn  
denvc ugwnvw. Kcphdcj Xsghl ` rcfwg ejvx; vck sukn ukh  
epjxdh[ vwdl hv`.ß<sup>1</sup>

Bedv xfkx Cgxddxfkxg-Pi sedk zb hjhs`kvhk, u vh  
fhfhs`kvhk ncmhdcj evxn ; x, â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl zb cl xgcnx  
Hffhs mc Pcl bc xgc fxngx; vc Cfw Jhgxfxk emxkc vhoxg ugvw.  
Fw bhl hk Cgx, {c/tcn mc Crxg pcdcjvc xagc l caywg vxvxcn.  
|edycl fcnx-C; ncl zb cl xgcxkc fwdwnvw... âFwkghnvhk pcn  
fxnxkx xsjcdxnsxkxbsc, se]xk.ß Ukghnvhk fxnx vevx... âLck {c/tcnx  
se]vxl .ß Vx'cnx xsc vevx... âLck vc Crngx se]xncl .ß |edycl fcnx-  
C; ncl fwdwnvw... âLck sxb xojxdhn shpxfx ejvxl , sxb vc se]vixkb. Hgghp vh  
Cgxkx l ckxl i]ik se]l xavx.ß<sup>2</sup>

Xl hl Cgx<sup>TM</sup> âKcp[i g fcghycßvc fw phvxsc fhncsxkvc  
ocfcn mencnc; fwdwnwn...

âSxb l ckxl |edycl fcngc ughk dho`k rupwl gwywl w, u pcbncjxk dhk`kvh  
l hgx; ugvywl di;sc; mc oiswsx l crhl`dhoa`fxgnsxkb. U pcbncj wahrg`r  
]hyghn`l vkh l cxx hywawkh hghn, sxxcsxkc s`ohn, zb denxkvc dhj`bv`nhn, fcvckxl x  
zb fcvckxkc dh`av`nhn, zb fcvckxkxk 'zbcg cjnxkx l ckc xdgvcnvx, del cdx  
Jedkcdxf l ckxl hyb`l h rudhnv`. U, l ckvck pe] mhoj dhghk fxn szb eajl cl xa,  
pe] fxn ocjh 'znl cl xavx. Si fphk Hgghp u pcbncjx si vvck hdn`gv`rvhk sukn  
Zbikik ck fzdi; l ircnncf l cgc;gcnx xgc dhkha`ejl xavx ; x, 'e[c-'ikvi b ukh  
'zbcg coghrx ; edtxddcjcgnx mc xkshkx sc[xddcgcgnx ha`ghs`k. Lck vc hkhs`k`k vhg`k[h  
rh]hk fxn vcmc fhghs` ; xl x pcl xac ukwk vhg`k[h 'evxvxl , u pcn 'ik zb 'zbcg  
coghr`kvhk fxnxkx l ckxl i]ik zdncvxn mc l ckc fwdwnwnvw ; x, ukh xrxvh evcl .  
Pcn xgvc fxn l i vvcj Pcnh l hyhns`kvh ejjx;ht phg`kvh ; e]xnrxv. Lckvck fharh

<sup>1</sup> âL i sjcvnc; ß (Ph; xl ), 3-[i [xgv, scp.576.

<sup>2</sup> Dekc vc unhv.

pe] ;cs ukw 'znl in vi. U bhl hk pe] fñn hñgc Xsghl cshs'kvh jca;xg  
 ugwl hl 'avæ dhgk'b |edycl fcngc ukwk bzm[csx Ocvx[cæ l ck vc ukghn'k  
 i]ik[isi xvxl. Lck mcpd kwnwkw 'znin, kifimmcj cjnñkx xdgcdxvxl.  
 |edycl fcnc mcpd 'cgck bhl hk axvvcjgñ fñn khgc scsx eaxjvxl mc sunwavwl ...âDh  
 Ncswgcgñp! Fw pcbñk khgc kcvñn?ß Fwdwnvw...âAedjhk'k scsxvñn ;x, (hñj'r) xfhvcj  
 ugwl hrvhk l c/dws ugl wavwn. Lckxl eaxjvx;gcñxl x sck vc eaxvñnsck,  
 'znvi;gcñxl x sck vc 'zninsck. Tcnrxl xb fvvwn ;x, sck \edycl fcn vedxgsc,  
 gh;xk l ckxl mcbñxl sck mc oedñn dugvhshk.ß Lck pcl xac u pcbñcjc fñn'c xvxl.  
 Fñn 'ik Rinedavck fñn vcsjc hvhl 'cgñf ukh vevxgcñ...âEd Lcpcl l cv! Sck  
 fzdi; fñn xvvh ejl xsck! Egc fñn xa ;x, hjh-fhfhghn'kvhk mc sighgckvck pe] fñn  
 ukw xvvh ejl cl xavñn. Xkvx sckvck fñn aed xsjcdññ;æ c'cn ukw denñkc dejñnsck mc  
 ukw fñbc 'zsjnsck, sckñk Hgghp'k \edycl fcnñ mc ncswgw ugvywvkh xkhkh[hy'r.  
 C'cn denñkc dejñl cscñ, fhah viac[cdx; ;x, sck sepn;hn mc ;cbbhfshk!ß U  
 pcbñcj fwdwnvw...âKc xsjcdññsñkxb?ß Vevxgcñ...âFw hyh[ ]hy'n, ;z;ikvck ]o'f  
 'cgsñk mc sckñk rhfhy'kvh vdhks'k!ß Fwdwnvw...âPcrñrcjck, Hgghp pcñ fñn xac  
 rhvñvñn. C'cn Hgghp fw xax sñbñk i]ik evñsc, xl hk 'cññc[c; mc phrrh ahpñvg;  
 evc[c;sñkñl x?ß Vevxgcñ...âFcgñß |edycl fcn fwdwnvw...âLck jebgñ;gc xsjcvñdñkñb  
 sñbc 'zsjñc[cdcl, (hl l h) l ck fñññl ;x, sñb oedñn dugvkh rhd'jl hdh[hrs'k'b.  
 Sñbñk hñhk'bvñ fñn ;cs mñn ;x, rcgñfc' viac[c; mc fñn ;cs vc mñn ;x, âCpbñfß  
 l i phññfcsñk jca;xg evc[c;vñ.ß Sukñh fwdwnvw...âEd hyh[! C'cn Hgghp mc  
 rñdñl cj 'ikikc xl hk'k mññsh mc l ckxl Hgghp'k ncswgw ugvywl w fñññscsc,  
 ;z;ikvck ]o mc Hgghp'k xbkñ xgc l ckxl rhñal vñ vdhk!ß Ukw phrr ughñr  
 nñshgcj l cf/ws evck Hgghp hkv ugswk ;x, hyh[ ;z;ikvck ]ov mc rwaghñk  
 rhkhv ]hgl hs'kh uoahn axvvcjgñ fñn scsgc 'cgñf |edycl fcnñk rhñas'kvñ  
 jcmhñz;hñgñgh vdhkv, wbwk ahocgññkñ u pcbñcñk isjikc shgñ. Xax fegc 'znck u  
 rzñl jc;cffñngc vevxgcñ...âTcnl hk mñn ;x, ukwk fñn dhñ's' sckc jñct 'cgsñk mc  
 vñ'cn dhñ's' zb denñkv rhgñs'k!ß U pcbñcj tcñl hk mñvñ, hyh[ 'k dhñ's' ]uo  
 rcñfc ac;xgvc mc xgñ'n'l scsx mñññc; xñcgñ 'cgñvñ, |edycl fcnñk dhk'kvñ vdhkv.  
 Hb rhgñvñ ;x, u pcbñcñ cphjc ejñk. Gh;xk u xkhv;hn ;htñññ vevxgcñ...âFw  
 dhñ's'kh tcñl hk mñn ;x, rhd'v'f vñ'cn dhñ's'kh fññcasñk, cmñcg;x phgñkh rhd'js'k.ß  
 U pcbñcj tcñl hk mñvñ mc hyh[ rhd'jv'. Lck vevxl ...âGh xghpc xggcgñp! Ed  
 Ncswgcgñp! Lck sckc xl hk 'cññck mc fwkw xñññ evck xg; acoscl ...âFw hyh[  
 kc ejvñsc, Hgghp'k xbkñ xgc ejvñ ;x, sckñk kifimmcjñkñ jcsvñr ejñk mc sckñk  
 vc/mcñkñ cbcl cñgñ shds'k.ß U rzñl phl 'gñgh vevxgcñ...âOedñ! Fw dhgñk], ]uo  
 fh[hñ'rg mc l hññ fñn sepn;hñvñ! Fw ;cñvck fhñh (l ckñ kcbñvc jwñvñvññ)

<sup>1</sup> âRcgñfß – rwdw vel c;vñ mc l crscv âFcvñß rwdwswvñn ;x, Ri neda  
 [ck'hmcñcññkñ xdxñl xvck ]uow u rwdwdh hj'gl 'av'.

sckx jcsvrx evck mhn! ?!B<sup>1</sup>

Fegcgx;gc, |edycl fcnx-C;ncl i Cgx ™ -` wahrg`r  
]hyghn`kvhk e/jxfhnck zb pxl hcdsxc 'zji ni f shoghl `a, pcn  
'i k zbi ki k 'zbcg coghrghn`kvhk fxnxx ukh zdncl xa mc  
'zsjcnxa menl xavx ; x, ukh xrjxvh ejxsk. U fzdi vi ; vck suknh  
vh zb egl xkx jcvnx[x ughnhr ukh zdnclvx, zbi xgc kc[mh ejl cdc  
vuynw ]c; vx (kc[mh – sxngx l cjgcfgcnx \`]'gj` xgc vel c; ).

âSi kckx Jxnl xbxßvc mc fharh ; xjhfgnhvh { hfxnvck fegc  
ncmhdcj ugwkwn...â|edycl fcnx-C;ncl Jhxt l i phnxfcsxkvc Cgxkx  
]hy`nv` mc fxn l i vvcj ukwkgh hsjhvhk vkh`av`. { hl hjj vevx...  
âUkwk zb cl xuygwsx xgc \`]'gvhal hs` ]uo wbwk ]c; vx!B

|edycl fcn fwdwnvw... âLck ukwkgh \`]'gvhal hv! æ Hgghp ukwkgh  
\`]'gvhav!B<sup>2</sup>

Fharh fxn ncmhdcjvc xsc vedxgx... â|edycl fcnx-C;ncl Jhxt  
l i phnxfcsxkvc Cgxkx ]hy`nv` mc fxn l i vvcj ukwkgh hsjhvhk  
vkh`av`. Scphfcgcnvck fc/bxgcx vevxgc...B<sup>3</sup>

{ i kvcf xfkx Khpxdckxk (dhowv Khpxdc xfkx { i kvcfxk)  
ncmhdcjxkvc vedxgx...âJhxt rcbmcx fhaghkhk bhl hk |edycl fcn  
hdhyh rhgov` mc Cgx xgc wbwk l i vvcj hsjhvhk vkh`av`. Cfw  
Fc; n vevx...âDh Ncswgcgghp! Sxbxk fw 'i k Cgx xgc \`]'gvhal hk`b  
kc rcvcn wbwk ]c; vx!B Pcbncj fwdwnvw... âUkwkgh \`]'gvhak l ck  
vedxgx! æ c; s!kc Hgghp ukwkgh \`]'gvhav!B<sup>4</sup>

Xl hl Cgx ™ |edycl fcn i -vck egl zdnckl cdc  
]uo pcnxs xv. Fegc ; x, Jcfcnx dhb`n...

﴿يَا أَيُّهَا الَّذِينَ آمَنُوا إِذَا تَاجَيْتُمُ الرَّسُولَ فَقَدِّمُوا بَيْنَ يَدَيْ نَجْوَاكُمْ صَدَقَةٌ﴾

âEd xl hk cpq, pcn mhoj |edycl fcngc \`]'gvhal hr xsjcsckxb, zb  
szpfcjxkxbvck rhfhr scvrc menxkß - hcdsx (âL i [hvxgcß swncsx, 12) khbxg  
ugvwrvh scphfcgcn pcbncj |edycl fcngc \`]'gvhal hrvhk kcpd  
ugwkvwghn, dhgk`b scvrc menvx; gcx jcrvxncv fwkh x[hbc  
menxgvx. Fwkvhk suknh Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfvck fharh pe] ; cs

<sup>1</sup> âKcp[i g -fcghycß, 190-[` oi jfc (âRhsxcß oi jfcx).

<sup>2</sup> âSi kckx Jenl xbxß, l ckhrxf ; xjhF, Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxfk tcbxgcjx fhF,  
13-[i [xgv, scp.173æâJhnxx Fhyvhvß, 7-[x [xgv, scp.402.

<sup>3</sup> âWsvwg-yhfcb, 4-[i [xgv, scp.27.

<sup>4</sup> â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 2-[x ]h\, 12-[x [xgv, scp.200, pcvxs 1122æ âNxdhbwk-  
ki bncjß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.265.

ukwkgh kc[mh ejl cvx.β<sup>1</sup>

Mhpxvxkxk âCsfhfwk-ki bwgß ; xjh<sup>h</sup> kvh mc fharh ; xjh<sup>h</sup>ghnvh  
xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k fegc fwdwnvwyw ncmhdcj ugwkwn...

كَانَ لِي دِينَارٌ فَبِعْتُهُ وَكُنْتُ إِذَا نَاجَيْتُ الرَّسُولَ (ص) تَصَدَّقْتُ بِدِرْهَمٍ حَتَّى نَفِدَ

âLckxl fñ vxkhn (r`b`g) \wgwl mhn vx ;x, ukw shjv`l (o`nvghv`l). Pcn  
mhoj |edycl fcnge \`j`gvha`nv`l sh, fñ vxnpcl scvrc menxvxl , kcpkdcj ukghn  
rwnjhnv.β<sup>2</sup>

Fharh fñ ncmhdcjvc xsc fegc fwdwnwn...âLckxl fñ vxkhn (r`b`g)  
\wgwl mhn vx, ukw uk vxnpcl c ('i l i a \wgh) jemxvxl mc |edycl fcnk dhk`kh  
'ejvxl . Pcn vctc vc ukwk fñkx scvrc menxvxl .β<sup>3</sup>

Bcl coacnx pcl xk hdckxk jctsxnxkvc ncmhdcj evxn ; x,  
pcbncj Cgx pcl xk uk vxnpcl x |edycl fcnvck swhg ejvxdx uk  
[i l gc l i rhfxgxkvc scvrc menl xavx.

Xl hl Cgx fharh fñ ncmhdcjvc fwdwnwn...

إِنَّ فِي كِتَابِ اللَّهِ لَآيَةً مَّا عَمِلَ بِهَا أَحَدٌ قَبْلِي وَلَا يَعْمَلُ بِهَا أَحَدٌ بَعْدِي:

آيَةُ النَّجْوَى: ﴿يَا أَيُّهَا الَّذِينَ آمَنُوا إِذَا نَاجَيْتُمْ...﴾ كَانَ عِنْدِي دِينَارٌ ... إِلَى قَوْلِهِ: ثُمَّ نُسِخَتْ فَلَمْ

يَعْمَلُ بِهَا أَحَدٌ فَتَرَكْتُ: ﴿أَأَشْفَقْتُمْ أَنْ تُقَدِّمُوا بَيْنَ يَدَيِ نَجْوَاكُمْ صَدَقَاتٍ﴾

âHghp`k : xjh<sup>h</sup> kvh fñ hdc mhnv`n ;x, l ckvck rhfhr pe] ;cs ukh cl cg  
ejl cdx, l ckvck suknh vh fñ ;cs ukh cl cg ejl cdc[c;vx. U, âdh cddwpcgcbxkc  
hl ckw xbh kh[cdjwl ...β hdxsvxn. Lckxl fñ vxkhn \wgwl mhn vx mc... Suknh fw  
hdckxk pz;l i kcso evxgvx (rimmcvck shg`kv). Hnj`r fñ ;cs ukh cl cg ejl cvx;vc  
fw hdc khbxg ugww...âDuosh kc[mhvhk rhfhr scvrc menl c;vck runovkwkb?!...β<sup>4</sup>

Fcgx, xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j -gc  
dho`kg`y` fegc vx mc u pcbncjxk zl ni ki k suk hkghn`kh rcvcn  
ukvhk hdn`gl hl `av`. Hdxac vedxn...â|edycl fcn epjxbhn phg`kh  
vi ackvc fwdwnvw...âPcfxfxl x l ckxl dhk`l h ]hy`n`k!ß Cfw Fc;nx  
]hy`nv`ghn. |edycl fcn ukh kcbcn shgv`rvh fha`k` fhg`ah rudwf  
dekxvck fwdwnvw...âPcfxfxl x dhk`l h ]hy`n`k!ß Zl cnx ]hy`nv`ghn.  
Ukw 'znvi ;vc dekxvck fha`k` dhjhjh rudwf fwdwnvw...âPcfxfxl x  
l ckxl i]ik ]hy`n`k!ß Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -` ]hy`nv`ghn. |edycl fcn ukw

<sup>1</sup> âJctsxnx Jcfcnxß, 28-[x [xgv, scp.14-15ââVwnnwg-L ckswñß, 6-[` [xgv, scp. 185

<sup>2</sup> âCsfhfwk-ki bwgß (Mhpxvx), scp.308ââJctsxnx Jcfcnxß, pcl xk hdckxk  
jctsxnxkvc.

<sup>3</sup> âJctsxnx Si dwjxß, 6-[` [xgv, scp.185ââNxdhbwk-ki bncjß, 2-[x [xgv, scp. 265.

<sup>4</sup> Dekc unvhvââJctsxnx : caahß, 4-[i [xgv, scp 265.

I cgctckxk hgj`kh ]c; vx mc [hk`k` jh`a`nhk mhojh rcvcn ukwkgh szpfcj ejvx. |edycl fcn mthj evckvc cgx ukwk ]xdkxkvc xvxB<sup>1</sup>

Xfkx Hffhs fegc vedxn...â|edycl fcnxk mcbxddcjx hy`nghav`, Pctsc mc Hdxac ukwk dhk`kvh ugvyw phgvh Cgx vc vhoxg ugvw. |edycl fcn ukw `znvi; vc semxkvx, fha`k` rhgv`n`f fwdwnvw...âLckc dho`kgha, lckc dho`kgha!ß Suknh ukh szd;ckvx mc [hk`k` jh`a`nhkh rcvcn ukwkgh szpfcj ejvx.B<sup>2</sup>

l l l i Scgcl ckxk fegc vevxdx kcrq evxgn...âHkv x]xgck acosc hkv ugswk! Cgx [hl hhj`k hnhs`kvh cpv, mcsxddcj mc mthvh |edycl fcnc ck dho`k acos xv. Fxn `i k si fp u pcbncjx dugwol hyh `ejvx; vc `znvi l ; x, fwdwnwn...âCgx `cgvxl x? Cgx `cgvxl x?ß mc fw szbi jc; nhn evxnvx. Thjxl c vevx...âLck[c, sxb ukw fxn xa vhg`k[h `zkvcnl xsxkxb.ß Fxn hbvhk Cgx `cgvx mc l ck fhah vi avi l ; x, |edycl fcnxk ukwkgh oi swsx xax mhnv`n. Fwkh `znc vc emvck ]`ov`l mc rh`dh dho`k denvc ujwnvwl . |edycl fcnc phl `vhk dho`k l ck ugvywyl phgvh `znvi l ; x, u pcbncj, Cgxdc jcnct cdxgvx, ukwkgh ocmcjvc szpfcj ejl cdc fhaghv`. |edycl fcn egc pcl xk `i k vi kdhvhk `ejvx. Cgx vc [hl hhj`k hnhs`kvh cpv, mcsxddcj mc mthvh |edycl fcnc phl `vhk dho`k xvxB

Ph; xl vedxn...âFw pcvxsxk sckcvgnx scpxpvxn.B<sup>3</sup>

Xfkx Hffhs`k fegc vevxdx kcrq ugwkwn...â|edycl fcnc-C; ncl i fwdwnvw...

مَنْ سَرَّهُ أَنْ يَحْيَا حَيَاتِي وَيَمُوتَ مَمَاتِي وَيَسْكُنَ جَنَّةَ عَدْنٍ غَرَسَهَا رَبِّي فَلْيُؤَالَ عَلِيًّا مِنْ بَعْدِي وَلْيُؤَالَ وَلِيِّهُ وَلْيَقْتَدِ بِالْإِمَّةِ مِنْ بَعْدِي فَإِنَّهُمْ عَثَرَتْنِي خُلُقُوا مِنْ طِينَتِي رُزِقُوا فَهَمًّا وَعِلْمًا وَوَيْلٌ لِلْمُكَذِّبِينَ بِفَضْلِهِمْ مِنْ أُمَّتِي الْقَاطِعِينَ فِيهِمْ صَلَاتِي لَا أُنَالِهِمُ اللَّهَ شَفَاعَتِي

âPcn ;cs l ckxl ;xl x dhahd`f l ckxl ;xl x zgl cdx mc |cnmcnvx`hn`l`k Zbiki k c;vdx âFcnxkß fepxajxkxk fhyghn`kvh sh;xk ugl hr xsjcdxmsc, l ckvck suknh `cnc; Cgxkx semsxk mc l ckvck suknh;` xl hl ghnh xrjxvh ejsxk. }i k;x ukghn l ckxl xjncjxl vxn, l ckxl txjncjxl vck mi [wvvh `cgl xagcn, ukghnh egl mc vcnnh;c cjh ugwk l wavwn. Lckxl i l l cjxl vck ughk u ;csgcnxk phg`kh mhd ugswk ;x, ukghn`k i sji kgi ;gcnxkx mc tcbxgcjgcnxkx jc;bxf evcn mc l ckxl ukghngh ughk

<sup>1</sup> âNxdhbwk-ki bncjß, 2-[x ]h\, 2-[x ]xgv, scp.237æ âBcohxnwg-i r`fhß, scp.72.

<sup>2</sup> âL c[l cw b-bcmh xvß, 9-[w ]xgv, scp.36.

<sup>3</sup> âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 6-[` ]xgv, scp.300æ âOcshxsx Kcshxß, scp.40æ âL i sjcvnc; ß (Ph; xl ), 3-[i ]xgv, scp.138-139.

fhyg'g'y'l` ; cscngcn. Hgghp l ckl acthcxl x ukghn h'jv'nl h's'k!B<sup>1</sup>

Fwnh rcvcn |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk xg; mcsxsx fhncsxkvc; x  
l c'jgcfcgn oh'ng'gv'. Suknh; `fzgl cvc xsc |edycl fcnxk shxn  
mcsxgcnx fhncsxkvc jcp'rxrhj h\hnh[hy'r.

XLHL PCSCK MC XLHL PISEDK E |EDYCLFCNX-C: NCL  
i -VCKVXN MC UKWK X: X ZMGHV-V-N

Cmmcg; x fzgl cvc |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -xk Cgx <sup>TM</sup>  
phrr`kvh fcdhk ejvxdx l c'jgcfcgn oh'ng'gv'. Fw fzgl cvc xsc  
u pcbncjxk x; x kcmcsx -xl hl Pcsck <sup>TM</sup> mc xl hl Pisedk  
<sup>TM</sup> fhncsxkvc ncmhdcj ugwk'khghn` redv evc[cdx; . Pcl xk  
[i l ggcncvc vc al xk'kxß ; cgl csx mhnv`n ; x, ukwk l c/khs`  
cmmcgvc redv ugwkvw.

al i skcvx Cpl cvß ; xjh'f'kvh Lxrvhl xfkx Lc/vx  
: cncfvc fegc kcr'g ugwkwn... al |edycl fcnx-C; ncl Pcsckx zb  
rw[hy'kh 'zji ni f fwdwnvw... al Phbh l xk'kxß - Fw l ckvckvxn.B<sup>2</sup>

Fcnh xfkx Hbxfxk vc fegc vevxdx kcr'g ugwkwn... al |edycl fcn  
Pcsckc, dhowv Pisedkc fwdwnvw... al Fw l ckvckvxn.B<sup>3</sup>

Fwohnx, Jxnl xbx, Xfkx Lh[c, Cpl cv mc Ph; xl Dc/gh xfkx  
L i nncvck kcr'g evxngcn ; x, |edycl fcn fegc fwdwnl wavwn...

حُسَيْنٌ مِنِّي وَأَنَا مِنْ حُسَيْنٍ أَحَبَّ اللَّهُ مَنْ أَحَبَّ حُسَيْنًا حُسَيْنٌ سَيْطٌ مِنَ الْأَسْبَاطِ

al Pisedk l ckvck, l ck vc Pisedkvckcl . Hgghp Pisedkx semckgcnx semcn.  
Pisedk csfhjvhk ughk f'xn sxfjvxn.B<sup>4</sup>

Vx'cn f'xn ncmhdcjvc xsc vedxn... al Pcsck mc Pisedk csfhjvhk ughk  
f'xn sxfjvxn.B<sup>5</sup>

Cfw Ncl sc fegc vedxn... al |edycl fcnx-C; ncl fwdwnvw... al Pisedk

<sup>1</sup> al Pxgdcjwg-zmgxdhß (Cfw Kcxl ), 1-[x [xgv, scp.86.

<sup>2</sup> al i skcvx Cpl cvß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.132 al: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 13-[i [xgv,  
scp.99-100, 16-[` [xgv, scp.262 al: ckbi g-i l l hgß k l i kjcocfhj`, 5-[x [xgv,  
scp.106 al hl xws-scyxnß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.145.

<sup>3</sup> al: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 16-[` [xgv, scp.270.

<sup>4</sup> al Cg-cvcfwg-l i tncvß (Fwohnx), l i hkercjws-scfxdd fhf`, pcvxs 364 al  
al Si kckx Jxnl xbxß, 13-[i [xgv, scp.195 al Si kckx xfkx Lh[cß, l i rcvxl c, 11-[x  
fhf, pcvxs 144 al i skcvx Cpl cvß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.172 al i sjcvc; x Ph; xl B, 3-  
[i [xgv, scp.177 (pcl u, pcl vc Bcpcfx fw pcvxs scpxp peshf ejl xagcn) al  
al Wsvwg-yhfcbß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.19 mc 5-[x [xgv, scp.130.

<sup>5</sup> al: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 16-[` [xgv, scp.270 mc 13-[i [xgv, scp.101, 105.

I ckvckvxn, I ck vc ukvhkhl æu, csfhjvhk ughk fxn sxfjvxn.B<sup>1</sup>

Fcnnh xfkx Hbxf vedxn ;x, |edycl fcnx-C;ncl fegc fwdwnvw...âPisedk I ckvckvxn, I ck vc ukvhkhl . Hgghp ukw semckgcnx semcn. Pcsck mc Pisedk csfhjvhk ughk x;x sxfjvxn.B<sup>2</sup>

|edycl fcnx-C;ncl xk xl hl Pcsck mc xl hl Pisedk fhncsxkvc fwdwnvwyw âl xkxkxß ;cgl csx egc ukghn`k hjhghn` fhncsxkvc fwdwnvwyw pcl xk ;cgl cvxn, dc/kx ukghn xghpx pz; I - gcnx jcfgyx ejl c I crhl `kvh edkxgc |edycl fcn ;xl xvxnecn.

U pcbncjxk u x;x xl hl fhncsxkvc fwdwnvwyw âPcrrcjck ukghn csfhjvhk ughk x;x sxfjvxnß ;cgl csxkxk I c/khs` fw vedxgvxn ;x, ukghn vh shxn fcacn kcmcgcnx ;xl x dhgk`b ukwk x;x kcmcsxvxnæ fw, cfcs fxn szbvi n. |edycl fcnxk fegc vel csx juo bcxt fxn epjxl hg`v`n. C;sxkc, csfhj ;cgl csxkvc xagckck âcgxt-ghl ß I icddckgx; hnjx;g` bepkvvc jwjwgl wa fxn aedc – Rwn/hk hdcgcnxkvc xagckl xa âcsfhjß ;cgl csxkc xahnc i Ji k xagckxn...

﴿قُولُوا آمَنَّا بِاللَّهِ وَمَا أُنزِلَ إِلَيْنَا وَمَا أُنزِلَ إِلَىٰ إِبْرَاهِيمَ وَإِسْمَاعِيلَ وَإِسْحَاقَ وَيَعْقُوبَ وَالْأَسْبَاطِ

وَمَا أُوتِيَ مُوسَىٰ وَعِيسَىٰ وَمَا أُوتِيَ النَّبِيُّونَ مِنْ رَبِّهِمْ لَا نُفَرِّقُ بَيْنَ أَحَدٍ مِنْهُمْ وَنَحْنُ لَهُ مُسْلِمُونَ﴾

âVedxk... Fxb Hgghp xl hk 'cjxnl xax; , pcl Jxkxk fxbc khbxg ughk aedgcncæ Xfnhpxl c, Xsl hxgc, Xsphrh, Dc/rwfh mc csfhjh khbxg ughkghnhæ Hgghp jcnctxkvck Lwshdh, Xshdh mc fharh vedycl fcngcnc khbxg ughkghnh (xl hk 'cjxnl xax;). Fxb ukghn`k hnhs`kvh pe] fxn tcnr rudl wnwr mc fxb Ukh jcsqxl x;.B<sup>3</sup>

Fharh fxn hdc...

﴿أَمْ يَقُولُونَ إِنَّ إِبْرَاهِيمَ وَإِسْمَاعِيلَ وَإِسْحَاقَ وَيَعْقُوبَ وَالْأَسْبَاطِ كَانُوا هُودًا أَوْ نَصَارَىٰ﴾

âDuosh vedxnsxkxb... ;x, Xfnhpxl , Xsl hxg, Xsphr, Dc/rwf mc csfhj I csxpx, dhowv kcsnhkx xvxcn?B<sup>4</sup>

Vx'cn fxn hdc...

﴿قُلْ آمَنَّا بِاللَّهِ وَمَا أُنزِلَ عَلَيْنَا وَمَا أُنزِلَ عَلَىٰ إِبْرَاهِيمَ وَإِسْمَاعِيلَ وَإِسْحَاقَ وَيَعْقُوبَ

وَالْأَسْبَاطِ وَمَا أُوتِيَ مُوسَىٰ وَعِيسَىٰ وَالنَّبِيُّونَ مِنْ رَبِّهِمْ لَا نُفَرِّقُ بَيْنَ أَحَدٍ مِنْهُمْ وَنَحْنُ لَهُ مُسْلِمُونَ﴾

âVe, fxb Hgghp xl hk 'cjxnvx;æ Pcl Jxkxk Ukwk fxbc, Xfnhpxl c, Xsl hxgc, Xsphrh, Dc/rwfh mc csfhjh khbxg ejvx;gcnxkc (xl hk 'cjxnvx;).B<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Dekc unhvh

<sup>2</sup> Dekc unhvh.

<sup>3</sup> âFcrncß swncsx, hdc.136.

<sup>4</sup> âFcrncß swncsx, hdc.140

<sup>5</sup> âHgx-XI nhkß swncsx, hdc.84.



Dekc fwdwnwgn...

﴿إِنَّا أَوْحَيْنَا إِلَيْكَ كَمَا أَوْحَيْنَا إِلَى نُوحٍ وَالنَّبِيِّينَ مِنْ بَعْدِهِ وَأَوْحَيْنَا إِلَى إِبْرَاهِيمَ وَإِسْمَاعِيلَ  
وَأِسْحَاقَ وَيَعْقُوبَ وَالْأَسْبَاطِ وَعِيسَى وَأَيُّوبَ وَيُونُسَ وَهَارُونَ وَسُلَيْمَانَ﴾

âFxb sckc mcpd ejvx; , ke[c ;x, sckvck rhfhr Kwph mc ukvhk sukh;`  
vedycl fcngcnc mcpd ejl xavx;æ Xfnhpxl c, Xsl hxgc, Xsphrh, Dc/rwfh, csfhjh, Xshdh,  
Cddwfh, Dwkwh, Phnwk mc Sigedl hkh mcpd ejvx;.B<sup>1</sup>

Fwkh cshsck, l i scgl hkghn |edycl fcnx-C; ncl j -xk  
xl hl Pcsck mc xl hl Pi sedk £ -xk fhncsxkvc fwdwnvwyw  
âcg-csfhjß ; cgl csxkvc; x âcgxt-ghl B`k l c/khs`k` dwohn`vh redv  
ugwkhk hdcgcnvck zdnckl xagcn. |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk ukghn`k  
fhncsxkvc fwdwnvwyw aed – edkxgc ukghn`k hjhs` fhncsxkvc  
fwdwnvwyw aedvx...âUkwkgh |edycl fcnx l i khsxhcjx Phnwkgh  
L wshk`k l i khsxhcjx ; xl xvxn.B Hgghp-jhhgh Phnwkwk L wsh xgc  
ughk l i khsxhcjxkx vc L wshk`k vxgxkvck fegc fcdhk evxn...

﴿وَأَجْعَلْ لِي وَزِيرًا مِنْ أَهْلِي هَارُونَ أَخِي اشْدُدْ بِهِ أَزْرِي وَأَشْرِكْهُ فِي أَمْرِي كَيْ نُسَبِّحَكَ  
كَثِيرًا وَنَذْكُرَكَ كَثِيرًا إِنَّكَ كُنْتَ بِنَا بَصِيرًا﴾ قَالَ قَدْ أُوتِيتَ سُؤْلَكَ يَا مُوسَى﴿

âLwsh vevx...âZb ohkcvhk`l vkh l ckxl i]ik fxn mcbxn rcnbn men -  
rhvha`l Phnwk. Ukwkgh l ckxl hnohl` l zp;cl gcj, xaxl vc ukw l ckc acnx; ej  
;x, Sckx juogw jcsfxp evc;, Sckx juo dhv evc;. }ik;x Sck fxbxl phgl`bh h'hp  
xvix.B Hgghp fwdwnvw...âEd Lwsh! Xsjcvdxk aedgcn sckc cjh ugwkvw.B<sup>2</sup>  
Vx'cn fxn hdcvc fwdwnwn...

﴿وَأَخِي هَارُونُ هُوَ أَفْصَحُ مِنِّي لِسَانًا فَأَرْسَلْهُ مَعِيَ رِدْءًا يُصَدِّقُنِي إِنِّي أَخَافُ أَنْ يُكَذِّبُونِ﴾ قَالَ  
سَنَشُدُّ عَضُدَكَ بِأَخِيكَ﴿

âRhvha`l Phnwkwk vxgx l ckvck vph dhv`vkh`ahkv'n. Ukw vh l ckxl gc  
fxngx;vc `zkvcn ;x, ;zl c;xl ugswk mc l ckx jcsvxrgcsxk, (l i k;x) l ckx jc; bxf  
evc[c;gcnxkvck runownhl . Hgghp fwdwnvw... Jebgx;gc sckxk rugghn`k rhvha`k`k  
mhsxjcsx xgc l zp;cl gcvc[cdcl .B<sup>3</sup>

Dekc fxn hdcvc fwdwnwgn...

﴿وَقَالَ مُوسَى لِأَخِيهِ هَارُونَ اخْلُفْنِي فِي قَوْمِي وَأَصْلِحْ وَلَا تَتَّبِعْ سَبِيلَ الْمُفْسِدِينَ﴾

âLwsh zb rhvha` Phnwk vevx...âLckxl zb rzml i l hnhs`kvh [hxxaxxl

<sup>1</sup> âKxshß swncsx, hdc.163.

<sup>2</sup> âJhphß swncsx, hdc.25-36.

<sup>3</sup> âRcscß swncsx, hdc.34-35.

ug, ukghn` xsghp ej mc l i tsxvgnxk (tcshv cpgkxk) dugwkh xjhcz ejl c.β<sup>1</sup>  
Dekc fwdwnwn...

﴿وَلَقَدْ آتَيْنَا مُوسَى الْكِتَابَ وَجَعَلْنَا مَعَهُ أَخَاهُ هَارُونَ وَزِيرًا﴾

âFxb L wshdh ;xjhf cjh ejvx; mc rhnvha` Phnwkw ukwk mcbxnx rcnhd  
menvx; .β<sup>2</sup>

Pcl ]xkxk fwdwnwn...

﴿ثُمَّ أَرْسَلْنَا مُوسَى وَأَخَاهُ هَارُونَ بِآيَاتِنَا وَسُلْطَانٍ مُبِينٍ﴾

âSuknh L wsh mc rhnvha` Phnwkw, Zbil ibik hdc mc hdv`k vcgvgcnxl xbgc  
'zkcvcvx; .β<sup>3</sup>

L i jchg Hgghp fw hdcgcncv Phnwkw L wshk`k mcbxnx, ; z-  
l c; ]xsx mc ki fi mmcj xaxkvc ukwk acnx; x rcnhd menl xa, L wsh  
vh ukw zb rzml i hnhs`kvh [hcxaxkx jc/dxk ejl xavxn. |edycl -  
fcnx-C; ncl j vc ha; hn ac; xgvc âCgx xgc l ckl l ikhsxfcjxl  
Phnwkg L wshk`k l ikhsxfcjxl ; xl vxvß vedc fwdwnl wavwn. Fw xavc  
dhgk`b ki fi mmcj l cscgcscx xsjxskh ugwkvwvkwvhk, xl hl Cgx  
i ]i k |edycl fcncx jcfgyx xaxkvc ; zl c; ejl c; , ukwk mcbxnx mc  
acnx; x ugl hr, u pcbncjvck suknh ukwk [hcxaxkgxdx mc jcfgyx xax  
xgc cghrcvhn ughk fi j i k l crhl ghn xsfhj ugwkwn. Csfhjghn  
i ]i k l zm[wv ughk pcn fxn l crhl fw i l l cjxk csfhj` shd`ghk  
Pcsck mc Pi sedk € i ]i k vc l zm[wvvwn. Fwkghnv dhgk`b  
ki fi mmcj l crhl ` xsjxskh ugwkwn, ]i k; x |edycl fcncx-  
C; ncl vck suknh pe] fxn \edycl fcncx 'cgl cdc[c; vxn. Gh; xk  
xsgl x pz; l gcncx jcfgyx ugwk l h l cs/wgxddcjx Hgghp  
jcncxkvck ukghn menxgl xavxn.

Dwohn`vh redv ugwkhhkghn |edycl fcncx-C; ncl j -xk  
zbi kvck suknh i ] mcsx... xl hl Cgx, xl hl Pcsck mc xl hl  
Pi sedk € fhncsxkvc fwdwnvwyw pcvxsgcn vxv. Suknh; `  
fzgl cvc xsc u pcbncjxk kcfcmx si kkcscxkvc redv ugwkhhk  
ho`n`k[` mcsxkxk fhncsxkvc szpfcj evc[cdx; .

HOXNCBBHL HKVH PCBNCJX LCPVX <sup>TM</sup> --K BI PWN

EVC{CDXKC VHYN |EDYCLFCNXK LI QVCSX

LCPVX <sup>TM</sup> /EDYCLFCN ; -GC EDKX HVVHV-N

<sup>1</sup> âC/nhtß swncsx, hdc.142.

<sup>2</sup> âTwnrhkß swncsx, hdc.35.

<sup>3</sup> âL w/l xkwkß swncsx, hdc.45.

âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, âSi kckx Cfw Vhmwvß mc vx'cn pcvxs  
; xjhfgnh kvh |edycl fcnvck fegc ncmhdcj ugwkwn...

وَلَا تَذْهَبُ الدُّنْيَا حَتَّى يَمْلِكَ الْعَرَبَ رَجُلٌ مِنْ أَهْلِ بَيْتِي يُوَاطِئُ اسْمُهُ اسْمِي

âLckxl Cpgx-fedjxl vck, hv` l ckxl hv`l gh edkx ughk fixn acos cncfc  
ph;xl ugl hd`k[h, vikdh sukh ]hjl hb.ß<sup>1</sup>

âL i sjcvnc; x Ph; xl ß, âL i skcvx Cpl cvß mc vx'cn ; xjhfg-  
ghnvh Cfw Scxv Oxvnx |edycl fcnx-C; ncl vck fegc kcrq evxn...

لَا تَقُومُ السَّاعَةُ حَتَّى تَمْلَأَ الْأَرْضُ ظُلْمًا وَجَوْرًا وَعُدْوَانًا ثُمَّ يَخْرُجُ مِنْ أَهْلِ بَيْتِي مَنْ يَمْلَأُهَا  
قِسْطًا وَعَدْلًا كَمَا مُلِئْتُ ظُلْمًا وَعُدْوَانًا

âRxdhl cj dhgk`b u bhl hk fcn`h ughn ; x, den ibi bigl , phrs`bg`r mc  
vial ck]xgx;gc vugswk, fwkvhk suknh l ckxl Cpgx-fedjxl vck fixn acos rxdhl evxf  
den ibi bigl mc phrs`bg`rgh vugvwyw ; xl x ukw phrr mc cvhgjgc vugvwswk.ß<sup>2</sup>

PCBNCJ LCPVX<sup>TM</sup> CPGX-FEDJVCKVXN

âSi kckx xfkx L h[cßvc (â[xphvß fhf`kvh) Cfw Pi nednc  
|edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk fegc fwdwnvwywk kcrq evxn...

لَوْ لَمْ يَبْقَ مِنَ الدُّنْيَا إِلَّا يَوْمٌ لَطَوَّلَهُ اللَّهُ عَزَّ وَجَلَّ حَتَّى يَمْلِكَ رَجُلٌ مِنْ أَهْلِ بَيْتِي يَمْلِكُ جَبَلَ  
الدَّيْلَمِ وَالْقُسْطَنْطِينَةِ

âC'cn vikdhk`k sukwkx fixn 'i kvck hnjr` rhgl hsh fegc, Hgghp-jhhgh u 'i ki  
u rcvcn wbhvh[hrv`n ; x, Cpgx-fedjxl vck ughk fixn ; xax ph;xl xddcjc ]hjs`k, Vedgcl  
mc Rusjckjckddc (: uksjhkjkxku`ug) dw;sc;gx;gcnxkx zb xojxdhn`kh hgs`k.ß

Pcl xk ; xjhfk`k âcg-txjckß mc âLcpvx<sup>TM</sup> -`k oi nw[wß  
fhf`kvh, âL i skcvx Cpl cvß mc vx'cn ; xjhfgghnvh xl hl Cgx<sup>TM</sup>  
|edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk fegc fwdwnvwywk kcrq evxn...

الْمَهْدِيُّ مِنْ أَهْلِ الْبَيْتِ يُصْلِحُهُ اللَّهُ فِي لَيْلَةٍ

âLcpvx fixb Cpgx-fedjvckvxn mc Hgghp-jhhgh ukw fixn 'e[cvc rxdhl h

<sup>1</sup> âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.74â âSi kckx Cfw Vhmwvß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.7, Vhnw epdhxs-si kkcjxk-Kcfcmxddc ]h` , 4-[i [xgv, scp.106-107, pcvxs 4282â âPxgdcjwg-zmgxdhß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.75â âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.376â âJhnxox Fhyvhvß, 4-[i [xgv, scp. 388â â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 1-[x ]h` , 7-[x [xgv, scp.188. Unhvh fw [i l gc vc mhnv`n... âUkwk coghr` edkxgc l ckxl coghr` l ; xl xvxn.ßâ âJctsnx Si dwjxß, Lwpcl l cv swncsxkxk jctsnxkvc, âtcpcg dckbwnwkc xggcsshcj..ß. hdcxkxk jctsnxkvc, 6-[` [xgv, scp.58.

<sup>2</sup> âL i sjcvnc; x Ph; xl ß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.558â âPxgdcjwg-zmgxdhß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.101â âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.36â âJctsnx Si dwjxß, 6-[` [xgv, scp.58 mc shxn ; xjhfggh.

phb`nghdh[hrv`n.β<sup>1</sup>

Ph;xl xk āL i sjcvnc;β ;xjhƒ kvh Cfw Scxv Oxvnxvck fegc  
kcrq ugwkw n...ā|edycl fcnx-C;ncl fwdwnl wavwn...

الْمَهْدِيُّ مِنَّا أَهْلَ الْبَيْتِ أَشْمُ الْأَنْفِ أَقْنَى أَجَلَى يَمَلُّ الْأَرْضَ قِسْطًا وَعَدْلًا كَمَا مَلِئْتَ جَوْرًا  
وْظُلْمًا يَعِيشُ هَكَذَا وَيَسْطُ يَسَارُهُ وَاصْبَعَيْنِ يَمِينَةَ الْمَسْبُوحَةِ وَالْإِبْهَامِ وَعَقْدَ ثَلَاثَةِ

āLcpvx fixb Cpꝥ-fedjvckvxn, fwnwkw fixn hb ]c; xgl xa, ]zpnscx fwyvhd', hg'k'  
kwnhkxvxn. U, den ibiki bigl mc phrs'bg'rgn vugvwyw ;xl x, phrr-cvhgcjgc  
vugvwnh[hrv`n...β<sup>2</sup>

LCPVX™ THJXLEDX-BCPNH (alevna salim)-K ZMGHVGHN-KVHKV-N  
āSi kckx Cfw Vhmwvβ ;xjhƒ kvh l l l i Scgcl c kcrq evxn  
; x, |edycl fcnxk fegc fwdwnvwywkw eajvxl ...

الْمَهْدِيُّ مِنْ عَثْرَتِي مِنْ وَلَدِ فَاطِمَةَ

āLcpvx l ckxl xjncjxl vck mc Thjxl ckxk zmghvghn`kvhkv`n.β<sup>3</sup>  
ā: ckbi g-i l l hgβ ;xjhƒ kvh Cgx™ |edycl fcn j -  
xk fegc fwdwnvwywkw kcrq evxn...

āLcpvx fixbvck mc Thjxl c zmghvghn`kvhk ughk fixn ;xaxvxn.β<sup>4</sup>

PCBNCJ LCPVX™ XLHL PISEDK™ --K  
ZMGHVGHN-KVHKV-N

āBcohxnwg-wrƒhβ ;xjhƒ kvh Cfw Cddwf Ckshnx kcrq evxn ; x,  
|edycl fcn fegc fwdwnvw...āFw i l l cjxk Lcpvxsx fw x;x acosvck - Pcscck  
mc Pisedkxk zmghvghn`kvhkv`n.β<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> āPꝥgdcjwg-zmgxdhβ, 3-[i [xgv, scp.177; āL i skcvx Cpl cvβ, 1-[x [xgv, scp.84; āJctsnx Si dwjxβ, 6-[ [xgv, scp.58. Unhvh vedxgn...āFw pcvxsx xfkx Cfx Aedfc, Cpl cv xfkx Pckfcg mc xfkx L h[c Cgxvck kcrq ejl xagcn.β; āSi kckx xfkx L h[cβ, cg-txjck ; xjhƒ, pcvxs 4085.

<sup>2</sup> āL i sjcvnc; x Ph;xl β, 4-[i [xgv, scp.557-vc vedxgn... āFw pcvxs L i sgi l i k acnjx xgc scpxpvxnβ; āSi kckx Cfw Vhmwvβ, 6-[ [xgv, scp.136 mc 4-[i [xgv, scp.107, pcvxs 4285.

<sup>3</sup> āSi kckx Cfw Vhmwvβ, cg-Lcpvx ; xjhƒ, 4-[i [xgv, scp.7, pcvxs 4284; āSi kckx Cfw Vhmwvβ, 7-[x [xgv, scp. 134; āSi kckx xfkx L h[cβ, cfmhfwg-txjck, ownw[wg-Lcpvx fhƒ. Unhvh vedxgn... āLcpvx Thjxl ckxk zmghvghn`kvhkv`nβ; āL i sjcvnc; x Ph;xl β, 4-[i [xgv, scp. 557-vc vedxgn... āU (dc/kx Lcpvx™) phrv`n mc Thjxl ckxk zmghvghn`kvhkv`nβ; āLxbhkwg-e/jxvhgβ (Bcpcfx), 2-[x [xgv, scp. 24-vc vedxgn... āLcpvx Thjxl ckxk zmghvghn`kvhkv`nβ; āJctsnx Si -dwjxβ, 6-[ [xgv, scp.58, āLwpcl l cvβ swncsxkxk jctsnxkvc vedxgn...āFw pcvxsx Cfw Vhmwv, Jcfcnhkx mc Ph;xl l l l i Scgcl cvck ncmhdcj ejl xagcn.β

<sup>4</sup> ā: ckbwg-i l l hgβ, 1-[x ]h\, 7-[x [xgv, scp. 261

<sup>5</sup> āBcohxnwg-wrƒhβ, scp. 136

Pcl xk ; xjhfvh Pi bedtcvck kcrq ugwkwn ; x, |edycl fcn  
fegc fwdwnvw...

لَوْ لَمْ يَبْقَ مِنَ الدُّنْيَا إِلَّا يَوْمٌ وَاحِدٌ لَطَوَّلَ ذَلِكَ الْيَوْمُ حَتَّى يَبْعَثَ اللَّهُ رَجُلًا مِنْ وَلَدِي اسْمُهُ كَاسِمِي

âC' cn vi kdhk'k ho'n'kh fixn 'i kvck hnj'r rhgl hbsh, Hgghp-jhhgh u 'i ki u  
rcvcn wbhvh[hrv'n ; x, l ckxl zmghvghn'l vkh hv' l ckxl hv'l gh edkx ughk fixn  
acosx se]sxk.ß

Shgl hk sunwavw... âDh Ncswgcgghp, sckxk phks`  
zmghvghn`kvhkv`n?ß

Pcbncj zb cgx xgc Pi sedkc xahnc evcnc; âfw zmghv`l `k  
kcsqkvckvxnb - vedc fwdwnvw.ß

|edycl fcnc-C; ncl i zb pcvxsgcnxkvc shxn  
xl hl ghnvhk vphph ]uo fxnxk[x xl hl pcbncj Cgxddxfkx Cfx  
Jhgxf<sup>TM</sup> -`k xl hl cjxkc mc hoxncb-bhl hkvh pcbncj Lcpvx  
<sup>TM</sup> -`k rxdhl `kh jc/; xv ejl xa mc ukghn`k uk x; x kctcn  
ugvwykw vel xavxn. Fegc ; x, c'cn ukghn`k cmmcgx, ho'n`k[`s` mc  
shdghn` si fwjh dejcnc, cmmcgx Cgx<sup>TM</sup> ho'n`k[`s` xsc pcbncj  
Lcpvx<sup>TM</sup> ughk uk x; x xl hl `k ohnx[x ki l wkcgcnxkvc pe] fixn  
ac; ; -ai fpcdc den rhgl hdh[hrv'n.

CPGX-FEDJ XL HL GHN-K-K XL HL CJXKC VCGHGCJ EVCK  
PCVXSGCN

1-"SCRCGEDK" PCVXSX

h) Pc[[cjwg-mxvhv...

Jxnl xbx kcrq evxn ;x, { hfxn fegc vedxn...â|edycl fcn zbi -  
ki k âRwsmhß hvg` vcmcsxkc l xkcnc; fxn oi jfc uowvw mc fegc  
fwdwnvw...

يَا أَيُّهَا النَّاسُ إِنِّي قَدْ تَرَكْتُ فِيكُمْ مَا إِنِ اخَذْتُمْ بِهِ لَنْ تَضِلُّوا كِتَابَ اللَّهِ وَعِزَّتِي أَهْلَ بَيْتِي

âEd xkshkghn! Lck sxbxk hnhk`bv h ;x aedx (cl hkcj) rudwnhl ;x, c'cn  
ukghnh shn`gshk`b, pe] mhoj dugwkwbw hbl hbs`k`b... Hgghp`k : xjh f mc xjncjxl ughk  
Cpgx-fedjxl .ß

Jxnl xbx vedxn...âFw fhncvc Cfw Scxvvck, Bedv xfkx Cnrcl -  
vck mc Pi bedtc xfkx l sedvvck vc ncmhdcj kcrq ugwk l wa-  
vwn.ß<sup>1</sup>

f) Rcvn-Owl vh...

âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, âSi kckx Vhnc l xß,  
âSi kckx Fedpcrxß mc fharh ;xjhfgnhv Bedv xfkx Cnrcl xk  
fegc vevxdx kcrq ugwkwn... â|edycl fcnx-C; ncl L c; ; c xgc  
L cvxkc hnhk`kv dengcack âOwl ß hvg` fxn denvc hdhyh rhgo`f  
oi jfc uowvw, suknh fwdwnvw...

أَلَا يَا أَيُّهَا النَّاسُ فَإِنَّمَا أَنَا بَشَرٌ مِثْلُكُمْ أَن يَأْتِي رَسُولٌ بِمَا أَنِ كُنْتُمْ فِي غَيْبٍ عَنِّي أَنِ يَكُونَكُمُ اقْتِصَافٌ

أَوَلَهُمْ كِتَابُ اللَّهِ فِيهِ الْهُدَى وَالتُّورُ فَخُذُوا بِكِتَابِ اللَّهِ وَاسْتَمْسِكُوا بِهِ وَأَهْلُ بَيْتِي

âEd xkshkghn! Fxgxk ;x, l ck vc sxbxk ;xl x fxn fcacnc l mc |cnmcnvx`hn`l`k  
'zkvcnvxdxkxk 'cgax mc l ckxl vc Ukwk vc/mcjxkx rcfwg evc[cdxl ]uo dho`kv`n.  
Lck sxbxk hnhk`bv h ;x hy`n cl hkcj rudwf 'evxnc l ... Ukghnhvk fxxk[xxs Hgghp`k  
: xjh f`v`n ;x, ukvh pxvhdcj mc kwn mhnv`n. Fegc xsc, Hgghp`k : xjh f`kh (fcn; -fcn;)  
shn`g`k... mc vx`cnx Cpgx-fedjxl vx.ß<sup>2</sup>

âSi kckx Jxnl xbxßvc mc âL i skcvx Cpl cvßvc u pcbncjxk

<sup>1</sup> âSi kckx Jxnl xbxß, 13-[i [xgv, scp.199, l ckhrxfw Cpgx fedjxk-Kcfxddd  
fhf`æâ: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.48.

<sup>2</sup> âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, tcbhxgw Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgx f`fhf`æ âL i skcvx  
Cpl cvß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.336æ âSi kckx Vhnc l xß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.431 (xojxshngh)æ  
âSi kckx Fedpcrxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.148 mc 7-[x [xgv, scp.30, hbh[`r xojxghtghæ  
âL wa; xgwq-hshnß (Jcphmx), 4-[i [xgv, scp.368.

fegc fwdwnvwyw kerg ugwkwn...

إِنِّي تَارِكٌ فِيكُمْ مَا إِن تَمَسَّكْتُمْ بِهِ لَنْ تَضِلُّوا بَعْدِي أَحَدُهُمَا أَغْظَمُ مِنَ الْآخِرِ: كِتَابُ اللَّهِ  
جَبَلٌ مَمْدُودٌ مِنَ السَّمَاءِ إِلَى الْأَرْضِ وَعَثَرَتِي أَهْلُ بَيْتِي وَلَنْ يَتَفَرَّقَا حَتَّى يَرِدَا عَلَيَّ الْحَوْضَ فَاَنْظُرُوا  
كَيْفَ تَخْلُقُونِي فِيهِمَا

âLck sɪbɪk hnhk'bvɪ egc fɪn aed rudwf 'evɪncl ;x, c'cn ukh shn'gshk'b,  
l ckvck suknɪ pe] mhoj dugwkwɔw hbl hb, hby'kɔ'yɪ vial cbsɪkɪb... Ukghnvɪk fɪnx  
vx'cnɪkvck vɪph fzdi;vɪn... (Fɪnxk[ɪsx] Hgghp'k : xjhɸæ (u,) hɪxl hkvhk denc  
]c;xɔl xɑ fɪn x'vɪn mc (vx'cnɪ xsc) xjncjɪl mc Cpɔɔ-fedjɪl vɪn. Fw x;xɪx pumwɔvɪ  
l ckɪl dhk'ɪ h 'cɔɔɸ ]hjhkh rcvcn fɪn-fɪnxkvck hdn'ɔl hbɔhn. Fho'k 'znɪk,  
l ckvck suknɪ fw x;xɪx xɔc ke[c nctjɪn evc[c;sɪkɪb!B<sup>1</sup>

Ph;xl xk âL i sjcvnc;βxkvɪ redv ugwkɪhkgɪnh cshsck  
|edycl fcn j fegc fwdwnvwy...

كَأَنِّي قَدْ دُعِيتُ فَاجَبْتُ إِنِّي تَرَكْتُ فِيكُمْ الثَّقَلَيْنِ أَحَدُهُمَا أَكْبَرُ مِنَ الْآخِرِ: كِتَابُ اللَّهِ  
وَعَثَرَتِي فَاَنْظُرُوا كَيْفَ تَخْلُقُونِي فِيهِمَا فَإِنَّهُمَا لَنْ يَفْتَرِقَا حَتَّى يَرِدَا عَلَيَّ الْحَوْضَ

âShk;x l ck (Hgghp vcn'hp'kh) vc/mcj ugwkɪ wahl mc ukh l i sfcj [hmhf  
menɪ xɑl ! Lck sɪbɪk hnhk'bvɪ x;x hɪ'n aedɪ cl hkɪj rudwnɪl ;x, ukghnvɪk fɪnx  
vx'cnɪkvck fzdi;vɪn... Hgghp'k : xjhɸ mc Cpɔɔ-fedjɪl . Fho'k 'znɪk, l ckvck  
suknɪ u x;xɪx xɔc ke[c nctjɪn evc[c;sɪkɪb! Ukghn pumwɔvɪ l ckɪl dhk'ɪ h 'cɔɔɸ  
]hjhkh rcvcn fɪn-fɪnxkvck hdn'ɔl hbɔhn.<sup>2</sup>

Vx'cn fɪn ncmhdcjɪ 'znc u pcbncj fegc fwdwnvwy...

أَيُّهَا النَّاسُ إِنِّي تَارِكٌ فِيكُمْ أَمْرَيْنِ لَنْ تَضِلُّوا إِن اتَّبَعْتُمُوهُمَا وَهُمَا كِتَابُ اللَّهِ وَأَهْلُ بَيْتِي عَثَرَتِي

âEd ɪkshkɔhn! Lck sɪbɪk hnhk'bvɪ x;x aed rudwnɪl ;x, c'cn ukghnɪ shn'gɸ  
xjhɪj ejɪsckɪb, pe] mhoj hby'kɔ'yɪ vial cbsɪkɪb. U x;x aed Hgghp'k : xjhɸ mc Cpɔɔ-  
fedjɪl ughk xjncjɪl vɪn...B

Ph;xl fegc dhb'n... âFw pcvxs Aedoedkɪk (Fwohnɪ mc  
L i sɔl i i k) acnjɪx xɔc scpxpvɪn.B<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âSi kckx Jɪnl xɔɪ, 13-[i [xɔv, scp.201æ âWsvwg-yhɸcɪ, 2-[x [xɔv, scp.12,  
xl hl Pi sedk ™ -k jcn[i l edɪ-phɔ'kvɪæ âVwnnwɔ-l ckswɪb jctɪxɪ,  
âl cmcvvcjɪ hɪcsɪkɪk (âAwnɪb swncsɪkɪk 23-[i hɪcsɪ) jctɪxɪkvc.

<sup>2</sup> âL i sjcvnc;x Ph;xl β mc ukwk oi ghscsɪ, 3-[i [xɔv, scp. 109æ âOcshxsw  
Kcshxɪ, scp.30æ âL i skcvx Cpl cvɪ, 3-[i [xɔv, scp.17 mc scp.14, 26, 59-vɪ cɔhmc  
acnpɔɔæ âJcɸcrhɪβ (xɸkɪ Sc/v), 2-[x [xɔv, 2-[x pɪssc, scp.2æ â: ckɪ g-i l l hgɪ, 1-[x  
[xɔv, scp.47, 48 mc ukwk oi ghscsɪ scp.97-vɪ.

<sup>3</sup> Dekɪ unhvɪ. Pcl ]xkɪk fw l cbl wkɪ uoahn l cɔɔɸ 3-[i [xɔv, scp.148-vɪ  
mhnv'n.

Fw pcvxs vx'cn xthvcgngc âL i skcvx Cpl cvßvc, âPxgdcjwg-zmgxdhßvh mc s. ;xjhfgnhvh Bedv xfkx Shfxjvck vc kcrv ugwkl wavwn.<sup>1</sup>

"znvi di ki b ;xl x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl zb acnxt zl ni ki k ho`nghn`kvh i l l cjc ofcn menl xavxn ;x, u vh fxn fcacnvxn mc |cnmcnvx' hn`k`k eg]xsxkxk ukw rcfbx-nwp ejl csx mc u pcbncjxk vc fw vc/mcjx rcfwg evcnc; zb l c/fwvwxh rumwal hs`dho`kv`n. Suknh fwdwnl wavwn...

وَأَنِّي تَارِكٌ فِيكُمْ مَا إِن تَمَسَّكْتُمْ بِهِ لَن تَضِلُّوا بَعْدِي أَحَدُهُمَا أَعْظَمُ مِنَ الْآخِرِ: كِتَابُ اللَّهِ  
حَبْلٌ مَمْدُودٌ مِنَ السَّمَاءِ إِلَى الْأَرْضِ وَعِثْرَتِي أَهْلُ بَيْتِي وَلَنْ يَفْتَرِقَا حَتَّى يَرِدَا عَلَيَّ الْحَوْضَ فَأَنْظُرُوا  
كَيْفَ تَخْلُقُونِي فِيهِمَا

âLck sxbxk hnhk`bv h egc fxn aedx (cl hkj) rudwnhl ;x, c'cn ukh shn`g-shk`b, l ckvck suknh pe] mhoj dugwkwbw hbl hbs`k`b. Ukghnvkh fxnx vx'cnxkvck fzdi;vi.n. (Fxnuk[xsx] Hgghp`k : xjhfae u, hsl hkvkh denc ]c; xgl xa fxn x\ ;xl xvxn. X;k[xsx xsc Cpgx-fedjxl ughk xjncjxl vxn. Fw x;xsx pumwbwk ;ckhn`kvh l ckc rumwahkh rcvcn fxn-fxnkvck hdn`gl hbghn. Fho`k 'znik, l ckvck suknh fw x;xsx xgc ke[c nctjhn evc[c; sxxb]ß

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk fxn vetc Cnctvc, fxn vetc vc Rcvxn-Owl vh fcdhk ejvxdx fw ha; hn fcdhk i l l c j i ]i k u pcbncjxk mthj`kvkh suknh l i nh[xcj denxkx jcdxk evxn ;x, fw vh fi ji k Cpgx-fedj xl hl ghn`kh ahl xgvxn mc 'cgck ncmhdcjgcncvc ukghn`k shd` fcdhk evxgn.

## 2-XLHL GHN-K SHD-K~ "ZSJCNCK PCVXS

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i fwdwnwn... âLckvck suknh 'cgck xl hl ghn uk x;x kctcnvxn.ß

Fw pcvxsx âScpxpß mc âL i skcvß l i cggxtgcnx hahy`vh redv ugwxhk l i ojcgxt dugghngh u pcbncjvck ncmhdcj ejl xagcn...

h) L i sgi l zb âScpxpßxkv { hfxn xfkx Scl ncjvck ncmhdcj evxn ;x, u, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk fegc vevxdxkx eazj l xavxn...

لَا يَزَالُ الدِّينُ قَائِمًا حَتَّى تَقُومَ السَّاعَةُ أَوْ يَكُونَ عَلَيْكُمْ اثْنَا عَشَرَ خَلِيفَةً كُلُّهُمْ مِنْ قُرَيْشٍ

âFw vix rxdhl cjc rcvcn, dhowv phl`s` Rinedavck ughk uk x;x ocgxtckxk

<sup>1</sup> âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.367, 371 mc 5-[x [xgv, scp.181â âJhnnox Fhyvhvß, 8-[x [xgv, scp.442â âPxgdcjwg-zmgxdhß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.355 mc 9-[w [xgv, scp.64â âWsvwg-yhfcb, 3-[i [xgv, scp.147â âL c[l cwb-bcmhvxß, 9-[w [xgv, scp.163-164.



słbc ph;xl ugwyw mhojh rcvcl pcl xac l zp;cl rhgh[hrv'n.ß

Fharh fñ ncmhdcjvc xsc fegc fwdwnwn... â... pcl xac [hl hj'k xax  
zb dugwkvh ugh[hr.ß

Vx'cn x;x ncmhdcjvc xsc fegc vedxgx... âUk x;x ocgxc ugwk[hdh  
rcvcl.ß

âSi kckx Cfw Vhmwvßvh xsc fegc vedxgx... âSłbc uk x;x kctcn  
ph;xl ugwk[hdh rcvcl.ß

Vx'cn ncmhdcjvc xsc âuk x;x kctcn ugwk[hdh rcvclß redv ugwkwn.<sup>1</sup>

âScpxpx Fwohnxßvc {hfxn fegc vedxn... |edycl fcnxk â(Fw  
i l l cjc) Uk x;x kctcn cl xn ugh[hrv'nß - vedc fwdwnvwykw eaxjvxl ,  
suknh (hsjhvhk) fñ ;cgl c vevx ;x, ukw eaxj cvxl . Hjh vhk  
kc fwdwnvwykw sunwavrvh vevx ;x, |edycl fcn âphl 's'  
Rinedavckvxnß - vedc fwdwnvw.

Fharh fñ ncmhdcjvc xsc vedxgx... Suknh |edycl fcn fñ  
;cgl c vevx, l ck ukw eavc fxgl cvxl . Hjh vhk sunvavwl ;x,  
|edycl fcn kc fwdwnvw? Vevx ;x, âPhl 's' Rinedavckvxnß - vedc  
fwdwnvw.<sup>2</sup>

Fharh fñ ncmhdcjvc xsc fegc vedxgx...

لَا تَصْرُهُمْ عَدَاوَةٌ مِنْ عَادَاهُمْ

âVial ckgnxkxk vial ck]xgdx ukghn pe] fñ bcncn mwnl hb.ß<sup>3</sup>

f) Vx'cn fñ ncmhdcjvc xsc |edycl fcnxk fegc fwdwnvwyw  
kcrq ugwkwn...

لَا تَزَالُ هَذِهِ الْأُمَّةُ مُسْتَقِيمًا أَمْرُهَا ظَاهِرَةٌ عَلَى عَدُوِّهَا حَتَّى يَمُضِيَ مِنْهُمْ اثْنَا عَشَرَ خَلِيفَةً

كُلُّهُمْ مِنْ قُرَيْشٍ ثُمَّ يَكُونُ الْمَرْجُ أَوْ الْهَرَجُ

<sup>1</sup> âScpxpx L i sgi l ß, 6-[- [xgv, scp.3-4 x l hncj ;xjhF, ckksww jwffcwkw  
gxrwne d fhfæ âScpxpx Fwohnxß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.165, cp;hl ;xjhFæ âSi kckx  
Jxnl xbxß, 6-[- [xgv, scp.66-67, l h [hc txg-owgcth fhfæ âSi kckx Cfx Vhmwvß, cg-  
L cpvx ;xjhF, 4-[i [xgv, scp.106, pcvxs 4279 mc 4280æ âL i skcvx Jcdhgxsß,  
pcvxs 767 mc 1278æ âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, 5-[x [xgv, scp.86-90, 92-101, 106-108æ  
â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 13-[i [xgv, scp.26-27æ âPxgdcjwg-zmgxdhß, 4-[i [xgv, scp.333æ  
{hfxn xfkx Si l ncj xfkx {wkhvc Hl xnx, Sc/v xfkx Cfx Mcrrhs'k fh[-s' uygw  
mc ukghn'k pcl \edl hk' vx ;x, 60-[- px[nx xgkvck suknh : wtcvc mcthj  
ejl xavxn. Ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg' âWsvwg-yhfcß, âJcrnxfwj-jcpbxß mc  
â{cmhl xws-sxncßvc redv ugkwfvwn.

<sup>2</sup> âTcjpwg-fhnxß (âScpxpx Fwohnxßkxk acnpx), 16-[- [xgv, scp.338æ âL i sjcvnc; x  
Ph;xl ß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.617.

<sup>3</sup> Dekc unhvh.

âFw i l l cjk xax, phl `s` Rinedavck ughk uk x;x ocgctckxk ph;xl ugvywv  
mhojh rcvcn zb rhdvhs'kvhv'n mc vial ckgcnxkc rcgfc ]hgh[hrghn. Ukghn  
vikdhvhk 'ejvx;vck suknh pcn[-l cn[qx; pcn denx finidc[c;.B<sup>1</sup>

m) Vx'cn fxn ncmhdcjvc...âFw i l l cjk uk x;x rcddwl w ugh[hrv'n ;x,  
pcn ;cs ukghnvhk hdn'gsh, ukghnh bxdhk ]hjv'n l hb. Phl `s` vh Rinedavckvxn.B<sup>2</sup>

v) Fharh fxn ncmhdcjvc xsc fegc fwdwnvwyw kcrq ugwkwn...  
âUk x;x kctcn fw i l l cjc pz;wl cj ejvxdx mhojh rcvcn ukghn'k xagcnx dhoag'grgh  
zjif ;e]c[c;.B<sup>3</sup>

y) Ckcsvck ncmhdcj evxgx ;x, |edycl fcn fegc fwdwnvw...  
âFw vnk, Rinedavck ughk uk x;x kctcnxk ph;xl ugvywv mhojh rcvcn fcnrcnhv'n.  
Ukghn vikdhvhk 'ejvx;vck suknh den zb cpqkx vhn l hvhy'k evc[c;vxn.B<sup>4</sup>

e) Dekc fxn fharh ncmhdcjvc fwdwnwn...âPhl `s` Rinedavck ughk  
uk x;x kctcn ph;xl ugwk[hdh mc rxdhl evxk[cdc rcvcn fw i l l cjk xax rcgfc  
xgc dhkha'v'n.B<sup>5</sup>

c) âL i skcvx Cpl cvß, âL i sjcvnc; x Ph;xl ß mc vx'cn  
;xjhfgnhvh Lcsnwrwk fegc vevxdx ncmhdcj evxgx... Fxn 'i k  
Cfvi gghp xfkx Lcs/wvwk dhk'kvh ujwnl wavwr, u fxbc Rwn/hk  
zdnvcvnx. Fxn kctcn ukvhk sunwavw...âEd Cf h Cf vxn-ncpl hk!  
|edycl fcnx-C; ncl vck fw i l l cjc ke]c kctcn ocgxtc ugh[hy'k`  
sunwavwkl w?ß

Cfvi gghp vevx...âXnhrrh 'cgvxdx l mhojvhk xkvxdc rcvcn fxn  
;cs l ckvck fw fhncvc fxn aed sunwal hl `av'n! (Fcgx,) fxb ukw  
|edycl fcnx-C; ncl vck sunwavwr mc u, fegc fwdwnvw...

يَكُونُ بَعْدِي مِنَ الْخُلَفَاءِ عِدَّةٌ أَصْحَابُ مُوسَى

âFckx-Xsnhxgk kcrxfgcnxkxk shd' rcvcn – uk x;x kctcnvxn.B

q) Xfkx Lcs/wv fharh fxn ncmhdcjvc vedxn ;x, |edycl fcnx-  
C; ncl fwdwnvw...

<sup>1</sup> â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 13-[i [xgv, scp.26 mc ukwk l i kjcocfhj`, 5-[x [xgv,  
scp.321â âJhnxox xfkx : csxnß, 6-[` [xgv, scp.249â âJhnxowg-oi gcthß (Si dwjx),  
scp.10â âScmhxrwg-l wpnrcß, scp.28.

<sup>2</sup> â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 13-[i [xgv, scp. 27 mc ukwk l i kjcocfhj`, 5-[x [xgv,  
scp.312.

<sup>3</sup> âScpxpx L i sgi l ß (Ki mcmxkxk acnpx xgc), 12-[x [xgv, scp.202â âScmhxrwg-  
l wpnrcß, scp.18â âJhnxowg-owgcthß (Si dwjx), scp.10.

<sup>4</sup> â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 13-[i [xgv, scp.27.

<sup>5</sup> Dekc unhvh.

âLckvck suknh ocgxcgcnxl Lwshk'k scphfcgcnxkxk shd' rcvxn ugh[hrghn.β<sup>1</sup>  
 Xfkx : csxn dnb'n...âFw pcvxsxk uoahn` Cfvi ggghp xfkx Zl` cn,  
 Pi bedtc mc Xfkx Hffhsvhk vh ncmhdcj ugwkI wavwn.β<sup>2</sup>

(Lck ukwk âXfkx Hffhs'k ncmhdcjxß vevx; vc l crscvxxkxk  
 Ph;xl Pcs;hkxkxk Xfkx Hffhsvhk ncmhdcj ejvxdx ugwf-  
 ugl hv'y'k` fxgl xncI .)

Sukwk[w ncmhdcj ha;hn ac; xgvc 'zsjcnxn ;x, Xsghl  
 ocgxcgcnxkxk shd' uk x; x kctcnvxn mc phl `s` vh Ri nedavckvxn.  
 Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> zb fcdhk`kvh fw ncmhdcjgcnvc vc redv ugwkxk  
 Ri nedax fegc jcrvxl evcnc; fwdwnwn...

إِنَّ الْآيَةَ مِنْ فُرَيْشٍ غُرِسُوا فِي هَذَا الْبَطْنِ مِنْ هَاشِمٍ لَا تَصْلُحُ عَلَيْهِمْ وَلَا يَصْلُحُ  
 الْوَلَاةُ مِنْ غَيْرِهِمْ

âXl hl ghn'k phl `s` Rinedavckvxn mc fw sighgcvc Phaxl vck ughk fxn  
 ohkcvhk mhnv'n. Oghxcj ukghnvhk fharhs'kh ncmh vedxgvxn. Mhggcnxk (ocgxcgcnxk)  
 fwkgghnvhk rednxsx ugl hs` vh [hxb vedxgvxn.β<sup>3</sup> Suknh fwdwnvwn...

اللَّهُمَّ بَلِّ لَا تَخْلُو الْأَرْضَ مِنْ قَائِمٍ لِلَّهِ بِحُجَّةٍ إِمَّا ظَاهِرًا مَشْهُورًا أَوْ خَائِفًا مَعْمُورًا لِنَا  
 تَبْطُلَ حُجَّةَ اللَّهِ وَبَيِّنَاتُهُ

â|cnmcnvx'hnh! Fcgx, den ibi xghpx pz;l gcnx finphk (vcgg-si fwj) cshs'kvh  
 rxdhl (fcnrcnbn) evck fxn acosvck pe] mhoj ohgx ugl hdh[hrv'n... dh rhgxf mc  
 l capwn, dh vh runowgw phgvh mc l c[pwgæ (Hggghp fw xax ukh 'znc evc[c;vxn ;x),  
 Hggghp'k finphkgghn' mc ha;hn fcdhkgghn` cfcs mc l cpm ugl hs'k...β<sup>4</sup>

Xfkx : csxn dnb'n... âFw l c/khdh dho'k xfhnccgn ;xjh'f  
 cpgxkxk cgxkvc l zm[wv ughk Jzmnhjvh vh 'cgl xavxn...âL i jchg  
 Hggghp Xfnhpxl c l i qvc menvx ;x, Xsl hxg mi [wvvh 'cgc[c; , ukw  
 fzdi vi f si ghgcsxkc hnjl` fhy'aghdh[hr mc bi nnxddcsxkvc  
 fzdi ; acosxddcjgx uk x; x kctcn rcnbn menc[c;vxn.β

U vedxn...âXfkx Jedl xddc vedxn ;x, fwkgghn {hfxn xfkx  
 Si l nckxk pcvxsxkvc l i qvcxsx menxgck pcl xk ;csgcnvxn ;x,  
 ukghn fw i l l cjvc mi [wvvh 'cgc[c; mc ukghn mi [wvvh

<sup>1</sup> âJhnnox xfkx : csxnß, 6-[- [xgv, scp. 248â â: ckbi g-i l l hgß, 13-[i [xgv,  
 scp.27â âAcmhpxvwj-jckbxgß (Pcs;hkx), 1-[x [xgv, scp.455, pcvxs 626.

<sup>2</sup> âJhnnox xfkx : csxnß, 6-[- [xgv, scp.248.

<sup>3</sup> âKcp[i g-fcghycß, 142-[x oi jfc.

<sup>4</sup> âKcp[i g-fcghycß, px;l cj 147â âDckhfxwg-l cmcvvcß (Aedo Si gedl hk  
 Pckctx), scp.523â âEpdhw wgwI xv-vxkß (Ycbbhgx), 1-[x [xgv, scp.54â âPxgdcjwg-  
 zmghdxß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.80 (oi ghsc ac; xgvc).

'cgl cdxk[c rxdhl cj fcn\h ugl hdh[hrv`n. Xsgl vxkxkx rcfwg evck fc/bx dcpwvxgc n vc scpmck fegc jcscmmi n ejl xagcn ;x, fwkghn nhtxbx txnrscsxkxk (axcgcnxk) xvvxh ejvx;gcnx acosgcncvx, fwkh 'znc vc ukghnh jhfe ugl wagh n.B<sup>1</sup>

Licggt vedn... Redv ugwkxk xfhncgc n fxbxl csnxl xbv c vc 'ekxa dhd`ghk Jzmnhj`k jc;mxk sxtnxkvc (csg xfnx vxgxkvc) fegcvxn...

Rx gxdcal hxg fxncojx wmjw rx pxtnxjx wmjw rx pxnfxjx fxl xwv ackxl cshn kxsxxl dwgxv rx kxjjxt gxrwd rcvvg.<sup>2</sup>

Ukwk jcn[i l csx fegcvxn... âXsl hxgc fcnc;cj mencncl , ukw fhng-fcpncgx evcncl , ukh vuynwvhk vh ]uogwr mc hnj`rg`r fhy`aghdnhl , ukvkh uk x;x xl hl vikdhdh 'cgc n mc ukw fzdi ; fñ i l l cj evcncl .B

Jzmnhjvh;`fw [i l gcgc n 'zsjcnxn ;x, acosgcnxk shd`k`k ]uo, zbgcnxkxk oedxn-fcnc;cjgx mc fhng-fcpncgx ugl hs` dhgk`b Xsl hxgxk kcsgxkvcvx. Fw [i l gcgcncv;c x âackxl cshnß ;cgl csx uk x;x vel c;vx n. âCshnß ;cgl csx vc jcn;xfx fxngcal cgcncv shd`ghk aed i ]i k bx;n ugwkwn.<sup>3</sup> Fwnhvh shd`ghk aed – âkcsxxl B ;xax [xksxkvcvx ;x, ukwk ho`n`kh [cl cghl cjxkxk hnj`n`gl hs` xgc [cl l c/khs` menxn. Ukwk jc; phg` ughk âkhsxddß, dc/kx xl hl , ncpfc n mc ncxs vel c;vx n.<sup>4</sup>

HI l h pcl xk fzgl cvc Hgghp-jhhghk`k Xfnhpxl c vevxdx âtx kcjkxt gc'wd rcvvgß ;cgl csxkc 'cgvx;vc xsc, âtx kcjkxtß [i l gcsx fhyghd`[` ughk âtxß mc te/g l c/khs`kvh ughk âkhjxkßvck jcn;xf jh`f ârcnhn mencncl B l c/khs`k` xthvc evxn.<sup>5</sup> âDctß te/gxk ho`n`kvh 'cgck cmcbgx; ugwf Xsl hxgc rhd`v`næ dc/kx âukw (fegc) rcnhn mencncl .B â"wdß ;cgl csx âi l l cjß mc xkshkghn l c/khs`khv`n,<sup>6</sup> ârcvvgß xsc fzdi ; mc cbcl cjgx vel c;vx n.<sup>7</sup> Ukwk l c/khs` fw ugwn ;x, âukw fzdi ; mc cbcl cjgx fñ i l l cj rcnhn mencncl .B

Fw [i l gcgcnxk l c[l wswkvkh hdv`k ugwn ;x, Xsl hxg <sup>TM</sup> -`k kcsgxkvc oedxn-fcnc;cj vevx;vc, ai fpcsb |edycl fcnc-

<sup>1</sup> âJhnnox xfkx : csxnß, 6-[` [xgv, scp.249-250.

<sup>2</sup> âCpvx rcvxl B, Jzmnhj, jc;mxk sxtnx, 17-[x fhf, 18-20-[x kzl ncgc n.

<sup>3</sup> âCg-l w/[cl wg-pcvxsß, xfnx-cncfx, scp.316.

<sup>4</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.360.

<sup>5</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.317.

<sup>6</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.84.

<sup>7</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.82.

C; ncl mc u pcbncjxk Cpgx-fedjx kcbcnvc jwjwgn. } i k; x l cpb ukghn Xsl hxgxk kcsgxkxk vhmhl `v`n. } i k; x âJcnxoßvc redv ugwkvw; xl x Lijchg Hgghp Xfnhpxl c fwdwnvw... âKcl nwwk zg; csxkvck Ahl h 'ejß U pcbncj vc Hgghp`k cl nxkc xjhcj evcnc; Gwj mc zb bzm[csx Shnh xgc fxngx; vc Tcgcsjxkc px[ncj ejvx mc unhvh l cs; wkghav`. Lijchg Hgghp vh Xfnhpxl <sup>TM</sup> -`k scncjxkc oedxn-fcnc; cj menvx. Xfnhpxl <sup>TM</sup> vevx...â|cnmcnvx' hnh, fw rcvcn l hg-vzmgc j zmghvs`b kcdxl c 'cnc; vxn?ß Hgghp-jhhgh vh ukh mcpd evcnc; fwdwnvw...âLck sckxk zmghvghn`kh u rcvcn oedxn-fcnc; cj menxf hn`jnhhl ;x, wgvwbghn`k shd` rcvcn ughnghn.ß

Ph[cn Shnhk`k ;x]x; dhag` ;ckxbx xv; x, suknghn ukw Xfnhpxl c fhy`aghv`. Ph[cn u bhl hk sc; sck hgj` dha` ughk Xfnhpxl vck phl xgc ugvw mc Xsl hxgx vi kdhdh 'cjxnvx.<sup>1</sup>

Rwn/hkx : cnxl fw pcrxrcjx – Xfnhpxl <sup>TM</sup> -`k Hgghp-jhhghvhk xsjc; mc vwhs`k` – fegc fcdhk ejl xavxn.

﴿رَبَّنَا إِنِّي أَسْكَنْتُ مِنْ ذُرِّيَّتِي بِوَادٍ غَيْرِ ذِي زَرْعٍ عِنْدَ بَيْتِكَ الْمُحَرَّمِ رَبَّنَا لِيُقِيمُوا الصَّلَاةَ فَاجْعَلْ أَفْئِدَةً مِنَ النَّاسِ تَهْوِي إِلَيْهِمْ وَارْزُقْهُمْ مِنَ الثَّمَرَاتِ لَعَلَّهُمْ يَشْكُرُونَ﴾

â|cnmcnvx' hnh! Lck zb binxdddcl vck fc/bxixkx rwnw mc ujswb-cgctsb fxn fxdhfkhv, Sckxk l zpjcncl emxkxk ;ckhn`kvh rcnhn menxl ;x, khl hb r`gs`kghn. |cnmcnvx' hnh! {hl hhj`k rcgfgcnxkx ukghn vuynw dzkcj mc scl cncgcncvck ukghn nwbx men, fcg;c ai ;i n evcgcn.ß<sup>2</sup>

Fw acnxt hdc jc/; xv evxn ;x, Xfnhpxl <sup>TM</sup> zb zmghvghn`kvk fc/bxgcncxkx – Xsl hxg <sup>TM</sup> mc ukwk Lc; ;cvc vi kdhdh 'cgck zmghvghn`k` – Hgghp emxkxk ;ckhn`kvh dengcavxn l xa mc Hgghp-vhk xsjcl xavx ;x, jhnxo fudw xkshkghn`k pxvhdcj mc ncpfcngdxkx ukghn`k zpvcsxkc rudswk. Hgghp-jhhgh vh ukwk vwhs`k` rcfwg ejl xa mc pcbncj L i pcl l cv j mc uk x; x xl hl `ukwk kcsgxkvc rcnhn men l xavxn. Xl hl Fhrxn <sup>TM</sup> fw fhncvc fwdwnwn...âFxb u xjncjxk vhmhl `d`ræ Xfnhpxl <sup>TM</sup> -`k vwhs` fixxl i] i k vx.ß<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âJhnnox Dc/rwfxß, 1-[x [xgv, scp.24-25, kcanx tcnpck`x Cpgx-fedj l i cssxscsxkxk ]h`.

<sup>2</sup> âXfnhpxl ß swncsx, hdc.38.

<sup>3</sup> Jzmnhj`k xfnx vxgxkvc; x xfhncgcncx mc ukwk xbhpgghn` Cpl cv Mhsxjxkxk âJumpxvß qwnkhg`kvh vcn[ ugwkxk l crhgcsxkvck 'zji ni gl i avi n. Fxb ukw fw qwnkhg`k Xsghl jcfgyhj` jca; xghj`, Jepnhk, 54-[i kzl nc, scp.127-128-vck kcrj ejvx; .

*: E}CK PCVXSGCNXK OI GHSCSX*

: e]ck pcvxsgcnvck fegc kc]x[c hg`k`n ; x, fw i l l c]vc; x  
xl hl ghn`k shd` fxn-fxnkxk hnv`k[h `cgck uk x; x kctcnvxn mc  
ukghn`k uk x; xk[xsxkvck suknh vi kdhk`k zl ni sukh  
]hjh[hrv`n. Fxnk[x pcvxsvc redv ugwkvw ; x, âFw vxk rxdhl cjc  
rcvcn, dhowv uk x; x ocgctckxk sabc ph; xl ugwyw mhojh rcvcn denikvc l zp; cl  
rhgh[hrv`n. Fw pcvxs Xsghl vxkxkxk phks` l i vvcjc rcvcn  
l zp; cl rhgh[hy`k` jc/dxk ejl xa, ukw rxdhl cjxk fha menl csx  
xgc l cpvwwghav`nl `a mc xl hl ghn`k shd`k` vh âuk x; x kctcnß  
redv ejl xavxn.

Feaxk[x pcvxsvc redv ugwkvw ; x, fw vxk Ri nedavck ughk  
uk x; x kctcnxk l zm[wvgwyw xgc pcl xac fcnrcnhv`n. Ukghn  
mcthj ejvx; vck suknh den zb cpgxkx jhn-l hn evc[c; vxn.

Fw pcvxs vc uk x; x xl hl `k zl ni ki k sukh ]hjl hs`kh  
rcvcn vxkxk rhg`f vhmhl ejl csxkx jc/; xvgckvxnxn ; x, ukghn`k  
zl i ngcnxkxk ho`n` vh vi kdhk`k ho`n` peshf evxgl xavxn.

Sc; ;xbxk[x pcvxsvc xl hl ghn`k shd` dhgk`b uk x; x kctcn  
fcdhk evxgcnc; vedxgx... âLckvck suknh ocgctcgn Lwshk`k scphfcgnikxk  
shd` rcvcnvxn. Fw pcvxs vc fwdwnwn ; x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl vck  
suknh uk x; x kctcnvck xfhncl ughk ocgxtcgcncvck fharh pe] fxn  
ocgxtc ugl hdh[hrv`n.

Ocgxtcgcncxk shd`k` uk x; x kctcn jc/dxk evcnc; âukghnvhk suknh  
pcn[-l cn[; , denik l cpm ugl hs` `cgin mc fwkwk hnv`k[h vh rxdhl cj  
fhaghkh[hrß -vedc fcdhk evck fw ncmhdcjgcnc fw rcvcn ha; hng`r  
vcnc[csxkvc ugl hdhk pcvxsgcnx xbhp evxn. Fwnhvhk vh fegc  
kc]x[c hg`k`n ; x, uk x; x xl hl ghnvhk fxnxxkxk zl ni hvx  
xkshkghn`k zl ni ki k c; sxkc ughnhr, ohnxrwg-hvc ac; xgvc wbwk  
ugh[hrv`n. Phg-phb`nvh vh xl hl ghn`k uk x; xk[xsx mc  
|edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk uk x; xk[x mcsxsx vc fegcvxn.

*OI GCTH LC: JCFX HGXL GCNXXK FW PCVXSX JCTSXN*

*EJLC: VC PEDNCJ MC SCN" CNVHK}-G-RVH RHGL HGHN-*

Oi gcth l c; jcfx hgxl gcnx fw ncmhdcjvc redv ugwkxk âuk  
x; x xl hl ßvhk l crscvxk ; xl gcnc ugl hs` fhncsxkvc ]uo axvvcjgx  
pedncjc, cbhf-cbxddcjc vi al i a mc l i ojcgxt kcbcnxddcgcnc xncgx

si ni i agcn. âSi kckx Jxnl xbxßkx acnp evck Xfkx Cncfx vedxn...  
 âFxb |edycl fcnvck suknh;` xl hl ghn` shdhkvh 'zni ni ; ;x,  
 ukghn fw hnv`[gg`rghv`n...Cfw Fc;n, Zl cn, Usl hk, Cgx, Pcsck,  
 Li hmxdc, Debxv, Li hmxdc xfkx Debxv, Lcnmhk, Cfvi g-Lcgx;  
 xfkx Lcnmhk, Mcgxv, Si gedl hk, Zl cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxb, Debxv  
 xfkx Cfvi g-Lcgx; , Lcnmhk xfkx Lcpcl l cv xfkx Lcnmhk,  
 Sccthp mc s...ß U, vphph suknh Hffhsx ocgxtcgcnxkvck ukwk  
 dhahv`y` zb csnxkc rcvcn ughk xdxnl x devvx ocgxtckxk hv`k`  
 shd`n, suknh vedxn...âC'cn ukghn`k l c[l wswkvhk uk x;x kctcnx  
 ocgxtc shd`gsh, fw phgvh ukghn`k ho`n`k[`s` Si gedl hk xfkx  
 Cfvi g-Lcgx; ugh[hrv`n. C'cn ocgxtckx pcrxrx l c/khs`kh  
 'zji nsc; , fxbxl i ]i k dhgk`b fea kctcn rhg`n... Cmmcgvc; x vznv  
 ocgxtc mc Zl cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxb! Fwkh 'znc vc l ck fw pcvxsx  
 pe] [i n xbhpevc fagl xnc l .ß¹

Rhbx Cdhb ukwk vevxdx âFw shdvhk (uk x;x kctcnvck)  
 hnj`y` pz;wl cjc ]hjl `av`nß - szbi kc [hmhf ughnhr vedxn...âFw  
 densxb fxn e/jxnhbv`næ ]i k;x |edycl fcn fwdwnl hl `av`n ; x, uk  
 x;x kctcnvck cghmc fxn ; cs mxghdcjc ]hjl hdh[hrv`n. Cgfcjjc, fw  
 shdvh ughkghn mxghdcj l crhl `kh ]hjl `aghn mc fw vh ukghn`k  
 pcl xk shdvhk hnj`r ugl hs`kh l hke ugh fagl cb.ß²

Si dwjx ukwk [hmhf kvh fxn szbi kcrgevcnc; vedxn...  
 âPcvxsxc l crscv, pcjjh fxn-fxnkxk hnv`k[h ugl hsh fegc, uk  
 x;x ocgxtckxk mi [wvh 'cgl csxvxn ; x, rxdhl cjc rcvcn mc  
 Xsghl `k pcdhj` fudwkvh ugh[hr mc phrrh cl cg evc[c; gcn.ß³

âTcjpwg-fhnxb ; xjhfvh vedxgn... âFw shdvhk cmmcgvc; x  
 vznv ocgxtc mcthj evxfgc, denvc rhghkghn` vh pz;l ck  
 rxdhl cjvck zk[c 'cgl cgxvngcn.ß⁴

Xfkx {umbx vedxn... âFwkh cshsck, âfwkvhk suknh pcn[-  
 l cn[gx; dhnkh[hrv`nß [i l gcsxkvc l crscv rxdhl cjvck rhfhr  
 fha menc[c; txjkcgc, u [i l gcvc Vc[[hg`k oi nw[ ejl csx mc  
 ukvhk suknh;` phvxscgcnvxn.ß⁵

Si dwjx vedxn... âFw uk x;x kctcnvck sc; ;xb kctcn -

<sup>1</sup> âSi kckx Jxnl xbxßkx acnp (Xfkx Cncfx), 9-[w [xgv, scp.68-69.

<sup>2</sup> Ki mcmxkxk âScpxpx Li sgi l Bc acnp, 12-[x [xgv, scp.201-202; âTcjpwg-fhnxb, 16-[` [xgv, scp.339 mc 441-[x scpxtcgcncvc vc fw jc; nhn evxgl xavxn.

<sup>3</sup> âJhnxowg-oi gcthß (Si dwjx), scp.12.

<sup>4</sup> âTcjpwg-fhnxb, 16-[` [xgv, scp.341; âJhnxowg-oi gcthß, scp.12.

<sup>5</sup> âTcjpwg-fhnxb, 16-[` [xgv, scp.341; âJhnxowg-oi gcthß, scp.12.

cmmcgvc; x vznv ocgxtc mc suknh vh Pcsck, L i hmxdc, Cfvi gghp xfkx Bi fedn mc ZI cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxb – ph; xl xddcjc 'cgl xavxn. Lcpvx Hffhsxkxk vc ukghnh cghmc evxgl csx epjxl hg` mhnv`n, ]i k; x Hffhsxgcxk hnhs`kvh Lcpvxkxk l xshg`, edkxgc cl cmxgcxk hnhs`kvh ZI cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxb ; xl vxvnæ pcl ]xkxk cvhgjgx ugvwywkh 'znc Jhpxn Hffhsx vc ukghnvhk peshf evxgsc, dekc vc x; x kctcn 'zbgckxgx; x, ukghnvhk fxnx Cpgx-fedjvck ughk Lcpvxvn.β<sup>1</sup>

Pcl ]xkxk vedxgl xavxn... âL crscv uvwn ; x, fw uk x; x kctcn Xsgl `k suk vcnc[c ri vncj, oxghtcj mc xbbcj jh`v`y` vzmnkhvh, ukghn`k xaxkxk l zp; cl gckvxdx fxn bhl hkvh ugh[hrv`næ u ; csgcnvx; x, ukghn`k vzmn kvc Xsgl cbxb (xbbcjgx) ugh[hr mc l i scgl hkghn ukghn`k fhncsxkvc de; vxg tx; xnvc ugh[hrghn.β<sup>2</sup>

Fedpcrx vedxn... âFw shd (dc/kx 12 kctcn) redv ugwkxhk cghl cjgcngc Mcgxv xfkx Debxv xfkx Cfvi g-Lcgx; xk vzmn kc rcvcn ph; xl xddcjc 'cgl xagcn, ukvhk suknh fzd; txjkc-tcshv mc pcn[-l cn[gx; dhnkl `a, suknh Hffhsxgc rcgcfc ]hg`f ph; xl xddcjc 'cgl xagcn. Pcvxsvc 'cgck shdh cghmc ejl ckxk scfcfx fwvwn ; x, ukvh xahnc ugwkxhk cghl cjgcx fuaghl `agh, dhowv pcl xk txjkcvc suknh 'cgck acosgc vc ukghn`k s`nhs`kvh redv ugwk l wavwn.β<sup>3</sup>

Fc/bxgcx vc vel xagcn... âl l l cjxk (oxghtcj phrr` fhncsxkvc) tx; xn fxngxdxkvc ugvwyw acosgc... i ] ocgxtc mc ukghnvhk suknh pc; cl xddcjc rcvcn Cgxvnæ fegc ; x, Sxttedk l i phnxfcsxkxk pcl xk 'i ki kvc L i hmxdcx vc ocgxtc hvghkv`nv`ghn. Vhph suknh Pcsckxk L i hmxdc xgc si gpi kc mc ukvhk suknh vh uygw Debxvc nhb`g`r menvxgc. Pi sedk vc oxghtcj ]hl hbvkh cmmcg rcjgc dejxngxv. Debxv zgvi ; vck suknh dekxvck xojxght ejvxgc, kcpdcdj Cfvi gghp xfkx Bi fednxk rcjgc dejxngl csxkvck suknh Cfvi g-Lcgx; Lcnmhk`k mc ukvhk suknh vh ukwk vznv uygw Mcgxv, Si gedl hk, Debxv mc Pxahl `k oxghtcjxkc kcbcn menvxgc.

<sup>1</sup> âJhnxowg-oi gcthß (Si dwjx), scp.12æ âScmhxrwg-l wpxrcß, scp.19. Fw [i n dubwl h cshsck oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk hnv`[`gghn` Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfx hnv`[`gghn`k`k 'zbgcvxdx fxn xl hl `k cmcbxkc x; x xl hl ` 'zbgcdxngcn ; x, ukghnvhk fxnxkxk hv` Lcpvxvn.

<sup>2</sup> âAcnpx Ki mcmxß, 12-[x [xgv, scp.202-203æ âTcjpwg-fhnxß, 16-[` [xgv, scp.338-341æ âJhnxowg-oi gcthß (Si dwjx), scp.10.

<sup>3</sup> âJhnxox xfkx : csxnß, 6-[` [xgv, scp.249, Fedpcrxvck kcrgck.



ZI cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxb, Si gedl hk xgc Debvxk hnhs`kvh thsxcg shgv`. Ukghn`k uk x; xk[ xsx vc Mcgxv xfkx Debvx xfkx Cfvi g-Lcgx; vxn ; x, Pxahl vkh suknh [hl hhj ukh fed/cj ejvx mc u, vznv xg ph; xl xddcjvc ugvw.<sup>1</sup>

Fw dubwl ghnh cshsck fw uk x; x kctcnxk, oxghtcjcnc fhncsxkvc I i scgl hkghn`k de; vxg tx; xnv ugvwyw acosgcnc dubwgl hs` scpxpvxn mc |edycl fcn vc I i scgl hkghnh I i qvc menl xavxn ; x, fw acosgcnc Xsghl `k xkshkghnh jcfgy ugwkl hs`kvh u pcbncjxk ocgxtcsx mc [hkxaxkx ugh[hrghn!!

Xfkx Pc[cn fw dubwl wk [hmfkvh vedxn... âFw, dubwl ghn`k ck dhoad`s`v`n.ß

Xfkx : csxn vedxn... âFedpcrxkxk 'ejvxdx mc fxn rnw\wk vh ukwkgh fxn`c ugvwyw dug rcfwg ugwkhs` fxn dug vedxgvxn, ]i k; x ukghn`k kcbcnxkc 'znc fw pcvxsvc I crscv ocgxtcgcnc thsxn fxn hvhl ughk Mcgxv xfkx Debvx xfkx Cfvi g-Lcgx; xk vzmnk kc rcvcn hnv[ `g ac; xgv 'cgxf-'ejl csxvxn. (Fegc ; x, fxb cmmcgcn Mcgxvxk I cbcl I cj ugwkl hs`kh vxhn szpfcj ejl xavx; .) } i k; x Mcgxvxk vzmnk kc rcvcn ph; xl xddcjvc ughk ocgxtcgcnc shd` uk x; xvck hnj`rv`n. Vcgxgx vc fwvwn ; x, Cfw Fc; n, ZI cn, Usl hk mc Cgxkxk oxghtcjx vkh`gl hbv`n... Suknh Pcsck xfkx Cgxvxn ; x, Cgx ukw zb mcsxsx rcnbn menl xavx, Xnhr [hl hhj` vh ukwkgh fed/cj ejl xavxgcnc... Kcphdcj u, Li hmxdc xgc si gp ejvx... Suknh Debvx xfkx Li hmxdc, ukvhk suknh uygw Li hmxdc xfkx Debvx, vph suknh Lcnmhk xfkx Pc; cl , ukvhk suknh uygw Cfvi g-Lcgx; xfkx Lcnmhk, ukvhk suknh uygw Mcgxv xfkx Cfvi g-Lcgx; , vph suknh Si gedl hk xfkx Cfvi g-Lcgx; , ukvhk suknh ZI cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxb, vph suknh Debvx xfkx Cfvi g-Lcgx; , ukvhk suknh Pxahl xfkx Cfvi g-Lcgx; vxn ; x, ukghn`k I c[ l wsw uk fea kctcnc ]hj`n mc fwkvhk suknh Mcgxv xfkx Debvx xfkx Cfvi g-Lcgx; 'cgxn. C'cn xfkx Bi fednxk Cfvi g-Lcgx; vck rhfhr; ` pz; wl cjxkx vc peshfghshr, uk hgj` kctcn ugwn. Pcn fxn jcrvxnvc, ukghn ZI cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxbvck rhfhr ugwngn. Fw peshfgh Debvx xfkx Li hmxdc vc pcvxsvc redv ugwkx uk x; x kctcnvck fxn peshf ugwkwn. Fbxl ncpfcngcnxk phl `s` ZI cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxbk jc/nxtx fhncsxkvc I i jjctxr tx; nc l hgx; vxngcn mc ukw vh nhaxvxk ocgxtcgcncvck fxn shdl `aghn, [hl hhj`k

<sup>1</sup> âJhnxowg-oi gcthß (Si dwjx), scp.11æ âScmhxrwg-l wpxrcß, scp.19æ âTcjpwg-fhnß, 16- [ ` [xgv, scp.341.

phl `s` ukwk cvhgcjx fhncsxkvc de; vxg tx; xnvc ugl waghñ. Ukwk ph; xl xddcj vzmni ck dhóa` fñ vzmnhk ugl wavwn, pcjjh axcgcñ vc fwkw e/jxñht ejl xagcñ. Ukw vh cghmc ejvx; vc uk x; x kctcnvck hñj`r ugwn! C'cn u ál ck dhgk`b u ; csgcnx peshfghd`nhl ; x, i l l cj ukghn`k fhncsxkvc de; vxg tx; xnvc ugl waghñ vsc, 'cnc; kc Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf peshfh hg`ks`k, kc vc ukwk uýgw Pcscñ. } i k; x [hl hhj fw x; xsxkxk fhncsxkvc de; vxg tx; xnvc ugl hl `aghñ, Ahl cpqx vc phl `g`rgh ukh fed/cjvck xl jxkh ejl xagcñ.ß

Sukñh cghmc evxf vedxn... âFc/bxgcñx L i hmxdc, ukwk uýgw Debvx mc kcmcsx L i hmxdc xfkx Debvx vc ocgxtcgcñvck peshfghl `a, Lcnmhk mc xfkx Bi fedñx xsc redv ejl cl xagcñ. } i k; x i l l cj fw x; xsxkvck pe] fñx fhncsxkvc de; vxg tx; xnvc ugl hl `aghñ. Fwkh cshsck, fxb fegc vedxn; ... âU, fw l csgc; vc cmmcgvc; x i ] ocgxtckx shdv`rvhk sukñh L i hmxdcckx, ukvhk sukñh Debvx, vph sukñh Cfvi g-L cgx; x, vph sukñh Mcgxv xfkx Si gedl hk`, ukvhk sukñh Zl cn xfkx Cfvi g-Cbxbx, ukvhk sukñh Debvx, vph sukñh Pxahl `shd`n ; x, l c[l wsw uk kctcn ugwn, ukvhk sukñh 'cgck Mcgxv xfkx Debvx xfkx Cfvi g-L cgx; thsrxvñ. Fw l csgc; Cgx mc ukwk uýgw Pcscñx ocgxtcgcñ s`ñhs`kvhk ]`ohnl hy` 'cnc; gx evñ mc fw vh cpqx-si kkckxk mc axcgcñxk e/jxrhv`k`k jhl c; sxkcvñ.ß¹

Xfkx {umbx â: catwg-l i a; xgß ; xjh`kvñ fw ; xl x dubwl gñn`k [hmhf`kvñ x; x epjxl hg vh xncgx si ncnc; vedxn...

1) |edycl fcn fw pcvxsvc zbi kvck mc scphfcgcñxkvck sukñh fha menc[c; phvxscgcñc xahñc ejl xavñ. } i k; x scphfcgcñxk pz;l i u pcbñcjxk pz;l i kc fñgcaxñ. U pcbñcj vc scphfcgcñvck sukñh; ` pz;wl cjgcñvck ocfcñ menl xa, shk; x fw szbi xgc Fckx-l l cddc ocgxtcgcñxkc xahñc ejl xavñ. Pcbñcjxk fwdwnvwyw â...fw vxk pcl xac rhgh[hrv`ñß szbi kvck l crscv pcl xk uk x; x ocgxtckxk xaxkxk sukh ]hjv`y` mhojh rcvñ; x pz;wl cj mc mxghdcjxk fcñrcññ ugwl hs`v`n ; x, ukvhk sukñh vph \xs mc hy`ñ mcbxddcj`c vi ]hñ ugh[hrv`ñ. Fckx-l l cddckxk fñxk[x hvhl ` Debvx xfkx L i hmxdc, ho`n`k[ `s` xsc âEaac; Lcnmhkßv`n ; x, ukghn`k shd` uk i ] kctcnc ]hj`ñ. Usl hk, L i hmxdc mc Cfvi gghp xfkx Bi fedñ scphfcvck ugvywkh 'znc shd`gl `ñ. C'cn Lcnmhk xfkx Pc; cl x ukghñh cghmc ejsc; , u cvcv

¹ âJhñox xfkx : csxñß, 6-[` [xgv, scp.249-250.

vi b ugwn, phgfw; x, pcl ukwk scphfc ugl hy`kvh xojxght mhnv`n, pcl vc [hl hhj`k Cfvi ggghp xfkx Bi fedn fhncsxkvc x[jxl h ejvx; gcnxkvck suknh fw xa l cygwfxddcjw wynhl `av`n. Oxghtcjxk cl cmx ohkcvhk`kvhk ]`ol hs`kvhk suknh vh ]uogw txjkcgc, vcpacjgx xyjahaghn dnhhl `av`n ; x, Fckx-Hffhs vzmgcjxkx l zp- ; cl gcjl xa, mcbxddcjw cmmcg; xkvck vphh \xs ac; gc shgl `av`n.B<sup>1</sup>

Xfkx Pc[cn âTcjpwg-fhnxB ; xjhfkvh fw vcgwx ncvv ejl xavxn.

2) Xfkx { umbx fw dubwl w Cfwg Pi sedk xfkx L i khvxkxk pbcncj L cpvx fhncsxkvc dnbv`y` jnh; jhj`kvhk fegc kcrq evxn... âFw l cscgckxk hoxncb-bhl hkvh bi pwn evck L cpvxvck suknh; `vzmnc hxv ugl hs` l i l ; i kvi n. } i k; x âVhkdhgB ; xjhfkvh fegc dnb`gv`y`k` 'znl i acl ...âL cpvx mthj evck bhl hk cmmcg[c Sxfjx-C; fcncx kcmcgcnkvck fea kctcn, vphh suknh Sxfjx-Csyncx kcmcgcnkvck fea kctcn pz; wl cjc ]hjhn, ukvhk suknh vh ukghn`k ho`n`k[ `s` Sxfjx-C; fcncx kcsqkvck ughk fxn kctcn zb mcsxsx evcn, ukvhk suknh ukwk ugw ph; xl xddcjw ]hjhn, fegcg; gc vc uk x; x kctcn ph; xl ughn ; x, ukghn`k pcn fxn xl hl L cpvxvxn.B U vedxn...âNcmhdcjvc fegc redv ugwkwn ; x,... ukvhk suknh uk x; x ; xax ph; xl xddcjw ]hjhn... hgj`s` Pcckxk kcmcgcnkvck, feax Pi sedkxk kcmcgcnkvck, fxn kctcn vc ukghnvkh fharhs`. Fwkvkh suknh u zgc mc txjkc-tcshv hgcl x fi ni dcn.B

Xfkx Pc[cn âScmhxrB ; xjhfkvh sukwk[w ncmhdcjw phaxdc dnbhnr vedxn... âFw ncmhdcj ugvwr[h si sjvi n mc ukh csgh e/jxl hv ejl c; ugl hb.B<sup>2</sup>

Fharh fxn rnw\ xsc fegc vel xavxn... âl sji k `i l hkh `znc | edycl fcnc-C; ncl fw pcvxsvz zbi kvck suknh fha menc[c; rcnxfc phvxscgc mc txjkcgc xahnc ejl xavxnæ egc txjkc ; x, [hl hhj` mhpvx fxn bhl hkvh uk x; x cl xnc vuynw scsgcdxf ukghn` \cnh; ckvc mcbxddcjw shghn. C'cn fwkvkh fharhs`k` kcbcnvc jwjl wa ugshdv`, ukvh âuk x; x cl xn ugh[hrv`n ; x, txghk xagcnx `znc[c; B - vedc fwdwnhnv`. Ukghn` ncmhdcjvck hd`nhnr ; xjhfk phaxdcsxkvc dnbv`y`kh `znc hdv`k ugwn ; x, ukghn mhpvx fxn bhl hkvh ugh[hrghn.B<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âTcjpwg-fhnxB, 16-[` [xgv, scp.340, xfkx { umbxkxk â: catwg-l i a; xgB ; xjhfkvh kcrqck.

<sup>2</sup> Dekc unhvh, âScmhxrwg-l wpxrcB, scp.19.

<sup>3</sup> Dekc unhvh, 16-[` [xgv, scp.338.

Fc/bxgcnx vc fegc vel xagcn...âFw phvxsc 5-[x csnvc fha menvx. Ckvcgwsvh (Xs\hkxdhvh) 6 kctcn mhn vxv ;x, phl `s` zbi ki ocgxtc peshf evxnvx. Fwkvhk cghmc Lxsnxk ph;xl x, Fhyvhv`k Hffhsx ocgxtcsx mc cgcmxgcnvck mc ocmhnx[vck ughk vx'cn oxghtcj xvvxh]`ghn` vh pcn denvc ukw zbgcnx i]ik xvvxh evxnvxgcn.ß<sup>1</sup>

Xfkx Pc[cn vedxn...âFw u ;csxk szbi vi n ;x, pcvxsxk âScpxpx Fwohnxßvc r`sh ac;xgvc redv ugwkhhk dugghn`kvhk fharh pe] kcdx cgvc evc fxgl cl xavxn.ß<sup>2</sup>

Pcl ]xkxk vedxn... âUkghn`k mhpvx fxn bhl kvh l zm[wv ugl hs` \cnh;ckvcgxdxk x[hv ugwkl hs`kh fcnhfcnvxn mc pcvxsxk l crscvxk fw ugvyw l i l ;i k vedxgvxn.ß<sup>3</sup>

Licggt vedxn..." znvi di ki b ;xl x, oi gcth l c;jcfxkxk hgxl gcnx fw pcvxsgcnxk jctsnx mc xbhp ugwkl hs`kvh pe] fxn mhpvx kcbnc l hgx; ugl hl `a, fwkvhk cghmc |edycl fcnx-C;ncl vck uk x;x kctcnxk hv`k` fcdhk evck fxn ncmhdcj fegc, 'cjxnl cl xagcn. }ik;x fw pcvxsgcn csngcn fudw oi gcth l c;jcfxkxk ph;xl sxdhscjx xgc jcbhvvh ugl wavwn. Hl l h Cpgx-fedj l c;jcfxkxk l i pcvvsgcnx fw ncmhdcjgcnx zb ;xjhfgn`kvh |edycl fcnxk ck dho`k scphfcgcnxkc ]hjhk sckcvgcngc |edycl fcnxk zbi kvck ncmhdcj ejl xagcn. Fxb 'cgc[c; fcpsgcnvc ukghn`k fxn rxsl xkx kcrq evc[cdx; ;x, pcn x;x txnrckxk ;xjhfgn`kvh redv ugwkl wavwn.

OI GCTH LC: JCFXKVC UK X: X XL HL -K HVGHN-

h) Xl hl {i medkx<sup>4</sup> Cfvi gghp Xfkx Hffhsvhk ncmhdcj evxn ;x, |edycl fcnx-C;ncl fegc fwdwnvw...

أَنَا سَيِّدُ النَّبِيِّنَ وَعَلِيُّ ابْنُ أَبِي طَالِبٍ سَيِّدُ الْوَصِيِّينَ وَإِنَّ أَوْصِيَائِي بَعْدِي إِنَّا عَشْرٌ أَوْلَهُمْ  
عَلِيُّ ابْنُ أَبِي طَالِبٍ وَآخِرُهُمُ الْمُهَدِّيُّ

âLck \edycl fcngcnxk seddxvxdcl (hyhs`dhl ), Cgdddxfkx Cfx Jhgrf vc

<sup>1</sup> Dekc unhvh, 16-[` [xgv, scp.339, Ki mcmxkxk acnpx, 12-[x [xgv, scp.202.

<sup>2</sup> Dekc unhvh.

<sup>3</sup> Dekc unhvh.

<sup>4</sup> Bcpcfx âJcb;xncjwg-pwtthbß ;xjhfkvh (scp.155) ukwk fhncsxkvc dhb`n...âL i pcvvsgcnxk xl hl `, de'hkc acosxddcj mc Xsghl `k tconx Scvnwvvxk Xfnhpxl xfkx Lcpcl l cv xfkx Pcl cmedp {i medkx Ahtex – swtxgcnxk aedox-vxn. U, ncmhdcj mc ukwk pxsscgcgnxkxk fxn denc ju`ghkl hs`kh [xvvx vxrrcj dejxnxnvx. Rbhk ahp vh ukwk mhsxjcsx xgc l i scgl hk ugl wavw.

mcsxgcnxk seddxvixvn. Pcrxrcjck l ckvck suknh;` mcsxgcx uk x;x kctcnvxn. Ukghn`k  
fxnxk[xsx Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgx f, ho`n`k[`s` xsc Lcpvixvn.B

f) Pcl ]xkxk {i medkx zb sckcvx xgc Xfkx Hffhsvhk  
ncmhdcj evxn ;x, |edycl fcn fegc fwdwnvw...

قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ (ص) إِنَّ خُلَفَائِي وَأَوْصِيَائِي وَحُجَجَ اللَّهِ عَلَى الْخَلْقِ بَعْدِي الْإِثْنِي عَشَرَ  
أَوَّلُهُمْ أَحْيَى وَأَخِيرُهُمْ وَلَدِي قِيلَ: يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ وَمَنْ أَخَوُكَ؟ قَالَ: عَلِيُّ ابْنُ أَبِي طَالِبٍ  
قِيلَ: فَمَنْ وَلَدُكَ؟ قَالَ: الْمَهْدِيُّ الَّذِي يَمْلَأُهَا قِسْطًا وَعَدْلًا كَمَا مِلْتُ جَوْرًا وَظُلْمًا وَالَّذِي بَعَثَنِي  
بِالْحَقِّ بَشِيرًا وَنَذِيرًا لَوْ لَمْ يَبْقَ مِنَ الدُّنْيَا إِلَّا يَوْمٌ وَاحِدٌ لَطَوَّلَ اللَّهُ ذَلِكَ الْيَوْمَ حَتَّى يَخْرُجَ فِيهِ  
وَلَدِي الْمَهْدِيُّ فَيَنْزِلُ رُوحُ اللَّهِ عِيسَى بْنُ مَرْيَمَ فَيُصَلِّيَ خَلْفَهُ وَتُشْرِقُ الْأَرْضُ بِنُورِ رَبِّهَا وَيَبْلُغُ  
سُلْطَانُهُ الْمَشْرِقَ وَالْمَغْرِبَ

âPcrxrcjck l ckxl [hkxakgcxkl, mcsxgcxkl mc Hgghp`k xkshkghnh ughk  
pz[[]cgjcnx l ckvck suknh uk x;x kctcnvxn. Ukghnvhk fxnxk[xsx rhnvha`l, ho`n`k[`s`  
xsc zmghv`l ugh[hrv`n.B

Sunwavvwghn...âDh Ncswgcgghp! Sckxk rhnvha`k ;xl vxn?B

Fwdwnvw...âCgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgx f.B

Sunwavvwghn...âSxbxk zmghv`k`b ;xl vxn?B

Fwdwnvw... âLcpvixvn. U ;csvxn ;x, den ibi bigl, phrs`bg`r mc  
cvhgcsxbg;gc vugvwyw ;xl x, ukw phrr-cvhgjgc vugvwnh[hr. Lckx l i qvc menck mc  
runovvhk acos ughnhr `zkvcnck Hgghp`k hkv ugswk ;x, c`cn vikdhk`k ho`n`k fxn  
`ikvck hnjr rhgl hsh fegc, Hgghp-jhhgh u `iki u rcvcn wbhvh[hrv`n ;x, l ckxl  
zmghv`l Lcpvx ukvh bipwn ejsxk. Hgghp`k nwpw Xsh xfkx Lcndcl vc khbxg  
ughnhr khl hbvh ukh xrjxvh evc[c;. Den ibi |cnmcnvx`hn`k kwnw xgc  
hdv`kgah[hr, Ukwk tcnl hk`acnrx-rcnfx cphjc evc[c;vx.B

m) Pcl ]xkxk {i medkx zb sckcvx xgc vedxn... |edycl fcnx-  
C; ncl fegc fwdwnwvf...

أَنَا وَعَلِيٌّ وَالْحَسَنُ وَالْحُسَيْنُ وَتِسْعَةٌ مِنْ وَلَدِ الْحُسَيْنِ مُطَهَّرُونَ مَعْصُومُونَ

âLck, Cgx, Pcsck, Pisedk mc Pisedkxk zmghvghn`kvhk ughk vurrwb kctcn  
l c/swl mc \h; -\h; xbcdx; .B<sup>1</sup>

Fcgx, oigcth l c; jcfxkvc csngcn fudw ph; xl ughk sxdhscj  
fwkw jcgcf evxnvx ;x, fw ;xl x pcvxsgcnx Xsghl i l l cjxkxk  
xojxdhn`kh menl csxk mc ukghn` \cnvc hnohs`kvh shoghs`k.

<sup>1</sup> h, f mc m fckvxkvc ughk pcn i ] pcvxs âTcnhxvws-scl jedkß  
; xjh f`kvhk v`næ Jephk wkxmensexjejkxk l cn; cbx ; xjh fohkhs`kvh cgdhbl h  
ki socsx mc 1164, 1690, 1691 kzl ncsx xgc.

HI I h fw I c; jcfxk hnv`[`gghn`k`k fzdi ; fxn rxsl x fw dugvh  
ghdxrgx [xphv ejl xagcn ; x, fxb ukghn`k ki I wkcgcnxkx âOi gcth  
I c; jcfxkxk |edycl fcn si kkcscxkvc zb kcbngcnx xgc I i ohgxt  
ughk ncmhdcjgcnc rhna` nctjhngnh`ß fzgl csxkvc redv ejl xax; .  
Fwnhvh ukghn`k fxn vphv jc; nhn evxgl csxkc gi bwl duovwn.  
Suknh;` fcpSvc vc pcl xk âuk x; x kctcnßxk hvghn`k` xncgx  
]c; xnx; ; x, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk jcmhji n pcvvxkvc ughk  
pcvxsgcnxkvc ukghnh xahnc ugwkl wa mc hvghn` ha; hn ac; xgvc  
redv evxgl xavxn.

/EDYCLFCNX-C: NCL ; -VCK SUKNH UK X: X XL HL -K  
JCRVXL EVXGL CSX

Fxnk[x xl hl ...  
Hv`... Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf™ .  
Hjhs`k`k hv`... Cfw Jhgxf™ .  
Hkhs`k`k hv`... Thjxl c Cscv r`b` .  
: i kdcx... Cfwg-Pcsc, Cfwg-Pi sedk, Cfw Jwnhf™ .  
Grcfx... Mscx, Cl xncg-I z/I xkxk™ .

U pcbncj hl wg-txg phvxscsxkvck 30 xg suknh Fedjwggphxg-  
pcnhl vh – : c/fc emxkvc vi kdhdh 'cgl xa, l r`no`k[` px[nx  
xgxkvc Cfv i n-Ncpl hk xfkx L i g[cl (ocmhnx[vck fxnxvxn)  
jcnctxkvck acpxv evxgl xa mc : wtcvck ; ckhnvh dengcack Kc[ctx-  
Canctvc vctk evxgl xavxn.

X; xk[x xl hl ...  
Hv`... Pcsc™ .  
Hjhs`k`k hv`... Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf™  
Hkhs`k`k hv`... Thjxl edx-Bcpnh<sup>(alayha)</sup>  
: i kdcx... Cfw L i pcl I cv.  
Grcfx... Sxfjx-c; fcn mc L i [jcfh™ .

U pcbncj 3-[i px[nx xgx, I i fhnc; Nhl hbkhd`k`k unjhk[`g  
'i ki kvc L cvxkvc vi kdhdh 'cgl xa, 50-[x xgxk ncfxwg-cmmcg  
hd`k`k 25-vc acpxv evxgl xa mc L cvxkvc; x âFcrxß  
rcfxnxsjhkg`y`kvh vctk evxgl xavxn.

I ]ik[i xl hl

<sup>1</sup> âL i sjcvnc; x Ph; xl ß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.483â âJcb; xncjw ocmhssxg-i I I cjß,  
scp.10â âL ckhrxfß (xfkx L cyhbxxg) ; xjh f`kvh (scp.7-vc) redv ugwkwn ; x, Cgx  
™ -`k hkhs` Thjxl c fxfjx Cscv phl xgc phg`kvh jcmht ejl cdc I caywg xv  
; x, vuywa hyn`ghn` faghkv` mc 'zbgckxgl cvck : c/fckxk rh`s` h]`gv`, u, x]cnx  
vhoxg ugvw. Uygw Cgx : c/fckxk x]xkvc vi kdhdh 'cgvx.

Hv`... Pi sedk <sup>TM</sup>  
Hjhs`k`k hv`... Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgxf <sup>TM</sup> .  
Hkhs`k`k hv`... Thjxl edx-Bcpnh <sup>(deyha)</sup>  
: i kdcx... Cfw Cfvxgghp <sup>TM</sup> .  
Grcrfx... Sxfjx-Csyncn mc Acpxvx-: cnfcgh.

U pcbncj px[ncjxk 4-[i xgx, ac/fhk hd`k`k 3-vc L cvxkcvc vi kdhdh 'cgl xa, 61-[x px[nx xgxkxk l cpcnncl hd`k`k 10-vh (Hawnh 'i ki kvc) zbi ki k Cpgx-fedjx mc ; zl c; ]xgcnx xgc fxngx; vc : cnfcgh ]zgi kvc Debvxk ruawkw jcnctxkvck acpxv evxgl xavxn. U pcbncjxk l cbhn` Xnhr`k : cnfcgh acpcnxkvck dengcaxn.<sup>1</sup>

Vznvi k[i xl hl  
Hv`... Cgxddxfkxg-Pi sedk £ .  
Hjhs`k`k hv`... Pi sedk xfkx Cgx £  
Hkhs`k`k hv`... Ycbhgc, dhowv Rhv`kghn Ahp`.  
: i kdcx... Cfwg-Pcscck.  
Grcrfx... Bedkwg-hfxvxk mc Sc[[hv.

U pcbncj 33-[i (vx'cn x; x ncmhdcjc 'znc 37, dhowv vh 38-[x px[nx xgxkvc L cvxkcvc vi kdhdh 'cgl xa, 94-[i xgvc acpxv evxgcnc; âFcrxß rcfxnxsjhkg`y`kvh cl xsx xl hl Pcscck <sup>TM</sup> -`k dhk`kvh vctk evxgl xavxn.<sup>2</sup>

Feak[x xl hl  
Hv`... L i pcl l cv xfkx Cgx £ .  
Hjhs`k`k hv`... Cgxddxfkxg-Pi sedk £ .  
Hkhs`k`k hv`... l l l i Cfvxgghp (xl hl Pcscck <sup>TM</sup> -`k r`b`v`n).  
: i kdcx... Cfw { c/tcn.  
Grcrfx... Fhrxn.

U pcbncj 57-[x px[nx xgxkvc L cvxkcvc vi kdhdh 'cgl xa mc 117-[x xgvc acpxv evxgcnc; âFcrxß rcfxnxsjhkg`y`kvh hjhs`

<sup>1</sup> Jcfcnx, Xfkx Csxh, Bcpafx mc Xfkx : csxnk âJhnxoß ; xjhfgghn`kvh 40, 50, 60-[` px[nx xggcnxkxk phvxscgcncxkvc. Egc[c vc ukwk jcn[i l edx-phg`kh âJhnnox Fhyvhvß, âJhnnox Vcl carß, âXsjxd/hfß, âWsvwg-yhfcb, âCg-xshfcb mc âJcfcrhjß (xfkx Sc/v) ; xjhfgghn`kvh fhoh fxgcnsxkxb.

<sup>2</sup> Xfkx Csxh, Xfkx : csxnk mc Bcpafxkxk âJhnxoß ; xjhfgghn`, 94-[i px[nx xgxkxk phvxscgcncx. xl hl <sup>TM</sup> -`k jcn[i l edx-phg` âJcfcrhjß (xfkx Sc/v), âPxdgcjwg-zmgxdhß, âMcthdhjwg-c/dhkß, âJhnnox Dc/rwfxß (2-[x [xgv, scp.303), pcl ]xkxk âJhnnox xfkx L cs/wvß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.160-vh l zm[wwvwn.

Bedkwg-hfvvxk <sup>TM</sup> -`k dhk`kvh vctk ugwkl wavwn.<sup>1</sup>

Hgj`k[ xl hl

Hv`... { c/ten xfkx L i pcl I cv.

Hjhs`k`k hv`... L i pcl I cv xfkx Cgx £ .

Hkhs`k`k hv`... I I I i Tcnmc (u, Rhsxl xfkx L cpcl I cv  
xfkx Cfx Fc; nxk r`b`v`n).

: i kdcx... Cfw Cfvxgghp.

Gcrctx... Shvvr.

U pcbncj 73-[i px[nx xgxkvc L cvxkvc vi kdhdh 'cgl xa mc  
148-[x xgvc acpxv evxgcnc; âFcrxß rcfxnxsjhkg`y`kvh hjhs` xl hl  
Fhrxn <sup>TM</sup> -`k dhk`kvh vctk evxgl xavxn.<sup>2</sup>

Devvxk[x xl hl

Hv`... L wsh xfkx { c/ten £ .

Hjhs`k`k hv`... { c/ten xfkx L i pcl I cv £

Hkhs`k`k hv`... Pcl xvc.

: i kdcx... Cfwg-Pcsck.

Gcrctx... : hbxl .

U pcbncj 128-[x px[nx xgxkvc L cvxkvc vi kdhdh 'cgl xa,  
183-[i xgvc Hffhsx ocgxtcsx Phnwk cn-Ncaxvxk Fhyvhvvh;`  
bxkvhk`kvh acpxv evxgl xa mc Fhyvhv`k rcnfxkvc dengcack  
âRi nedaß rcfxnxsjhkg`y`kvh (phg-phb`nvh â: hbxl xddcß hvghkhk  
denvc) vctk evxgl xavxn.<sup>3</sup>

Sc; ;xbxk[x xl hl

Hv`... Cgxddxfkx L wsh £ .

Hjhs`k`k hv`... L wsh xfkx { c/ten £ .

Hkhs`k`k hv`... Oedbcnhk.

: i kdcx... Cfwg-Pcsck

Gcrctx... Nxbh.

U pcbncj 153-[i px[nx xgxkvc L cvxkvc vi kdhdh 'cgl xa,  
203-[i xgvc acpxv evxgl xa mc Jwsvh (L capcv acpcnxkvc) vctk

<sup>1</sup> âJcb; xncjwg-pwtthbß (Bcpcfx)æ âMctcdhjpg-c/dhkßæ âSctmcjws-sctmcjßæ  
âPxgdcjwg-zmgxdhßæ âJhnnox Dc/rwfxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.320æ âJhnxowg Xsgl I B  
(Bcpcfx)æ âJhnnox xfkx : csxnß, 115, 117 mc 118-[x xggcnxk phvxscgcnxæ âXl hl Fhrxn  
<sup>TM</sup> -`k jcn[i I edx-phg`.

<sup>2</sup> âPxgdcjwg-zmgxdhßæ âMctcdhjpg-c/dhkßæ âJhnnox Dc/rwfxßæ 2-[x [xgv,  
scp.381æ âJhnnox L cs/wvxß, 3-[i [xgv, scp.346æ âXl hl Shvvr<sup>TM</sup> -`k jcn[i I edx-  
phg`.

<sup>3</sup> âL crhjxgwj-jhgxfddxkßæ âJhnnox Fhyvhvßæ âMctcdhjpg-c/dhkßæ âSctmcjws-  
sctmcjßæ âJhnnox xfkx : csxnß mc âJhnnox Dc/rwfxß, 2-[x [xgv, scp.414.



evxgl xavxn.<sup>1</sup>

Vurwbwk[w xl hl

Hv`...

Hjhs`k`k hv`...

Hkhs`k`k hv`...

: i kdcx...

GcrfX...

L i pcl I cv xfkx Cgx E .

Cgxddxfkx L wsh E .

Sc; xkc.

Cfw Cfvxgghp

{ hmhv.

U pcbncj 195-[x px[nx xgxkvc vi kdhdh 'cgl xa, 220-[x xgvc Fhyvhvh acpxv evxgl xa mc fhfhs` L wsh xfkx {c/tcn E -`k rcfnxkxk dhk`kvh vctk evxgl xavxn.<sup>2</sup>

Ukwk[w xl hl

Hv`...

Hjhs`k`k hv`...

Hkhs`k`k hv`...

: i kdcx...

GcrfX...

Cgxddxfkx L i pcl I cv <sup>TM</sup> .

L i pcl I cv xfkx Cgx E .

L cynxfvck ughk Scl hkc

Cfwg-Pcsck Cs'cnx.

Phvx.

U pcbncj 214-[i px[nx xgxkvc L cvxkvc vi kdhdh 'cgl xa, 254-[i xgvc acpxv evxgl xa mc Xnhr`k Shl xnnh acpcnxkvc vctk evxgl xavxn.<sup>3</sup>

Uk fxxk[x xl hl

Hv`...

Hjhs`k`k hv`...

Hkhs`k`k hv`...

: i kdcx...

GcrfX...

Pcsck xfkx Cgx <sup>TM</sup> .

Cgxddxfkx L i pcl I cv <sup>TM</sup> .

Si sck.

Cfw L i pcl I cv

Cs'cnx.

U pcbncj 231-[x xgvc Shl xnnvh vi kdhdh 'cgl xa mc 260-[' xgvc acpxv evxgcnc; Shl xnnvh hjhs`k`k dhk`kvh vctk ugwkI wavwn.<sup>4</sup>

Fw uk fxn xl hl `k rcfnx phg-phb`nvh fi ji k

<sup>1</sup> āJhnxox Jcfcnxβ āJhnxox Xfkx : csxnβ āJhnxowg Xsghl β (Bcpcfx)ā Mctcdhjwg-c/dhkβ (203-[i px[nx xgxkxk phvxscgcnx)ā Jhnxox Dc/rwfxβ, 2-[x [xgv, scp.453ā Jhnxox L cs/wvxβ, 3-[i [xgv, scp.441.

<sup>2</sup> āJhnxox Fhyvhvβ āMctdhjwg-c/dhkβ āAcbcnhjwb-bcpcfβ, 2-[x [xgv, scp.48ā Jhnxox L cs/wvxβ, 3-[i [xgv, scp.464.

<sup>3</sup> āJhnxox Fhyvhvβ āMctcdhjwg-c/dhkβ āJhnxox Dc/rwfwβ, 2-[x [xgv, scp.484ā Jhnxox L cs/wvxβ, 4-[i [xgv, scp.84.

<sup>4</sup> āMctcdhjwg-c/dhkβ āJcb; xncjwg-ocmhsβ āLcjhgxfws-sw/g tx I ckhxfx hgxn-Ncswgβ (Aedo : hl hg Jcgpc Ahtex, 654-vc mcthj evxf)β āJhnxox Dc/rwfxβ, 2-[x [xgv, scp.503.

I i scgl hkghn`k bxdhncj'hp`v`n. Ukwk 'zbcg I crfcncgcnx,  
I xkhncgcnx mhnv`n. Hl I h L cvxkckxk âFcrxß rcfnxxsjhkg`y`kvh  
vctk ugwkxhk vzhv xl hl `k rcfnxkc 'cgvx;vc xsc, mcpphfxgc  
L cvxkcdc vhoxg ugvrwvhk sukh ukw |edycl fcnxk bzm[cgcnx  
mc u pcbncjxk scphfcgcnxkxk rcfnx xgc fxngx;vc vhy`v`f dengc-  
de;shk ejl xagcn.

Uk x; xk[x xl hl  
Hv`... L i pcl I cv, L cpvx <sup>TM</sup> .  
Hjhs`k`k hv`... Pcsck xfkx Cgx <sup>TM</sup> .  
Hkhs`k`k hv`... Kcn'xs (dhowv Sedrcg).  
: i kdcx... Cfw Cfvxgghp, Cfwg-Rhsxl .  
Grcfx... Rhxl , L i kjcbcn, Ocgct, L cpvx, Shpxfcb-  
bhl hk.

U pcbncj 255-[x px[nx xgxkvc Shl xnnhvh vi kdhdh 'cgl xavxn.  
U, uk x; x xl hl `k uk x; xk[xsx ugwf xkvxdc rcvcn vxnxvxn mc  
Hggghp jcnctxkvck menxgck nwbxgcncvck fcpncgckxn.

### *L I P I L F X N X B H P*

: e]ck ncmhdcjgcnxk fxnxkvc redv ugwkI wavw ;x... âPhl`s  
Rinedavck ughk uk x;x kctcn ocgxcvxn. Ughn mthj ejvx;vck sukh vi kdhdh  
pcn[-l cn[~~gx~~; ph;xl ugh[hr.ß

Fharh fxn ncmhdcjvc xsc fegc redv ugwkI wavwn... âFw vxk  
Rinedavck ughk uk x;x kctcn ugwk[hdh rcvcn pcl xac zb denxkvc I zp;cl  
rhgh[hrv`n. Ughn mthj ejvx;vck sukh den zb cpgkx jhn-l hn evc[c;ß

Fw x;x xfhnc 'zsjcnxn ;x, fw vi kdh pcdhj`k`k zl ni  
|edycl fcnx-C; ncl vck sukh 'cgc[c; uk x; xk[x xl hl gh sukh  
]hjh[hrv`n. Vel cgx, fw uk x;x kctcnvck fxnxkxk zl ni  
vi kdhk`k ho`n`kh rcvcn vhmhl ejl cgxvxn. Fw vh uk x; xk[x  
mcx L cpvxde Hgx-L i pcl I cv, pcbncj L i pcl I cv xfkx Pcsck  
Cs; cnxkxk  $\Phi$  wbwk zl ni I cscgcsxvxn ;x, phg-phb`nvh  
'en[c; gcal xavxn. } i k; x u ncmhdcjgcnxk I c[l wsw dhgk`b uk x; x  
xl hl gh wdywk 'cgxn mc ukghnvkh fharhghn`kh hxv evxgl csx  
vi b'i k vedxgvxn.

*Cg-pcl vw gxgghp.*



## VZNV I K{ I TCSXG

- \* X;x I c;jcfvc xl hl cj mc oxghtcjgc cghrcvhn fcpsxk oi ghscsx
- \* Xsghl `k cmmcgcnxkvc oxghtcj jca;xg ugivkl hs`k`k jhnnox 'en]c;gdx.
- \* Oigcth I c;jcfxkxk oxghtcj mc xl hl cj fhncsxkvc;x kcbcnxddcgcn.
- \* Fw kcbcnxddcgcn jckrxvx I i ghpxbcgn.
- \* XI hl Cgx™ -`k ;cghl `kh xsjxkhv evxgl csx.
- \* Pcjjh thsxr vc ugsh, ph;xl c xjhcj ejl cdxk mh[xfgdx.
- \* Cpgx-fedj I c;jcfxkxk xl hl cj fhncsxkvc;x kcbcnx.
- \* |edycl fcnx-C;ncl j -vck suknh uk x;x mcsx.
- \* : e]ck uk csn I i vvcjxkvc ph;xl vhnccgnxk jwjvwyw I zmre.



*XSGHL -K CMMCGCNXKVC OXGHTCJ JCA: XG UGWKL HS-K-K  
JHNXOX "EN}C: GDX*

Xaxk cmmcgkvc

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i zb methj` xgc kcjx[cgckck  
ocsjcgx; dhjhy`kvh l shl ckx l i ph[xn mc ckshnvhk jca; xg  
ugwkl wa fxn unvwdh scn; cnvc jc/dxk ejvx, Cfw Fc; n, Zl cn,  
Cfw l fedvc {cnhnp mc Sc/v xfkx Mcrrhs ; xl x l capwn  
acosgcx ukwk tcnl hk` hgj`kh ; e]xnjvx mc ukghn` â{intß  
unvw'hp`kh 'zkvcnvx. Ukghn l shl ckxk scn; cnvcgxdxkc xnhv  
jwjvwrghn` bhl hk |edycl fcn rcbcfgckxf fwdwnvw... âU sxbxk  
i]ik scn; cnvcgdc ghdxrvn!ß

Unvw vi acn'cdc duggkhv`, fw bhl hk |edycl fcnxk  
ocsjcgdx axvvcjgckvx. l shl c owvhtxbgcal c; i]ik 'cgvx. U  
pcbncj fwdwnvw...âl shl ckxk unvswkw dugh shgk!ß

Fhbhn enjcsx 'i ki pcnc; cjc phb`nghav`rghn` mhoj  
|edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk [hk i sjc ugvyw ocfcx ]hjv`. Ukghn  
L cvxkcdc rhd`v`f |edycl fcnxk emxkc d'y'av`ghn. |edycl fcn  
fwdwnvw... â"cgk sxbxk i]ik fxn aed dhl ; x, l ckvck suknh pe] mhoj  
dugwkwbw hbl hdhs`k`b.ß

Zl cn vevx... â|edycl fcnxk ocsjcgdx axvvcjgckl xavxn!  
Hgghp`k : xjh`f sxbxk dhk`k`bv hv`n, Hgghp`k : xjh`f fxbc  
; xthdcjvxn!ß

Fw bhl hk xojxghtghn fhaghkv`, szb-szpfcjgcn pcvvxkx  
hav`y bhl hk |edycl fcn fwdwnvw...âLckxl dhk`l vkh rhgo`k! }ik; x  
pe] fxn \edycl fcnxk dhk`kvh l i fhpxsc ejl c; ncmh vedxgvxn.ß

Xfkx Hffhs vedxn... Ukghn l i fhpxscdc fhaghv`ghn, phgfw; x,  
pe] fxn \edycl fcnxk dhk`kvh l i fhpxsc ejl c; [hxb vedxgvxn.  
Ukghn vevxgc...âFw ; xax (|edycl fcn) shd`rghd`n!ß

Xfkx Hffhs egc fcn; hyghv` ; x, 'zb dhaghn` denvc; x  
rwl ghn` xsghjv`.

OCGXTC ZL CNXK JWJVWYW L ZMRE

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i mcthj ejvxdx bhl hk Cfw Fc; n  
Sckcpvc xvx. Zl cn vhl vedxnvx... â|edycl fcn mcthj  
ejl cl xavxnæ c; sxkc L wsh 40 'i k zb rzml i kvck rhxf ugvwyw  
; xl x, u vh |cnmcnvx' hn`kh vuynw 'ejl xavxn. Hgghp hkv ugswk  
; x, |edycl fcn rhd`vh[hr, ukwk zgvi di ki 'i l hk evckgcxk  
cgcnxkx ; csc[c; vxñ.ß Suknh vedxnvx... âPcn ; cs ukwk zgvi di ki  
vesc, fudkwkw r`g`k`l gh mwnnhl !ß

Suknh ukwk i ]i k fw hdckx jxghmcj ejvxgcñ...

âLi pcl l cv dhgk`b fñ \edycl fcnvñ ; x, ukvhk rhfhr vh fharh  
vedycl fcnvñ 'cgf 'ejl xagñ. C'cn u zqsc, dhowv rcjgc dejxngsc, sxb cmmcg; x  
vzmni ki bc ([hpxgddcjc) rhd`vh[hrs`k`bl ?!ß<sup>1</sup>

Hffhs ukh vevx... âAi fpcsb, |edycl fcn mcthj ejl xavxn.  
C'cn sxbgcñvck fñx |edycl fcnxk mcthj` fhncsxkvc fñ aed  
eaxvxfsc, fxbxl i ]i k fcdhk ejxk.ß

Gh; xk Zl cn zb szbgcnxkx jc; nhnghd`f jcpvxxkx vhmhl  
ejvxnvx. U rcvñ vkh`av` ; x, hyb` ; z`i ; gckl cdc fhaghv`. Cfw  
Fc; n 'cgf dwoh`vh redv ugwkxk hdckx jxghmcj ejvx; vc, u  
sh; xjgcavx.

FCKX-SHXVC SCRXTCSX MC CFW FC: NGC FED/CJ

|edycl fcnxk \h; [cscvx Cpgx-fedjxk dhk`kvh ugvwyw fñ  
phgvh L cvxkvc ughk ckshnghñ Fckx-Shxvc scrxtcsxkvc fñ denc  
ju`ghav`ghñ, Sc/v xfkx l fhvckx vc ocsjc phgvh ]c; xf unhdh  
'cjxnvxgcñ. U, ckshn`k Xsgl vh; ` oxvl cj mc tchgxddcjcgnxkx  
shvhghv`rvhk suknh vevx... âFw pz; wl cjx zb cgxkxbvc shoghd`k.ß  
Ukghñ vevxgcñ... âDhoa` fñ szb vevxk, fxb sckxk nc/dxkvck  
; ckhn ]`ol hdh[hy`r. Sckx vc fw pz; wl cjc se]xnx; .ß

Fw bhl hk Cfw Fc; n mc Zl cn l cscgcvc ocfcnvñ ugwf,  
zb ri mmcgnx xgc Scrxtcdc vuynw jcgcsvxgcñ. Cfw Fc; n  
l i ph[xngcnxk ; e]l xa oxvl cjcgnxkx shvhghdhñr vevx... âUkghñ  
|edycl fcnxk mcgxgcñ mc rupwl -crncfhs`v`n, ukvhk suknh vh  
[hl hhj hnhs`kvh pz; wl cjc phl`vhk ]uo ghdxrvxngcn. Fw  
fhncvc bhg`l ghnvhk fharhs` ukghngh l i khrxac ejl cblß

Pi fhf xfkx L i kbcñ vevx... âEd ckshñ rnw`w! Zb xaxkxbx zb  
cgxkxb hc`k! } i k; x fw [hl hhj sxbxk shdckxbvcvñ. Pe] ; cs  
sxbxkgc l i ohgxtcj ejl cdc rhvñ vedxgvñ. C'cn fwkghñ rcfwg

<sup>1</sup> âHgñ Xl nhkß swncsx, hdc.144

ejl cscgcn mc zb szbgcnxkc xsnhn ejscgcn, ukvh fxn cl xn fxbvck ugsww, fxn cl xn vc ukghnvhk.ß

ZI cn vevx... âPedphj! X;x kctcn fxn bhl hkvh fxn denc s'yl hb... Cncfgcn pe] mhoj rcfwg ejl cbgcn ;x, sxbx pz;wl cjc se]sxkgcn, |edycl fcngcnx xsc sxbvck fharhs`kvhk ugsww!ß Fwkvhk suknh fxn-fxnxkx jcpvxx ejl cdc fhaghv`ghn. Ckshn`k phl `s` mc dhowv ukghnvhk fc/bxgcnx vevxgc.âFxb Cgxvck fharh pe] ;xl c fed/cj ejl cnx;ß

ZI cn xojxghtvhk runohnhr Cfw Fc;nc vevx... âCgxkx wbjh, sckxkgc fed/cj evxl .ß

Fcaxn xfkx Sc/v ukw rhfhrghd`f Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj ejvx mc Pi fhf xfkx L i kbcn ukwk i sji kc r`ar`n`f vevx...âKc rcvcn \xs nctjhn ejvxk! Zb cl xuygwkwk (Sc/vxk) pz;wl cjxkc pcscv ejvxk?!ß

ZI cn mc Cfw I fedvc vc ukh fed/cj ejvxgc. Ums rcfxgcsx zb hnhghn`kvh vevxgc... âC'cn Ocbnc[ rcfxgcsx fxn vph pz;wl cjc ]hjshghn, pcl xacgx; ughnhr sxbvck i sji k ugh[hr mc sxbxk i ]i k pe] fxn \hd hd`nl hdh[hrghn.ß Fwkh `znc vc Cfw Fc;nc fed/cj ejvxgc, Sc/v xfkx I fhvc mc ocbnc[gxgc I cygw f ugvwghn. Pcjjh hb rhg`nv` ;x, Sc/v hdhrghn hgj`kvh jh\vhghk`f zgsi k ;x, ukwk ;zl c;]xgcnx vevxgc... âEpjxdhjg` ugwk, Sc/vx jh\vhghl hdhs`k`b!ß ZI cn vevx... âZgvi ni k ukw, Hgghp ukw zgvi nsi k!ß Suknh ukwk fha` i sji kvc vdhk`f vevx... âSckx egc jh\vhghl hr xsjcdxncl ;x, fcvckxkxk fckvgcnx fxn-fxnxkvck hdn`gs`k!ß

Fw bhl hk Reds xfkx Sc/v, ZI cnxk shrhgh`kvhk jwjhnhr vevx... âHgghph hkv ugsww, c'cn ukwk fha`kvhk fxn ji ; cs;x; ugsh, hyb`kvh fxn vckc vc shghl hj vxaxk rhgl hdh[hr!ß

Cfw Fc;n vevx... âZI cn! Fxn hb dhmha! Fwnhvh I i vnh ejl c; fxbxl oedncl xbcvxn.ß

ZI cn ;ckhnh ]c;xgvx mc Sc/vx `zji ni f emxkc h`hnhv`ghn. Suknh L cvxkc dc `cgl xa ughk Csgcl rcfxgcsx Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cj ejvx. Cfw Fc;n ukghnvhk ;zl c; hgv` mc ukwk cjhnt`k` hgl `a phgvh |edycl fcn I cs[xvxkc h`hnhv`ghn. U, I xkfcnc ]`ov` mc jc; `i ki kc rcvcn |edycl fcnxk mthj`kh ghredv rhgv`ghn. Suknh;` `i k dekvck I cs[xvc `cgvxgc. Cfw Fc;n |edycl fcnxk I xkfcnxkvck ujwnvw, ZI cn hdhr i sjc vwnwf vevx... âVi kck vevxdxl szb kc Hgghp`k : xjh f`kvhk vx, kc vc |edycl fcnxk



szbi! Lck fegc tx; xngcaxnvl ; x, |edycl fcn jebgx; gc i l l cjxk  
xagcnxkx shpl hkh shgh[hr, zbi vc vi kdhvhk 'evck ho'n`k`  
; cs ugh[hrv`n. Gh; xk Hgghp Rwn/hk` i l l cjxk hnhs`kvh rudvw  
mc ukwk mhsxjcsx xgc ukghn` pxvhdcj ejvx. Sxb |edycl fcnxk  
l hyhnh dugvha`k` se]vxkxb, xkvx hdhyh rhgo`f ukwkgh fed/cj  
evxk!ß Scrxtcvc fed/cj evck [hl hj l cs[xvvc ukwkgh dekvck  
fed/cj ejvxgcn. Cfw Fc;n szbc fhaghd`f vevx... âLck egc fxn  
phgvh sxbxk ph; xl xkxb ugvwl ; x, sxbvck dhoa` vedxgcl . C'cn  
dhoa` cl cg ejsc l ckc ; zl c; evxk...ß

Fxn szbgc, fhbhn enjcsx 'i ki ki k rhghk shhjghn` mc  
]cnackfc hoahl ` 'i ki fi jzmgi ; vc |edycl fcnxk [cscvck  
fx'hkc rhghnhr u pcbncjxk Cpgx-fedjxkx \h; mc l i rcvcs  
[ckhbc xgc fxngx; vc jc; rudvwghn. Cfw Fc;n mc Zl cn  
|edycl fcnxk risg ; ctck mc vctk xagcnxkvc xajxnh; ejl cvx.  
Fegc ; x, Hdxac vedxn... â|edycl fcnxk vctkxkvck dhgk`b 'e[c  
rhnghk`y`kvh feggcxk scsxkvck ocfcnvhn ugvwr.ß

L i ph[xn mc ckshnvkh fxn rnw\w mc Fckx-Phaxl jhdths`  
fi jzmgi ; vc Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cjvck xl jxkh ejvxgcn mc Cgxddxfkx  
Cfx Jhgxf <sup>TM</sup> -h fed/cj evc[c;gcxkx fxgvxnvxgcn. Pz;wl cj  
fha]`ghn` Hffhs`k dhk`kh 'evxf ukw zb jcnctgcxkc ]c;l c;  
xsjcvx; vc ukvhk l cktx [hmhf eajvxgcn. E/jxnhb cghl cjx ughnhr  
Thjxl edx-Bcpnh <sup>(aleyha-salam)</sup> -k emxkvc d'y'av`rvhk suknh Cfw Fc;n  
Zl cnx 'zkvcnvx ; x, ukghn` unhvhk ]`ohnjs`k. Cfw Fc;n ukh  
vel xavx... âC'cn xl jxkh ejscgcn, ukghngh l i phnxfc h\hnlß

Zl cn cgxkvc uv az/gcsx jwjl wa phgvh 'ejvx ; x, emx  
dhkv`ns`k. Thjxl edx-Bcpnh <sup>(aleyha-salam)</sup> ukwk rhfhy`kh ]`o`f vevx... âEd  
Ocjjhf`k uygw! " cgl xsck fxbxl emx dhkv`nhshk?!ß

Zl cn vevx... âFcgx! Dhgk`b i l l cjxk 'ejvxdx dugg h 'ejscxkb  
dhkv`nl hnhl .ß

Cfw Fc;n zb zgi l i xgc kcjx[cgckck ocsjcgx; vc l cpb  
pcl xk l cscgcdc xahnc evcnc; vedxnvx... âLck fw vi kdhvhk  
'evcn;ck dhgk`b i ] aed fhncsxkvc jccssi tgckxnc l ; x, ; ha ukghn`  
denxkc dejxnl cdcdvxl ... Pcjjh l i phnxfc h\hnl hr i ] i k  
fhyghkshdv` fegc, ; ha Thjxl ckxk rh`s`k` h]l hdhdv`l .ß

Fw phvxscvck suknh Cgx <sup>TM</sup> pcn 'i k 'e[c Thjxl edx-Bcpnh  
<sup>(aleyha-salam)</sup> xgc fxngx; vc ckshn`k emgcxkc 'evxn mc ukghnvkh ; zl c;  
xsjcdxnvx. Thjxl edx-Bcpnh <sup>(aleyha-salam)</sup> vh ukghn`k ; zl c; ejl csxkx  
xsjcdxnvx, ukghn xsc vedxnvxgcn... âEd |edycl fcnxk r`b! Fxb fw

;xax xgc fed/cj ejl xax;. C'cn sckxk cl xuygwK Cfw Fc;nvck rhfhr fxbxl dhk`l `bh 'cgscdvx, ai fpcsb ukw se]cnvx;.ß

Cgx <sup>TM</sup> fwdwnwnvw... âLck |edycl fcnxk [cscvxkx emxk unjhs`kvh rudl hg` mc ukwk ri sg, ;ctck mc vctk xagcnxkvck cg ]c;cnc; [hl hhj`k dhk`kh 'ejl cgxdvxl ;x, ph;xl xddcj fhncsxkvc ukghngh l i fhpxsc h`hn`l ?ß

Thjxl c <sup>(deyha-salam)</sup> vh fwdwnwnvw... âCfwg-Pcsck ukh ghdxr ughk xagcnvck fharh pe] fxn xa 'znl i n. Ukghn egc fxn xa 'znvi gcn ;x... Hggghp ukghn`k peshf`kh ]hjs`klß

L i hmxdc vc Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k fw xagcnxkx l cbcl l cj evcnc; dhbl `av`... âSckxk ;e]l xaxkx ohj`nghd`nhl æ u bhl hk ;x, Cfw Fc; n Sxvvrxc fed/cj ugwkvw, sck zb pcdhj dugvha`k` fxn wghyh l xkvxnf x;x uygwK Pcsckgc Pi sedkxk cgxkvck jwjwnvw mc ukghn` rh`\-rh`\ 'cbvxnf fi ji k âFcvnß cpgxkx mc Xsgl vh rhfhr[`g ughkghn` zb jcnctxkc ]hy`n`nv`k. Zb pcdhj dugvha`k mc x;x uygwkg h ukghn`k dhk`kh 'evxn mc ukghn` |edycl fcnxk l hyhnh dugvha`k`k cgedpxkc jcpnx; evxnvxk... Ukghnvhk vnzv-fea kctcnvck fharh pe] ;cs sckxk szbi kc rwghr hsl hv`... Pcn aedx wkwjshl vh, Cfw Si tdhk`k szbi ki wkwjl hdh[hyhl . U sckx jcpnx; ejvxdx bhl hk sck vevxk... âC'cn r`no kctcn xnhvcx hvhl jh`shl , ukghngh l i phnxf evcncl .ß

Fwohnx |edycl fcnxk r`b` xgc Cfw Fc;nxk hnhs`kvh ughk szpfcjgcnx ncmhdcj evcnc; vedxn... âThjxl c Cfw Fc;nvck i b ]emxnvx mc fwkvhk suknh pcdhjvh ugvwyw hgj` hd l i vvcjxkvc ukwkgh vkh`al hv`. Vi kdvhk 'ejvxdx bhl hk cnx ukw 'e[c x;ck vctk ejvx mc Cfw Fc;nx fw xavck ocfcnvhn ejl cvx. Thjxl c pcdhjvh ughk fxn mhojh rcvcn Cgxkxk [hl hhj hnhs`kvh oi swsx fxn pzn l cjx mhn vx. Hl l h u, vi kdvhk 'evck bhl hk [hl hhj`k Cgxdc ncyfcjx hbhgl hyh fhaghv`. Cgx Cfw Fc;nc hgj` hd l i vvcjxkvc fed/cj ejl cvx mc Fckx-Phaxl vck vc pe] ;cs Cgx fed/cj ejl cvxdx mhojh rcvcn ukwkgh fed/cj ejl cl xavx. {hl hhj`k ukvhk i b ]emxnl csxkx 'znck Cgx Cfw Fc;ngc nhb`ghal hr l c[fwnxddcjxkvc rhgv`.ß

Cfw Fc;ngc fed/cjvck xl jxkh evckgcnvck fxnx vc Tcnmcj xfkx Zl cn, Cl cmx Scxvxk uyghkghn` Ohgxv, Cfhk mc Zl cn vx ;x, ukghn vh Fckx-Phaxl xk fed/cjxkvck suknh fedcj ejvxgc. Gh;xk Sc/v xfkx l fhvc fed/cj ejl cvx;vc ckshn vevxgc... âUkwkgh xaxxb ugl hs`k, rcjgc dejxngl cdxk[cdc rcvcn fed/cj

ejl cdc[c; . Zmghvghn`, cpgx-fedjx mc rupwl -crncfhs`kvhk ughk  
fxn rnw\ rcjgc dejxnagl cdxk[c, u vh rcjgc dejxnagl cb.ß Fwkh  
'znc vc ukh e/jxkh ejl cvxgc. Zl cn zb oxghtcjxkxk  
cmmcgcnxkvc ukh vevx...âPcn ; cs zb rukawswkvhk nhb` vedxgsc,  
denxkx vcdxal cgvxn.ß Sc/v Ahl h 'ejvx mc Zl cn fxn kctcnx  
ukwk hnv`k[h 'zkcncxf fegc 'zsjcnxa menvx... âCmmcg[c ukw  
fed/cjc ]hy'n, c'cn xl jxkh evcnsc \wsrwvh ujwn, Hgghpvhk  
ukwk cgedpxkc ; Zl c; xsjc.ß

U acos Ahl h 'ejvx mc Sc/vx Pcgcfxk Pcmhnkx fzg'csxkvc  
jh\`v. Cmmcg[c fed/cjc ]hy'nv, xl jxkh ejvx; vck suknh fxn uogh  
mwnwf rcjgc dejxnvx.

#### *ZL CNGC FED/CJ*

Cfw Fc; n [hk i sjc ughkvh Usl hk` ]hy'n`f fegc vevx...âDhb...  
FxsI xgghpxn-ncpl hkn-ncpxl . Fw, Cfx Ri phtckxk uygw Cfw  
Fc; nxk I i scgl hkghnh ughk mcsxddcjxvn. Hl I h fc/v...ß  
Fwkvhk suknh pwavhk 'ejvx mc Usl hk fegc dnbv`...âLck Zl cn  
xfkx Ocjjhf` zb [hcxaxkl rcnbn menvxl mc sxbc oedxn  
xsjcl c; vc pe] kcdx csxn'cl cvxl .ß Fwkvhk suknh pwah 'cgvx  
mc Usl hk dnbv`y`k` ukwk i]i k uowvw. Cfw Fc; n ukwk  
dnbv`rghn`k` jcsvxrgcvx. Fwkvhk suknh Zl cn pcl xk dnb` xgc  
fxngx; vc I cs[xvc 'cgxf [hl hhjh vevx...âNcswggghp`k ocgxtcsxkxk  
szbi ki eavxk mc xjhcj evxk. U vedxn ;x, I ck sxbc  
oedxnophg`rvh pe] kcdx csxn'cl cl xacl .ß

Fwkvwgh vh [hl hhj Zl cnc fed/cj ejvxgc.

#### *USL HKGH FED/CJ MC AWNH*

Zl cn bcncfjgckvx; vck suknh ukh vevxgc...â: ha zbi kc fxn  
[hcxaxk jc/dxk evcdvxk!ß U vevx...âC'cn Shgl vxnx ugshdv`, ukw  
zbi I c [hcxaxk se]cnvxl . C'cn Cfw I fedvc shy ugshdv`, ukw  
zb denxl c jc/dxk evcnvxl .ß Suknh vevx...âOxghtcjx hgj` kctcngx;  
awnhdh pcmhgc evxncl .ß

Suknh ukghn`k phl `s`k` Ri nedavck se]vx mc Cfw Jcgpc  
Bedv xfkx Scpg Ocbnc[xdc 'zsjcnxa menvx ;x, ckshnvhk zbi  
i]i k cggx kctcn se]sxk. Si pedf Nwl xdc vc 'zsjcnxa menvx ;x,  
i] 'i k I i vvcjxkvc [hl hhjh \xakhl hbg`r ejxk. C'cn i] 'i k  
rwnjhvn`rvhk suknh fxn kctcn fhncsxkvc nhb`ghashghn, Cfw  
Jcgpc I i ohgxtcj evckgcxk fudkwkw mwnh[hr. C'cn i] kctcn  
fxnx xgc I i mhtxr ugshghn, ukghn Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Umtwk

ugvwyw jcnctvc ugswkghn. C'cn Cfvi n-Ncpl hk fxn cgxkx u fxnx  
 cgxkc mwvsh, ukh xjhcj evxgl cgx, pcn ;cs vc l i ohgxtcj ejsc,  
 fudkw mwnwgl hg`v`n. Zl cn zgvi ;vck suknh Cfvi n-Ncpl hk  
 vevx... âLck zbi l i mc Sc/vx oxgxtcj khl xbcvgxdxkvck ;ckhnh  
 ]c;xncl ;x, sxbgcnvck fxnxkx se]cl .ß Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -vhk fharh phl `s`  
 fw jc;gxtx rcfwg ejvxgc, u pcbncj xsc rcfwg ejl cvx. Fwkw  
 rcfwg ejvxn l c; i ]i k Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h jcbdxr 'zsjcnvx;gcx bhl hk  
 Cfvi n-Ncpl hk` hkv x]vxnvx ;x, pcmhdx-kctsc xjhcj ejl csxk,  
 phrr` se]sxk, zb rupwl -crncfhs`k` fw xac vhoxg ejl csxk. U vh  
 hkv x]vx mc Cgx <sup>TM</sup> ukh vevx... âVi b'i k ac; xgvc se]ß Suknh  
 |edycl fcn l cs[xvxkvc fxn denc d'y'av`ghn, Cfvi n-Ncpl hk zb  
 cgxkx Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h jcnct wbhv`f vevx... âCgxkx l ckc men, sckxkgc  
 Hgghp`k : xjh`f, |edycl fcnxk si kkcsx mc aedoedkxk sxncsx  
 cshs`kvh fed/cj evxl .ß Cgx <sup>TM</sup> fwdwnvw... âLck sxbxk hnhk`bv  
 fh[hnv`y`l rcvcn Hgghp`k : xjh`f mc |edycl fcn si kkcsx  
 cshs`kvh nctjhn evc[cdcl .ß Suknh Cfvi n-Ncpl hk cgxkx  
 Usl hkh jcnct wbhjv`, Usl hk ukwk xncgx si nvi di acnj xgc  
 nhb`ghav`. U dekxvck cgxkx Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h wbhjv` mc cmmcg; x szbi ki  
 jc;nhnghv`, u pcbncj vc cmmcg; x [hmhf`k` menvx. Suknh cmmcg; x  
 szbi ki Usl hk i ]i k jc;nhnghv`, u vh cmmcg; x [hmhf`k` fxn  
 vphj jc;nhn ejvx. l ]i k[i vctc Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h i b jwjwf pcl xk szbi  
 fxn vphj jc;nhn ejvx; vc Cgx <sup>TM</sup> ukh vevx...

âHgghp`k : xjh`f mc |edycl fcn si kkcsx l zm[wv ugh-ugh cghmc fxn ;csxk  
 jwjvwyw dugh epjxdh[ duovwn. Sck ]hg`a`nshk ;x, fw cl nx (oxgxtcjx) l ckvck  
 wbhrg`h`v`nhshk!ß

Cfvi n-Ncpl hk Usl hkh i b ]emxnx`f zb szbi ki jc;nhnghv`  
 mc ukwk cmmcg; x [hmhf`k` eajvx;vc, cgxkx wbhv`f ukwkgh  
 fed/cj ejvx. Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> ukh fwdwnvw...

âSck ukh fxn pcvddc menvxk – l i vvcjgx fxn pcvddc. Fw l ckxl cgedpxl c  
 fxngcaxf cgfxn ugvwywkwb fxnxk[x vctc vedxg. Lck 'zbcg scfmx zbi l c dug jwjnhhl ,  
 sxbxk vevx;gcnxkxb fhncvc Hgghpvhk ;zl c; xsjcdcncl . Hgghp`k hkv ugswk ;x,  
 pz;wl cjx Usl hkh dhgk`b fwkh 'znc menvxk ;x, ukw (kc mhojsh) sckc rhjdjhns`k.  
 (Phgfw;x) Hgghp`k i ]i k pcn fxn 'ikvc oiswsx fxn ac/k mhnv`n.ß

Awnh i bmgcnx Usl hkgh fed/cj ejvxgc. Cgx <sup>TM</sup> hdhr i sjc  
 vwnl wavw mc rcbcfgc ]zgc ]`ol hr xsjcdcn;ck Cfvi n-Ncpl hk  
 ukh vevx... âFed/cj ej! C;s phgvh fudkwkw mwnnhhl !ß (Unhvh  
 ughkghn`k pe] fxnxkxk r`g`k[` duo xv.) Awnh i bmgcnx ukh ]hj`f  
 vevxgc.âFed/cj ej, c; s phgvh sckxkgc l i phnxfc evc[cdx; !ß

Cgx <sup>TM</sup> ukghnh jcnct rhd`v`f Usl hkh fed/cj ejvx.

XLHL CGX <sup>TM</sup> XGC FED/CJ

Usl hk rcjgc dejxngxv; vck, l i scgl hkghn`k xax zbgcnxkc pcmhgc evxgvx; vck mc pcn fxn fed/cjvck rwnjhnv`rvhk suknh XI hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -h jcnct 'cgvxgc. L i ph[xn mc ckshn fxn denc ju\ghav`ghn, JcGPC mc Bi fedn vc ukghn`k hnhs`kvh ugl hrgh Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -`k dhk`kh 'cgxf vevxgc...â"cg sckxkgc fed/cj evc; !B XI hl <sup>TM</sup> fwdwnvw... âLck sxbxk pz; wl cjxkxbc l zpjh[ vedxgcl , gh; xk sxbxkgcdcl æ pcn ; csx se]xnsxkxbsc, l ck rcfwg evxncl .B Vevxgc... âHgghph hkv ugsww ; x, sckvck fharh pe] ; csx se]l cnx; .B Fw 'ej-'cg fxn rcvcn vhmhl ejvx, ho`nvh vevxgc... â{hl hhj pz; wl cjvck fharh fxn aedgc dugh 'cgl cbgcn, xa ]uo wbhkl `av`n. Hgghph hkv ugsww, sckxkgc fed/cj ejl cdxk[c, pe] fxn xa 'znl cdc[cdx; !B XI hl <sup>TM</sup> fwdwnvw...âFegc xsc, l cs[xvvc fxn denc ju\gha`k ; x, l ckxl gc fed/cj 'xbgxk ac; xgvc mc l i scgl hkghn`k nhb`g`y`kvhk fharh fxn duggh ugl hs`k.B

Ukghn l cs[xvvc fxn denc d`y`av`ghn mc XI hl h jcnct 'cgvxgc. L xkfcnxk \xggcgcnx xgc dwohn` rhgo`f Cgx <sup>TM</sup> xgc fed/cj evck xg; acos JcGPC vx. Fwkvhk suknh cmmcg[c l i ph[xn mc ckshn, vph suknh rhghk [hl hhj Cgx <sup>TM</sup> xgc fed/cj ejvxgc.<sup>1</sup>

*OI GCTH LC: JCFXKXK OXGHTCJ FHNCXKVC KCBCNXDDCGCNX*

1- Cfw Fc; nix ocgxcgdx fhncsxkvc kcbcnx

Cfw Fc; n Scrxtcvc vel xavx... âFw xa (oxghtcj) Ri nedavck ughk fw ahocvck fharhs` i ]i k pe] fxn mc[p xgc ncsl xddcjc jhk`kl hb, ukghn csxg-kcscfvc cncfxk hnhs`kvh l cn; cbxddcj jca; xg evxngcn.B Suknh vevx... âLck Zl cnx mc Cfw l fedvckx sxbxk i ]i k fcdckxncl , phks` xgc xsjcdxnsxkxbsc, fed/cj evxk.B<sup>2</sup>

Vx`cn fxn ncmhdcjc 'znc xsc fegc vevx... âUkghn ukwk (|edycl fcnxk) rupwl -crncfhs` mc mcgxcnx, ukvhk suknh [hl hhj hnhs`kvh fw xac ghdxrgx acosgcnvxn. Bhg`l ghnvhk fharh pe] ; cs ukghngh l i fhnxbc h\hnl hb.B<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> âKcp[i g-fcgghycßkxk acnpx (Xfkx Cfxg Pcvxv), 1-[x ]h\, 1-[x [xgv, scp.240-241; L cpcl l cv Cfi g-tcbg Xfnhpxl xk jcprxr, 4-[i [xgv, scp.8-9.

<sup>2</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxß, pi vi v ; xjh`f, nc[l wg-pwfggh fh`f, 4-[i [xgv, scp.120.

<sup>3</sup> âJhnnox Jcfcnxß, Hmnu`h ]h\, 1-[x [xgv, scp.1840.

## 2- Ocgtc ZI cnxk kcbcnx

ZI cn Scrxtcvc vevx...âHghph hkv ugswk, cncfgcn pe] mhoj rcfwg ejl cbgcn ; x, sxbx ph; xl xddcjc ]hjv`ns`kghn, |edycl fcn xsc fharhs`kvhk ugswk. HI l h cncfgcn pz; wl cjxk, ki fi mmcjxk vc hnhghn`kvh ugvywv fxn acosc pcmhgc evxgl csxkvck xl jxkh ejl cbgcn. Fxbxl fw fhncvc xl jxkh evck acosgcnc rhna`hdv`k vcgxc mc pz[[cjxl xb mhnv`n. : xl L i pcl l cvxk ri vncj mc pz; wl cjx fhncsxkvc fxbxl gc l i fhxhc h`hnh fxgc, phgfw; x, fxb ukwk mcgxcnx mc rupwl -crncfhs`d`r?! Fw xax dhgk`b fhjxgc dug `zsjcnckgc, `i khp; hn bunh;`ghn mc dhowv pcgh; cjvc fhjhkgghn evc fxgcngcn.β<sup>1</sup>

U, zI ni ki k suk hdghn`kvh scphfcgcnvck fxnxkxk âc`cn cl xncg-l z/l xkxk (ZI cn) zgsc, l ck txghk; csgc fed/cj evc[cdcl β szbi ki eavcn; ck vel xavxn... âPcn ; cs l i scgl hkghn`k l camcncjx ugl hvhk fxn ; csgc fed/cj evcnsc, pcl fed/cj evck, pcl vc fed/cj ugwkxk pcn x; xsx zbi ki zgi l c menl xa ugwn.β<sup>2</sup>

HI l h zbi bcncfcjgckvx; vck suknh hgj`kctcngx; awnh jca; xc evxf vevx... âC`cn u x; x kctcnvck fxnx – Cfw Pi bedtckxk l zmghs` Shgxl , dhowv Cfw l fedvc {cnnhp shy ugshdv`ghn, e/jxl hv evcnc; oxghtcj xaxkx ukh jh`a`nhnv`l .β<sup>3</sup>

Pcl ]xkxk vevx... âC`cn Shgxl shy ugshdv`, ukw (oxghtcjx) awnhdh pcmhgc ejl cbvxl .β<sup>4</sup>

## 3-OI GCTH LC: JCFXKXK HNV-{-GGHN-K-K KCBCNGCNX

Ukghn vedxngcn...âXl hl cj cmmcg; x xl hl `k jc/dxk ejl csx mc mcsxddcjx xgc pcdhjh ; e]xn. } i k; x Cfw Fc; n ukw ZI cn i ] i k mcsxddcj ejvxæ fw xa vc scphfcgcnxk nhb`g`y`kh fhyg`vedxgvxn. Pcl ]xkxk pcgg mc crv cpgxkxk (l i jcocssxsgcnxk mc l capwn hvhl ghn`k) se]l csx xgc vc pcdhjh ; e]xn.β HI l h fw xax ke]c kctcnxk evc fxgl csx xgc cghrcvhn xojxghth vi al i agcn. Fc/bxgcnx vel xagcn ; x, âfea kctcnxk se]l csx xgc fha menxn. } i k; x Cfw Fc; ngc fed/cj evckgcnc fea kctcn vxv. ZI cn vc ukw hgj`kctcngx; awnhdh pcmhgc ejvx ; x, fea kctcn hgj`k[ `s` xgc fed/cj ejsxkgcn.β

<sup>1</sup> Dekc unhvh, scp.1841.

<sup>2</sup> âScpxpx Fwohnxβ, 4-[i ]xgv, scp.120.

<sup>3</sup> âJcfcrrhjβ (xfkx Sc/v), Fednwj ]h`, 3-[i ]xgv, scp.343.

<sup>4</sup> âXsjxd/hfβ mc âWsjwg-yhfcb ; xjhfgghn`kvh Shgxl xk jcn[i l edx-phg`.

Fw l c; jcf hnv`[`gghn`k`k c; scnxddcjx vedxn... âOxghtcj fxn kctcngc vc fha menxn. } i k; x Hffhs Cgxdc vel xavx... âCgxkx l ckc men, scxkxgc fed/cj evxl .ß } i k; x fw pz; l vi n, mhp xv ph; xl xk pz; l i vc ri mmcvcvxn mc ; e]cngxvxnß

Fc/bxgcnx vel xagcn... âPcn ; cs bunh; `g`rgh, r`g`k[ 'i [i xgc ph; xl xddcj c ]hj`f ocgxtc ugsh mc l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx hvghkv`n`gsh, Hgghph mc rxdhl cj 'i ki kc xl hkg` ughk pe] fxn acos i ]i k ncmh vedxgvxn ; x, ukw xl hl fxgl cvxdx phgvh dhjs`kæ xsjcn u ocgxtc dhoe` cl cg shpxfx ugswk, xsjcn \xs cl cg shpxfx, pcn fxn phgvh u, l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnxvxn.ß<sup>1</sup>

Ukghn zb l i vvchghn`k` xsfhj ejl c; i ]i k |edycl fcnc- C; ncl xk fegc fwdwnvwykw ncmhdcj ejl xagcn... âCl xnxk rhna`s`kvh eavvxf xjhj evxnsck, pcjjh c`cn scxkx ; i ncdxkc mwvsh, l hg`k` rcsf ejsc vc.ß

Ukghn vedxngcn... âOcgxtc txsr, 'i khp, bi gl ejl csxkc mc xghpx rhkwkghn` ri mmcvck shgl hs`kh 'znc xavck 'zjini gl i n. Ukwk cgedpxkc rxdhl ejl c; vc [hxb vedxgvxn, c; sxkc l uxbc evxf, ukw Hgghp`k cbhf`kvhk runowjl hr ghb`l v`n. } i k; x pcvxsngcn fwkw fcdhk evxn.ß

Fw, oi gcth l c; jcfx hnv`[`gghn`k`k oxghtcj l cscgcsx fhncsxkvc ughk kcbcnxddcgcnxkxk oi ghscsx vxv. Fw l zmbwkw cjhntg` fcdhk ejl c; i ]i k dhoe` ughnv` ; x, cmmcg[c fw fcpsvc ughk xsjxghpghn` hnhav`nhr, suknh fw nc/dgcnxk fhncsxkvc jckrxvx l i ghpxbcgcnxl xbx redv evc; .

#### *XSJXGHPGHN-K JC/NXTX*

##### 1- Awnh

Cncf vxgxkvc âawnhß, âl i ahmxncß, âjcahmwnß ; cgl cgcnx fxn kctcnxk fharhghn`kvhk kbcn mc nc/d xsjcl csx l c/khs`khv`n. Pcl xk l c/kh Rwn/hkx : cnxl vc fegc redv ugwkwn... âMc cl nwpwl awnh fcdkcpwl .ß Dc/kx âUkghn zb xagcnxkvc l camcncj evxf, fxn-fxnxkxk kbcngcnxkx xsjcdxngcn.ß Vel cgx, fw ; cgl c acn/x xsjxghp vedxgvxn.

##### 2- Fed/cj

Fed/cj cncf gi ycjxkvc hgmen l i hl xgcsxkx rcfwg evxf ri mmcdc l xkvxn l c; i ]i k cgx fxn-fxnxkc mwvl hr vel c; vxv.

---

<sup>1</sup> Fwkw âoi gcth l c; jcfxkvc xl hl cjß fzgl csxkvc redv ejvx; .

Xsgl vhk cmmcg; x cncfgcn l i ojcgt duggnhg cpv-\edl hk fhyghd`nv`ghn. L cscgck, fc/bx phgghnvh cggcnxkx cjxngc, fc/bck vc rhkgh vugl wa fxn rhfh fhshnhr cpv-\edl hk fhyghd`nv`ghn. Xsgl vh xsc fed/cj – fed/cj evck acosgcnxk fed/cj ejvx; gcnx acosgc cpv-\edl hk cghl cjxvxn. Fegc ; x, fed/cj evck acos cpv-\edl hk`k denxkc dejxnxgl csxkvc mc xjhcj evxgl csxkvc mhn- 'i [i ki scnt ejl cgxvxn. L i jchg Hgghp âTcj pß swncsxkxk 10-[w hdcxkvc |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -c fegc fwdwnwn...

âSckxkgc fed/cj evck acosgc (csgkvc) Hgghpgh fed/cj ejl xagcn. Hgghp`k cgx ukghn`k cggcnxkxk isjikvcvn.ß

U pcbncjxk l i scgl hkghnvhk hgv`y` xg; fed/cj Xsgl `k rcfwg evxgl csx fhncsxkvc ughk fed/cj vxv mc âCrcfedx wghß fed/cjx hvghk`nv`. X; xk[x fed/cj vc âFed/cjx : wfnhß hv` xgc l capwnvwn mc Crcfcvc, Xsgl [cl xddcjx jca; xg ejl c; mc [xphv h`hnl hr fhncsxkvc fhyghkl `av`.

Fnxk[x fed/cj âFed/cjx kxshß hvghkv`n`g`nv`, ]i k; x l i phnxfc ugl hvhk, shvc[c ughnhr Xsgl `k rcfwg evxgl csx i ]i k vxv.

l ]i k[i fed/cj vc, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk Pi vedfxddcvc fxn hyh[`k hgj`kvh l i scgl hkghnvhk hgv`y` fed/cj vxv. Ukghn âl l ncß cl cggcnxkx denxkc dejxnl c; i ]i k `cgl xavxgc, Ri neda rcfwgcsx vc ukghn`k Fedjwgghpxg-pcnhl h vhoxg ugl hs`kh l hke ugvwrghn` bhl hk ukghngh l i phnxfcdc phb`nghal `av`. Dnhkhk deks mcbxddcj |edycl fcnxk l i scgl hkghn` ]hy`nv`y` xg; l crscvx xgc l i ohgxt ugvwywkvhk `zbgckxgl cb phvxscgc rhna`s`kvh jcvfxn `znl cgx mc ukghnvhk deksvck fed/cj hgl hg` vxv. Fwkh `znc vc ukghnvhk fed/cj hgv, fw fed/cj vc zbi ki k l i sfcj kcjx[cgcnxkx menvx... l c; ; cgxgcnxk rcgfxkc rcnxfc fxn runow pxssx shgv. Fw, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk fed/cj fhncsxkvc; x i sgwfw mc hvcjx vxv. Pcvsvc redv ugwkwn ; x, u pcbncj [hl hhjvhk fed/cj hghkvh fwdwnwnvw ; x, fh[hnv`rghn` rcvcn xjhcj ejsxkgnæ hl l h pcvvx-fi gwyh ]hjl hdhkghngh fed/cj ejl xnvx.

|edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -xk fed/cj fhncsxkvc; x i sgwfwkvhk hdv`k ugwn ; x, fed/cjxk vznv cshs ni ; ki mhnv`n...

1- Fed/cj evck acosæ

2- Fed/cj ugwkhhk acosæ

3-Fed/cj l cscgcgcnxkvc ; xthdcj rcvcn h`hpg`yh l hgx;



ugl hræ

4-Xjhcyj ejl c; fhncvc cpv-\edl hk fhyghl hr.

Fw l c/khdh ughk fed/cj acn/x fxn xsjxghpv`n ;x, xsghl x [cpcjvck ukwk acnjgcnxkxk 'en]c; gcal csx l i scgl hkghnvhk ]uowkh hdv`k vedxgvxn. L cscgck...

h) Fed/cj evck acos fed/cj ejl c scghpxddcjxkc l hgx; ugl hg`v`n. Fwkh 'znc vc pcvvx-fi gwyh ]hjl hdhk mc dh vcgx ughk acosxk fed/cj ejl csx vi b'i k vedxgvxn. } i k; x fw x; x acos acn/x [cpcjvck l i ;cggct vedxgvxn. Pcl ]xkxk acos jhl xojxdhn i bi kvck fed/cj ejl cgxvxn. } i k; x fed/cj edkxgc hgmen ;xl xvxn... fxn ;csxk l hg`k` bungh hgl hr mc ukwk \wgwkx menl c; [hxb ugl hv`y` ;xl x, bunh; `g`rgh mc r`g`k[ 'i [i kc evxgck fed/cj vc acn/x [cpcjvck 'en]c; gcal xn.

f) Fed/cj ugwkxhk acos l capwn 'i khp; hngghnvhk ugl hl hg`-v`n. } i k; x |edycl fcn j fwdwnl wavwn... âHghp rhna`s'kvh i sdhk; hng`r, xjhcsxbg; evck acos fed/cj ejl c; [hxb vedxgvxn.ß

m) Fedcj ugwkxhk xa Hgghp`k kcpd ejvxdx aedgcncvck, Ukwk mc |edycl fcnx-C; ncl xk cl n mc tcnl hkghn`k`k c; sxkc ughk xagcncvck ugl hs` scpxp vedxgvxn. } i k; x |edycl fcn fwdwn- l wavwn...âPcn mhoj s'bc 'i khp xa cl n evxgsc, kc eavxgc, kc vc xjhcy ugwkhn.ß

3-4-Ocgxtc mc l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx

âOxghtcjß cncf gi ycxkvc fharhs`k`k jcnctxkvck khxf mc [hxxaxk ugl hr vel c; vxna ocgxtc u ;csvxn ;x, fharhs`k`k denxkx jwjswk mc ukwk ugvyw l crhl vh ugswk. Pcl xk l c/kh âC/nhtß swncsxkxk 69-[w hdsxkvc 'cgl xavxn...âDhvh shg`k u bhl hk` ;x, s'bx Kwp rzml i kik [hxxaxkgcnx rcnln menvx.ß

|edycl fcn j fxn pcvxsvc fegc fwdwnwn...â|cnmcnvx' hnh, l ckxl [hxxaxkgcnxl c, ocgxtcgcnxl c ncpl evxf ('i khpghn`k`) fhy`agh!ß

Ocgxtcgcnxk ;xl ugl hs` fhncvc sunwawgvwrvh, fwdwnvw...âU ;csgcncvxn ;x, l ckvck suknh 'cgrf l ckxl pcvxsl x mc sikkcl x dhdh, ncmhdcj evcngcn.ß

Vel cgx, Rwn/hkvh mc pcvxsvc ocgxtc |edycl fcnxk jcnctxkvck ph;xl xddcjvc ughk acos vedxg, dhgk`b [hxxaxk l c/khs`khv`næ fegc ;x, Zl cnxk vzmni kc rcvcn vc fegc vxv mc ukw â|edycl fcnxk ocgxtcsxkxk ocgxtcsxß hvghkv`n`nv`ghn. Ukvhk suknh cl xncg-l z/l xkxk hvghkv`nv`ghn, fw xa Hffhsxgcncxk

vzmni kc rcvcn vhmhl ejvx, ukghn vh cl xncg-l z/l xkxk hvghkv`n`nv`ghn. Ukghn` fwkvhk cghmc, åocgxtcjwggpß vh (Hgghp`k ocgxtcsx) hvghkv`n`nv`ghn. Ji n; xdcvc; x Usl hkg` oxghtcjx vzmni kvc vc ck di ; sc; pz; wl cj l crhl` ocgxtc hvghkv`n`g`nv`. Fw [i n hvrudl h xkvxdc rcvcn l i scgl hkghn`k hnhs`kvh 'ekxa dhd`gl`av`n. Vel cgx, åocgxtcß mc åcl xncg-l z/l xkxkß szbgcnx l i scgl hkghn`k zbgcnxkxk vi bcgjvxdx fxn xsjxghpv`n mc acn/x fxn xsjxghp vedxgvxn.

5-XI hl

Gi ycjvc åxl hl ß rhfhrvh ughk fxn acosc vedxgvxn ; x, [hl hhj ukh xrjxvh ejl xa ugsww. åFcrncß swncsxkxk 124-[i hdsxkvc vc pcl xk l c/kh redv ugwk l wavwn. L i jchg Hgghp Xfnhpxl <sup>TM</sup> -h fegc fwdwnwn...åLck sckx xkshkghn i]i k xl hl rcnln menvxl ß

Gh; xk Hgghp fw l crhl i]i k l i cddck acnjgcn rcnln mencnc; fwdwnl wavwn... åLckxl cpv-\edl hk l (xl hl cj) bhg l ghn h ]hjl hbß

Vel cgx, xl hl cj xghpx fxn cpv-\edl hk mc rcnlnv`n ; x, bhg l ghn h mc bi gl ; hngnh ]hjl hbæ xsjcn zbi kc bi gl evck ugsww, xsjcnsc vc fharhghn`kh. Fw jc/nxtc cshsck åxl hl ß ; cgl csx acn/x fxn xsjxghp, xsghl x fxn hvv`n.

6 - Cl n mc wgw-gcl n

åCl nß ; cgl csx cncf vxgxkvc, l i scgl hkghn`k i nti kvc mc xsghl x pcvxsgcnvc å[hl hhjh pz; wl cj mc mxghdcjß l c/khs`kvh xagckl xavxn, gh; xk åwgg-gcl nß ; cgl csxkx dhgk`b xsghl x fxn xsjxghp peshf ejl c; ughn. } i k; x Rwn/hkvh (åKxshß swncsx, 59) [hl hhjh åph; xl ß mc åmhgxß l c/khs`kvh 'cgl xavxn... åHgghp, Ukwk |edycl fcnk mc zbi ki bvck ughk wgw-gcl ngcnc xjhj evxk.ß

Oi gcth l c; jcfx xgc Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfx hnhs`kvh |edycl fcnx-C; ncl vck sukn åwgg-gcl nßxk mc åmcgxddx-cl nßxk ; xl ugl hs` xgc cghrcvhn ; cs; xk xojxght mhnv`n. Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfx fegc vedxn... å|edycl fcnvck sukn xl hl mc mcgxddx-cl n Hgghp`k xsjcdx xgc ugl hg` mc Ukwk jcnctxkvck jc/dxk evxgl cgxvxn, |edycl fcn vc i l l cjxkx fw xavck h'hp evxn.ß

Oi gcth l c; jcfx xsc fegc vedxn... åxl hl mc mcgxddx-cl n fed/cj mc pz; wl cjc rcgcfc ]hgl hrgh jc/dxk ugwkwn, pz; wl cjc rcgcfc ]hg`f ph; xl xddcjc ]hjv`rvhk sukn – fw xa pcn duggh ugvnsh-ugswk – ukh xjhj ejl c; mh[xfvxn.ß Fwkh 'znc vc ukghn

Debxv ;xl x l cktwn fñn ocgxtcdc xjhøj evcnc; , |edycl fcnxk  
 zmghvghn`k` mc Cpgx-fedjxkx rcjgc dejxñxf shy rhghkghn`k` csxn  
 jwjvwghn, |edycl fcn acpcnxkx (L cvxkckx) zb unvwghn`kh l i fhp  
 ejvxgcñ, unhvh shy rhghk scphfc mc jhfexkx rcjgc dejxñvxgcñ,  
 : c/fckx l hk[hkhrgh hjcac jwjvwghn. Fij i k fw xagcnvck suknh,  
 u xkvxdc rcvcñ vc cl xncg-l z/l xkxk hvghkv`n`g`n!

7-Mcsx mc |edycl fcn ; -xk mcsxsx

âMcsxß ;cgl csx Hgghp`k : xjh`kvh mc |edycl fcnxk  
 si kkcxsxkvc u ;csc vedxgn ;x, mcsxddcj evck acosxk mthj`kvhk  
 suknh ukwk kbcñvc jwjvwyw xagcnx denxkc dejxñl c; i ]i k ukh  
 mcsxddcj evxgn. Xsjcn mcsxddcj evck acos ukh âSckc mcsxddcj  
 evxñcl ;x, l ckvck suknh txghk xagcnx 'zncsck.ß - vesxk, xsjcñsc  
 vc âSckxkgc cpv fhyghd`nhl ;x, l ckvck suknh txghk xagcnx  
 'zncsck.ß - vesxk. Pcl ]xkxk, u fñn kctcnx zbi kc mcsx se]l csxkx  
 fharhghn`kh ocfcñ menxf fegc vedc fxgcñ... âTxghk;cs l ckvck  
 suknh l ckxl mcsxl vxñ.ß Dhowv...âTxghk;cs l ckvck suknh txghk  
 xagcnx 'zñsi k.ß mc s. Fw ;xl x jc/fxngcn mcsxddcj vcghgcj evxñ.  
 |edycl fcnxk mcsxsx u ;csvxñ ;x, |edycl fcn ukh mcsxddcj  
 ejl xavxñ mc u vh |edycl fcngc cpv-`edl hk fhyghl `av`n ;x,  
 ukwk mthj`kvhk suknh acñxcjxk mc i l l cjxk xagcnxkx zb  
 zpvcsxkc hgh[hrv`n.

OI GCTH LC: JCFXKXK OXGHTCJ MC XL HLCJ FHNCSXKVC: X  
KCBCNXDDCGCNXKC JCKRXVX REDVGCN

1- Awnh

Oxghtcjx fcnrcnhn ejl c; i]i k awnhvhk vkh`ahk xg; acos  
x; xk[x ocgxtc ZI cn xfkx Ocjjhf vxv ; x, fw xa fhncsxkvc Hgghp`k  
: xjh` mc |edycl fcnxk si kkcxsxkvck pe] fxn aedc xsjxkhv  
ejl cl xa, dhgk`b zbi ki k acosx nc/dxkc hnohghkl `av`. Vel cgx,  
scphfcgcnxk sxnc mc nc/dgcnxkx Hgghp`k : xjh` mc |edycl fcn  
si kkcxsx xgc edkx scmxddecvc jwjhk, ukghn` xsghl x acnxcj l ckfcsx  
peshf evck acosgc oxghtcjxk jca; xg ugwkl hs`kvh ZI cnc  
l ckswf ughk fw rhkwkw vh sckcv 'zji nc fxgcngcn. Phgfw; x, fw  
si kkc pcl ZI cnxk zb si kkcxsx xgc, pcl vc ukvhk rhfhr xg;  
vctc oxghtcjxk jca; xg ugwkl hs` – Cfw Fc; nxk si kkcxsx xgc  
l i ohgxtvxn. (Egc fxn oxghtcj ; x, ZI cn zbi ki k suknh;`  
vcdngckvxnl csxkvc ukw âtcjicß – dc/kx 'zbgckxgl cvck mc  
vi ai k[c i bi kvck ugl hdhk fxn fed/cj hvghkv`nl `av`.)  
Pcl ]xkxk fxnxk[x mc x; xk[x ocgxtckxk, ZI cn xfkx Ocjjhf`k  
oxghtcjx i]i k jca; xg ejvx; gcnx rhdvhghngh vh bxvvxn. } i k; x  
fxnxk[x ocgxtc Cfw Fc; n, ZI cnx fxnfhah l i scgl hkghnh ph; xl  
jc/dxk ejvx, ukghn`k pe] fxnx fw x; x l crhl vkh pe] fxnxkvc  
l i scgl hkghngh l camncj ejl cvxgc. Fw xa ZI cnxk zb szbi xgc  
vc l i ohgxtvxn. U vel xavx...âC'cn Cfw l fedvc vxnx ugshdv`, ukw  
oxghtcj se]cnvxl , c'cn Shgx l vxnx ugshdv`, ukw se]cnvxl .ß  
Vel cgx, ukwk fw cl cg mc nctjhn` awnhdh xgjxbhl g` ugl hrgh  
bxvvxddcj jca; xg evxn. Oxghtcjxk – pcjjh ZI cnxk jca; xg ejvxdx  
awnh cshs`kvh – vi b'i k ugl hs`k` rcfwg ejsc; vc, fegc fxn swhg  
dnhhk`n ; x, hv` ]c; xgck awnh phks` tunl hvh mc ukvh xajxnh;  
evckgcnxk shd` kc rcvcn ugl hg`v`n? C; scnxddcj fwkh xkhk`nghn  
; x, l camncj evckgcnxk shd` dhgk`b hgj` kctcn ugl hg`, ukghnvkh  
fea kctcnx hgj`k[`s` xgc fed/cj ejl cgxvxngcn. Cmmcg; x swhgvkh  
cghmc, vx`cn fxn swhg vh dnhhk`n ; x, 'zncsck, fharhs`kh vedxg,  
l cpb Cfvi n-Ncpl hk xfkx Umt i]i k de; wk kcbcn mc rcnhn  
menl c phrr` phnhvhk 'cgl xavxn?! Cfvi n-Ncpl hk`k rcnhn` mc  
kcbcnx xgc l i ohgxtcj evckxk rcjgkxk phnhvhk x[hbc menxgxn?!  
Pcl ]xkxk fegc fxn swhg dnhhk`n ; x, fw hgj` kctcnvck phks` fxnx  
Cfvi n-Ncpl hk`k kcbcnx xgc l i ohgxtcj ejvx?! Sukwk[w swhg

fwvwn ;x, 'zncsck oi gcth l c;jcfx pcjjh fxn vctc vc ugsh,  
 Zl cnxk jca;xg ejvxdx fw awnhk` cl cgx ughnhr pcdhjh  
 ;e]xnxfl x?! Pcl xk oxghtcj i sgwfw csngcn fudw pcn phks` fxn  
 ocgxte i ]i k xncgx ]c;xgxfl x?!

Fwkghn Zl cnxk jca;xg ejvxdx awnhdh jwjwghk xnhvghn mc  
 swhgghnv`n. Hl l h oi gcth l c;jcfxkxk fw fhncvc âmc cl nwpwl  
 awnh fcdkcpwl ß hdcxkxk xsjxkhv ejl cgcxkxk 'cgvx;vc xsc, fw  
 hdcvck l z/l xkgcnxk hnhs`kvh, ukghn`k zb acosx xagcnx  
 fhncsxkvc l camcnj h\hnl hy`k i sji kgi di kvck fharh fxn aed  
 cgvc ugwkl wn. }i k;x c'cn Lijchg Hgghp fw fhncvc mh[xfgx dx  
 kcbcnvc jwjshdv`, ukvh â:cjfcgghpw cgcg-l z/l xkxß (dc/kx Hgghp  
 l z/l xkgcnc dhbl `av`n), dhowv âtcncbc cgedpxl ß (dc/kx ukghn mh[xf ejl xav`n)  
 - vedc fwdwnl hg`, pcn phks` fxn xaxk denxkc dejxnxgl csxkxk  
 l z/l xkgcnc mh[xf ugl hs`kh vcghgcj evck fw mc fharh  
 ;cgl cgcncvck xsjxthvc ejl cgx xv.

X;xk[xsx xsc, âmc ahmxnpwl twg-cl nß hdcxkxk xsjxkhv ejl cgcxvxn.  
 Fxb cmmcgvc vc redv ejvx; ;x, fw hdc |edycl fcx-C;nci xk  
 l i scgl hkghn` [xphvh ]hy`nhn;ck ukghn`k i sgwfghn`kvhk  
 xsjxthvc ejl csxkx fcdhk evxn, dc/kx Xsghl `k jwjvwyw dug bhg`l  
 \hvahpgghn`k jhnxo fudw jwjvwyw dug ;xl x vedxgvxn ;x, zb  
 kcbcnxddcgcnxkx fharhghn`kh bunggh rcfwg ejvxnsxk mc âfxbxl ahp  
 tcnl hk`l `b pcdhjh ;e]vxß vesxk. Hgghp-jhhgh âahmxnpwl ß  
 [i l gcsxkvck suknh fharh ac;xgvc fwdwnwn ;x, l i scgl hkghn`k  
 kcbcnxkc cl cg ejl c; |edycl fcx-C;nci i ]i k mh[xf vedxgvxn.  
 }i k;x fwdwnwn...âMc rcjx rcnhh 'cgvx;vc Hgghp jcmc; ;i g ejlß

Vel cgx, fxn xa fhncvc cshsg` jcvfxn 'zni gl csx l i scg-  
 l hkghn`k nc/d mc kcbcnx xgc vedxg, dhgk`b |edycl fcxk rcjx  
 rcnhh` xgcvx! Fw l cscgc vc u pcbncjxk dwohn`vh redv ugwkhh  
 l i ahmxncsxkxk l zmbwswkvhk ha;hn ugwn. U pcbncj egc xagcnvc  
 l i ahmxnc evxnvx ;x, kc xgc kcjx[cgckc[cdx ukwk i ]i k jhl hl xgc  
 hdv`k xv. Fwkh l xshg ughnhr u pcbncjxk Fcvn l i phnxfcsxkvc  
 l i scgl hkghngh l i ahmxnc ejl csxkx redv ejl c; ughn.

Fwkvhk cghmc, u pcbncjxk l i scgl hkghngh l i ahmxnc  
 h\hnl hs` acn/x pz;l gcxk cgvc evxgl csx i ]i k vedxg, shvc[c  
 ughnhr ukghn`k Xsghl pz;l gcxkxk x[nhs`kvh mc ri mmdc l xk-  
 l csxkxk ke[cgdxkvc kbcngcnxkx zdnckl c; xv. Fegc ;x, âCp-  
 bhfb swncsxkxk 36-[' hdcxkvc fwdwnwgn...âHgghp mc Ukwk Ncswgw

fxn xax mh[xf mc gnb`l fvgvdx bhl hk pe] fxn l z/l xk ;xax mc rhv`k, zbgcnxkvck  
xojxdhn phrr`kh l hgx; vedxvngcn. Pcn ;cs Hgghph mc Ukwk Ncswgwkh xjhcjsxbgx;  
ejsc, ha;hn hby`kg`rvh ughn.ß

Vel cgx, dhgk`b u phgghnvh l i ahmxncdc i sji kgi ; menxgx n ;x,  
ukghn`k fhncsxkvc Hgghp mc |edycl fcn jcnctxkvck pe] fxn cl n  
'cgl cl xa ugsww. Hgghp mc Ukwk Ncswgwkwk pz;l ejvxdx  
phgghnvh xsc l i ahmxnc ejl c; Hgghph mc |edycl fcnc  
xjhcjsxbgx; , h]`r-ha;hn hby`kg`rv`n!

## 2- Fed/cj

Dwohn`vh redv ugwkhhghnvhk hdv`k ugvw ;x, 'i khp xagcnxk  
denxkc dejxnagl csx i ]i k fed/cj ejl c; mc dh 'i khp;hn acosc  
fed/cj ejl c; , pcl ]xkxk bun 'i [i kc, r`g`k[ hgj`kvh fed/cj  
ejl cdxk pe] fxn thdvhs` duovwn mc fed/cj fw ;xl x phgghnvh  
'en]c; gcal xn. Gh; xk oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk hnv`[`gghn`kvhk fc/bxsx  
vedxngcn... âOxghtcj fea kctcnxk fed/cj ejl csx xgc pcdhjh ;e]xn.ß  
Fharhghn` xsc fegc vedxn... âFxn kctcnxk fed/cj ejl csx mc x;x  
kctcnxk ahpxvgdx xgc denxkc dejxn.ß Ukghn zb vcgxggcnxkx  
âscphfcgcnxk cl cgxß peshf evxngcn.

## 3- Scphfcgcnxk cl cg mc nctjhn`

Scphfcgcnxk cl cg mc nctjhn`kh xsjxkhv ejl c; u bhl hk  
scpxp shd`gh fxgn ;x, ukghn`k sxncsxkx Hgghp`k : xjhf` mc  
|edycl fcncxk si kkcscx xgc edkx [cn`cvc xsghl x acnxcj l ckfcdx  
peshf evc; . Oi swsxc fwkw kcbnc hghr ;x, (cmmcgvc vc redv  
ugwkvwyw ;xl x) scphfcgcnvck fc/bxgcnxkxk cl cgx vx`cngcnxkxk  
cl cgx xgc l i ohgxtvxn mc fwkh 'znc vc oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk  
nc/dgcnxkvc ]uogw xojxghtghn mhnv`n. Xkvx fwkwkgh fegc, 'zncsck  
scphfcgcnxk phks` fxn rnw`wkww cl cgxkx zbi l i bc ki l wkc  
'zjinc; , ukghnvhk phks` fxnxkxk szbi ki vxkgcdc; mc ukghn`k  
phks` fxnxkc jhfe ughr?!

*XLHL CGX™ --K : CGHL-KH XSJXKHV*

Ukghn`k scphfc mc scphfcckxk szb fxngdx fhncsxkvc xl hl  
Cgx™ -`k ;cghl`kh xsjxkhv ejl cgcncxk 'cgvx;vc xsc, ukwk  
[hmf` fwvwn ;x, u pcbncj, L i hmxdc xgc ukwk hnv`[`gghn`kh  
vcgxg 'cjxnl c; l crhl`kvh mc ukghn`k zbgcnxkxk rcfwg ejvxdx  
fxn aedx vcgxg 'cjxnl xavxn. Fwkvhk cghmc, scphfcgcnxk x[l hs` mc

tx; xn fxngxdx u bhl hk pz[[cj shd`g`n ; x, ukghn`k x]xkvc xl hl  
Cgx, |edycl fcnxk x; x kcmcsx Pcsck mc Pi sedk ⌘ vh ugswk.  
Fw vh xl hl `k ; cghl `k`k l ctpwl wvwn.

*THSXR VC UGSH, PH: XLC XJHCJ EJL CDXK MH{XFGXD*

Ukghn`k fc/bxgcnx vedxngcn... âxl hl hvghkv`n`ghk ph; xl  
l i njc; xf ugvyw 'i khp mc txsr-ti [wn xagcnxkc 'znc  
l crhl `kvhk 'zj i ni gl cb.ß

Fharhghn` vedxngcn... âL i scgl hkghnh mh[xfvxn ; x, thsrx  
xl hl `vxkgcdf cl ngcnxkc xjhcj ejsxkgcn, pcjjh ukwk ; i ncdxkc  
mwvsh vh, l hg-vzmgcjxkx rcsf ejsc vc fegc. Ukwk cgedpxkc  
rxdhl ejl c; pe] fxn mc[pgc [hxb vedxgvxn.ß

Fc/bxgcnx vc vedxngcn... âTxsr-ti [wn mc 'i khp cl cggcngc  
l capwn ughk Debxv xfkx L i hmxdc, ukwkgh fed/cj ugwkvwvywkh  
'znc l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx ugvw!ß Fw ; xl x \w] e/jxrhv mc  
xkhk[ghn`k kcjx[csx fw ugvw ; x, Debxv ukwk fed/cjxkxk  
vi b'i kgi di kc xkhkhkghnvkh fzdi ; fxn unvw jca; xg evcnc; ,  
ukghn`k cgx xgc |edycl fcn zmghvghn`k` : cnfcghvh acphvcjc  
dejxnvx, fc/bxgcnxkx csxn jwjvw mc : cnfcghvh Ahl h rcvcn  
bck[xnc ]c; xf h\hmv`.

Pcl ]xkxk, ukh fed/cjxk vi b'i kgi di kc xkhkhkghn`k  
mhsxjcsx xgc vx'cn fxn unvw jca; xg evcnc; |edycl fcn acpcnxkx –  
L cvxckx xayhg ejvx mc acpcn cphgxskxk l hg, [hk mc  
khl wswkw i ] 'i k l i vvcjxkvc zb cs'cngcnx i ] i k phghg peshf  
ejvx ; x, |edycl fcn scphfcgcnxkvck mc jhfexkgcnvck fc/bxgcnxkx  
zgvi nsi kgcn, fc/bxgcnxkvck fed/cj hgs`kghn ; x, Debxvxk redvsxb-  
acnjsxb kz; cngcnx mc rwghl ghn` ugswkghnæ ruawk ukghn`k hf`n-  
pedsxddcjgcnxkc mc khl wsghn`kh jc[hmi b ejvx. U pcl xk mhojh  
rcvcn Xsghl i l l cjxkc jhnxovc l xsqx 'zni kl cl xa [xkhdcjgcnx  
ncmh 'znvi . Suknh L c; ; cdc dugh vi avi , Fedjwgghpxg-pcnhl `  
l hk[hkhrgh hjcac jwjvw. Fw [xkhdcjgcn sukh ]hjv`rvhk suknh,  
dekc vc fw 'i kc rcvcn ukw cl xncg-l z/l xkxk peshf evxn,  
ukwk jc/nxtxkvc ; xjhfgghn dhb`f dhd`ngghn.

Xkxk gxgghp mc xkxk xgedpx nh[xwk!!

*CPGX-FEDJ LC: JCFXKVC XLHL CJ*

Oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk xl hl cj mc oxghtcj fhncsxkvc; x  
kcbcngcnxkx fxgvx; vck suknh Cpgx-fedj l c; jcfxkxk kcbcngcnxkx  
hnhav`n`n`r... Fw l c; jcfxk xl hl cj fhncsxkvc; x vcgxgcnx Hgghp-

jhhghk`k pcbncj Xfnhpxl <sup>TM</sup> -h fwdwnvwywvwn...

Hgghp jhhgh ukh fwdwnvw... âLck sckx xkshkghnh xl hl jc/dxk evxnci .ß  
Xfnhpxl ... âLckxl zmghvghn`l vkhvhl`?ß – (vedc sunwavwrvh) Hgghp fwdwnvw...  
âLckxl cpv-`edl hk`l bhg`l gnh ]hjl hb.ß

Dc/kx xl hl cj xghpx fxn cpv-`edl hkv`n ; x, bhg`l gnh pe]  
fxn dugh ]hj h fxgl cb... xsjcn zbi kc bi gl evck acos ugswk, xsjcn  
fharhghn`kh.

Pcl ]xkxk Cpgx-fedj fhncsxkvc khbxg ughk vx`cn fxn hcdcd  
xsjxkhv evxngcn...

âHgghp`k (rcjx) xnhvcsx fw ugl wavwn ; x, pcn kzm bhpinx mc fhjxkx  
]xn; xkgx; gcnx dhgk`b sxb Cpgx-fedjvck wbrghav`n`f sxbx`h; -`h; xbc rcnbn mensxk.ß

Ukghn vedxngcn ; x, Hgghp pcbncj L i pcl l cv j -x mc  
ukwk Cpgx-fedjxkx fi ji k`i khpghn rhna`s`kvx xsl cjgx mc`h; -  
`h; xbc rcnbn menl xavxn. Jhnxo fudw Cpgx-fedjxk cl cg, hvcj mc  
vhmnhk`aghn` fw l i vvchdh ck jwjhng` vcgxgvxn. Fegc ; x, jhnxo  
fudw ukghn`k xsl cj l crhl`kh l i ohgxt ughk fxn aed ukghnvkh  
`zni kl cl xavxn.

Ukghn`k xl hl cjc vhn `c jxnvx; gcnx vcgxggcnc `cgvx; vc xsc,  
c`cn |edycl fcnc-C; ncl xk zbi kvck suknh;` mcgxddx-cl nx  
jc/dxk ejl csxkx cshs`zji nsc; , hdv`k ugwn ; x, xl hl cj l cscgcsx  
pcl xac |edycl fcncx mc u pcbncjxk cjhnt`kvx ughkghn`k vxrrcj  
l cn; cbxkvc ugl wavwn. } i k; x ukghnvkh fc/bxgcnx  
|edycl fcncvck xsjcdxnvxgc ; x, u pcbncjvck suknh xl hl cjxk  
; xl c ]hjv`y`k` fcdhk ejsxk. |edycl fcnc vc [hmhf`kvx  
fwdwnwnvw...

âXl hl cj l cscgcsx Hgghp`k cgvkcvxn, ukw pcn denvc xsjcsc, rcnbn  
menc[c; vxn.ß

Xsghl [cl xddcjx jca; xg ugwkxk bhl hk |edycl fcnc ukghngh  
fw cshsvh fed/cj ejvx ; x, âUkwk Cpgx-fedjxkx ph; xl xddcjx mc xl hl cjx  
fhncsxkvc ukghngh l i khrxmc mc l i fhnxbc ejl csxkgn.ß Xl hl Cgx <sup>TM</sup> -` vh  
Xsghl h vc/mcjxk xg; `i kgcnxkvck fegc, zbi kvck suknh;` ocgxtc  
mc mcbxn jc/dxk ejvx. Pcl ]xkxk u pcbncj pcn mhoj L cvxkcvck  
; ckhnh ]`o`nv`sh, pcjjh r`sh l i vvcjgx sctcngcnxkvc fegc, zbi  
i ]i k fxn kctcnx [hkxaxk jc/dxk evxnvx.

U pcbncj zb i l l cjxkx pe] mhoj fhas`b rudl hl `a, ukghngh,  
zbi kvck rhfhr;` \edycl fcngcnxk zb i l l cjgcnx xgc ejvxdx  
nctjhn cshs`kvx vhmnhkl`a, zbi kvck suknh;` mcsxgcnx jc/dxk  
ejl xa mc ukghn` zb i l l cjxkc jhk`jv`nl`av`.



Fcgx, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl vc zbi kvck suknh;` mcsx mc mcgxddx-cl nx l i ojcgt l c;hk mc bhl hkghnvh, jcmhjin pcvvxkvc ughk fcdhkghngh jc/dxk ejl xavxn. Fegc ;x, Shgl hk Thnsx u pcbncjvck âSxbxk mcsxkxb ;xl vxn?ß - vedc sunwavwrvh, fwdwnvw...âLckxl mcsxl - sxngcnxl x shoghdhk... Cgddxfkx Cfx Jhgfvx.ß

Fwkh 'znc vc xl hl Cgx™ wbwk csngcn fudw âmcsxß gcrclfx xgc jhk`k`nv`. Fw i kmhk ahxngcnxk ae/ngcnxkvc, ocjxfgcxk szbgcnxkvc mc pcl ]xkxk, scphfc, jhfexk, ocgxtc mc cl xngcnxk h`hnv`y` egl x l i fhpxscgcnvc vc jc;nhn 'zbc vcdxn.

Xl hl Cgx™ -k âOhjcl i g-ckfxdhk`k mcsxß gcrclfx xgc azpcnj jh`l hs` ocgxtcgcxk sxdhscjx mc ukghn`k l c;jcfxkxk jwjvwyw xsjxrhl cjgc l i ohgxt ugvwvkvk kcsxgfckcsxg ]hg`a`f |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -xk Cgx™ -k mxghdcj mc mcsxgdxkc ha;hn vcghgcj evck pcvxs ;xjhfgnh`k` 'xbgcvxn, dhkv`n`n mc l cpm evxnvxgc. (Fwkwk ki l wkcgcnxkx cmmcgvc redv ejl xavx;.) U [i l gcvck, pcvxsxk xojxshnh shg`kl hs`, fharh szbgcngc vcdxavxnagl csx, l i cl l hg`ac; xgvc shoghl hs` mc s.. Fwkghnvk fxnx vc |edycl fcn si kkcscxkvc redv ugwkhh âmcsyddx mc ocgxtcjc tx;wl ß xfhncsxvx ;x, ukghn`k hgxl gcnx fw [i l gckx xojxshnh shghnhr ukwk denxkc âmc ;cbh mc ;cbhß szbgcnxkx rudl wagh.

Pcl ]xkxk, |edycl fcnx-C; ncl i -xk si kkcscxk vcghgcj evck ha;hn l c/khg` pcvxsgcnx fharh l c/khdh dubl wa, u pcbncjxk si kkcscxkxk dhh`gl hs`k`k rhna`s`k` hgl `a mc fw xagc l i ohgxtcjc evckgcx rcjgc dejxnl xagcn ;x, ukghn`k ki l wkcgcnxkvc fxnx vc oi gcth l c;jcfxkvc âOcshxsw xl hl Cgxß ;xjhfk`k l i cggtx Kcshvx ;x, l cpb fwkh 'znc ukw rcjgc dejxnl xagcn!

Ukghn`k pcrxrcjgcxk dhd`gl hs`kh l hke]xgx; jzncjl cgcx Cpgx-fedjvck ughk uk x; x xl hl `k phrr`kvh;` pcvxsgcnx znj-fhsv`n ejl c;gc oi ghscgckl xnvx, c; sxkc, ukghn ph;xl vhxncgcngc l i ohgxt ughk pcn fxn aedxk rhna`s`k` hg`nv`ghn. Fegc ;x, Debvxk 'zkvcnvdx hvhl l c;;cgxgcxk d`y`av`y` denvc - Lcs[xvi gpcnhl vh Cfvi ggph xfkx Bi fednx mcbxtcvck 'zji ncnc; vevx...âEd Bi fednxk uygw! Lxkfcnc 'evxf, l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx fhncsxkvc jhl ]xn; xkgx;gc vkh`a`n mc zbi ki âLc;;ckxk 'zdcn]xkxßkc uoahv`nshk?ß Suknh vevx... âLckxl uowl w-;hl hk`l` 'cjxnxk!ß Nhm vedxn... Ukwk uowkw mc ;hl hk`k` 'cjxnvxgc. Fxn uow

;hl hk`kh rudwf, Lc;;ckxk 'zdcn]xkxkc jcnct hjv` mc vevx...  
 âEd 'zdcn]xk! Lz/l xkgcnxk cl xnx acnhf x]xnl x? Ve ;x, fcgx!  
 Hgghph hkv ugsww, c'cn âfcgxß vesck, l ckxl fw uowl sckx  
 mwnl hrvh ocjhdh 'ejl cb! Hd 'zdcn]xk! Lz/l xkgcnxk cl xnx  
 l edl wk udkhv`nl` mc u, thsrxvxn l x? Ve ;x, fcgx. Hgghph hkv  
 ugsww, c'cn âfcgxß vesck, l ckxl fw uowl sckx mwnl hrvh  
 scpmc dug menl cb.<sup>1</sup>

HI l h ukghn |edycl fcnxk zb mcsxsx fhncsxkvc  
 fwdwnvwyw pcrxrcjgcx oi swsx jcnbvc jcpnxt ejl cdc fhaghv`ghn.  
 Xa u denc ]hjv` ;x, 90 xg l i vvcjxkvc fi ji k Xsghl zg; cgcxkvc  
 – Sxsjhkvhk fharh – [i l c khl hb`k`k oi jfcgcxkvc Pcbncj Cgx  
 ™ -h gc/kcj ejl c; hvcj phg`kh viavi. Ukghn`k fw fhncvc  
 [xvwx jcvfxn 'znl cgcxkvc, tcbxgcjxkx dhdf ncmhdcj evckgcx  
 rcjgc dejxnl cgcxkvc fhol hdhnhr ocgxtcgcxk l ckhtedxkc ocg  
 dejxnc aedgc pcvxs, jctsx, sxnc ;xjhfgn`kvh mc s. dhdfv`.  
 Oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk hnv`[`gghn` fwkwkgh vh l i fhxnc h`hnl hr  
 i ]i k dekx mc cshsg` ]hnc dugw tx; xngcavxgc. Ukghn l i cggxtgcxk  
 zb cgdhbl hs` xgc dhd`ghk l xkgcnc kctxs ;xjhf ki socsxkxk  
 l zm[wv ugvyw ;xjhfohkghn` dhkv`nhnr Xsghl i l l cjxk fw  
 fzdi ; ke/l cjvck l cpnw l ejvxgc. Ukghn`k 'zsjcnvx; gcx fw  
 rcvc [xvwxddc mc l hke]xgx; gcnc fhol hdhnhr, Cpgx-fedj  
 xl hl ghn`k`k fhncsxkvc kcr g ugwkxk si kckckxk hb fxn l xrvhn`  
 oi gcth l c; jcfxkxk dugw xgc fxbc ]hl `av`n. Lxshg i ]i k,  
 hahy`vh;` pcvxsgcx redv ejl c; ughn...

âCgxkx l ckc ughk l i khsxfcj Phnwkwk Lwshd ughk l i khsxfcj ; xl vxv.  
 Fw tcnrgc ;x, l ckvc suknh pe] fxn vedycl fcn ugl hdh[hrv`n.ß

Hgghp-jhgh Rcvn-Owl vh |edycl fcnc zbi kvck suknh;`  
 mcgxddx-cl nx jc/dxk ejl c; fhncsxkvc tcnl hk menckvc mc âdh  
 cddwpcn-Ncswg fcggy l h wkbxgc xgcd;cß hdcx khbxg ughkvh, u pcbncj  
 vcmcgcnxk `hghkghn`kvhk vi bcgvxgl xa l xkfcnc ]`ov` mc Cgx  
 ™ -`k cgxkx dwohn` rhgv`nhnr fwdwnvw...âHgghp l ckxl l zmghl v`n,  
 l ck vc sxbxk l zmghk`bhl. Lck pcn ;csxk l zmghs`dhl sh, Cgx vc ukwk  
 l zmghs`v`n. |cnmcvx`hnh! Ukw semckgcx sem, ukwk vial ckgcxkc vial ck uglß

Suknh zbi ki k âScphfß cl l hl csxkx Cgx ™ -`k fha`kh  
 rudvw. Fw bhl hk hahy`vh;` hdc khbxg ugvw...

<sup>1</sup> Fw pcvxsxk phl `s` pcl xk ;xjhf`k 3-[i [xgvxkvc âLc;;c mc Lcvxkc  
 cphgxskxk rxdhl `ß hv` hgj`kvh mc l ckfcgcx xgc fxngx; vc redv ugwk[hrv`n.

âFw 'ik sxbxk vxkxkxbx ;hl xg ejvxl , ke/l cjxl x sxbx jhl hl ghv`l mc Xsghl`  
sxbxk i]ik fñn vxk ughnhr fcdckvxl .B  
Cgx™ -`k fhncsxkvc vx'cn fñn hdc...

âPcrrxcjck sxbxk l zmgh mc ncpfcnxkxb Hgghp, Ukwk Ncswwg mc xl hk 'cjxnxf  
khl hb r`ghk mc ni ;w phgkvh bc;hj menckgcñvñ.B

Pcbncj |edycl fcn i Pcscckgc Pi sedk £  
fhncsxkvc vc fwdwnvw...âFwkghn l ckvckvñ.B Suknh fwdwnvw...

âPscck mc Pi sedk csfhjvhk ughk x;x sxfjvñ.B

U pcbncj ádh cddwpcggcbxkc hl ckw cjxwggph...B (ed xl hk 'cjxnckgcñ, Hgghp,  
|edycl fcnc mc wgw-gcl nc xjhcj evk) hdcxkxk jctsnxkvc fwdwnvw...âFw  
hdcvc;x wgw-gcl n Cgx mc ukwk uk fñn zmghv`vñ.B

Ukghn`k fhncsxkvc fegc fwdwnwn...

âLckxl Cpgx-fedjxl xk l cscgx Kwpwk 'cl xsxkxk l cscgx ;xl xvñ... pcñ ;cs  
ukh l xksc, kx[hj jh`hn, pcñ ;cs ukvhk hdn`gsh, rcñr ughñ.B

Fharh fñn pcvsvc ukghn` Rwn/hkgh fcnhfcñ peshf evcnc;  
fwdwnwn...

âLck sxbxk hnhk`bvñ x;x rxdl cjg mc hy`n cl hkj rudwf 'evñcl æ Hgghp`k  
: xjh` mc Cpgx-fedjxl ughk xjncjxl . Lckvck suknh fw x;xsxkc shn`gk[hdh rcvñ  
pe] mhoj dugwkwbw hbl hbs`k`b. Gcjt mc Ocññ Hgghp l ck c ocññ menl xavñ ;x,  
ukghñ Pumwbw ;ckhn`kvñ l ck rumwahkh rcvñ fñn-fñnxkvc hdn`gl hbghñ.B

|edycl fcñx fw szbgcnxkvc hdv`k ugwn ;x, xl hl ghnvhk  
fñx pz;l ck wbwkzl i ngi ugl hg` mc rxdhl cjc rcvñ Rwn/hkgh  
rhgl hg`v`n.

Xl hl ghn`k shd`k` fcdhk evcñ;ck fwdwnl wavwn... âFw vxk  
rxdhl cjc rcvñ, dhowv uk x;x kctñ sxbx ncpfcng; evck rcvñ pcl xac denxkvc  
rhgh[hrv`n.B

Vx'cn fñn ncmhdcjvc fwdwnwn...âUk x;x kctñxk xaxkxk sukwkh rcvñ  
xkshkghn`k xax pcl xac rhdvhs`kvñ ugh[hrv`n.B

Fharh fñn ncmhdcjvc xsc, ukvhk suknh fwdwnvw... âFwkvhk  
suknh vi kdhvñ pcñ[-l cn[gx; ugh[hrv`n.B

Fharh fñn ncmhdcjvc... âUkghñ mchj ejvx;gcñx bhl hk den zb cpgkx  
l cpm evcñ.B

Ukghn`k shd` fhncsxkvc fwdwnwn... âUkghn`k shd` Fckx-Xsnhxgk  
kcnxfgcñxk shd` rcvñ – uk x;x kctñvñ.B

Fw ncmhdcjgcñvc;x shd dhgk`b Cpgx-fedj xl hl ghn`kvñk  
ughk uk x;x xl hl gh vi b 'cgñ ;x, ho`n`k[`s`k`k zl ni juo

wbhkh[hr mc ukwk mcthj`kvhk suknh vi kdh thkx ugh[hrv`n.  
 Hl l h Cpgx-fedj xl hl ghn`k` rcfwg ejl cdckgc n – oi gcth  
 l c;jcfxkxk hgx l gcnx fw scpxp ncmhdcjgc n jctsn evcn;ck  
 rcnxfc pedncjc mc scn'cnvhkg`yh vi ]hn ugl wa, ukw xsjcvx;gc n  
 denc dubl wagh n, hl l h pe] fxn kcjx[c cgvc evc fxgl cl xagcn.

|edycl fcn i -xk ha;hn fwdwnwyw cshs`kvh fw uk  
 x;x xl hl `k hvghn` hahy`vh;` hnv`[`gg`rghv`n...

1-|edycl fcnxk mcsxsx mc l z/l xkgcnxk cl xnx Cgxdxfkx Cfx  
 Jhgxf <sup>TM</sup>.

2-|edycl fcnxk fzd i ; kcmcsx Pcsck xfkx Cgx <sup>TM</sup>.

3-|edycl fcnxk ;x]x; kcmcsx mc : cnfcgh acpxvx Pi sedk  
 xfkx Cgx <sup>TM</sup>.

4-Cgxddxfkxg-Pi sedk – Sc[[hv <sup>TM</sup>.

5-L i pcl l cv xfkx Cgx – Fhrxn <sup>TM</sup>.

6-{ c/tn xfkx L i pcl l cv – Shvxn <sup>TM</sup>.

7-L wscfkx { c/tn – : hbxl <sup>TM</sup>.

8-Cgxddxfkx L wscn-Nxbh <sup>TM</sup>.

9-L i pcl l cv xfkx Cgx – { hmv <sup>TM</sup>.

10-Cgxddxfkx L i pcl l cv – Phvx <sup>TM</sup>.

11-Pcsck xfkx Cgx – Cs'cnx <sup>TM</sup>.

12-L i pcl l cv xfkx Pcsck – Pi [[cj L cpvx, L i kjcbcn  
<sup>TM</sup>.

: E}CK UK I } CSN CNBxKVC PH: XL VHxNCGCNxK JWJVWYw  
 L ZMRE

: e]ck fcpsgcnvc Cpgx-fedj xl hl ghn`k xl hl cjxkc vhn  
 vcgxcgc n oi gcth l c;jcfxkxk jcprxrhj l ckfcgc n xkxk ck  
 l z/jcfcn ncmhdcjgc n xkxk xsjxkhvck 'cjxnl xavx;. Cpgx-fedj  
 l c;jcfxkxk jcprxrhj l ckfcgc n xkvc vc uk x;x xl hl `k  
 xl hl cjxkc vhn |edycl fcnx-C;ncl vck l i jcmhxn ac;xgvc  
 kcr g ugwk h pcvxsgcn ugvwr[h ]uovwn ;x, ukghn`k hvghn`,  
 gcrcfcgc n mc pcn fxnxkxk hdn`-hdn` ohsxddcjgc n redv  
 evxgl xavxn.

Cpgx-fedj l c;jcfxkxk hnv`[`gghn` vedxngcn...Fxb fw l cscgc kx  
 vc wkwl hl hg`d`r... Cl cmx, Hffhsx mc Usl hkx ocgxtgc n,  
 ukghn`k hnv`[`gghn`...fi ji k Xsgl zg;cgcnxkvc;x cl xngcn, mhgxgc n,  
 rhbxgc n, xl hl [i l cgc n mc xl hl [hl hhjghn`k ph;xl xddcjxkxk  
 vi b'i kgi di ;e]ck uk i ] csnvc |edycl fcnx-C;ncl vck xl hl

Cgxddxfkx Cfx Jhgfx<sup>TM</sup> mc shxn Cpgx-fedj xl hl ghn` fhncvc kcrq ugwkxhk pcvxsgcnxk 'xbgcvxgl csxkc fhyg` ugl wavwn!

}i k; x l xshg i]i k, Phnwk cn-Ncaxvxk oxghtcjx vzmni kvc rhbx Cfw Dwsxt ukwk jc/dxk ejl csx xgc l i scgl hkghnh âRhbxg-ri bhjß (fha rhbx) ugl wavwn. Ukwk fw l crhl `k`k rhkwkx ugl hs` Phnwkwx oxghtcjxkxk vi b'i kgi di kc fhyg` xv, Phnwkwx oxghtcjxkxk vi b'i kgi di vc uk x; x xl hl `k xl hl cjxkc vxhn ha; hn fxn ncmhdcjxk ugl hl hs` xgc acnjgckxnvx!

Pcl ]kxk, Phnwkwx oxghtcj scfcfx xgc ukwk mcbxngcnx ughk l c; ;cgxgcnxkæ ukwk jc/dxk ejl csx xgc unvwdh scn;cnvc ughk unvw fha]`ghn` mc cl xngcnxkæ ukwk jc/dxk ejvxdx mhgxgn, x[nh ph;xl gcnxkxk, u [i l gcvck Sck/hk`k, L c; ;ckxk, L cvxkckxk, : wtckxk, Ahl `k, Xs;ckvcnxddckxk, Nedxk, Ounhshk`k mc s. Xsghl zg;cgcnxkxk cl xngcnxkxkæ phfegc fi j i k Xsghl zg;cgcnxkvc – Htnx;hk`k w[rhn kzrjcgcnxkvck jwjl wa Ounhshkh rcvcn, L hmcnhwk-kcpn, Px[hb, Dcl ck, Ahl , Xnhr mc s. ;xl x dengcnvc fi j i k xl hl [hl hhjghn mc xl hl [i l cgcnxk vc mcbxtcsx edkx xgc.

Ukghn`k phl `s` vh l cpb fwkh 'znc pcl xk l crhl h ]hjl `a, Phnwk cn-Ncaxvxk oxghtcjxkx rhkwkx fxgl c;gc nxthpvh, txnhmhkg`rvh dhahl `aghn. Phgfw;x, Phnwkwx oxghtcjxkx rhkwkx ugl hs` Hgghp jcnctxkvck mc |edycl fcnc-C; ncl xk ha; hn fwdnwyw xgc jc/dxk ugwkxhk fxn xl hl `k, dc/kx L wsh xfkx {c/tcn<sup>TM</sup> -`k ugl hl hs` xgc acnjgckxnvx!

Fw i sgwf Debvx, L i hmxdc, Usl hk mc usl hkg` oxghtcjxkxk ho`n`k[` ocgxtcsxkc rcvcn ughk fi j i k ocgxtcgcnxk fhncsxkvc vc [cncdhk evxn. Fwkghn`k phl `s` vh dhgk`b ocgxtcgcnvck fharh pe] fxn xl hl `k fhncsxkvc ha; hn fwdwnwr ugl hl hs` jcscmmi ni cshs`kvh ugwnvw ;x, fwkwkgh pcl xk l crhl h ]hjl `a mc txnhmhkg`rvh dhahl `aghn!

Fwkwkgh fegc, Cpgx-fedj xl hl ghn`k`k xl hl cjxkc ha; hn ac;xgvc vcghgcj evck pcvxsgcn oi gcth l c;jcfkxkx xsghl x l ckfcgcnxkvc fw 'i kc rcvcn rhg`f vhmhl ejl xavxn. }i k; x Hgghp-jhhghk`k xsjcdx fw ugl wavwn ;x, Zb pz[[cjxkx jhnxo fudw fi j i k xkshkghnh jhl hl ghs`k. Hgghp`k xsjcvxdx pcn fxn aed vc pcdhjh ;e]l cgxvxn.

Mcq-pcl vw ggghpx Ncffxg-hgcl xk.

Fwnh rcvcm x;x l c;jcfxk scphfc mc xl hl cj fhncsxkvc;x  
kcbcnxddcgcnx hnhav`n`gv`. l ]i k[i [xgvvc l i jchg Hgghpvhk  
;zl c; xsjcl c;gc fw x;x l c;jcfvck pcn fxnxkxk xsghl x acnxcj  
l ckfcgcnx fhncsxkvc;x kcbcnngcnxkx hnhav`nh[hy`r.

# L I KVCN{ HJ

CGGHL C SEDDXV L I NJCBH CS: CNX.....	ERROR! BOOKMARK NOT DEFINED
L CHGXL WG-L CVNCSCJEDK .....	ERROR! BOOKMARK NOT DEFINED
FXSLXGGHPXN-NCPL HKXN-NCPXL .....	ERROR! BOOKMARK NOT DEFINED
X: XK{X {XGVBI SMI L LAHI R-RØHMANI R-RØHI M.....	1
BI SMI L LAHI R-RØHMANI R-RØHI M.....	8
I }I K{I TCSXG.....	10
CPGX-FEDJ LC: JCFXKXK XL HLCJ FHNC SXKVC: X KCBCNXDDCGCNX.....	10
L I RCVVXL C.....	12
CPGX-FEDJ Φ --K XSL CJX (" I KHPS-BG-Y).....	12
FW HDCKXK KHBXG UGLH SCFCFX (AC/KX-KI BWGW) MC  EDYCLFCNX-C: NCL i --XK CLCGX SWNCJVC UGHK JCVFXNGCNX.....	13
EDYCLFCNX-C: NCL i --XK ZBI KVCK SUKNH WGXG-CLNX JC/DXK UGWKL HS- L CSCGCSXKC {XVVXDDCJ " ZSJCNL CSX.....	19
L I PHNXFC ACNHXJKVC  EDYCLFCN i --XK LCVXKVC: X {HKXAXKGCN.....	25
PX{NCJXK X: XK{X XGXKVC.....	25
PX{NCJXK I }I K{I XGXKVC.....	26
PX{NCJXK VZNVI K{I XGXKVC.....	27
PX{NCJXK FAXK{X XGXKVC.....	27
PX{NCJXK HGJ-K{- XGXKVC.....	28
PX{NCJXK DEVVXK{X XGXKVC.....	29
PX{NCJXK SC: : XBXK{X XGXKVC.....	29
EDYCLFCNX-C: NCL i --XK ZBI KVCK SUKNH MCGXDDX-CLNX JC/DXK EJL CSX XGC CGHRCVHN KCRG UGWKHK NCMHDCJGCN.....	32
CMMCG: X I L L CJGCNVC MCSXDDCJ.....	32
1-HVCL ™ --K MCSXSX AEDSXK PHVXSCSX.....	32
2-L WSH ™ --K MCSXSX DWAC XFKX KWKWK PHVXSCSX.....	33
1-JZMNHJVH DWAC XFKX KWK.....	33
2-RWN/HKX-: CNXL VC DWAC XFKX KWK.....	34
3-XSGHLX LCKFCGCNVC DWAC XFKX KWK.....	34
3- EDYCLFCNX-C: NCL i --GC PCBNCJ L WSH ™ --K MCSXGCN HNH-S-KVH UOAHNG-R.....	34
4-PCBNCJ XSH ™ --K MCSXSX ACL/WKWK PHVXSCSX.....	34
1-XK[XGVC ACL/WK.....	34
2-XSGHLX LCKFCGCNVC ACL/WK.....	35
EDYCLFCNX C: NCL i --XK MCSXSX, MCBXNX MC UKWK MCTHJ-KVHK SUKNH UKWK OCGTCSX MC MCGX-CPVX.....	36
EDYCLFCN i --XK PCVXSGCNXKVC MCSX.....	36
CMMCG: X I L L CJGCNXX SCLHMX : XJHFGHN-KVH MCSX.....	38
SCPHFC MC JHFEXKXK PCVXSGCNXKVC MCSXDDCJ.....	40
1-CFWBCNXK OI JFC SXKVC MCSXDDCJ.....	40
2-L HGX; CAJCNXK SZBGCNXXKVC MCSXDDCJ.....	40
3-CLN XFKX PCLCR OI BHXXK SZBGCNXXKVC MCSXDDCJ.....	40
4-L CPCL LCV XFKX CFW FC; NXK ZB LC; JWFVKVH MCSXDDCJ.....	41
5-CLN HS-K DHB-S-KVH MCSXDDCJ.....	44
6-XLHL CGX ™ --K ; CGHL-KVH MCSXDDCJ.....	44
7-XLHL CGX ™ --K OI JFCGCNXXKVC MCSXDDCJ.....	45
8-XLHL PCSCK ™ --K OI JFC SXKVC MCSXDDCJ.....	46

9-AXCGCNXK XL HL PI SEDK <sup>TM</sup> -H FHASHYG-Y- MENVDX BHL HK DHBV-RGHN- L C; JWFVH; - MCSXDDCJ.....	46
10-XL HL PI SEDK <sup>TM</sup> --K OI JFCXKVC MCSXDDCJ.....	47
11-HFFHSX OCGTCSX SCTTHP-K CLXSX CFVI GGHP XFKX CGKXK MCSXDDCJ VCGXG ' CJXNL CSX.....	47
12-L CPCL L CV XFKX CFVI GGHP XFKX PCSCXK HFFHSX OCGTCSX L CKSWNWK CGEDPXKC VCGXG-SI FWJ ' CJXNL CSXKVC MCSXDDCJ.....	48
13-HFFHSX OCGTCSX LEPVX MCSXDDCJX, ÅMCSXB SZBI KI K BX; N UGWKVWYWKH ' ZNC NCVV EVXN.....	49
14-HFFHSX OCGTCSX PHNWK CN-NCAXV ÅMCSXBGCNXX FHNCXKVC OCFCN MENXN.   EDYCLFCN i -XK MCSXSX I KMHK- GI YCJ : XJHFGHN-KVH, SCPHFCGCNXX MC JHFEXKGCNXX AE/NGCNXKVC.....	52
1-XSGHL -K CMMCGGCNXXKVC.....	52
2-{CLCG LI PHNXFCXKVC.....	55
3-SXTTEDK LI PHNXFCXKVC UOWKHK AE/NGCNVC MCSXDDCJ.....	58
4-XFKX HFFHS-K L C; JFWFKVH MCSXDDCJ.....	65
5-L C/L WKWK AE/NXKVC MCSXDDCJ.....	69
MCSX GCRCFXKXK CSNGCN FUDW XL HL CGX <sup>TM</sup> I } I K L CAPWN UGL HS-.....	70
OI GCTH L C: JCFX MCSXDDCJ NCMHDCJGCNXXK "XBGCVXN, UKGHNVHK DHD-GHKGHN- XSC FHARH L C/KHDH DUBWNGHN.....	76
HDXACKXK PCVXSX CGX <sup>TM</sup> --K MCSXGDXKX SI FWJ EVXN.....	76
I L L I G-L Z/LXKXK HDXAC XL HL CGX <sup>TM</sup> --K ACPHVCJXKC SEMXKXN! HDXACKXK PCVXSXKXK FHARH PCVXSGCNGC LI RHDXSX.....	79
I L L I G-L Z/LXKXK HDXACKXK PCVXSXKXK HNHAV-N-GL HS-.....	80
XL HL CGX <sup>TM</sup> --K PCVXSX XGC I L L I G-L Z/LXKXK HDXACKXK PCVXSXKXK LI RHDXSX UGWKL HS-.....	83
I L L I G-L Z/LXKXK HDXACVCK KCRG UGWKHK, FXN-FXNXK BxVV UGHK X: X PCVXS MC X: X L ZMRE.....	84
HDXACKXK XL HL CGX <sup>TM</sup> RHNA-S-KVH JWJVWYX X: X LI OJCGT L ZMRE.....	86
XL HL CGX <sup>TM</sup> --K TCBXGCJGCNXXK "XBGCVXGL CSX, U PCBNCJC RHNA- KHGHDXR SZBGCN VEDXGL CSX MC FWKWK SCFCFGCNX.....	92
RI NEDA OXGHTCJGC KI FI MMCJXK X: XSXKXK FCKX-PHAXL VC UGL HS-KVHK KHNHB- XVX.....	92
FW X: X NCMHDCJ FHNCXKVC JCKRXV MC LI GHPXBCGCN.....	94
FW OI JFC FHNCXKVC JCKRXV LI GHPXBCGCN.....	99
USL HKVHK SUKNH OCGTC.....	100
EDYCLFCNX C: NCL i -XK SZBGCNXXK MC PCVXSGCNXXKX DHD-GL HS-K-K RHNA-S-K-K HG-KL HS-.....	103
LI HMXDCKXK VZMNI KVC RI NEDAXK SXDHSCJX.....	104
AHL CPHGXKXK CGX <sup>TM</sup> -H RHNA- : XK-: I VWNCJ MC GC/K CSHS-KVH JCNFXDC EVXGL CSX.....	116
"CRCFC " E{CSX" NCMHDCJXKXK OI GHSCSX.....	116
LI HMXDCKXK FW XAVC L CRSCVX.....	117
LI HMXDCKXK : XK-: I VWNCJGCNXXKX : Z: GCNX.....	118
CFVI GGHP XFKX BI FEDNXK SXDHSCJX.....	118
RI NEDAXK CFVI G-L CGX: MC UKWK UYGW MCGXVXK VZMNI KVC: X SXDHSCJX.....	121
PC{ {H{ XFKX DWSXT MC UKWK RI NEDAXK SXDHSCJGCNXXK X{NH EJLC: VC " ZSJCNVXD SC/DGCN.....	122



PC{{H{-K RHNVA- LCPCLLCV XFKX DWSXT UKWK DUGWKV VHMHL EJVXNXN.....	125
ZL CN XFKX CFVI G-CBVB RI NEDA SXDHSCJGCNXKX  UBWN.....	125
PXHL XFKX CFVI G-LCGX: RI NEDA MC CLCMX SXDHSCJGCNXKX VHMHL EJVXNXN.....	128
OHGXV XFKX CFVI GGHP RCSNX MC UKWK NCTJHNGHN-.....	129
OHGXV XFKX CFVI GGHP RCSNX ;XL XV?.....	130
FCKX-I LCDDC CGX HV- XGC VC LI FHNXBC H HN-N.....	131
HFFHSX OCGTCGCNXKXK SXDHSCJX.....	132
1-HGXL GCN JCFRCRSXKXK CLCG MC NCTJHN-.....	132
2-PH;XLGCN JCFRCRSXKXK CLCG MC NCTJHN-.....	133
3-I L WL OHGR ; I JGCSXKXK CLCG MC NCTJHN-.....	133
H) LCKSWNWK  EDYCLFCN CPGX-FEDJXKC RHNA- NCTJHN-.....	134
F) HFFHSX OCGTCSX LI JCMC; ;XGXK CPGX-FEDJC RHNA- NCTJHN-.....	134
FW FCPSXK OI GHSCSX.....	137
CLCMX MC HFFHSX OCGTCGCNXKXK XLHL CGX <sup>TM</sup> -H RHNA- VI ALCK}XGX: MC CVHMCJGCNX.....	141
H) HGX CFX SI TDHK, LI HMxDC MC DEBXV CLCMX.....	141
2-LCNMHK MC CLCMX LCNMHKXGCN.....	142
3-HFFHSX OCGTCGCNX.....	142
EDYCLFCN-C: NCL j -XK SI KKCSXKX, UKWK CPGX-FEDJXKXK MC SCPHFCSXKXK SXNCSXKX " ZSJCNCK NCMHDCJGCNXK " XBGCVXGXF JCPNXT EVXGLCSXKVCK UK KI L WKC.....	144
OI GCTH LC: JCFXKXK,  EDYCLFCN SI KKCSXKVC UKGHN-K KBCNCGCNX XGC LI OHGXT UGHK NCMHDCJGCNC RHNA- JWJVWYW L ZMRE.....	144
MCSXDDCJXK XK: HN UGWKLHS-.....	144
1.  EDYCLFCN SI KKCSXKXK PCVXSGCNXKXK FXN RXSLXKXK XOJXSHNH SHG-KLHS- MC UKGHN-K LI CL L HG- : CGLCGCN AC: GXKC }EMNXGLCSX.....	145
2-XOJXSHNH SHG-KLHS-KH XAHNC EVXGLC: GC SCPHFCKXK SXNCSXKVCK FI JI K OCFCNCGCNXK XOJXSHNH SHG-KLHS-.....	148
3- EDYCLFCN SI KKCSXKXK PCVXSGCNXKXK PCRXX LC/KHS-KVHK FHARH LC/KHDH DUBWGLHS-.....	149
µ EDYCLFCNXK GC/KCJGCVXD ACOSGCN FHF-" NCMHDCJXKVC LI GHPXBCGCN.....	152
FXN RVCN CMMCGC RHD-VHR.....	153
FW PCVXSXK HNHAV-N-GLHS- MC JCFCNHKXKXK DUBWLWKVH LI KHRXAC.....	154
MCSXDDCJ : CGLCSXKXK LC/KHS- FHNCXKVC VX" CN FXN HGXLXK PEDNCJ MC SCN" CNVHKG-Y-.....	156
4-XOJXSHNH SHG-KLHS-KH XAHNC EJLCVCK SCPHFCGCNXK SZBGCNXKVCK FXN RXSLXKXK XOJXSHNH SHG-KLHS-.....	157
5-XOJXSHNH SHG-KLHS-KH XAHNC EVXGLCVCK  EDYCLFCN SI KKCSXKXK NCMHDCJXKXK PHL-S-K-K XOJXSHNH SHG-KLHS-.....	160
6- EDYCLFCN j SI KKCSXKXK DHB-GLHS-K-K RHNA-S-K-K HG-KLHS-.....	162
X; X REDV.....	163
1-CKSHN-K LI HMxDC MC CLN XFKX HSGH UGHK PHVXSCSX.....	163
2-ACYHKXB ;XJHF-K-K LI CGGTX XFKX ACPHF-K NCMHDCJ EVVXD VX' CN FXN OCFCN.....	164
7- EDYCLFCN SI KKCSXKX NCMHDCJ EVCKGCNXK MC SI KKCKX " ZSJCNCK NCMHDCJGCNXK BCXTGCVXGLCSX, UKGHN-K LI OHGTX UGHK : XJHFGHN-K LCPM EVXGLCSX MC XVEUGUXX LI OHGTCGCNXK RCJGC DEJXNXGLCSX.....	165

1-MCSXDDCJX REDV EVCKGCGNXXK L CBCL L CJ UGWKL HS-	166
F) PCVXS NHMXGCGNXXK L CBCL L CJ EJL C;	169
M) PCVXS XL HL GHN-K-K L CBCL L CJ UGWKL HS-	169
R) PCVXS XL HL GHN-KVHK FXNX UGHK KCSHXKXX RCJGC DEJXXGL CSX	173
8-: XJHFGHN-K MC ; XJHFOHKHGHN-K DHKV-N-GL HS-	174
FHYVHVH XSGHLX : XJHFOHKHK-K DHKV-N-GL HS-	176
9-SCPHFCGCGNXXK SXNCSXX FCDHK EVCK OCFNGCGNXXK FXN RXSLXKXK	
: XJHFGHNVHK } -OHN-GL HS- MC JCPNXT EVXGL CSX	177
10-PCRXX NCMHDCJGCGNXXK DENXKC SHOJH PCVXSGCGNXXK RUDWGL HS-	178
SEDTXK NCMHDCJGCGNXXK KZMI	179
SEDTXK NCMHDCJGCGNXXK "JHNXX JCFCNX"VCK SHXN JHNXO : XJHFGHN-KH	
SXNHDCJ EJL CSX MC UKWK SCFCFX	181
XSGHL -K CMMCGCGNXXKVC SEDTXK JCNCTXKVCK VI BCGVXGXF KCRG EVXGCK	
NCMHDCJGCGNXXK L CAPWN HD-R VI AL CKGCN JCNCTXKVCK COB EVXGL CSX XGC	
CGHRCVHN UGHK L I GHPXBCGCN	182
1-SEDTXK NCMHDCJGCGNXXKVC CSMCV CKSXKXX CTSHKCSX	185
CSMCV CKSXKXX CTSHKCSXX HNHAV-N-N-R	187
H) FW CTSHKCKXX NHMXGCGNXX	187
F) FW CTSHKCKXX L CBL WKW	188
2-OUSNUMWK HGGHP DHK-KVH  EDYCLFCNGC   -} -GHVHAL HS- CTSHKCSX	188
OUSNUMWK  EDYCLFCNGC SZPFCJ EJL CSX CTSHKCSXX HNHAV-N-GL HS-	188
H) FW CTSHKCKX NCMHDCJ EVCKGCGNXXK MCBXDDCJXXKX DUOGHK-GL HS-	188
F) CTSHKCKXX L CBL WKWKWK HNHAV-N-GL HS-	189
VXKSXB SEDTXK FW X: X CTSHKCKX RWNHAV-NL HRVH XBGCVDX CSHS PCVCT	189
"XSGHL RHK JZ: I GL CSX MC R-G-K{ " I { I XGC DHD-G-N" JCSCMMI NI KI K	
DHD-GL HS-	190
SEDTXK XNJXVHV NCMHDCJGCGNXXKVC; X DHGHKGHN- MC PHVXSCKX FZDI ;	
[XGMCCKVXNL CSX	190
AC; ; B MC ACA/CNXXKXXK L I NJCV UGL HS-  EDYCLFCNXK Z'ED UYGW	
(NCFXCSX) JHPXNXK PHVXSCKX	191
SEDTXK NCMHDCJGCGNXXKVC: X JHPXN	192
FW NCMHDCJXX FHNCXKVC JCKRXVGCN MC L I GHPXBCGCN	192
CGDCSXK TCJP UGWKL HS- MC CL YXADHK-K VHY-V-GL HS-	194
SEDTXK CGDCSC MC CL YXADH FHNCXKVC KCRG EJVDX NCMHDCJGCGNVC	
L I GHPXBCGCN	195
XL HL CGX <sup>TM</sup> --K MCSX GCRCFX XGC L CAPWNGHAL HS- MC OI GCTH	
L C: JCFXKXK WBWK CSNGCN FUDW RHNA-GHAV-Y- }CJXKGX:	199
SED T OI GCTH L C: JCFXKXK }CJXKGXKX PCGG EJL C: I } I K } -O-A DUGW	
HOJHN-N	200
FW NCMHDCJGCGNXXK HNHAV-N-GL HS-	205
DWOHN-VH: - NCMHDCJGCGNVC SEDTXK JCPNXTGCNX MC RUKVHNL HGHN-	206
1-: E]CK NCMHDCJGCGNVC PCVXS VI BCGVXGL CSXKX KI L WKCSX	206
2-: E]CK NCMHDCJGCGNVC JCPNXTXK KI L WKCGCNX	208
H) HVGHN-K JCPNXT EVXGL CSX	208
F) NCMHDCJGCGNXXK JCPNXT EVXGL CSX, U [I L GCVCCK	208
SEDTXK KCRG EJVDX NCMHDCJGCGNXXK FHARH NCMHDCJGCGNC L I RHDXSCKX	210
CFWBCN PC{ { L ZMSI L I KVC - L XKHVH	211
CFWBCN FEDJI GHPXG-PCNHL VH	212
CFWBCN  EDYCLFCN j L CS{XVXKVC	212

USL HK-K OXGHTCJXKXK HO-NGHN-KVH FHA MENCK TJKCGCNXK OI GHSCSX.....	214
SEDYXK SHOJH NCMHDCJGCNXXKXK SCPXP NCMHDCJGCNGC LI RHDYSC	
UGWKL HS- MC UKWK KCJX{CSX.....	215
"OI GCTH LC: JCFXKVC PHRR-K " XBGCVXGLCSX KZMGCNX" FCPSXKXK	
OI GHSCSX.....	218
XSGHLX L CKFCVC: X NCMHDCJGCNVX XOJXGHT-K L CKACDX.....	220
FW FCPSPGCNXX KCJX{CSX MC LCSCGCKXK PCRXRCJX.....	221
MCSXDDCJ FCPSXKXK CMMCGXKC RHD-V-A.....	225
JHNXO : XJHFGHN-KVHK XOJXSHNH SHG-KHK OCFCNGCNXK, NCMHDCJGCNXX	
MC KCSSGCNXX SHD-.....	227
CPGX-FEDJ MC UKGHN-K PH: XLXDDCJ PHRR- FHNCXKVC  EDYCLFCNX-	
C: NCL i -VCK KCRG UGWKL WA NCMHDCJGCN.....	228
MCSXKXK LI OJCGXT XFHNCGCNGC JC/DXK UGWKL HS-.....	228
EDYCLFCNXK MCBXNX.....	229
H) RWN/HKX: CNXL VC MC UKWK JCTXNX UGHK  EDYCLFCN SI KKCSXKVC.....	229
F)  EDYCLFCN i CGX TM -- KC MHOJ ZBI KC MCBXN JC/DXK EJXV?.....	230
EDYCLFCN i -XK OCGXTCX.....	231
EDYCLFCN i -VCK SUKNH LI SCGL HKGHN-K MCGXSX (NCPFCNX).....	232
1-AC; MH PCVXSX.....	232
X: XK{X AX: HDCJ.....	233
AX: HDCJ BHL HK-.....	234
2- FHARH HDV-K " ZSJCNXAGCN.....	234
CGX TM --K MCGX-CPVGDYK MC MCSXGDXKC VHXX I L WLX }HY-N-A.....	234
RCVXN " I KI KVC: X L CNHSXL OCFCNX.....	237
XL HL CGX TM H CL L HL C RUDL H L CNHSXL X.....	240
HKV X} VXXNGL C L CNHSXL X.....	241
FW I L L CJVC MCSXKXK JC/DXK UGWKL HS- L WSH TM --K I L L CJXKVC	
MCSXKXK JC/DXK UGWKL HS- XGC EDKXVXN.....	242
RWN/HKX : CNXL VC MXGHDCJ MC WGWG-CL N.....	243
H) RWN/HKX : CNXL VC CGX TM --K MXGHDCJX.....	243
FW HDCKXK VCGHGCJXKC JWJWGHK XNHV.....	244
F) WGWG-CL N CGX TM MC UKVHK SUKNH: - XL HL GHNV-N.....	247
M) "SCTXKCJW KWP" MC "PXJJCJW FCKX-XSNHXG" PCVXSX.....	248
CPGX-FEDJ XL HL GHN- (CGX MC UKWK ZMGHVGHN- Φ )  EDYCLFCNX C: NCL	
i -XK SZBGCNXXK }HJV-NHKGHNV-N.....	249
"FCNHCH" HDCGCNXXKXK JCFGXU UGWKL H PHVXSCSX.....	251
EDYCLFCN i -XK PCVXSGCNXKVC UGHK "LXKXK" : CGLCSXKVCK	
L CRSCV.....	254
CGX TM  EDYCLFCN i -XK MHNXSXVXN.....	255
XL HL PCSCK MC XL HL PI SEDK E  EDYCLFCNX-C: NCL i -VCKVXN	
MC UKWK X: X ZMGHV-V-N.....	263
HOXNCBBHL HKVH PCBNCJX LCPVX TM --K BI PWN EVC{CDXKC VHXX	
EDYCLFCNXK LI ØVCSX.....	266
L CPVX TM  EDYCLFCN i -GC EDKX HVVHV-N.....	266
PCBNCJ LCPVX TM CPGX-FEDJVCKVXN.....	267
L CPVX TM THJXL EDX-BCPNH (☞)--K ZMGHVGHN-KVHKV-N.....	268
PCBNCJ LCPVX TM XL HL PI SEDK TM --K ZMGHVGHN-KVHKV-N.....	268
CPGX-FEDJ XL HL GHN-K-K XL HL CJXKC VCGHGCJ EVCK PCVXSGCN.....	270
1-"SCRCGEDK" PCVXSX.....	270

H) PC[[CJWG-MXVHVH.....	270
F) RCVXN-OWL VH.....	270
2-XL HL GHN-K SHD-K- " ZSJCNCK PCVXS.....	272
: E}CK PCVXSGCNXK OI GHSCSX.....	278
OI GCTH L C: JCFX HGXL GCNXXK FW PCVXS JCTXN EJL C: VC PEDNCJ MC SCN" CNVHK} -G-RVH RHGL HGHN-.....	278
OI GCTH L C: JCFXKVC UK X: X XL HL -K HVGHN-.....	284
EDYCLFCN-C: NCL i -VCK SUKNH UK X: X XL HL -K JCRVXL EVXGL CSX.....	286
L I PI L FXN XBHP.....	290
VZNV I K{I TCSXG.....	292
XSGHL -K CMMCGCNXKVC OXGHTCJ JCA: XG UGWKL HS-K-K JHNXOX " EN} C: GXDX.....	294
XAXK CMMCGXKVC.....	294
OCGXC ZL CNXK JWJVWYW L ZMRE.....	295
FCKX-SHXVC SCRXTCSX MC CFW FC: NGC FED/CJ.....	295
ZL CNGC FED/CJ.....	299
USL HKGH FED/CJ MC AWNH.....	299
XL HL CGX ™ XGC FED/CJ.....	301
OI GCTH L C: JCFXKXK OXGHTCJ FHNCXKVC KCBCNXDDCGCNX.....	301
1- CFW FC: NXK OCGXTCGXDX FHNCXKVC KCBCNX.....	301
2- OCGXC ZL CNXK KCBCNX.....	302
3-OI GCTH L C: JCFXKXK HNV-{ -GGHN-K-K KCBCNCGCNX.....	302
XSJGHPPGHN-K JC/NXTX.....	303
1- AWNH.....	303
2- FED/CJ.....	303
3-4-OCGXC MC L Z/L XKGCNXX CL XNX.....	305
5-XL HL.....	306
6 - CL N MC WGWG-CL N.....	306
7-MCSX MC  EDYCLFCN i -XK MCSXS.....	307
OI GCTH L C: JCFXKXK OXGHTCJ MC XL HL CJ FHNCXKVC: X KCBCNXDDCGCNXKC JCKRXVX REDVGCN.....	308
1- AWNH.....	308
2- FED/CJ.....	310
3- SCPHF CGCNXK CL CG MC NCTJHN-.....	310
XL HL CGX ™ --K : CGHL -KH XSJXKHV.....	310
THSXR VC UGSH, PH: XL C XJHCJ EJL CDXK MH{XFGXDX.....	311
CPGX-FEDJ L C: JCFXKVC XL HL CJ.....	311
: E}CK UK I } CSN CNBXKVC PH: XL VHXNCGCNXK JWJVWYW L ZMRE.....	316